



火星引力

逆天邪神

Chapter 401 – Bet

The red clothed man split the crowd apart and walked over. His steps were slow and leisurely, and his posture was filled with pride. A faint smile which contained a hint of disdain and ridicule hung on the corner of his lips, as though he was an emperor overlooking the many lives below him. His front chest slightly straightened, and that phoenix emblem glistened brilliantly, announcing his identity to everyone.

As practitioners who were able to make a long trip from the six nations to spectate the match, which one of them wouldn't be high-leveled individuals with huge pride and arrogance? However, facing this disciple of the Divine Phoenix Sect, what they felt was actually an incomparably huge sense of pressure... Although the six nations and the Divine Phoenix Empire were referred to as the seven nations, even if the six nations combined their forces, it would still be impossible for them to shake the Divine Phoenix Empire the least bit. Every year, they had to give a huge amount of tributes to the Divine Phoenix Empire, and they never dared to stop doing so. To make it sound uglier, when the six nations were in front of the Divine Phoenix Empire, they would be similar to affiliated states. In front of the overwhelming power of the Divine Phoenix Empire, no matter if they were individuals with great strength and authority in the political or profound realm, when they were in the Divine Phoenix Empire, they would all have to clench their buttocks and act courteously.

And the Divine Phoenix Sect, was the absolute overlord of the entire Divine Phoenix Empire! In the eyes of the continent's profound practitioners, the Divine Phoenix Sect, was more similar to a group which consisted of people that came from another plane and world.

Moreover, this was even the Divine Phoenix Sect's territory!

Hence, when they faced the incomparably presumptuous and ear-piercing mockery from this Divine Phoenix Sect disciple, these young

practitioners who held a bundle of pride and arrogance in their own nations, dared to be furious, however, they did not dare to speak them out loud. In the eyes they were using to look towards the Phoenix disciple was thirty percent anger, and seventy percent fear.

These types of gazes, and the feeling of a tiger herding sheep, made the Phoenix disciple feel even more prideful and complacent. His voice also became even more ear-piercing. "You little ones from these six nations, it's best that you scam from here as soon as possible. The Black Moon Headquarters isn't a place worthy for you low-class people to enter. By piling yourselves here, you're only going to dirty the ground here, and taint the air here."

Yun Che's brows furrowed fiercely... He had seen many arrogant people, however, it was still the first time he had seen someone who would unhesitantly humiliate the ones present here, and all of the profound practitioners of the six nations, with such an arrogant tone. He really wondered if this Phoenix disciple was initially an arrogant prick himself, or if all of the Phoenix disciples would all act the same way in front of profound practitioners of other nations.

When these words of his fell, the profound practitioners of the six nations present, undoubtedly became even more furious, and in the end, a young profound practitioner who did not even look to be twenty years old, could no longer control himself as he said furiously. "You... What are you being so arrogant for!? Disciples of every sect have their own distinctions of the strong and the weak. Even if it's the Divine Phoenix Sect, there's no exception... Who knows what kind of status you actually have? Who doesn't know how to talk big? If you have the capabilities... Then open the profound array and prove it to us!"

The moment his words fell, an astonished voice suddenly came from the back of the crowd. "I recall now! He's Feng Zhaonan, the head disciple under the thirty ninth elder of Divine Phoenix Sect! I have once seen his name on the list of top hundred in the Divine Phoenix Ranking Tournament two years ago!"

When this piece of news came, the crowd instantly burst into an uproar. The eyes they were using to look towards the Phoenix disciple instantly underwent a grave change, as they became even more frightened... And as for that young profound practitioner who spoke up earlier, his expression instantly turned terribly pale.

Not only was he a disciple of the Divine Phoenix Sect... He was even the head disciple of an elder-class figure! In the Divine Phoenix Nation's Ranking Tournament, he was positioned in the top hundred!!

Feng Zhaonan burst out into wild laughter. "Hahahaha! I never expected that among you profound practitioners from these small nations, there's actually someone who knows of my great name, Feng Zhaonan, as well... Heh, don't you guys want to see if I'm capable of breaking open this Black Moon Headquarters' profound array? Then, I shall have all of you open your eyes, and carefully look at the difference between the disciples of my Divine Phoenix Sect and the trash of your small nations!"

"Move away!"

Feng Zhaonan took three steps forward, and stood in front of a profound array. Putting out a posture very casually, he said lazily. "All of you had best open your eyes wide and look carefully now."

When his words fell, phoenix flames speedily burnt on the top of his palm, and then, it fiercely collided towards the profound array in front.

Instantly, all of the phoenix profound energy was completely taken in by the profound array. Almost in an instant, the red, orange and yellow colors on the crystal pillar lighted together. The blinding light continued to rise, and it hurriedly lighted up the green color... Yet, it still did not stop, and instead, continued to rise at a decreasing rate. In the end, the blue colored glow was barely lighted up as well, and only after maintaining for about three seconds, did all of the glows fade away.

The profound array spun at high speed, and then, the shape of a transfer gate slowly formed. The color of the door was blue, and Feng Zhaonan's body was being enveloped by a layer of blue glow as well, which meant that this blue-colored transfer gate, could only be entered by Feng Zhaonan.

Green, represented the right to enter the Black Moon Headquarters, and this color, also meant that the people of this color would all be absolute geniuses in the eyes of the Black Moon Merchant Guild! Not only did Feng Zhaonan have the qualification to enter the Black Moon headquarters, he was blue, a level higher than green. This judgment represented that in the standards judged by the Black Moon Merchant Guild, he was a genius among geniuses! All of the profound practitioners from the six nations were dumbfounded, and every single of their faces were turning red.

Feng Zhaonan retracted his hand, and a hint of complacency flashed past his eyes. However, his demeanor was as casual as before, and he then said very casually. "Mn, it was just a casual blow, but it's still acceptable. You trash from the small nations, do you know what this blue color means? Tsk tsk, let's forget about it. Because, let alone the third and fourth levels of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, all of you are only able to wish to enter the most basic first and second levels in your entire lifetimes. You all had best hurry and scram. Stop blocking this place and prevent anyone from walking over. You're all really shameless."

After saying that, with extremely belittling eyes, he swept a glance at the furious profound practitioners of the six nations, laughed out wildly, and walked to the transfer gate at the front. Just when his front foot was about to step into it, from behind him, an extremely disdainful voice sounded from the crowd behind. "And here I was thinking just how capable a head disciple of a Divine Phoenix Sect Elder was, it seems it's not really much either. But, your arrogance, has surpassed your strength by countless times."

When these words came, the entire crowd was instantly in an

uproar, as they looked towards the one who spoke up, one after another. Feng Zhaonan's steps stopped, and his entire body slowly turned back. His gaze landed on Yun Che, and after casually inspecting his profound strength, his face revealed an extremely disdainful expression. "The person who spoke earlier, was it you?"

The person who spoke earlier, was indeed Yun Che. Yun Che was not someone who was willing to cause much troubles for himself, but, more so than that, he was not someone who was willing to be ridiculed in silence. Feng Zhaonan's earlier mockery was towards all of the profound practitioners of the six nations, and that naturally included him... But this was still secondary — What Yun Che was definitely unable to bear, was when there was someone more arrogant than himself, standing right in front of him!

Like Feng Zhaonan.

Feng Zhaonan's imposing aura was naturally astonishing, however, how could Yun Che be affected by his imposing aura? He coldly laughed, and said. "That's right, it was me."

"Hahahahahaha!" Feng Zhaonan laughed out wildly, as though he had just heard the funniest joke in the world. "And here I thought which big figure it was, so it's just trash from a small nation... Oh, no, it's something that can't be even fit to be called trash. This level of profound strength, is but a pitiful Earth Profound Realm. In my eyes, it's just trash, yet you dare to talk arrogantly in front of me? Your guts really aren't small."

He narrowed his eyes, and stretched out a finger with a smile. "Do you believe that if I want to kill you, I simply require a single finger? But, what a pity, this place is the territory of Black Moon Headquarters, and private battles are not allowed. After all, I have to give the Black Moon headquarters face, otherwise, just by those ridiculous words you said to me earlier, you would have already been a corpse by now! After dying in my hands, even if you're a royal prince from some nation, or even the crown prince, I will still guarantee that your emperor will obediently dispatch men to collect

your corpse. Other than that, he wouldn't even dare to give another damn."

Among the young profound practitioners present, those who had higher profound strength than Yun Che could be found anywhere. When Yun Che called out, they were initially pleasantly surprised, as they thought that someone, who could put down this Phoenix disciple's prestige, had appeared. However, when they found out that Yun Che's profound strength was merely at the Earth Profound Realm, all of them were extremely disappointed, and there were even someone who questioned if he was insane... With strength merely at the Earth Profound Realm, he actually dared to challenge a top-class disciple of the Divine Phoenix Sect.

"However, if you were to kneel and give me three sounding kowtows now, then call me your grandfather three times, I can still consider sparing your life, and allow you to leave Divine Phoenix City safe and sound. After all, as my own grandson, how could I, your grandfather, bear to lay my hands on you? Hahahaha." Feng Zhaonan belittling and arrogantly said.

All of the surrounding profound practitioners looked at Yun Che with pitiful faces... Even though he did not possess the strength to back himself, he still came out to act tough. How could the Divine Phoenix Sect's iron plate be so easily kicked!? They could already predict the tragic end of this person.

"Kowtow?" The corner of Yun Che's lips slightly tilted, his expression did not carry the slightest of fear, instead, he lightly smiled. "It seems to be a pretty good idea. Then, Feng Zhaonan, why don't we make a bet? I hold a very big interest towards this Black Moon Headquarters, and my purpose here today, is to enter and take a look. If I don't have the capabilities to enter the third and fourth floor like you, forget about kowtows, you can do whatever you want with this life of mine. If I'm able to have this crystal pillar's light shine above the blue color, heh... Then you shall obediently kneel in front of me, give me three sounding kowtows, and call me your grandfather three times... This

bet, do you dare accept it?"

When Yun Che's words came out, everyone gasped out in shock. The profound practitioner from Black Fiend Empire that was deflected away by the profound array earlier, loudly reminded. "Are you crazy!? Hurry and take back the words you said earlier. Forget about blue, getting the green color to light up is even harder than stepping onto the heavens! I'm at the early stages of the Sky Profound Realm, a mere Earth Profound Realm like you, you're basically... basically humiliating yourself."

"Forget it, Senior brother Yin. Don't bother him, he should be a lunatic." His sect companions hurriedly said, as they feared that he would be targeted by Feng Zhaonan out of anger.

"You? Make a bet with me? Higher than blue?" The corner of Feng Zhaonan's eyes twitched, his face spasmed. Then, he laughed out wildly, his body rocked back and forth, and he could barely catch his breath. "Haha... Haha... Hahahaha... This is basically the best joke I have ever heard in my entire lifetime... An Earth Profound Realm trash... actually has pipedream of hitting above blue... And even wish to make a bet with me... Hahaha... Hahahaha..."

The eyes the surrounding profound practitioners were directing at Yun Che, had already changed to as though they were looking at a pure idiot. Yun Che coldly looked at Feng Zhaonan's wild laughter. When he finally managed to stop laughing, Yun Che lightly said. "Do you dare or not? If you don't dare, then good, I'll let you off. My time is extremely precious, and I don't wish to waste it excessively on an arrogant trash."

Feng Zhaonan's wild laughter stopped, his expression instantly darkened. "You're saying I don't dare? Heh... Even till the end, you're an idiotic trash who doesn't know the difference between heaven and earth. With you alone, you're not qualified to make a bet with me. But, my mood today suddenly became really good, so I shall play with you. If you're able to strike higher than blue, forget about three sounding kowtows, and calling you grandfather three times, it's not

even a problem for me to give you ten thousand kowtows and call you grandfather ten thousand times at all. Come, come. Hurry and strike it, show me. Allow me to properly witness how you're going to strike it above blue... Hahahaha..."

"Very good." Yun Che nodded. He suddenly raised his head, and looked towards the far top in at the front. "Since this bet has already been made, and it's even made on the territory of this Black Moon Headquarters, then, why don't we have that senior on the seventh floor, who has been looking here all this while, bear witness to this?"

At the seventh floor of Black Moon Merchant Guild, an elderly dressed entirely in purple was standing by the window. Standing stationary like a statue, he had been silently watching the plaza below for a very long time. When Yun Che's voice came sounding from afar, the elderly's entire body shook for a moment, and his face revealed an astonished expression... He carefully looked at Yun Che's gaze, and realized he was actually looking straight at his own position, there was not even a single difference in angle!

He's actually able to discover me? Astonishment and disbelief filled the purple clothed elder's heart...

The seventh floor of Black Moon Merchant Guild was more than a thousand and five hundred meters away from ground floor, and the horizontal distance from the crystal stage of the plaza to the Black Moon Main Hall was several hundreds of meters away as well. At the same time, the Black Moon Merchant Guild's viewing window was sealed by an incomparably precious unique material, which could allow one to view the outside clearly, but prevent one to see inside even the slightest bit from the outside. Adding that the purple clothed elderly's profound strength was incomparably powerful, even if a Throne was merely a few hundred meters away from him, it would be difficult to discover his aura.

...But this Yun Che, whose profound aura was clearly merely at the Earth Profound Realm, was actually able to discover my presence!? And he even knew that I had been looking at them all this while!

In actuality, the one who found out that the purple clothed elder had been looking at them from the seventh floor all this while, naturally, couldn't possibly be Yun Che, instead, it was Jasmine.

=====

Chapter 402 – Senior Zi

The purple clothed elder stood in place without moving, and did not say anything either, because he wasn't sure if Yun Che was merely probing about to make it deliberately mystifying or had actually discovered him... If it was the latter, then that would be inconceivable.

At this moment, Yun Che actually spoke once more: "If senior isn't going to reply, then I'm going to count that as silent approval. For the Black Moon Headquarters to be so successful even now, honesty is inevitably the number one criteria. I believe that senior would not allow a lowly person who would go back on his word to appear in his domain."

Feng Zhaonan laughed loudly: "Seventh floor senior? Hahahaha! With such a far distance, and it even being the interior of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, let alone a trash like you, even I should not think about probing for any movements inside there. You putting on such an act like that seriously resembles an extremely ridiculous clown."

Yun Che laughed coldly. Without saying another word, he walked toward the front of a profound array in the eyes of everyone present... He had already roughly understood that this crystal station's standard for talent; the age of one's bones, and degree of power... not simply the level of one's profound strength. If it was in accordance to this standard, then no matter what, he ought to be stronger than this Feng Zhaonan.

Yun Che extended both hands and gathered his energy. "Purgatory" instantly opened as his hands smashed out with "Falling Moon Sinking Star".

Divine Phoenix Empire had more than five thousand years of history, and the existence of this crystal stage was even older than the Divine Phoenix Empire, which was highly unusual. The might of Yun Che's strike under the state of Purgatory was absolutely terrible beyond

compare, but once it struck atop the profound array, it also did not make any noise as all its force was completely absorbed by the profound array in an instant, without the slightest bit of overflow.

Clang Clang Clang...

The silent crystal pillar suddenly lit up... from red, it almost instantly went straight to blue. The sound of five different colors simultaneous lighting up overlapped, directly shocking the ears of everyone present with a continuous droning noise.

All of the surrounding profound practitioners had a pitiful expression, and were already prepared to see a joke, but the scene before their eyes immediately left them completely dumbstruck, leaving them unable to dare believe their own eyes. The sneer on Feng Zhaonan's face stiffened instantly, as he involuntarily cried out: "This... this is impossible!"

The ascension of the light on the crystal pillar slowed down, but it still did not stop as it continue upward through the blue pillar and broke through the blue colored boundary as the indigo crystal pillar then lit up.

"Waah!!" Almost all the profound practitioners present let out an involuntary cry... However, the crystal pillar's light still did not cease, and instead continued to rise higher and higher. The indigo light quickly became an azure color. Then, there was only a "clang" sound...

A purple radiance was released from the highest pillar of light.

Red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, and violet... All colors lit up, and the entire crystal pillar brightened with the color of the rainbow. Slowly, the violet color spread downwards, gradually engulfing the other colors, making the entire crystal pillar purple. The purple color was preserved for a full ten breaths of time, then slowly scattered. The profound array in front of Yun Che spun at high speed, and then, the shape of a purple colored transfer gate slowly formed. Yun

Che's body, was also radiating a faint purple color.

On the seventh floor of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, the face of the purple clothed elder, who had been standing by the window from the start, fiercely moved. His gaze firmly locked on Yun Che, and it took a good while until he slowly spoke out a few words: "Earth Profound Realm... Inconceivable..."

This grade, was also beyond Yun Che's expectations. In fact, the crystal stage's standard judgement of talent did not merely use a person's age and strength, at the same time, it also compared the power released of those at the same level as well. Yun Che's profound strength was at the late stages of the Earth Profound Realm, yet he could release a strength comparable to a middle stage Emperor Profound. This was his current strongest, and it could be said that in the entire Profound Sky Continent, none could reach him.

The surrounding profound practitioners were all stupefied on the spot. A profound practitioner that placed in the top fiftieth of Black Fiend Nation's ranking tournament could only strike out the yellow. Feng Zhaonan was the head disciple of an elder-rank person within the Divine Phoenix Sect, and his blue grade was one that they could never hope to reach for even in their entire lifetimes. Yet this person, who was obviously at the Earth Profound Realm, actually struck out... the illusory, unreal violet!!

This meant that based on the Black Moon Merchant Guild's judgement, his aptitude was at the very top of the entire Profound Sky Continent! Although there was the level of indigo between violet and blue, this did not represent the disparity in the two levels, rather, the difference was two full planes, two whole worlds! In front of a yellow-colored grade, a blue-colored grade was a transcendent existence that one could not see the summit of. But in front of a purple-colored grade... it was trash, through and through.

"Impossible... Impossible... There must be... be a problem with the profound array... Impossible!" Staring at the purple colored radiance

that had yet to disperse, Feng Zhaonan's entire body shook... Born in Divine Phoenix City, he was even more clear than everyone present on what the purple-colored grade meant. Because within this generation of Divine Phoenix Sect's profound practitioners, only one person had struck out a purple-colored grade. Even indigo, was a rarity. No matter what, he was unable to accept that a mere Earth Profound Realm from one of the other six nations, someone who was fundamentally not even worthy to be glanced at in his eyes... had actually struck out the violet of legends!

Even though he had lowly muttered out that there must be a problem with the profound array... he was even more clear than everyone present that it was absolutely impossible for there to be a problem with the profound array. It was rumored that these thirty-two profound arrays were made by a Monarch of the Sovereign Profound Realm, and it existed even longer than the Divine Phoenix Empire. How could a problem possible appear on it?

Yun Che turned around, faced Feng Zhaonan, and laughed faintly: "Feng Zhaonan, the results are now in. You ought to not have forgotten the bet we made previously, right? Then what are you standing there for? Why haven't you knelt down and kowtowed to your grandfather?!"

"You!" Feng Zhaonan's complexion became pitch-black... Before now, even if he was beaten to death, he would never believe that a mere, insignificant Earth Profound Realm would strike out a level higher than blue... or even the legendary violet. Let alone a high ranking disciple of the Divine Phoenix Sect, even if it were an ordinary person, it was impossible for one to accept the humiliation of going down on his knees to kowtow, and even calling out grandfather. Otherwise, he would always bear this humiliating mark for his entire life.

"You're only a trash of only the Earth Profound Realm, how could you strike out the violet!" Feng Zhaonan said with gritted teeth: "There obviously is a problem with the profound array... or maybe you had

used some sort of trick! To want me, Feng Zhaonan of the Divine Phoenix Sect to kneel for you... is simply a joke as big as the heavens!"

"Haha." Yun Che sneered: "Divine Phoenix Sect is known as the number one sect in the world, its might and power is known to be impressive everywhere, and would make people wistful. Never did I expect that not only is this disciple condescending beyond belief and arrogant without scruples, he's actually a lowly person who would go back on his word. That seriously leaves one greatly disappointed. However, you can't renege on your bet, as every friend present here are all personal witnesses! If you really do not care about your pathetic face, you can just leave far away with your tail behind your legs. But I don't know what would happen if this news were to spread throughout the city and pass through your sect's ears, letting them know that you had lost all of your sect's face in front of the presence of all the other six nation's profound practitioners in Black Moon Merchant Guild's territory. I wonder if they would expel you from Divine Phoenix Sect... Oh, no, Divine Phoenix Sect's biggest taboo is their bloodline, so they would never drive away a disciple. I guess they would directly do some... house cleaning?"

When Feng Zhaonan had come earlier, the surrounding reverent gazes had made his entire body feel incredibly pleasurable. But now, the surrounding gazes were like daggers boring into his entire body... If he was alone with Yun Che, he would unhesitantly kill Yun Che, letting not a third person know of this. However, not only was this the territory of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, there were also more than ten thousand people here as witnesses. This was the first time in his life that he had been forced in such dire straits.

"In this one generation of my grand and mighty Divine Phoenix Sect, only one person has struck the violet! How could a trash of the Earth Profound Realm like you, be able to strike the violet! There's obviously a problem with the profound array... What qualifications do you have to make me kneel?! Nobody would ever acknowledge this result! You're actually even using the name of my sect to scare

me? Haha... haha, simply ridiculous!"

Feng Zhaonan laughed loudly as he roared, but it was obvious that he was not confident in his last few words.

At this time, an aged voice suddenly came from above: "Little junior of Divine Phoenix Sect, your arrogance had first brought you trouble, yet you are not willing to admit that you lost your bet and is instead questioning my Black Moon's profound array!? I'm afraid that if it was your Master, Feng Yunzhi himself, not even he would have that sort of courage!"

This sound was not at all resounding, but every word felt as if mountains were firmly striking at the soul. The level of cultivation that belonged to the owner of the voice was simply unimaginable. Feng Zhaonan raised his head toward the seventh floor of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, his face revealing a deep shock and fear. He said hurriedly: "It's... it's Senior Zi! Senior Zi, please calm your anger. This junior... this junior absolutely does not have the intention of questioning the Black Moon Merchant Guild."

"No? Then is it that there was a problem with my hearing?" The aged voice asked loudly.

Feng Zhaonan's face immediately became ashen, and he didn't dare to speak for a long while...

A high ranking disciple from the Divine Phoenix Sect had actually been scared to this extent by the owner of this aged voice. Yun Che was slightly shocked in his heart, he raised his head and spoke: "Junior thanks senior for his fair words."

"Honesty is the number one principle of my Black Moon Merchant Guild, and we can't bear to look at despicable people who go back on their word. However, this junior is after all, a Divine Phoenix Sect disciple. If he goes down and kowtows, it would be of the utmost humiliation, which would be extremely inappropriate for the entire Divine Phoenix Sect. To you, it also brings not the least bit of benefit,

so you ought to stand back in due course."

"Senior's teaching is right." Yun Che said cheerfully: "Junior only could not take his gaze that looked down and insulted all of us six nation profound practitioners, which is why I wanted him to remember this a bit more."

His expression became unsightly as he turned to face Feng Zhaonan and said with a beaming smile: "This Black Moon Merchant Guild senior has already plead for mercy in your stead, so of course I'll have to honor this senior's reputation... This head of yours, no longer needs to knock on the floor, grandfather, you also do not need to call. But if you just leave like that, then wasn't this bet made for naught? We, profound practitioners of the other six nations, would also have been scolded by you free of charge! Thus, you had best leave behind a little something! Mn..." Yun Che supported his chin with a hand as his eyes narrowed into slits while he sized up Feng Zhaonan's entire body: "The clothes you're wearing is actually not bad, take it off and give it to me... Senior, this junior's request is not too excessive, right?"

The aged voice transmitted over: "The Phoenix Robe is a Divine Phoenix Sect disciple's identity. No one outside of the sect would dare copy it, and even more would not dare to wear it. Even though I don't know what you would use the Phoenix Robe for, compared with your bet, this is merciful enough. Little junior of Divine Phoenix Sect, the other party has already given you a huge concession, do you have any other objections?"

The Phoenix Robe was a Divine Phoenix Sect disciple's status symbol, taking it off was undoubtedly comparable to tearing one's face off. However, this outcome was unquestionably a thousand hundred times better than kowtowing. Added with the suppressive might coming from the Black Moon Merchant Guild, how could he even say anything else? Gritting his teeth, he took off the Phoenix Robe, flung it at Yun Che, then quickly changed into another outer clothing. After eyeing Yun Che with a malicious gaze, he left without ever looking back.

"You deeming a person weaker than you as trash means that you would admit defeat in the face of someone stronger, this also means that you are trash, through and through! It was not easy for the Divine Phoenix Sect to use five thousand years to develop to its state today. Even if you do not have the ability to increase your sect's reputation, you should never think of making a disgrace out of yourself by using your status as a Divine Phoenix Sect disciple, making others hold you in contempt!" Yun Che coldly stated toward Feng Zhaonan's direction. Then, without caring about Feng Zhaonan's reaction, he turned around and walked over to that profound array he had struck earlier.

At the moment, the surrounding profound practitioners were looking at Yun Che with gazes filled with deep reverence. None were underestimating him for having the profound strength of an Earth Profound Realm anymore. At the same time, they were deeply thankful, after all, he had helped every of the six nations' profound practitioners let off some steam in front of that Divine Phoenix Sect disciple. It was just that the imposing manner he used to deal with Feng Zhaonan and also the violet that was struck on the crystal stage, made them lose the courage to approach him in the middle of their reverence and gratitude. As Yun Che walked toward the profound array, the surrounding profound practitioners quickly stepped aside. Their gazes continuously followed him as they watched him walk into the purple colored profound array, and completely disappear within.

The purple colored profound array sent Yun Che to the seventh floor of the Black Moon Merchant Guild... a place that not many of the entire Profound Sky Continent had set foot in.

=====

Chapter 403 – Black Moon's Seventh Floor

Upon entering the seventh floor of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, before he had even seen it clearly, a current of extremely refreshing air assaulted his senses... Right! It was actually clean, refreshing air! For an enormous merchant guild, the strongest aroma it ought to have would be a simple and dignified odor, but Yun Che actually felt as if he had suddenly been placed within a completely clean and pure natural environment, without the least bit of feeling like he was within a merchant guild.

He opened his eyes and looked toward the front. Astonishingly, a garden as far as he could see appeared before his eyes. Various kinds of brightly colored rare and unusual botany sprinkled within the emerald green as a great tree towered above. The running stream criss-crossed inbetween, bringing along the unceasing murmurs of running water.

A dazzled thought instantly emerged within Yun Che's consciousness... was this something built inside Black Moon's seventh floor?

This was obviously an otherworldly utopia from the fairy realm!

Up ahead, three beautiful and graceful young maidens who wore different colored garments walked toward Yun Che. None of their looks were not one in ten thousand, and their bearing was even more luxuriously poised. Their profound strength aura was strong to at most the Sky Profound!

The three young women came to Yun Che's front and saluted gracefully: "Esteemed customer, welcome to Black Moon Merchant Guild. If there is anything you need, please do not hesitate to tell us."

The treatment within Black Moon's seventh floor was sure enough, extraordinary. With these three young women's shocking strength, any one of them would be a regional lord within the Blue Wind

Nation, yet here, they were unexpectedly mere maids that waited upon customers.

Yun Che quickly swept a glance around, yet did not see any place that was selling an item, even the smallest trace of what a merchant guild ought to have was indiscernible. He thought for a moment, then said: "Three fairies, may I ask where the senior I was talking to earlier is currently?"

"Haha." A gentle chuckle came from an unknown place: "Bring him here."

"Yes... Esteemed customer, please come this way." The three young women agreed crisply. With one at the front, left, and right, they respectfully led Yun Che forward.

After passing through the garden, through the flowerbeds, through a little group of hills and a little waterfall, a simple yet extraordinarily styled courtyard appeared in his line of sight. In the center of the courtyard was a pavilion, and in front of the pavilion stood a medium statured old man dressed entirely in purple who was currently sizing up Yun Che with a smile.

Yun Che took a step forward and said politely: "Junior Ling Yun greets senior."

Yun Che obviously would not his real name, so he casually borrowed Ling Yun's.

"Heh heh, please sit." The purple clothed elder beckoned with a hand, then went on ahead to sit on the stone bench in the middle of the pavilion. Yun Che nodded slightly and sat opposite of the elderly man. One of the young women left gracefully, and the other two broke off to either side of him with their heads slightly lowered and a light smile on their lips. Their posture was solemnly respectful, as if they were at Yun Che's disposal.

"May I ask what senior is called?" Yun Che asked.

"This old man is surnamed Zi, and simply named Ji." The old man answered with a smile.

Zi? Yun Che was somewhat taken aback, this was the first time he had ever heard of this family name, but he nodded immediately: "Senior Zi, thank you so much for speaking out and helping me earlier."

"The matter from before did not require this old man to say anything, as for helping you, it even more so cannot be considered as help. This old man merely prevented a small inconvenience for Black Moon, and nothing more." Zi Ji raised his gaze, looked Yun Che straight in the eye, and said with a smile: "Young man, should this old man call you Yun Che, or Prince Consort Yun, or the name Ling Yun, that you wished to be called?"

"..." Yun Che's expression stiffened slightly. Then, he laughed out loud and answered without the slightest of fluster: "As expected of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, your intelligence gathering ability is indeed unrivaled under heaven. Junior Yun Che trying to play tricks beneath Senior Zi's all-seeing eye is truly laughable, I hope that Senior Zi will not take offense."

"Haha," Zi Ji laughed indifferently: "Black Moon's intelligence gathering ability isn't that exaggerated. It's merely that your identity just so happens to be easy to recognize, that's all. This old man has been in touch with members of the Divine Phoenix Sect all year round, and is extremely familiar with the phoenix flame ability. Even though you did your best to suppress it, this old man still could detect a bit of phoenix aura from your body. And the only person who possess the Phoenix bloodline outside of Divine Phoenix Sect is only Prince Consort Yun of Blue Wind Nation."

The young woman who had left, returned, carrying already brewed tea. The tea's fragrance permeated everywhere, making Yun Che's state of mind relax as he smelled it. Even though he didn't really understand much about tea, he knew that the value of this tea should be extremely high. He raised the tea cup, drank a small

mouthful, and praised: "Good tea. After hearing senior's words, it seems that this junior thinking about hiding his identity would be an impossibility."

"You have concealed it with ice profound energy, unless they meticulously probed you, I'm afraid that even a Divine Phoenix Sect elder would not sense your phoenix flame ability." Zi Ji smiled: "You had lit up the violet crystal on my Black Moon's profound array, so it could even be said that your innate talent is universally shocking. Before, this old man had placed all his attention on you, otherwise, I would not detect your phoenix flame ability. However, to this old man, it doesn't seem as though you are painstakingly hiding your own identity, or else you would not have paid any attention to that Divine Phoenix Sect junior, then also unrestrainedly revealed your innate talent on that crystal stage."

"As expected of the master of Black Moon Merchant Guild's seventh floor, your insight is perceptive." Yun Che sincerely praised. On Black Moon's seventh floor, the people that this Zi Ji made contact with were all kinds of peak level figures in the Profound Sky Continent. His ability to perceive and appraise someone was absolutely not one that an ordinary person could reach. He said lightly: "This junior had previously been hunted by others all year round, and is long weary of avoiding and hiding all over the place. After half a month, junior will be up against the Divine Phoenix Sect. Since that's the case, there isn't really a need for me to be trembling in fear and be overcautious within this half a month. Not being noticed by Divine Phoenix Sect is of course the best scenario, but even if I were to be noticed, it wouldn't really matter anyway. If I was cautious about everything, wouldn't it mean that I was afraid of the Divine Phoenix Sect?"

Yun Che drained the tea in the cup in one gulp. When talking about the Divine Phoenix Sect, there was not the least bit of fear in his expression.

This kind of courage made Zi Ji secretly praise him in his heart. He

nodded, revealing his approval: "The reason why Divine Phoenix Sect did not really care enough to actively seek you out two years ago when you revealed your Phoenix bloodline and existence, is because in Divine Phoenix Sect's eyes, every profound practitioner from the six nations outside of Divine Phoenix Empire are ants unfit for them to look at. However, after talking with you for a bit, this old man suddenly feels as if Divine Phoenix Sect may perhaps have to pay dearly due to them holding you in contempt... but that cannot be now. Even though you are not the least afraid, it does not mean that you are capable of opposing the Divine Phoenix Sect's power. Your talent could be said to be extremely high, but it has not matured. You might be far stronger than what the Divine Phoenix Sect expected by many times, but it would still not be the least bit threatening."

"Junior is well aware of this point." Yun Che nodded, then proceeded to talk about the main reason why he had come here today: "The reason why this junior had come to the Black Moon Merchant Guild today is because this junior wishes to buy two things, and two intelligence, but..."

Yun Che's gaze swept the surroundings... because this place truly did not seem like a place that sold things.

Understanding what Yun Che was puzzling over, Zi Ji laughed: "Don't hesitate to just open your mouth and tell this old man whatever you need. The seventh floor is different from the first six floors. There is no difference between the first six floors and the Black Moon Merchant Guild you know of, while this place rarely has customers. Esteemed customers that come here are all personally received by this old man. Whatever an esteemed customer wants, as long as they say the word, no matter if Black Moon has it or not, as long as our esteemed customer asks for it and can afford to pay the price, Black Moon will do its utmost to fully satisfy it. If you want the little things, someone would still accompany our esteemed customer to the sixth floor."

So it's like that... Yun Che no longer hesitated as he said directly: "Of the two things this junior needs, one is a Heavenly Brahma Jade, the purer the better. The other is a completely preserved Phoenix Helianthus."

Zi Ji closed his eyes, then opened them a few breaths later. He reached out his hand to lightly stroked the purple jade ring on his finger, took out a jade box that was releasing cold air, and showed it to Yun Che: "This is the biggest, and also the purest piece of all the Heavenly Brahma Jade that Black Moon possesses."

A young woman walked forward and gently placed the ice jade case before Yun Che: "Esteemed customer, please have a look."

Yun Che no longer hesitated, and directly opened the ice jade case. From within the cold pervading mist, Yun Che saw a light piece of stone shimmering with silvery light, which contained veins that look bloodshot. Yun Che extended his left hand; after an instant of feeling about, he sensed its purity with the Sky Poison Pearl's perception... Things from Black Moon Headquarters would naturally not be fake. Yun Che immediately closed the ice jade case, and said: "Alright, may I ask senior to state a price?"

"Heavenly Brahma Jade is six hundred purple profound coins per fifty grams. This Heavenly Brahma Jade weighs six hundred fifty grams, and needs seven thousand eight hundred purple profound coins." Zi Ji nonchalantly quoted a price.

The hell, so expensive! The corner of Yun Che's mouth twitched, but he had a huge sum of ten million purple profound coins on him, so he certainly could afford it. Immediately after, he took out seven thousand eight hundred purple profound coins from his Purple Gold Card. Then, he put the Heavenly Brahma Jade inside the Sky Poison Pearl.

"As for the Phoenix Helianthus, the last thirteen Phoenix Helianthus Black Moon possessed had just been all bought by Divine Phoenix Sect six hours ago." Zi Ji said: "If you urgently need them, outside of

Black Moon, there is actually another place where you could buy it."

"Where?"

Zi Ji said slowly: "One hundred fifty kilometers south of here is a merchant guild called the 'Falling Flame Merchant Guild'. Tomorrow, at three in the afternoon, they ought to be auctioning out precious materials, among them is precisely the Phoenix Helianthus."

Yun Che nodded "Junior has taken note of this, I thank senior for telling me this... Er, do I have to pay for this information?"

"Hoho, no need." Zi Ji laughed faintly, then reminded: "However, even though the Falling Flame Merchant Guild is called a 'merchant guild', it is actually a black market. The things it sells are also unofficial public sales, once you get there, you'll understand. But this old man believes that with your wisdom, you probably would not suffer a loss. Now, what are the two pieces of intelligence you wanted?"

"This junior hopes that Black Moon will help me look for the whereabouts of two individuals." Yun Che stated grimly: "Of the two, one is named Chu Yuechan, formerly a disciple of Blue Wind Nation's Frozen Cloud Asgard, head of the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies. The other is Xia Yuanba..."

Yun Che described the two to Zi Ji in as much detail as he could. Zi Ji slightly closed his eyes, remembered everything, then said while nodding: "This old man will personally dispatch people for intelligence on these two people. Only, Black Moon's relay network in Blue Wind Nation is thinly spread out, so it would be hard to guarantee swift news within the short term. Leave behind your sound transmission imprint. After possessing solid information, this old man will immediately contact you. Since you are an esteemed customer, there is no need for you to pay for the intelligence in advance. At the date of confirmation, we can settle the bill. Among the two, even though this old man does not know the whereabouts of Xia Yuanba, this old man does know a few matters concerning him, and can tell you a thing or two."

Stunned, Yun Che immediately stood up: "You know Yuanba?"

"Not only do I know him, many people within Divine Phoenix City know of this name as well." Zi Ji said slowly: "Back then, his name had actually resounded within half of Divine Phoenix City for a short period of time, he was a crazy madman. But shortly after, he suddenly disappeared without a trace. Not long after his disappearance, his father had also come rushing over to Divine Phoenix City, and actually stayed within this Black Moon Headquarters... Heh heh, if this old man has not remembered wrong, Xia Yuanba's father, Xia Hongyi, should also be one of your father-in-laws, right?"

=====

Chapter 404 – Ghost Mirage Sacred Hand

“Uncle Xia... in Black Moon Headquarters? Here?” Yun Che was stunned. Half a year ago, after he returned to Floating Cloud City, he had first went to Xia Manor, and found out that Xia Hongyi had left a long time ago to search for Xia Yuanba, who had not been sending any letters. The servant who had remained at Xia Clan told him that Xia Hongyi had taken out something shaped like a black crescent moon when he was tidying things up... At that time, he suspected it was a thing related to the Black Moon Merchant Guild, and if that was so, then he assumed that Xia Hongyi was probably searching for Xia Yuanba through the Black Moon Merchant Guild.

He never expected that he had actually remained within this Black Moon Merchant Guild.

And this was not just a Black Moon branch that could be found throughout the Profound Sky... it was the legendary Black Moon Headquarters!

Someone that was able to stay here was definitely not an ordinary figure. The relationship between Xia Hongyi and Black Moon Merchant Guild was in no way simple.

“If you wish to see him, this old man can personally bring you to him now. He’ll surely be delighted to see you.” Zi Ji said with a chuckle.

Yun Che’s expression became incomparably complex. After being silent for a long while, he slowly sat down and said: “Has Uncle Xia been doing well here?”

“Only he himself knows if he’s been doing well or not. But at least here, everything is stable, and he would not be bullied by anyone.” Zi Ji replied.

Yun Che nodded, and said half to himself: “Then that’s good. Knowing that Uncle Xia is safe and sound relieves me... I was the one who took Yuanba to Blue Wind Profound Palace, and it was also me,

who took him to Heavenly Sword Villa. If he had remained in New Moon City, the things that happened afterwards would not have occurred. Without having found Yuanba yet, I don't have the face to see him... Senior Zi, talk to me about Yuanba. This junior could not be any more clearer about his strength, so how could he have shocked half of Divine Phoenix City?"

"Two years ago, a youth from another nation arrived in Divine Phoenix City. After the first day he arrived, as well as every other day after that, he went to challenge those famous sects within the city."

"He... challenged sects?"

"Yes. Unfortunately, his profound strength cultivation was too low, and was easily injured severely by the other party. But on the second day, he continued to challenge the sect with a body full of injuries. The outcome, was obviously injury upon injuries. On the third day, he still went to challenge that sect, and had actually been struck to the brink of death due to the other party's impatience... Even though his profound strength was feeble, his physique was exceptionally abnormal. He was obviously near death with heavily injuries, but on the next day, he still was able to stand up, and dropped in once more to challenge them. There was even one time when the other party had beaten two enormous bloody holes on his body, yet he still didn't die. At first, everyone thought that he was a lunatic, but as the days and months passed, no one considered him to be a madman anymore. It was not rarely to see someone who strongly pursued strength, but being strongly attached to that extent, even if it's this old man, it was the first time ever."

Yun Che: "..."

"In the three months he had stayed in Divine Phoenix City, his body was riddled with heavy injuries everyday. There was practically no place on his body that was left intact, but he still dragged his heavily injured body and went to seek out opponents that he simply could not defeat. Among the ones he had challenged, there were inevitably a few impatient ones, or perhaps malicious ones who wished to put

him to death, but no matter what kind of heavy injury he received, he had actually never died. In those three months, the people's view of him changed from ridicule to that of shock, until that day after three months when he suddenly disappeared from Divine Phoenix City. There was not the slightest trace of him even until today, so he has probably been forgotten already. However, this old man believes that he was not secretly harmed by another, otherwise, he would never have escaped Black Moon's eye."

Yun Che's heart became incomparably complex. Even though Xia Yuanba was especially tall and appeared to make one feel oppressed, under Xia Hongyi's nurture, he had an especially gentle temperament and a simple nature. Furthermore, he was always unwilling to fight against others. However, the Xia Yuanba described by Zi Ji was actually a lunatic, through and through. He was very clear on the reason why Xia Yuanba had suddenly changed...

"...Senior Zi, thank you for telling me all these. I'll be troubling you with everything else." Yun Che said while standing up.

Zi Ji also stood up right after, and said with a laugh: "No need to be polite, it is our Black Moon's honor to have the privilege of servicing our esteemed customers."

Yun Che understood why Zi Ji was so courteous to him. Since the Black Moon Merchant Guild had developed up to today, it naturally had an established reason for its existence. Toward those with extremely high innate talent that might possible rank within the Profound Sky's peak experts, Black Moon naturally would show preferential treatment. Not only would their service be at its utmost respectful, they were even eager to make the other party owe them a debt of gratitude.

"Oh right," Yun Che suddenly thought of another matter: "I don't know if Senior Zi has heard of the 'Netherworld Udumbara Flower?'"

The Netherworld Udumbara Flower was one of the three items Jasmine needed within thirty years. She needed a Netherworld

Udumbara Flower, three Tyrant Profound Beast Cores, and thirty-five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals.

"Netherworld Udumbara Flower?" A pondering look emerged on Zi Ji's face. After a short while, he said slowly: "This old man knows of this flower, it is an extremely yin, demonic, and evil item. It only grows within extremely wicked places, and would only bloom once every twenty four years, then wither three days later. This flower is frightening, let alone touch it, just being near it would allow the netherworld's aura invade one's body, and damage the soul. If the effect was light, it would make one lose consciousness, if heavy, it would make one a living dead person, even so much that one would lose their life. Apart from this, I have never heard of any positive value to this flower. Why are you looking for this flower?"

"Junior naturally has a special use for it, if senior knows where one is, I'd like it if you'll inform me about that as well."

Zi Ji thought for a while, then shook his head: "The last written record of a Netherworld Udumbara Flower was one thousand three hundred years ago. After that, there were no more written accounts nor rumors about it. The human race within the Profound Sky Continent is continuously increasing, nowadays, there are more than four times the number of people since a thousand years ago. As a result, the yang energy of the entire continent has greatly surpassed the yin, perhaps the Netherworld Udumbara Flower has thus become extinct in the Profound Sky Continent."

"...I thank senior for telling me this, this junior shall take his leave."

After unexpectedly learning about some news concerning Xia Yuanba, even if it made his mood a bit heavy, it had at least comforted him somewhat... No wonder he was never able to find any signs of Xia Yuanba within Blue Wind's borders, it turned out that he had actually come to the Divine Phoenix Empire after leaving Heavenly Sword Villa.

In terms of profound strength level, Divine Phoenix Empire was after

all, a place that was far higher than Blue Wind. Did he come here to seek strength in his extreme sorrow and self-blame...?

And Little Fairy, where exactly are you anyway...

Divine Phoenix Sect.

The date of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament grew closer and closer. Feng Xichen's mood also became more and more impatient by the day. The scene of that day's humiliation never stopped upsetting his mental state. After he had finally informed Feng Ximing about the Yun Che related matter yesterday, he had become even more restless.

Because what he had described to Feng Ximing was a world of difference from the truth that happened several months ago. Even though he was certain that Divine Phoenix Sect would absolutely not pardon Yun Che if he were to truly come to Divine Phoenix City, he was unable to worry about Yun Che possibly mentioning the events of that day during the ranking tournament. If the events of that day were to be made public in front of thousands of eyes, the brand of humiliation would not only be carved into his soul, it would be carved onto his face from then on.

The door was pushed open, and a tall figure, accompanied by a scorching heatwave, stepped in. The anxious Feng Xicheng quickly turned around. Just as he was about to get angry, when he saw who had come in, his surging fury was panicky taken back, and he hurriedly made a frontal salutation: "This son greets royal father."

"You may rise." Feng Hengkong lifted his hand, and got straight to the point: "Ximing has already told us in detail about what you had experienced in Blue Wind Nation a few months ago. Although you have concealed it till this day, it is still pardonable, we are not here to blame you."

Feng Xicheng said hurriedly: "This son thanks royal father for his kindness... It's just that, even though royal father does not blame me, this son nevertheless feels even more ashamed and unresigned."

"Hmph!" Feng Hengkong's face filled with rage: "We also never thought that a little Blue Wind Emperor would actually have such guts! Rest assured, in not even three years, we shall retrieve back ten million times the humiliation you received in Blue Wind for you! At that time, you will be handling the punishment of that Blue Wind Emperor. As for that Yun Che brat... Hmph, didn't he say that he was participating in the ranking tournament? Very good, we just so happen to be waiting to see how he'll tumble!"

Feng Xicheng was half delighted and half in panic: "This son thanks royal father for his deep generosity... This son's humiliation is but a small matter, but the matter of our Divine Phoenix Sect's bloodline is even larger than the sky. How about taking care of that Yun Che in secret before the ranking tournament?"

"No need!" Feng Hengkong swung his hand and said in extreme disdain: "How is a little profound practitioner from Blue Wind fit to be especially targeted by our Divine Phoenix Sect in secret? That's simply lowering our Divine Phoenix Sect's status! The Seven Nation Ranking Tournament has always been our Divine Phoenix Sect's show, if there is no source of laughter and sense of balance, it would be quite dull! We actually hope that this Yun Che could display a little color when that time comes, and not let us down."

"What royal father has said is extremely true." Feng Xicheng said while lowering his head.

"Xicheng, what is the result of the theft in Phoenix Jade Hall we have told you to investigate?" As he mentioned this matter, Feng Hengkong's complexion changed to become distinctively overcast.

"This son has discovered the person behind the theft..."

Just as Feng Xicheng was in the middle of speaking, Feng Hengkong

fiercely turned around: "Who is it! Who exactly is this audacious, to dare steal from our Divine Phoenix Sect!"

The reason why he was furious, was not merely due to this person's audacity, but rather due to his astonishment, because this thief could be said to have a terrifying ability. What kind of place was his Divine Phoenix Sect? Let alone an outsider, even if it was a mere winged insect, it would quickly be detected. But this thief, who was not sensed by anyone, stole into Phoenix Jade Hall, where all kinds of treasures were stored... If it weren't for the fact that he had inattentively touched an invisible profound formation during his theft, it could even be said that no one would've known that someone had already infiltrated Phoenix Jade Hall.

What astonished him even more was that after the thief had activated the profound formation, which made all the experts in the sect become more vigilant, the thief had actually left with not the slightest of injuries under the heavy encirclement of innumerable phoenix experts... For this, even if it was a genuine Overlord, it was still nigh impossible to achieve...

"Royal father, please calm your anger... There is only person in the entire Divine Phoenix Empire who is able to accomplish this..." Feng Xichen raised his head, continuing with locked brows: "Hua Minghai."

"Hua Minghai?" Feng Hengkong had on an overcast expression, but quickly reacted over: "'Ghost Mirage Sacred Hand' Hua Minghai!?"

"Yes!" Feng Xichen nodded: "In this world, there is only one person who can accomplish that. Hua Minghai's profound strength is not too great, but his speed and movement skills could be said to be peerless. Moreover, his ability to be extremely good at concealment, moving stealthily, changing his appearance, being soundless, and being good at escaping is unrivaled..."

"No need to speak any further." Feng Hengkong waved a hand: "We have also heard of this name. Known as the 'number one thief in the world', Hua Minghai, who possesses a 'ghost mirage sacred hand'! It

has been said that no matter what he stole, he had never made a mistake, let alone be captured by anyone. Even his true appearance has never been seen by anyone. Hmph... but we never thought that this thief would actually be audacious enough to provoke our Divine Phoenix Sect! Does he truly think that no one in this world is able to deal with him?!"

=====

Chapter 405 – Underground Auction

“Did you check what items the Phoenix Jade Hall have lost?” Feng Hengkong said with furrowed brows.

Feng Xicheng respectfully replied: “What Hua Minghai stole the most were usually Purple Veined Heaven Crystals and Purple Veined Divine Crystals, however, the Purple Veined Heaven Crystals and Purple Veined Divine Crystals within the Phoenix Jade Hall did not decrease in the slightest, but... we are missing a half used stalk of Phoenix Helianthus. I’m assuming that it’s because the thief was in a panicked state after touching the protective profound formation, and randomly took any item before hurriedly escaping.”

“Half a Phoenix Helianthus?” Even though Phoenix Helianthus were rare, to Divine Phoenix Sect, they were not considered that precious of an item. Feng Hengkong snorted coldly: “Even though nothing really went missing, just the fact that he dared to charge into our Divine Phoenix Sect has brought upon his own destruction. From this day forth, investigate all tracks of Hua Minghai within the entire empire. It’s best if he were to be brought back alive, but if it’s difficult to capture him alive, kill him on the spot!”

“Yes! This son shall immediately give out the order. Even if that Hua Minghai has a heaven high ability, he should still never think about escaping the palms of our Divine Phoenix Sect.” Feng Xichen promised.

“Then this matter shall be given to you to handle. Whether or not Hua Minghai is able to safely enter and leave our Divine Phoenix, is worthy of being your test! Don’t let us down.”

“Yes, royal father, this son will definitely not let you down.”

Just as Feng Hengkong turned around to leave, his footsteps stopped at the doorway, and he said casually: “Before the start of the ranking tournament, Xue’er will be cultivating in seclusion within Phoenix

Perching Valley. No matter who it is, even if it's for an enormous matter, they are not allowed to take half a step in the surrounding twenty five kilometers around Phoenix Perching Valley! However, we are still a bit worried. When you are investigating Hua Minghai, arrange a few guards around the east, west, and north directions of Phoenix Perching Valley. Don't let anyone approach. If anyone dares to bother Xue'er, no matter who it is, kill them on sight!"

"Yes, this son will immediately carry out the order."

After Feng Hengkon left, Feng Xichen heaved a slight breath of relief. After a long period of silence, he once again became agitated. He paced back and forth in the hall for several tens of times before finally speaking with a low voice while creasing his brows: "Chihuo, come in!"

A streak of flame flashed, and a middle aged man around fifty or so years old appeared in front of Feng Xichen as if he had teleported there. He bowed: "Your Highness, what are your instructions?"

"Leave the palace at once, and go secretly search for a person named 'Yun Che' in Divine Phoenix City! He's here to participate in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, and he'll definitely appear within half a month... in fact, he may already be here. If you find him, assassinate him immediately... Remember, the more secretly you do it, the better. After you kill him, immediately destroy his corpse, it's best if you leave no traces behind!" Feng Xichen said with an extremely evil expression.

"Yes, Your Highness." Feng Chihuo nodded in answer.

"Remember, aside from you and me, no one is to know about this! Including my royal father." Feng Xichen's expression became grave.

Shock flashed past Feng Chihuo's face, then, he nodded without the slightest hesitation: "This old servant will not disappoint Your Highness... This old servant shall take his leave."

When Fen Chihuo left, Feng Xichen clenched both his hands as a sinister light of hatred flickered in his eyes. He said in a low voice: "Yun Che... Not being able to personally kill you myself, truly would make it hard for me to dispel my hatred! But you must die before the ranking tournament! Once Blue Wind Nation is exterminated, that time's humiliation shall also be eternally buried beneath my feet!"

The next day, Yun Che arrived at Divine Phoenix City's Falling Flame Merchant Guild as per Zi Ji's directions.

Only after he had arrived did Yun Che discover that this place was indeed as Zi Ji had said it was. Even though the name hung up ahead said "Merchant Guild", it was not at all an orthodox merchant guild. Truthfully speaking, it resembled an underground market! And it wasn't that big either. This stretch of area contained many similar type underground markets, and they all hung up the word "Merchant Guild."

However, as long as he could buy a Phoenix Helianthus, it wasn't really important whether it was a merchant guild or a black market.

From a dark remote alley, Yun Che saw the signboard engraved with the words "Falling Flame Merchant Guild". Beneath the signboard gracefully stood a young woman in the prime of her youth. Seeing Yun Che approach, she took the initiative to welcome him: "Sir, are you here to participate in Falling Flame's auction?"

"Yes, I'd like to ask miss to lead the way." Yun Che said naturally. Back in Azure Cloud Continent, he had attended many black markets before. These sort of black markets were all places that pulled people in to make transactions, at the same time, they required one to pay a high "admission fee".

The escorting young woman stated: "Today's Falling Flame Auction will be selling many rare treasures, so the admission fee is a bit higher than usual. It costs twenty purple profound coins."

Twenty didn't sound that high... but it was twenty purple profound coins, a full two hundred thousand yellow profound coins! And it was even just the "admission fee"!

Yun Che didn't say anything further as he happily handed over twenty purple profound coins... The young lady in front of him absolutely would never think that there were millions upon millions of yellow profound coins on Yun Che's chest.

"Sir, please follow me."

The young woman accepted the purple profound coins, then brought Yun Che into a dark alley. After taking several turns on multiple roads, they walked into a concealed underground area. It was not wide, and there were only a total of thirty to forty chairs. At this time, around twenty something people were seated in a scattered fashion. Even though this place was remote and concealed, none of the clothes these people wore were not extremely luxurious... Those who were willing pay the high admission fee of twenty purple profound coins were in no way from a simple family.

When Yun Che came in, everyone present gave him a glance, one after the other. After perceiving that he was only at the Earth Profound Realm, their faces all revealed expressions of disdain. Then, they all turned their heads without bothering to take another look. Earth Profound Realm at not even the age of twenty was a rarely seen genius in Blue Wind Nation, but in Divine Phoenix Empire, it could only be reduced to a low-class individual. In the eyes of these upper class boosters, it was simply not worth mentioning.

Yun Che obviously did not bother to take note of anyone here, as he randomly picked a place to sit.

After Yun Che, no one else came in. Not long after, a charming voice came over: "Sirs, we have made you wait for a long time."

A hidden door opened, and a well-developed graceful woman slowly walked out. Following behind her, was a gray haired elderly man.

The woman wore a close-fitting black garment that revealed every inch of her curves, her beautiful eyes were like peach blossoms, bright and limpid as she looked at everyone present, and nearly stole their souls.

"Yo... my little Qi Qi, you're finally here. I've been anxiously waiting for you." A blue clothed young man stood up. His eyes fixed at the young woman, casting amorous glances her way.

"Hehe, hehe..." The woman covered her lips and giggled, then said charmingly: "Sir Gongsun is always this impatient. This one promises everyone that today's treasures would not let anyone down. Sirs, you all should widen your eyes and watch me properly. Once we start bidding, don't ever show mercy! Oh, right, Sirs who have come for the first time, this humble one is Xiao Qi, Falling Flame Auction's host. You'll have to visit often in the future, and come see me, okay?"

This Xiao Qi woman's words were flirtatious, and her posture was alluring. Even though the men present still wore a deadpan look, their fingers fidgeted, and they secretly salivated. If one were to speak about those who were truly as calm as before, it would only be Yun Che alone... because the difference between his two wives and this enchantress was just too wide. She didn't even arouse his male instinct, nor did she pique any of his interest.

"Has this lord ever let little Qi Qi down before?" The young man called "Sir Gongsun" gazed lustfully at Xiao Qi: "I just don't know if you, little Qi Qi, is one of the treasures up for auction today? If yes, even if this lord has to lose all his property, he'll still gladly make the purchase."

"Hehe, Sir Gongsun's so bad." Xiao Qi held out her hand to cover her mouth, and gave Sir Gongsun an extremely flirtatious glance which directly made his entire body go limp.

Ten thousand grass mud horses galloped through Yun Che's heart. (TL: Grass Mud Horse (草泥马) is a homophone of Motherf*cker (操你妈), thus used as a pun here. It has developed into a slang

nowadays.)

The auction then finally got back on topic. Xiao Qi extended a dark green jade case from the elderly man behind her. With both hands clasped on the jade case, her charming eyes swept past everyone present. She said with a laugh: "In this jade case, are two Purple Crystal Jade Marrows which contain the purest essence of an enormous purple crystal mine. If you use one to drive a profound ark, one Purple Crystal Jade Marrow could fuel a fifty thousand kilogram profound ark for two hundred hours. If you meld it onto a weapon with spiritual conscious, it could raise the weapon's intelligence by a lot, you know."

Purple Crystal Jade Marrow... could increase a weapon's spiritual conscious?

Yun Che's heart suddenly stirred. His Dragon Fault was exactly an Emperor Profound Weapon with a spiritual conscious, but its intelligence was not that high. Currently, it could only automatically return if it left his hand, and release a dragon cry if it was angry. If it possessed a stronger spiritual conscious, he would undoubtedly gain a great benefit.

He had only come for the Phoenix Helianthus, and never expected that he would run into this Purple Crystal Jade Marrow. Even though this underground auction was small, the things it sold were extremely remarkable, no wonder the admission fee was that high.

"Oh! It's actually the Purple Crystal Jade Marrow!" That young man with the surname Gongsun revealed an excited expression: "This lord has been looking for this item for quite a while, I'd never thought that little Qi Qi has it in hand, and it's even two of them... As expected of my little Qi Qi! Quick, speak. What is the lowest price for these two Purple Crystal Jade Marrows?"

As Xiao Qi held onto the jade case her charming eyes narrowed into thin slits: "Six hundred purple profound coins. Sir Gongsun ought to understand the preciousness of the Purple Crystal Jade Marrow, so

this price shouldn't be considered expensive, right?"

"Six hundred... Mn, this price is indeed generous." The young man surnamed Gongsun beamed, then executed a half turn while cupping his fists toward his surroundings: "Friends, this humble one is Holy Sword Sect's Gongsun Yu, I urgently need this Purple Crystal Jade Marrow to raise my beloved sword's spiritual conscious, and wish that every friend here can be generous enough to allow this humble one to have it."

Once the words "Holy Sword Sect's Gongsun Yu" came out, the expressions of many at the scene immediately changed, and the thoughts of bidding against him were also immediately pushed down. Holy Sword Sect could not compare with Divine Phoenix Sect, but it was also one of the famous sects within Divine Phoenix Empire, and a lord that should not be provoked within Divine Phoenix City. And this Gongsun Yi was also the youngest son of the current Holy Sword Sect Master.

A lazy voice sounded at this time: "Lil' bro Gongsun, since it's an auction, obviously the highest bidder would win. If you play like that, how's Miss Xiao Qi going to do business? Miss Xiao Qi isn't saying anything, but I can't bear to look on."

Gongsun Yu was not at all angry upon hearing these words. Instead, he laughed heartily, and cupped a hand toward the person who had spoken: "Brother Nalan's right, this little brother was only momentarily delighted, and was somewhat overexcited. This absolutely won't happen again."

Once the word Nalan was heard, the faces of everyone present changed once more... The Nalan Family was also one of the big shots within Divine Phoenix City, and were even thousand year old friends with Holy Sword Sect. The one who spoke was personally named Nalan Xiong, his status within the Nalan Family was also incomparable great. He seemed to be reprimanding Gongsun Yu, but in fact, they were using the fame of their two families to exert pressure on others present, firmly making them not dare to bid

against Gongsun Yu.

"Two Purple Crystal Jade Marrows for six hundred purple profound coins, I'll take it." Gongsun Yu said with a face full of smiles.

And at this time, an extremely ordinary, yet inharmonious voice suddenly sounded from one corner: "Seven hundred purple profound coins."

Gongsun Yu's brows suddenly tightened. He turned his head around, and his gaze landed on Yun Che's body. He swept a glance at Yun Che's profound strength cultivation, then, his eyes flashed with deep disdain... but if the other party was brave enough to bid against him, they might be from an illustrious family, so he didn't dare to rashly offend him as he said without sounding upset: "Friend, it seems that you are not going to give me, Gongsun Yu, this face?"

Yun Che laughed faintly: "What I want is the Purple Crystal Jade Marrow, what does that have to do with your face?"

The corner of Gongsun Yu's mouth twitched. His complexion distinctly darkened as he sneered: "What you're saying is quite right, an auction's fight relies on strength, not face. Since you also want to obtain this Purple Crystal Jade Marrow, then we'll have to see if you have that ability... One thousand purple profound coins!"

=====

Chapter 406 – Phoenix Helianthus

Gongsun Yu raised the price to one thousand purple profound coins in a single breath, then glared at Yun Che. If this was an auction in the Black Moon Merchant Guild, he would never dare to have the slightest bit of arrogance, but in this underground auction, with his Holy Sword Sect's fame, he felt supremely qualified to be arrogant and overbearing. He absolutely did not expect that a mere Earth Profound Realm would dare to challenge his bid after his warning.

With Holy Sword Sect's fame added to his great wealth and sudden increase in bid price, he thought that Yun Che would definitely be deterred, and did not expect the other party's expression to not change at all as he called out with incomparable calm: "Eleven hundred purple profound coins!"

Casually calling out a bid more than a thousand purple profound coins was definitely not something one could do without a deep and powerful background. As a son of the Sect Master of Holy Sword Sect, Gongsun Yu received about twenty thousand profound coins yearly, which was necessary for an entire year's worth of training needs. Taking out one thousand to buy the two pieces of Purple Crystal Jade Marrow was already his limit, and had furthermore significantly exceeded the value of the Purple Crystal Jade Marrow. But having acted arrogantly before, yet was now mercilessly counterbided, wouldn't all his face be thrown away if he allowed himself to be so easily suppressed?

Gongsun Yu gritted his teeth anxiously, but maintained a calm facade as he called out: "Twelve hundred purple profound coins."

"Fifteen hundred! Without the slightest pause or hesitation, Yun Che called out right after Gongsun Yu's bid.

The faces of everyone in the room changed slightly, and Xiao Qi beamed like a flowering crabapple blossom. Previously she did not place much attention on Yun Che, but now the gaze she used upon

Yun Che was tender, and her beautiful eyes almost started tearing up.

Gongsun Yu's face finally became unsightly. Fifteen hundred purple profound coins was his expenditure for an entire month. Using that money to purchase two Purple Crystal Jade Marrows would have far surpassed his bottom line. Purple Veined Heaven Crystals were the purest of essence bred by purple profound crystal mines, and Purple Crystal Jade Marrows were only secondary. Fifteen hundred purple profound coins was enough to buy fifty grams of Purple Veined Heaven Crystals, so buying this purple crystal stone marrow was simply throwing away money.

He turned around and said with a fake smile: "Friend, judging by how heroic you are, I assume that you your family must be quite illustrious. It's not as if this one is saying that he knows of every prominent family within Divine Phoenix City, but I probably know most of them, yet you are very unfamiliar. Are you from outside the city? Oh, judging by your attire, could you be a friend from one of the six nations?"

Yun Che obviously knew what this Gongsun Yu was intending to do. He inwardly sneered, and did not avoid the question as he directly answered: "Your assumption is correct. I am not a Divine Phoenix citizen, and instead is from the east Blue Wind Nation. But me coming from there doesn't really have anything to do with this auction, right?"

Blue Wind citizen?

Everyone in the room had originally been guessing at where Yun Che had come from. They thought that since he had been so liberal with his money and was not afraid of challenging Gongsun Yu, his family background ought to be extraordinary. Now that they had heard he was actually from Blue Wind Nation, there were none who did not reveal expressions of extreme disdain, even so much that some had expressions of mockery. As citizens of Divine Phoenix Nation, they had an instinctive contempt for those of other nations. Furthermore,

of the six nations, Blue Wind was the weakest. In their eyes, a Blue Wind citizen would always be people of a lower class.

"Oh... Oh! Hahahaha, looks like it's a friend from Blue Wind Nation." Gongsun Yu immediately laughed wildly as his previous unpleasant feeling of being suppressed by Yun Che was instantaneously swept clean: "No wonder you're so set on this Purple Crystal Jade Marrow, I'm assuming you've never seen such a high quality treasure in your Blue Wind Nation, right? Since that's the case, then this one is obviously willing to give way... only this one is a bit curious, what do you need Purple Crystal Jade Marrows for? Could it be that your reason is the same as mine, to raise the spiritual conscious of your weapon? Oh, no, in your Blue Wind Nation, a Sky Profound Weapon ought to be the most valuable of treasures, so you can't really use these Purple Crystal Jade Marrows for that. Besides, your profound strength is only at the Earth Profound Realm, hehe, it seems unlikely that you can even control a Sky Profound Weapon... As for being the power source of a profound ark... Eh? Blue Wind Nation actually has someone who is able to afford to operate a profound ark?"

The room immediately filled with unrestrained roars of laughter. In front of a Blue Wind citizen, even those at the lowest position would involuntarily have a kind of superior feeling. Why would they need to conceal their contempt for a lower class person?

After announcing that he was a Blue Wind citizen, Yun Che obviously knew that this kind of scene would arise. There was not a single change in his expression, and without bothering to talk rubbish with these people, he took out fifteen hundred purple profound coins, then received the jade case that contained two pieces of Purple Crystal Jade Marrow from Xiao Qi's hands. Purple Crystal Jade Marrows of good quality were only produced from large purple crystal mines, and possessed a fixed amount of natural spiritual nature, so they ought to be able to increase a weapon's spiritual conscious. It was just unknown as to how much of an extent it could raise. If the effects were distinct, then he'll try to get some more.

And the following item for auction was the reason why Yun Che had come!

Xiao Qi took a jade case from the elderly man behind her, and said with a face full of smiles: "The second treasure is a medicinal ingredient. Even though it isn't as grand as the Purple Crystal Jade Marrow, it's actually more uncommon than the Purple Crystal Jade Marrow, you know."

As she said that, Xiao Qi had already opened the jade case, and a flame shaped plant appeared in their line of sight with a flickering red radiance. Right after, the jade case was immediately closed, to prevent its medicinal aura from leaking.

"Oh, it's actually a Phoenix Helianthus!" Someone exclaimed.

Hearing the two words "Phoenix Helianthus", Yun Che's gaze landed atop that jade case.. Looks like he could leave early.

"Right, this is the Phoenix Helianthus, and it's even one that has just matured, a Phoenix Helianthus without the slightest of damage, you know." Xiao Qi said while beaming: "Everyone here should know that not only is the Phoenix Helianthus used in medicine, used to refine the meridians, and temporarily open profound entrances, it also greatly helps those who cultivate in fire attribute profound arts break any bottlenecks. It's just that once a Phoenix Helianthus appears, they're always immediately taken away by Divine Phoenix Sect. And this one that I'm holding is the only Phoenix Helianthus in Divine Phoenix Empire that's not of the Divine Phoenix Sect. You wouldn't even be able to buy one in the Black Moon Merchant Guild... So, sirs, you mustn't miss this opportunity! Otherwise, you'll have to wait until next year at around this time to have the chance to buy it again."

Xiao Qi's words sounds somewhat exaggerated, but Yun Che knew that it was not at all false, because he had went to Black Moon Merchant Guild yesterday, and the Phoenix Helianthus was indeed not there. After Xiao Qi finished speaking, he immediately called out:

“What’s the minimum price?”

Xiao Qi’s liquid eyes slightly shifted in Yun Che’s direction, she said softly: “Looks like this sir from Blue Wind Nation is also very interested in this Phoenix Helianthus. The minimum price for this Phoenix Helianthus is one thousand purple profound coins.”

Even though Phoenix Helianthus were rare, they were absolutely not first-rate medicine. Furthermore, in terms of using it in medicine, it was extremely troublesome and had a high leakage rate. In regards to those who cultivate in fire attribute profound arts, it wasn’t exactly that useful, so the price of a thousand purple profound coins was indeed too high. It was evident that the sky high price was due to it being “the last Phoenix Helianthus”, so those in the room did not show the least bit interest. But as soon as Xiao Qi finished her sentence, Yun Che followed up: “Two thousand purple profound coins, I’ll take it!”

With ten million purple profound coins at his disposal, Yun Che’s confidence was incomparably ample. He only wanted to quickly take this Phoenix Helianthus, and didn’t want to waste any more time... the ranking tournament would start in half a month. To him, every minute and every second was extremely precious.

“The hell!” Many people at the scene muttered out.

Spent one thousand five hundred profound coins to buy two pieces of Purple Crystal Jade Marrow... and now readily buying one Phoenix Helianthus for two thousand purple profound coins...

Was this Blue Wind brat rich or was his brain messed up!?

After announcing that it was one thousand purple profound coins, Xiao Qi was extremely nervous at heart, because she knew that this price was indeed a bit too high. But she never expected that as soon as she finished speaking, the price would directly double! She instantly burst with joy, and even her face had become brighter. “To have immediately bid two thousand purple profound coins, this sir

from Blue Wind Nation is indeed magnanimous. This one just so happens to like this type of gentleman... Is there anyone else who wishes to put forth a higher price? This is this year's last Phoenix Helianthus, you know. If you miss this opportunity, even if you have even more money, you can't buy anymore..."

The others were all quiet... What a joke, aside from a fire attribute profound art reaching a bottleneck or someone urgently needing to refine an important medicine, who would spend more than two thousand purple profound coins to buy a stalk of Phoenix Helianthus? Seeing that no one replied, Xiao Qi walked toward Yun Che while beaming: "Congratulations, Sir. This Phoenix Helianthus is yours, you'd better hold properly!"

Yun Che cleanly handed over two thousand purple profound coins, and then took the jade case containing the Phoenix Helianthus... With the Phoenix Helianthus in his possession, today's objective had already been reached. What came next, was only him finding a place to refine the Universal Pellet with the Sky Poison Pearl. After that, he would use two or three days to refine it. His profound strength ought to reach the pinnacle of the Earth Profound Realm, which would greatly help when he faced off against the Divine Phoenix Sect.

As for the things being sold next, he was no longer interested. Just as Yun Che was preparing to leave, a loud laughter came from outside: "Hahahaha! Miss Xiao Qi, I'm so sorry, I met a few people who didn't have their eyes opened on the road, so I taught them a little lesson, which is why I'm late. I hope Miss Xiao Qi doesn't take offense."

This sound was thick and heavy, and was clearly filled with might. Following the sound of this voice, a tall and sturdy figure wearing light armor strided in. This person appeared to be around thirty years old, even though his build could not compare with Xia Yuanba's, it was still especially burly. Especially his exposed muscles, each and every one of them bulged up high, and they seemed to flicker with a luster similar to that of metal, making those who had only used their eyes to glance upon him feel an explosive strength.

His hair was red, and each of its strands stood erect towards the sky like an ignited flame. His body also emitted a thick aura of a fire attribute profound art.

As soon as this tall man appeared, the faces of everyone in the room distinctively changed, even the expression of the previously arrogant Gongsun Yu tightened, revealing a deep fear.

When Xiao Qi saw this person, it was as if she saw her biological father. All her facial features beamed with a smile as she gracefully moved up to welcome him: "Aiyo! Sir Zhi, what're you saying? You coming here is an honor built by all of this one's lifetime incarnations, how could I possibly blame you... Come, Sir Zhi, quickly come up and have a seat. The auction has only just begun, the highlight of today has not come yet. I believe Sir Zhi would definitely be interested in today's highlight, you definitely did not come here in vain!"

"Who's this guy that's so arrogant looking?" A person seated to Yun Che's right asked his companion in a low voice.

"Didn't you hear Miss Xiao Qi call him 'Sir Zhi'? He's obviously someone from Roasting Sun Sect!"

"What! Roasting Sun Sect? Divine Phoenix Empire's number two sect, second only to the Divine Phoenix Sect?"

"Right! This person is named Zhi Yan, seventh young master of Roasting Sun Sect! His innate talent is extremely monstrous. He's only twenty eight this year, and is already half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm. It has even been said that he's already going for the Emperor Profound Realm! In Divine Phoenix Empire, aside from the Divine Phoenix Sect, there is no one who would dare provoke him."

"The highlight Miss Xiao Qi speaks of obviously needs to be seen, but the main reason why this young master came here today is for the Phoenix Helianthus in Miss Xiao Qi's hands." Zhi Yan said loftily: "This

young master's Emperor Profound bottleneck has already loosened, and breaking through is near at hand. I urgently need a Phoenix Helianthus to assist me, but that wretch Divine Phoenix Sect has already swept up all the Phoenix Helianthus. Fortunately, Miss Xiao Qi just happens to have one here. This Phoenix Helianthus, this young master here is taking it for sure. If anyone wants to fight over it with this young master... hehe."

What kind of person Zhi Yan was had nothing to do with Yun Che. He had already gotten up from his seat and was about to turn around and leave, but once he heard the two words "Phoenix Helianthus" from Zhi Yan's mouth, Yun Che's steps immediately halted...

Son of a bitch!

=====

Chapter 407 – Overbearing

Xiao Qi totally didn't know that Zhi Yan came for the Phoenix Helianthus, otherwise, she definitely would not have sold it before his arrival. However, she was not the least bit panicked as she laughed: "Looks like Sir Zhi just happens to need a stalk of Phoenix Helianthus, you should've told me earlier, you know. As long as Sir Zhi opens his mouth, this one would've personally delivered it to you at your doorsteps. But unfortunately, the Phoenix Helianthus in this one's hands has just been sold to another gentleman right before your arrival."

"What! Sold!?" Zhi Yan's expression changed as irritation filled his voice: "Sold to who! Who bought it?! It's the last Phoenix Helianthus, I have to have it no matter what, even if I have to fight for it! Quick, tell me, who did you sell it to?!"

A delighted expression surfaced on the faces of everyone in the room, eyes of mockery all successively shifted towards Yun Che. Xiao Qi said with a smile: "Don't worry Sir Zhi, the gentleman who just bought the Phoenix Helianthus is still here. Sir Zhi can still have a nice discussion with him. Why, maybe he would even be willing to transfer it to you."

Xiao Qi slightly turned and swung a hand in Yun Che's direction: "It's this gentleman who purchased the last Phoenix Helianthus from this one's hands for two thousand purple profound coins. Whether or not this gentleman wishes to transfer it to you will depend on Sir Zhi."

Zhi Yan's gaze instantly shifted toward Yun Che. After probing his profound strength cultivation, an incomparably clear disdain hung on his face. He came over with huge strides as his entire body released a mighty pressure that would even make a middle stage Sky Profound practitioner find it difficult to breathe: "You're the one who bought the Phoenix Helianthus? Hmph, you have also heard what I just said earlier. Give the Phoenix Helianthus in your hands to me. Don't worry, I won't give you a coin less than the money you used to

purchase the Phoenix Helianthus, or else people will say that my Roasting Sun Sect bullies the weak!"

From Zhi Yan's manner of speaking, he was absolutely not discussing, rather, he was roughly commanding him in a typical tone of voice that came from a strong practitioner to a weak. Yun Che's expression did not change as he said indifferently: "My apologies, this Phoenix Helianthus is extremely important to me, I won't be transferring it to you."

"Hm?" Zhi Yan clearly had never thought that a weak practitioner at merely the Earth Profound Realm would actually dare refuse him, even under the premise that he would not pay a coin less. He didn't immediately explode, turning his head, he said to Xiao Qi: "Where's this kid from? Seems like he's not willing to give me face!"

Before Xiao Qi could reply, Gongsun Yu said delightfully: "Seventh Young Master Zhi, this kid's obviously not from any ordinary background, or else how could he dare have the confidence to not yield to Seventh Young Master Zhi. Tsk tsk, he's actually an esteemed guest from the eastern Blue Wind Nation. Hehe, against this esteemed guest from another nation, Seventh Young Master Zhi treat him a bit gentler, in the manner of our great nation, of course."

"Blue Wind Nation? Hahahaha..."

Once he heard the name "Blue Wind Nation", Zhi Yan started laughing right away... Previously, when Yun Che had revealed that he was from Blue Wind Nation, Gongsun Yu and company had all erupted in laughter as well, as if the name "Blue Wind Nation" was not a nation's name, but rather synonymous with a joke.

Growing up in Blue Wind Nation, Yun Che never really felt it, but once he arrived in Divine Phoenix Empire, that was when he realized how much of a miserable existence Blue Wind Nation's status was in the Profound Sky Continent. Only the words "lowly", and even "ridiculous" could be used to describe it. He had finally understood why Cang Wanhe had such a deeply resigned, frustrated, and

grieved expression on his face when he mentioned the "Seven Nation Ranking Tournament...

People usually had a protective instinct toward their native homeland, and Yun Che obviously was not an exception. The nation he had grown up in was being willfully sneered at and held in contempt by these people as a completely inferior nation... He was incapable of not being filled with rage. However, compared to Divine Phoenix Empire, Blue Wind Nation was indeed just too weak. The disparity between them was like a lamb and a male lion, this was an inevitable fact.

Zhi Yan originally was afraid that Yun Che's background was extraordinary, which would cause him trouble, but now that he knew Yun Che was from Blue Wind Nation, why would he feel the least bit worried? He said overbearingly: "Kid! This young master's patience is awfully limited, hurry up and give me the Phoenix Helianthus. If this young master loses all his patience, don't even mention the Phoenix Helianthus, you won't even be getting half a profound coin back."

"Heh! Kid, what kind of status does Seventh Young Master Zhi have? Him agreeing to even speak to you is already a great honor, you'd better not fail to appreciate his kindness." Gongsun Yu sarcastically said on the side.

Xiao Qi quickly faced Yun Che, and said softly: "Sir, Sir Zhi urgently needs this Phoenix Helianthus, so just give it to him. I believe that Sir Zhi will definitely be grateful, and maybe you two might even become friends!"

Yun Che narrowed his eyes, his voice was still extremely flat: "I said it before, I need this Phoenix Helianthus, not transferring."

"Very well... Looks like you're refusing a toast and want to drink some punishment wine instead! I'll ask you one last time, are you going to give it to me or not?!" All the muscles on Zhi Yan's body bunched up as his face filled with anger.

Yun Che said coldly: "I was the one who bought the Phoenix Helianthus, so it already belongs to me. I have the final say in what will be done to it! And it's not you telling me to give, that I'll give! If you want a Phoenix Helianthus, go look elsewhere, I don't have time to keep you company."

After he finished speaking, Yun Che immediately turned around with the intent to leave.

"You have the final say? Hahahaha..." Zhi Yan laughed wildly: "Naive kid, your daddy here will properly give you a lesson today. No matter what, in this world, it's always the one with the harder fist who has the final say!"

Zhi Yan extended a hand, grabbing toward Yun Che's shoulder. His arm was much more thicker than Yun Che's thigh. In comparison, Yun Che's build was simply too frail, as if it was not able to withstand a single blow. He laughed evilly, and just as he was about to grab at Yun Che's shoulder to lift him up, when he used force, Yun Che actually did not move one bit. Zhi Yan's eyes widened. The muscles on his arms instantly bulged as his veins popped out and he fiercely lifted... yet Yun Che's body still did not move one bit. Let alone being lifted, he didn't even move a single step.

Zhi Yan was inwardly shocked. Even though he faintly sensed that this was unusual, he got even more angrier as he said in exasperation: "I'll let you have a taste of how hard your daddy's fists are!"

He released his hand from Yun Che's shoulder, then formed his grip into a fist. His fist ignited with purple flame as he violently punched toward Yun Che. Beneath the faint agitation, he used no less than ninety nine percent of his strength in this fist, not caring at all if Yun Che died on the spot... The other party was only an inferior profound practitioner from Blue Wind Nation anyway, even if he died, there would be no repercussions.

"Sir Zhi!" Zhi Yan's actions made Xiao Qi let out an alarmed cry. The

others were also shocked. The entire room screeched with profound energy under Zhi Yan's fist, and it was obvious that he had used all of his strength... No one present had the confidence that they could withstand this fist, and it was very likely that Yun Che would directly become meat paste after this strike.

Bang!!

Zhi Yan's purple flame ignited fist firmly smashed onto Yun Che's chest, and released an extremely dull thud. Under the dispersing profound energy, the entire room violently trembled and all the chairs that were not sat on all shattered without exception. A long crack had even appeared on the marble tiles beneath their feet.

How could the strength from someone half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm be minor? It made everyone present tremble with fear. In their apprehension, they were even more shocked that Zhi Yan would use such a heavy hand toward a mere Earth Profound practitioner from Blue Wind Nation. This seemed to be a bit too much, but once they glanced toward Yun Che, they were instantly dumbfounded and they did not dare to believe their own eyes.

Zhi Yan's hand was still on Yun Che's chest, but Yun Che wasn't knocked flying at all. He didn't even move back half a step, nor did his expression change at all. Instead, the face of Zhi Yan in front of him that was originally filled with arrogance, was unexpectedly covered with an extremely twisted expression... At this time, the light armor on his right arm was suddenly shattered into fragments. Streams and streams of blood rushed out like a flood released from a dam, instantly dyeing his entire arm red.

It was as if Zhi Yan had woken up from a nightmare. He stumbled backwards, and grasped at his perception that he had already lost as his right arm drooped down. He let out a painful moan that he tried his best to stifle as both his pupils enlarged, brimming with deep terror: "You... You..."

"This fist of yours doesn't seem to be that great." Yun Che extended a

hand and patted the clothes on his chest with a revulsed face. Then, his expression suddenly turned cold as he smashed a fist at Zhi Yan.

Zhi Yan instinctively held out his left arm to block it, but with Yun Che's Great Way of the Buddha, even if he didn't use profound energy, his raw arm strength reached up to a terrifying ten thousand kilograms. How was Zhi Yan capable of blocking it? Only a "crack" was heard as Zhi Yan's arm bones were broken into several pieces. He let out a miserable shriek like that of a dying pig as he was ferociously struck flying, and his entire body sunk deep into the stone wall in the back.

No matter what, they had never expected this kind of scene. Everyone were was stupefied on the spot... What kind of status did Zhi Yan have? What kind of monstrosity was he?! Seventh Young Master of Roasting Sun Sect, half a step into the Emperor Profound at twenty eight years of age! He instantly suffered a crushing defeat beneath Yun Che's hand, and could not fight back at all!

It was absolutely not because Zhi Yan was weak, or that he had held back; the fist he smashed at Yun Che obviously contained all his strength... Instead, it was because the strength of this Blue Wind practitioner, that they had held in contempt and ridicule, was just too terrifying! Zhi Yan's attack that contained all his strength had actually not harmed a single hair on his body! Yet his casual fist, had directly shattered the bones on Zhi Yan's arm... What kind of terrifying body and strength was that?!

A chill rushed up their back... they had always been looking down and sneering at such a terrifying freak! Especially Gongsun Yu, his entire person sat glued to his seat, his complexion was deathly white, and under his shock, his body did not dare to move a single inch.

Yun Che's figure swayed, and then had already arrived at Zhi Yan's front. He extended his arm to grab at his throat; as though he was lifting a chick, Zhi Yan's robust body was directly pulled out from the stone wall, then was fiercely smashed on the ground. He lowered his

gaze to look at the bloody-faced Zhi Yan and said indifferently: "Do you still want the Phoenix Helianthus in my hands?"

Before Zhi Yan regained his senses, he had already been directly smashed into serious injuries by Yun Che. He laid on the ground, gasping for breath: "I am... Roasting Sun Sect's Seventh Young Master... If... If you dare to touch me, Roasting Sun Sect... will never let you get away with it!"

Yun Che narrowed his eyes, and laughed coldly: "Your words are not bad, the one with the harder fist is the one who has the final say in all matters of this world. Yet someone who does not have enough power still dares to be arrogant, now that's seeking death!!"

As Yun Che's voice fell, he stomped a leg onto Zhi Yan's chest. Zhi Yan's eyes bulged out as he violently spurted out a spray of blood.

"Stop!!"

The gray haired elderly man who had always stood behind Xiao Qi yelled out, and suddenly took action. A streak of cold light launched toward Yun Che... immediately after, a Throne level might enveloped the entire room. Since the matter had grown to such a state, he definitely could not watch on without lifting a finger. Otherwise, if something permanent happened to Zhi Yan, it was extremely possible for Roasting Sun Sect to take out their anger on Falling Flame Merchant Guild.

"Get out of the way!"

Even though this gray haired old man was a genuine Throne, he was only at the first level of the Emperor Profound Realm, a low level Throne. To Yun Che, he was simply not a threat at all. Without even turning his head, he flung out his arm and a Phoenix Break broke through the air, colliding with that streak of cold light. The cold light completely dispersed instantly, yet Phoenix Break had not diminished at all as it directly smashed at the elderly man's chest. Startled, the old man hurriedly blocked. After retreating seven or

eight steps back, did he barely manage to withstand Phoenix Break's might. However, both his sleeves had been burnt to a crisp.

"This is... phoenix flame!" The elderly man said in shock: "You're from the Divine Phoenix Sect!"

Everyone clearly saw and felt the phoenix flame Yun Che had flung out. That was undoubtedly the phoenix flame, it was impossible to falsify, and phoenix flame was a profound flame that only the Divine Phoenix Sect possessed! Someone who was capable of releasing phoenix flames could only be a member of the Divine Phoenix Sect! A person at the pinnacle of the entire Divine Phoenix Empire!

"Hmph!" Yun Che snorted coldly. He didn't reply, and obviously was not dumb enough to deny it.

Zhi Yao knew that he had kicked upon an iron plate. Under his remaining shock, all he thought was how he was going to dismember Yun Che's body into ten thousand pieces someday. But once he personally saw Yun Che fling out that phoenix flame, his entire body trembled acutely... He would never be able to return this hatred. Divine Phoenix Sect was an existence that Roasting Sun Sect absolutely could not afford to provoke. His Roasting Sun Sect was known as the number two sect in Divine Phoenix, but the difference in strength between the two was as different as the sky and earth.

"So... So it's a brother from the Divine Phoenix Sect... It was I, who had eyes but did not see. These injuries are not at all unjust..." Zhi Yan had on a begging attitude. How could he possibly be the least bit arrogant and forceful? "If I had known earlier that it was a brother from Divine Phoenix Sect... even if I had guts as large as the sky, I wouldn't dare to offend you... If brother doesn't feel satisfied, please leave me your sound transmission imprint. I... I will personally visit with a gift to apologize another day..."

Being beaten until his bones were shattered, organs receiving injuries, yet still needed to anxiously apologize. This was the huge deterrence and influence Divine Phoenix Sect had in Divine Phoenix

Empire. Everyone else in the room had already stood up, and firmly stood in place. They did not even dare to breath in too deeply as they looked at Yun Che with eyes filled with reverence. As for Gongsun Yu, who had been continuously sneering at Yun Che, he was sweating profusely. Both his legs quaked and it seemed as if they would collapse at any time.

That elderly man stepped forward and said while trembling: "For an esteemed customer from Divine Phoenix Sect to be here, this old man had eyes but failed to recognize Mt. Tai, and even allowed esteemed customer to be disturbed. I truly... deserve death... Xiao Qi, what are you staring blankly for? Why haven't you given him back his profound coins?"

"Ye... yes." Xiao Qi was also somewhat pale with nervousness as she fumbled to get the purple profound coins.

"No need." Yun Che moved his leg away from Zhi Yan's chest, "You don't need to be that nervous. I am not the type of trash near my feet that relies on force to bully another. As long as others don't provoke me, I won't bother to provoke others... You may continue."

After he finished speaking, Yun Che no longer paid any attention to anyone as he turned around and walked toward the exit. Everyone followed him with his eyes as he stepped out while secretly heaving a sigh of relief. No one dared to say anything, lest it catch his attention.

Once he arrived in front of Gongsun Yu, Yun Che suddenly tilted his head and coldly looked him in the eye. With a startled cry, both of Gongsun Yu's legs went limp as he fell on the ground with his butt... Only until Yun Che had walked very far away did he recover his senses. He had nearly lost control of his bladder.

Divine Phoenix Sect ruled over Divine Phoenix Nation for five thousand years, its fame had long been well-established. It's deterrent force was at a level that other nations were unable to understand... Yun Che couldn't help but sigh in his heart. If the Blue

Wind Emperor was also this strong, the previous turmoil in the imperial family wouldn't have happened.

Just as he was about to exit the room, a peculiar sensation suddenly came from behind. Yun Che's footsteps paused, and instantly turned around. Seeing every face filled with reverence, with a few terrified ones, his gaze briefly swept past each and every person. After slightly knitting his brows, he left with slow steps.

=====

Chapter 408 – What Kind of a God

Upon exiting Falling Flame Merchant Guild, Yun Che's figure quickly submerged into the stream of people within Divine Phoenix City's streets. With the Phoenix Helianthus already in hand, what he had to do next was not complicated, which was finding a quiet place where he would not be disturbed.

At this time, the advancing Yun Che's footsteps suddenly stopped as he turned around as fast as lightning. His sharp eyes sweep his rear, but his gaze didn't find anything different, even that minute strand of sensation had also faded away without a trace.

Was he mistaken?

Impossible, how could he possibly be mistaken when it came to things like this.

For example, he felt a peculiar gaze staring at him for an instant earlier. Before he left Falling Flame Merchant Guild, he had also felt the same sensation. This kind of sensation did not come from his perception, instead, it was "instinct".

It was an acquired instinct born from after being hunted down to the brink of life and death!

If this sort of feeling came from his perception, it could perhaps be his misconception. But since it was a kind of "instinct", it definitely could not be wrong, because it had saved Yun Che's life many times before.

However, Yun Che's lightning fast reaction that searched for the origin of this sensation had actually not gained any profit.

If he wasn't mistaken, then that could only mean... that the other party was hiding his abilities, and was at a terrifying high level. In the Profound Sky Continent, this was the first time Yun Che could not sense his target's existence after his detection.

Who exactly is it... why are they staring at me? In Divine Phoenix City, there shouldn't be anyone who would recognize me.

"Jasmine, do you sense anyone following me?" Yun Che said in a low voice.

"Jasmine?"

"Sleeping... don't bother me!"

"....."

Yun Che wrinkled his nose, withdrew his gaze, and directly advanced onward.

A barely noticeable figure not even sixty meters away behind Yun Che slowly raised his head from within the stream of people. His eyes flashed with amazement.

An hour later, Yun Che returned to the inn he had stayed in last night. In this already packed Divine Phoenix city, finding an inn to stay in was indeed extremely difficult, but as long as one was wealthy, even if the population were to double, there still wouldn't be a problem. The guest room Yun Che stayed in was obtained by him paying thirty times the original price from someone who failed to show up.

"Dear guest, you've returned, do you want to go back in your room to take a rest or do you want to have a meal?"

As soon as Yun Che returned back to the inn, a handsome waiter diligently welcomed him. Those who were able stay at such a luxurious inn at this time were all wealth god-like figures, so he obviously had to do his utmost to thoroughly serve him.

"Make me dinner a bit later today, before it gets dark, deliver it directly to my room." Yun Che replied.

"Alrightie, have a nice rest. Dear guest, if you have any requests, feel

free to call out at anytime." The waiter said politely.

After Yun Che returned to his room, he actually did not go according to his previous plan of immediately beginning to refine the Sky Profound Universal Pellet. Instead, he closed the door, and laid on the bed to sleep. He seemed to be quite exhausted, because not long after he laid down, the sound of snoring gradually surfaced as he entered dreamland.

Yun Che directly slept from the afternoon to evening. It was exactly at this time that a wisp of noiseless and odorless smoke that was unable to be seen with the naked eye slowly floated in from corner of the room's rear window, and blended in with the air in the room. Yun Che was still sleeping and still snoring. His breathing was even, without the least bit reaction to everything happening.

The light smoke stopped after several tens of breaths. Everything was silent, without any indication that something had happened.

Half a quarter of an hour later, Yun Che's door was struck.

"Dear guest, the dinner you wanted is here."

Yun Che was still heavily sleeping, without the slightest of reaction.

"Dear guest... Dear guest? Are you in there?"

The waiter gave the door a soft push. The door had only been closed, not locked, so it opened with one push. The waiter hesitated for a bit, then carefully pushed open the room and came in carrying the dinner.

The sound of the waiter's footsteps were rather heavy, and the porcelain on tray in his hand also made clashing noises, but the Yun Che laying on the bed continued to not respond. It was evident that he was dead asleep. The waiter put the tray on the table, and after his eyes swept past Yun Che for a while, he slowly walked in Yun Che's direction. Only this time, his footsteps... were actually noiseless, and his cautious gaze from before changed to that of

water's tranquility.

Yun Che's breathing was steady, and he was dead asleep. All the sense organs on his body showed not the slightest sliver of movement. After confirming these, the waiter's cautious expression loosened a bit. He came over to Yun Che's bed and reached out his hand to grab at Yun Che's spatial ring.

In the exact instant his fingers were about to touch Yun Che, Yun Che's hand suddenly shot out like lightning and grabbed onto the waiter's wrist. At the same time, his eyes that were closed for an entire afternoon also suddenly opened.

How large of a power did Yun Che's grip possess? Even if it were a Throne that had been grabbed like this, they fundamentally should not think of easily struggling free. But when Yun Che was about to solidly grab him, he suddenly felt something slip from his palms, as if he had not grabbed onto an arm, but rather a fish! The arm that he had a solid grip on earlier suddenly slipped free from the palm of his hands. Immediately after, the inn's water jumped up with incomparable nimbleness and dashed out the bamboo window, fleeing away flying.

Yun Che originally wanted to give chase, but as soon as he took a step forward, he stopped, and stared ahead in a daze... because this person's speed was just too fast, fast to such a level that it was inconceivable. He only used the short time of an instant to escape from his grip, then nimbly flew out, and that was also something that only took an instant to happen. This person's silhouette had already become a small dot within his line of sight...

His profound strength was not that strong, it was more or less at the middle stages of the Sky Profound Realm, but the speed he displayed completely surpassed Sky Profound level. It was even faster than the Snow Phoenix Beast by several times... the fastest person Yun Che had ever seen in the Profound Sky Continent.

A flurry of hurried footsteps sounded, and the inn's waiter opened

the door upon hearing the noise from earlier. He asked in alarm: "Dear guest, what happened?"

The waiter before him looked exactly the same as the waiter that had fled. Even his expressions and voice practically had no differences. Yun Che shook his head: "Nothing. Tell someone to help me fix the window. I will pay for the damaged window."

After telling the inn's waiter to leave, Yun Che stood by the window side, eyed the spatial ring in his hand, and pondered for a while. He wore the spatial ring to conceal the Sky Poison Pearl, nothing was actually in there. Looks like he was not mistaken about his previous feeling that someone had been tailing him. And this person's tailing, concealment, ability to easily change appearance and voice, and even his ability to place a sleeping mist could be said to be in a top-notch realm. His ability to escape had given Yun Che a direct blow, and his speed was quick to the extreme...

What kind of person was he? Why was he targeting me?

The first time he felt like someone had been staring at him was back when he was about to leave Falling Flame Merchant Guild. Which meant that this person was also inside Falling Flame Merchant Guild, and was within the group of people present...

Yun Che's brows sunk... The changing of appearance and voice, sleeping mist, ability to escape and speed... They were clearly all skills of an expert thief! And being targeted by such a frightening thief obviously was not a light matter. This thief had tailed him back the entire way, and had even schemed this hard, it was evident that he possessed something that this thief was extremely interested in. Then... he probably wouldn't give up after failing once. He ought to be coming back again.

Not long after, the window repairmen arrived. Yun left the inn. After thinking for a while, he headed straight for the direction of Falling Flame Merchant Guild. Since that person had followed him, then he probably had left closely after his departure from Falling Flame

Merchant Guild. This meant that he could only inquire about who had left after him and perhaps discover something.

Dusk had already fallen, yet the streets were still as clamorous as before. Upon reaching the Falling Flame Merchant Guild area, did it become secluded. Yun Che chose to walk on a few streets with few pedestrians, and at this time, the shriek of a young woman sounded: "Save me... Save me..."

"Hehehehe, you've fallen into this great lord's hands, yet you're thinking of escaping! Hahahaha..."

At a corner in front of him, a young woman was hurriedly running over. The young woman was dressed in blue. With a peach blossom face and a pair of clear eyes, she could be considered a beauty that would enchant a man instantly, and make him feel tenderness. Behind her was a middle aged man with a solid stature who was leisurely chasing after her. Lewd laughs came out from his mouth, as though he was currently playing a cat catch mouse game.

That young woman looked at Yun Che as if she had sudden found the last straw of hope from within her despair. She ran over as if her life depended on it, hid behind Yun Che, and pleaded: "Sir, please be merciful and save me, that evil bully, he... he was improper toward me... Sir, please save me..."

Yun Che held out a hand, hid the woman behind him, and then coldly looked at the man who chased over before his eyes. He said righteously: "Don't be scared miss, with me here, that guy should not even think of touching a single strand on your hair... Sigh! In the peaceful broad moonlight where everything is clear, you actually dare to openly assault a woman of good family on the street, you're audacious to the extreme, and simply unforgivable."

"Hahahaha!" That middle aged man laughed heartily: "Kid, you haven't even grown any hair, yet you even dare to copy other people's 'hero saving a beauty'? Hurry up and scram outta this daddy's sight, otherwise, this daddy'll take care of you first."

"You're seeking death!" Yun Che was furious. With just one step, he smashed his fist out. The sound of a deafening screech immediately followed his clenched fists that ruthlessly struck the middle aged man's chest. The middle aged man's eyes abruptly widened as he smothered a groan and flew out into the distance, then fainted on the spot.

"Ah..." That young woman immediately let out a surprised cry.

"Hmph!" Yun Che withdrew his hand and said in disdain: "Just with this much of an ability, yet dares to come out to do evil, he's truly bringing about his own doom." He turned around and said in concern: "Miss, are you okay?"

That young lady saluted fully and said in a sobbing voice filled with fear and appreciation: "Sir, thank you for saving me... May I ask for sir's great name? This little one will definitely pay back your great kindness."

"Heh heh, it was barely any effort, don't worry about it." Yun Che said casually. His gaze fell downward, revealing an appreciative gaze for beautiful women: "May I ask for this miss's name?"

The young woman said softly: "This little one is named Yan Xiaohua."

"Yan Xiaohua..." Yun Che beamed: "Miss is so beautiful and doesn't even cultivate in the profound. It's too dangerous for you to be outside alone, you'd best be a bit more careful in the future."

The young woman sighed as she revealed a grieved expression: "This little one usually stays inside her chambers and rarely goes out. But today, my father..."

Just as the young woman was in the middle of her narration, Yun Che, who had been quietly listening attentively, suddenly smashed a palm toward the young woman's chest. The distance between the two was not even three feet and the palm Yun Che shot out was done without warning, so not only was the other party preoccupied

in her narration, a young woman also should not have the ability to dodge this strike.

Bang!

However, even with such a suddenly strike, Yun Che actually hit thin air.

A deafening sound resounded, immediately jolting the surrounding space into trembling. The young woman before him had disappeared, only leaving an afterimage that had not faded. As for the true body, it had already shifted three meters away in that short instant, then fled far away as quick as lightning.

He had previously escaped from Yun Che's hands before, but how could Yun Che possibly allow himself to fail once again? In the very instant he felt that he had struck empty air, he had already reacted in a split second...

"Dragon Soul Domain!!"

A sky shaking dragon cry resounded as the surrounding one hundred fifteen meter of space around him was instantly enveloped in the mighty pressure of an undefiable dragon's soul. The entire body of the escaping "young woman" quaked, as she revealed an expression of terror. She had powerlessly fallen from the air... and just as she was about to fall to the ground, Yun Che had already quickly launched a Phoenix Break at her chest.

Poof!!

The protective clothing worn by the "young woman" instantly shattered, as she spat out a long bloody arrow and heavily landed on the ground. Yun Che's figure swayed, then he was already at her side. He stepped on the core of her profound veins, not allowing her to channel profound energy.

"Who exactly are you, why are you targeting me?!" Yun Che asked coldly, yet the waves in his heart could not be quieten down. Under

that sort of situation, Yun Che believed that even if it was he himself, it was probably impossible for him to dodge his abrupt strike earlier, yet not a corner of this person's clothes had been touched.

He could help but acknowledge that if it were not for the fact that he possessed the heaven defying Dragon Soul Domain, it would be impossible for him to capture this ghost-like person.

"Heh heh..."

The "young woman" opened her mouth, and what came out was clearly a man's voice. He wasn't resentful, nor was he angry, instead, he was laughing with a tranquil expression: "In all my life... I had never fallen... Even eight Overlords who have chased me for seven days and seven nights had ever touched a single hair on my head... Yet today... I had actually fallen at you... a mere Earth Profound kid's hand... I can't help but say one word... Impressive..."

Yun Che was inwardly startled... Escaping the pursuit of eight Overlords for seven days and seven nights without a single injury. In the entire Profound Sky Continent, how many people could do that? And to even make a full eight Overlords not hesitate to team up to kill him... What kind of a god was this person beneath his feet?!

=====

Chapter 409 – One Kneel

"You don't have bother saying all that to distract me." Yun Che said coldly as he exerted more pressure on the body beneath his foot: "Give me the medicinal powder in your hands too. A mere illusion poison like Dream Butterfly is useless against me!"

The "young woman's" pupils suddenly seemed to contract for a split second as she felt the danger of the situation. The person in front of her had eyes like ice mirrors, it was the first time in her life she had felt such a dreadful sensation of not being able to hide. What she said about being chased by Overlords was exactly for the purpose of distracting Yun Che, and there was indeed a poison powder between the gaps of her right hand fingers.

All these, had actually been seen through!

Especially the Dream Butterfly, which was an odorless and formless hallucinogen, that was between tightly gripped between her fingers without the slightest hint of being visible... it had actually been called out!

"Who... exactly are you?" The "young woman" asked: "You're obviously not from the Divine Phoenix Sect, yet you can utilize phoenix flames... You ought to truly have come from Blue Wind Nation... But how can Blue Wind Nation have such a person like you..."

Yun Che's gaze was crystal clear, and only gazed at him coldly. The person beneath his foot knew that she did not have the right to question him, and barely managed to gasp out: "My disguise had never been seen through by anyone... Can you tell me how exactly you saw me through?"

"I can't compare to your ability to conceal your tracks, aura, and sound," Yun Che said indifferently, "But in terms of appearance, you are only a bit worse. As long as it's within six meters of me, if a person was disguising his looks, I can easily see through it with just a

glance... Not only do I know that you had changed your appearance, I even know that you are using three layers. Even if you tear off this layer off, the one behind it, and the one behind that are still not your true face... Either you're so ugly that you're afraid to be truthfully seen by others, or it's to conceal your true face for fear that people will know of your true identity..."

"Of course it's the latter!!" The "young woman" roared emotionally while pulling at her throat: "Look at me disguised as a woman... even if I can't be considered world-shakingly handsome, just looking at how refreshing and sweet I am would at least say that I'm extraordinarily handsome!! How could I possibly be related to the word 'ugly'?! You're ugly... Your entire family's ugly!"

"Tch!" Yun Che's mouth twitched, then suddenly released the foot on her body. He turned around and said: "Go."

The "young man"... Mn, it should be said that the man hastily leapt up from the ground like a carp. He stared at Yun Che's back with disbelief still visible on his face. Previously, in Falling Flame Merchant Guild, he had personally seen how vicious Yun Che was and originally thought that if he were to land in his hands, he would at least suffer greatly. Never did he expect that he would... release him?

"You're... you're releasing me just like that?" He said with wide eyes: "You're not going to ask who I am? Don't want to know why I was following you? Re... releasing me just like that?"

"Because you're not an evil person." Yun Che replied without turning his head around.

"...How do you know that I'm not an evil person?"

"Hmph, I have seen too many evil people in my lifetime, so I just need a single glance to know if someone is evil." Yun Che said with half narrowed eyes: "Moreover, you used a sleeping mist instead of a poison mist in the inn. Even though you had been restrained

beneath my foot, what you intended to scatter was only an illusion mist. Additionally, there is no killing intent in the gaze you use to look at me... if otherwise, do you really think you could've stayed alive til now?"

The man opened his mouth, yet did not seize the chance to escape... Since he had regained his freedom, he was fully confident that even ten Yun Che's could not catch up to him if he wished to escape. Instead, he took a step forward and asked in puzzlement: "You're not going to ask why I approached you?"

"I already know why."

"You... do?"

Yun Che turned around, then looked at him: "You're here to steal the Phoenix Helianthus on me!"

Yun Che said with firm assertion, not in a questioning way.

"How... How do you know?" The man immediately widened his eyes.

"Such a thing like scent, is usually even more harder to cover up than aura. Volcano Gall, Phoenix Tail Banana, Scorching Blood Fire Ginseng, Purple Yin Samgha, Dragon Reishi Grass, Thousand Insect Purple Asura Vine, Rainy Cloud Flower... These are the medicinal ingredients I smell on your body. Even though you've tried your best to eliminate these smells, you've touched them all of them within twenty four hours. No matter how you cover it up, there would still be a bit remaining that's enough for me to distinguish.

The man was completely dumbstruck and stiffened in place as though petrified... All the names of the medicinal ingredients Yun Che had said... none were missing or in excess!!

"If these medicinal ingredients were stored in a spatial ring, not one smell would leak out. This is clearly evident that you had personally come in contact with them, and mixed them together. The results of combining them together would forcefully extend one's lifespan. In

order to prolong someone's lifespan, it also needs a large amount of Purple Veined Heaven Crystals... It's only that this forceful longevity would come with an immense pain. In order to keep this pain in check and not conflict with the other ingredients at the same time, only the Phoenix Helianthus that could obstruct all pain in the meridians is able to do that."

Man: "~ ! # ¥ %....."

"You also just happened to start following me after I obtained the Phoenix Helianthus." Yun Che said indifferently: "Since you approached me for the sake of saving someone's life and never had any intention of killing me, I too, do not have any reason to make things difficult for you. Stepping on you a few times earlier is enough... You may leave. Stop deluding yourself into thinking that you can steal anything from me."

After Yun Che finished speaking, he turned around and left.

Up until Yun Che walked more than ten steps, did the man suddenly awaken from his daze. He took a large stride forward and swooshed to Yun Che's front. It was so fast that Yun Che didn't even see any afterimages: "Wait, lil' bro, no wait! Big bro, me offending such a high rank person like yourself was because I overestimated my own abilities, I had eyes but did not see. But... but the Phoenix Helianthus really is extremely important to me, I'm begging you to please give me that Phoenix Helianthus in your hands to me..."

He originally believed that with his abilities, he could've easily steal the Phoenix Helianthus from whoever obtained it. He never expected that he would bump into such an absolute monster like Yun Che, and now, he knew that it was impossible for him to steal it from him. Furthermore, Yun Che had magnanimously released him, so he did not have the face to try to play anymore tricks. However, he desperately needed that Phoenix Helianthus even if he had to risk his life to steal it. If stealing didn't work, the only thing he could do... was beg.

"Don't worry, I absolutely will not let you give it to me for nothing." He said with absolute sincerity: "You used two thousand purple profound coins to buy the Phoenix Helianthus from Falling Flame Merchant Guild... I'll use three thousand... no! Five thousand... no! Ten thousand... I'll use ten thousand purple profound coins to buy it off you!"

He yelled out an incredibly crazy price, quickly took out a purple shining profound coin card, and looked at Yun Che with a beseeching face.

Yun Che remained unmoved, and slowly shook his head: "If it were any other time, I might've been able to transfer it to you. But as of right now, I urgently need this stalk of Phoenix Helianthus to increase my strength. Otherwise, after half a month, I might even lose my life in Divine Phoenix City. Thus, even if you put forth even more money, I would not give it to you."

After he finished speaking, Yun Che directly left.

"Big bro!!"

The man charged forward and firmly gripped his clothes with both hands trembling slightly: "The Phoenix Helianthus in your hands is the last stalk that could be found this year. Please, no matter what, you have to give it to me. If ten thousand purple profound coins is not enough... don't hesitate to tell me how much you want. As long as I can take that out, I definitely won't even bat an eye!"

Yun Che resolutely shook his head: "I've said it before, it's not an issue of money. This Phoenix Helianthus concerns my fate. I definitely will not be giving it to anyone else no matter what. Go look elsewhere for one, perhaps you might find another one."

"If it's anywhere else that has it, I've already gone to all of them." The man's face revealed a deep implorement: "Big bro, you have amazing eyes. You even know the exact medicinal ingredients I have come in contact with, so you must know also know how great of a pain would

follow after combining them all with Purple Veined Heaven Crystals to extend one's life. She only has not even one year left to live, my biggest wish right now is to accompany her to pass the last year of her life in peace. How could I possibly have the heart to allow her to suffer through that kind of pain... I went through the greatest amount of efforts, but could only find half a stalk of Phoenix Helianthus. Not only has the other half a stalk of that Phoenix Helianthus been used, its medicinal energy has already substantially dispersed. Its results would be extremely miniscule. My only hope right now lies on that stalk in your hands... Please, I beg of you, give it to me. I swear to god that I'll definitely repay you back one day."

Yun Che cast a sidelong glance at him, yet he still shook his head: "Every sort of ability you possess all clearly indicate that you are a genuine thief, but it is evident that your heart is not bad at all. Each one of your words all contain genuine urgency but you, and the person you wish to save, both have nothing to do with me. I am not that generous and benevolent to use an item that is related to the safety of my life to save a total stranger... Just give up, don't follow me anymore!"

With a swing of his hand, he Star God's Broken Shadow'd more than thirty meters away.

"Bang!!"

The sound of knees heavily falling to the ground came from behind Yun Che. Yun Che's footsteps paused, he turned around, and said with furrowed brows: "You..."

The man knelt on both knees. His face filled with a deep beseechment as his eyes swayed with tears: "Big bro, I have never begged anyone before in my entire life, nor have kneeled to anyone... Even when my parents were alive, I never had the time to kneel to them... I'm begging you... have mercy... She really... only has not even a year left... Please, I'm begging you... even if I have to slave for you..."

Yun Che's heart was fiercely moved... Even though this was the first

day he had met this ghost-like figure whom not even eight Overlords could deal with, he understood what his tears and kneeling signified...

That was all of his pride and dignity...

In his entire life, this was indeed the first time he had ever kneeled to anyone. Otherwise, his knees would not be trembling so acutely. He had on an utterly helpless expression, and if he rejected him again, that helplessness would turn into complete despair...

That expression looked extremely close to himself on that day, when he cried painfully toward the sky while embracing Ling'er's beautiful corpse...

"Huu..." Yun Che inwardly sighed, but no longer took another step onward. He walked over and said: "The person you want to save, who is she to you?"

"...My wife." Seeing Yun Che walking back toward him, his eyes brightened with a hopeful radiance: "Big bro, I'm begging you, as long as you give me the Phoenix Helianthus, I'll agree to any condition you put forth."

"Tell me, what kind of illness has your wife contracted." Yun Che asked.

"She didn't contract an illness." The man shook his head as his expression grew pained: "Five years ago, our entire family was secretly ambushed by enemies. Both my parents were murdered. They used their lives so my wife and I could escape, but my wife was severely injured at that time, and had been infected by a strange incurable cold poison. All these years, I've been doing my utmost so she could continue living on, but this kind of life expansion still cannot persist for long. This year is already the limit..."

"Secretly ambushed?" Yun Che was slightly surprised: "You are an expert in stealth attacks so your parents ought to be even stronger

than you. How could you possibly end up this way? Five years ago, your skills shouldn't be that lower than what you possess right now, right?"

The man revealed a struggling expression, then still slowly said it out in the end: "It's Sun Moon Divine Hall..."

Yun Che: "!!"

"My family have been thieves for many generations and we happily robbed the rich to help the poor. One of my ancestors had once infiltrated Sun Moon Divine Hall and stole a Tyrant Profound blade. As such, for the past several hundred years, Sun Moon Divine Hall had always been searching for our tracks. Afterwards, I don't know what kind of searching method they used, but they found one of our bases, and thus calamity descended..."

"I understand. Get up." Yun Che pulled him up... A special clan of people that were thieves for many generations, an ancestor, and even a Sacred Ground like Sun Moon Divine Hall had come in the picture with a Tyrant Profound blade. This kind of family inevitably possessed a great fame within the Profound Sky Continent.

"Bring me to see your wife." Yun Che said seriously: "I believe that you wouldn't let her stay anywhere too far, she ought to be within Divine Phoenix City, right?"

"Ah?" The man was stunned.

"I know a bit of medicine, I can perhaps cure your wife's injuries and poison. Also, don't worry, I won't leak out any information concerning you and your wife. I won't even bother to check to see what you truly look like." Yun Che said indifferently.

The man gaped: "But... but... this..."

"No buts." Yun Che interrupted: "Since you care about her that much, then you can only trust me. Even if the number one genius doctor told you that there is no cure, you still have to trust a person who

claims that he might possibly cure her! Because if you miss this opportunity... you might miss the opportunity to save her life!"

"Okay!!"

Yun Che's last words suddenly smashed all the hesitation the man possessed. He no longer thought of anything else as he nodded fiercely: "You can even differentiate what kind of medicine I had been in contact with in an instant, so I believe that your medical skills have reached perfection! I believe even more that you would not harm us, and you don't even have a reason to harm us... If you can truly cure her, my life is yours!"

=====

Chapter 410 – The Legendary Princess Snow

Night gradually fell, Yun Che followed the man toward a place at the edge of Divine Phoenix City's southern region.

"Why... Why are you helping me?" The man asked cautiously after being silent for a long period of time. Like Yun Che, he was a person who had been in innumerable life and death situations before, his perceptiveness and wariness were no less inferior to Yun Che. Thus, he could tell with a single glance if someone possessed evil intentions or was conspiring against him. However, he couldn't find any trace of malice or conspiracy on Yun Che.

"Just treat it as my doctor's heart suddenly reawakening after a long period of silence." Yun Che said as he secretly sighed in his heart... Having a doctor's heart that loved everything under the heavens and helped the people, that had made up his entire soul back then, and was the core part of what his Master had taught him. But once his Master had been forced to death, his doctor's heart had been replaced by endless hatred. After that, he had never used his medical expertise to save anyone.

"Err..." This answer confused the man.

"You said that you had obtained half a stalk of Phoenix Helianthus?" Yun Che casually asked.

"Yes." The man nodded: "Every year, the quantity of Phoenix Helianthus that sprouts is already very few, and most are usually immediately seized by Divine Phoenix Sect, so I could only infiltrate one of Divine Phoenix Sect's treasure halls. But many protective profound formations are littered everywhere there, just as soon as I went in, I accidentally touched one of them and had no choice but to escape... Luckily, before I escaped, I already had that half stalk of Phoenix Helianthus in hand. I believe the reason why I could so easily steal it, was because since that half stalk of Phoenix Helianthus had already lost too much of its medicinal force, it had

been casually tossed on top of a jade cabinet.

Yun Che's steps slowed as he said with shock: "You... infiltrated Divine Phoenix Sect?"

"Yeah." Hearing the shock in Yun Che's voice, the man slapped his chest while proudly nodding: "In this world, aside from the Four Great Sacred Grounds and Black Moon Merchant Guild, there has never been a place I have not snuck into. Even though they discovered me... Heh heh, they couldn't even manage to touch my butt before I disappeared from their sights without leaving even a trace."

Yun Che: "..."

This man said that one of his ancestors had infiltrated Sun Moon Divine Hall, which had also shocked him, and the man himself beside him... He was about to steal into Divine Phoenix Sect, yet had escaped without a single injury after being discovered...

Who... the heck...

The man's voice lowered, as he said with a distressed face: "When I stole into Divine Phoenix Sect, I originally wanted to secretly check out the legendary Princess Snow, but she just had to happen to not be there. I heard a few people discussing... and it seems like she had went to some Perching Phoenix Valley."

"Princess Snow?" Yun Che raised his brows: "One of Divine Phoenix Sect's princesses, right?"

After Yun Che finished speaking, he saw the man's eyes widen. That expression... was as if he was examining an alien.

"Could it be... that you don't know Princess Snow?" The man said with wide eyes.

"Is this Princess Snow... really famous?" Yun Che asked back.

Yun Che's unchanging expression did not have the least bit of falsehood. The man swept him up and down with his gaze, then used an extremely expression to once again size Yun Che up again. That gaze... was totally not a gaze that was looking at a living person: "Holy cow! You're serious? You seriously don't know Princess Snow? As expected, y-y-y-y-you're not someone from Divine Phoenix Empire! Ah, no wait! Even if you're not from Divine Phoenix Empire, even if you're from a remote mountain region in another nation, it's impossible for you to not know Princess Snow!"

Yun Che: "..."

This was indeed the first time he had ever heard of the name Princess Snow.

"Then... have you ever heard of the name 'Hua Minghai'?" The man's eyes flashed.

"Hua Minghao? Never heard of it before, is it another famous person?" Yun Che asked.

"Holy cow!!!" The man hopped up and roared with bared teeth: "I-i-i-it's whatever if you don't know Princess Snow, but you actually have never heard of the great Hua Minghai! He's the legendary 'Ghost Mirage Sacred Hand', the most awesome person in all of Profound Sky Continent... Cough cough, one of them. Let alone humans, even a fish in mud would know of this great name, how could there exist a person who has never heard of that name!!!"

"Ghost Mirage Sacred Hand? What a terrible nickname." Yun Che curled his lips.

"~ ! # ¥ %....." The muscles on the man's face twitched, and looked as if he wanted to fight to the death with Yun Che: "You couldn't have come here from another world, could you?"

Yun Che turned around, and nodded seriously: "You can believe that."

"F*ck!"

"You can't be... that 'Ghost Mirage Sacred Hand' Hua Minghai, could you?" Yun Che gave him a new measuring look.

"Right, that's me!" Hua Minghai patted his chest, then the corner of his eyes twitched uncontrollably. Holy f*ck... this was the first time he had revealed his own name to someone... yet this person had actually never heard of him before!

"Oh, I understand." Yun Che asked flatly: "Then should I call you Little Hua or Little Hai?"

"...Just call me Little Hai." Hua Minghai was about to cry. No matter how you put it, I'm almost thirty years ago, and this kid's obviously not even twenty years of age.

"Talk to me about Princess Snow, why is so so famous?" Yun Che asked with some curiosity.

"Cough cough, you don't want to know about Ghost Mirage Sacred Hand's past achievements first?"

"Nope."

"! # ¥ %....." Hua Minghai sucked in a death breath. Only after using all of his willpower to finally calm down did he answer: "Princess Snow is Divine Phoenix Empire's treasure, the Divine Phoenix Spirit's darling, and the miracle the heavens have bestowed upon Divine Phoenix. These were all her previous nicknames, and no one had seen her before. In the year Princess Snow turned thirteen, she had appeared on top of Divine Phoenix City's tower because of some ceremony. That year, the Divine Phoenix City that had never seen even a bit of snow had unexpectedly seen snow descend from the sky; Princess Snow appeared, and the entire place had become a field of silence. Everyone who had gaze upon her had become dazed on the spot, as if they had seen a fairy descend to the mortal realm... On the very next day, she had been dubbed as Profound Sky's

number one beauty. It was unprecedented, and even those who were qualified to be mentioned in the same breath as her did not exist."

"Thirteen years old? Profound Sky's number one beauty?"

"Yes, back then, Princess Snow was only thirteen years old. She ought to be sixteen this year, so her beauty definitely should have increased. Unfortunately, aside from her surfacing three years ago, she had never come out in front of others. Nobody knows how Princess Snow looks like now." Hua Minghai said with a face full of yearning.

"You've seen her three years ago?" Yun Che asked.

"No, I've only heard it from people..."

Yun Che smirked: "Then how do you know she's beautiful to such an extent? For women, if you're talking about thirteen years old, let alone mature, she hasn't even blossomed yet. No matter how good-looking she is, how beautiful could she possibly be?" When he spoke till here, Yun Che paused, because he thought about Jasmine... The first time he had met Jasmine, she was only thirteen as well, and the blow she gave Yun Che had even surpassed Xia Qingyue...

But Jasmine was a completely different kind of category that couldn't be examined based on this world's standards. How could that so called "Princess Snow" possibly be mentioned in the same breath as her?

As far as snow descending from the sky, that's even more nonsensical. Divine Phoenix City is summer all year round, where would snow come from? I'd reckon that the title of number one beauty and snowfall stuff were all fabricated from Divine Phoenix Sect to strengthen its prestige."

"But, everyone all says that..."

"I only believe things that I see with my own eyes, not what I hear."

Yun Che said slowly: "If you were to say the number one beauty in the world, I think that only my wife deserves this title... Who doesn't know how to self-proclaim stuff like that?"

"Hmph..." Hua Minghai snorted softly, then said: "I heard that in this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, Princess Snow will appear. At that time, I'm definitely going to mix in with the crowd to check out how Princess Snow looks like, are you interested?"

"Not interested."

"....."

In the very edge of one of Divine Phoenix City's corners. Hua Minghai's footsteps stopped in front of an abandoned looking little house. He stopped breathing, quickly surveyed the surroundings, and whispered: "It's right here... follow me in."

The door opened and a strong scent of medicine assaulted over. This place was obviously a temporary residence; its furnishing was very simple. Purple crystals were on top of the little bed on the side, flickering with purple light. These purple crystal lights were deep and illusory, and peacefully lying on top of the purple crystals was a thin woman. Once she heard the door open, the woman stirred, and let out a weak yet eager sound: "Husband... you're... back..."

This voice made Hua Minghai tremble all over. He hastily rushed over, threw himself in front of the bed, and said emotionally: "Xiaoya, you're awake... I'm so sorry that I wasn't here by your side when you woke up, I must have scared you... How do you feel? Does it hurt a lot?"

Yun Che walked in with light steps and stood behind Hua Minghai as he looked at the woman's face... She had been reduced to an extremely thin and weak state, her face was pale without color, her eyes were half opened, and exuded a misty gaze... This kind of gaze was one that could not see anything.

The most conspicuous thing on her face was on her forehead... there was an obvious deep dark blue seal there.

Seeing this dark blue color, Yun Che's brows slightly wrinkled.

"No problem... I've only just woken up... I feel... a lot better..." The woman tried her best to smile. At this time, her eyes finally caught a vague human silhouette. She said softly: "Husband... do we have... a guest?"

Without waiting for Hua Minghai to speak, Yun Che had already answered: "Hello... My name is Ling Yun, I'm Hua Minghai's friend."

"Friend..."

Yun Che's following words had actually made the woman's eyes light up with a peculiar gleam. She said excitedly: "You're really Husband's friend? Husband... is he really... your friend?"

Yun Che was slightly stunned, but Hua Minghai knew why she was so moved. He nodded forcefully: "Mn! Xiaoya, he's a friend I made outside... If he's not a friend, how could he possibly know that my name is Hua Minghai."

"Friend... Husband's friend..." She laughed, her smiling expression was pale yet blissful. She gently repeated: "Husband has a friend... Husband really has a friend..."

"..." Yun Che secretly heaved out a breath, and took a step forward: "Not only am I Little Hai's friend, I'm also a doctor. The reason why I have come with Little Hai here is also to see if I can cure your illness... Little Hai, step aside first, let me see her condition."

After hearing that, Hua Minghai quickly stepped aside, as both his eyes stared straight at Yun Che: "Big bro! Please, you have to use all your power to save Xiaoya. If you really can save her..."

In front of Xiaoya, Hua Minghai was unable to say the words that came next. Even though he knew that he was older than Yun Che by

at least ten years, the word "big bro" came from his soul. If Yun Che truly could save her, let alone "big bro", even if he had to call him "grandpa" his entire life, he would be perfectly willing. And he was already grateful that Yun Che was even willing to come here with him.

"Of course I'll do all I can." Yun Che said calmly. Then, he walked over to the front of the bed as his gaze fell upon her forehead...

Manifested on the space between her brows was the terrifying dark blue cold poison that had infected her body. It was almost about to enter her brain.

All the purple colored crystals beneath her were priceless, because each one of them were the purest Purple Veined Heaven Crystals! Her body was extremely worn out, and the main reason why she had lived past so many years under the terrifying cold poison was because half her body was bundled with those Purple Veined Heaven Crystals.

"My name is... Ru Xiaoya, can I... also call you big bro?" As Yun Che gazed at her, she suddenly asked in a weak voice.

"...Mn." Yun Che nodded in response.

"Thank you... Big bro..."

"Why are you thanking me?" Yun Che asked.

"Thank you... for becoming Little Hai's friend." Ru Xiaoya said with grateful sincerity: "These years... to extend my life... Husband did not hesitate to abandon the family doctrine of robbing the rich to help the poor... and went everywhere to steal many elixirs and Purple Veined Heaven Crystals... because of me... he doesn't have any friends... and also could not... have any friends..."

"I don't want to burden him anymore... but, I'm also scared of dying... because if I die... Husband will truly be alone... He finally... has... a... big brother... good..."

Ru Xiaoya's voice grew increasingly softer, until she finally lost consciousness. She was too weak, and saying so many words had consumed an enormous amount of energy.

=====

Chapter 411 – Great Kindness

"She fainted." Yun Che stated.

Hua Minghai trembled all over and clenched his teeth, using all his might to suppress the tears that were about to burst forth. He turned around with both hands clutching his head and said painfully: "I know how painful it was for her these past few years. To her, dying is actually a kind of freedom... but... but how could I possibly watch her leave me without doing anything..."

"This is a cruel decision you have no choice in. No matter which one you pick, they would both be right and wrong... Without personally experiencing this kind of feeling, it would never be understood." Yun Che sighed, then changed his tone: "However, because you met me, your choice and perseverance is right."

"Ah!?" Hua Minghai suddenly lifted his head to look at him.

Yun Che turned around and looked him straight in the eye: "I've only very rarely seen your wife's symptoms before, and I more or less understand them. Go stand guard outside, don't let anyone in. Aside from me giving you permission, you cannot come in. You ought to know that the more dangerous of a state a patient is in, the more reason there is for the treatment to not be disturbed."

Seeing Yun Che's undisguised expression, Hua Minghai said excitedly: "Could... could it be, that you have a way... to save Xiaoya... You really have a method to save Xiaoya?!"

"I can't say with complete certainty." Yun Che glared at him: "If you can disappear from my sight right now, the chance of success can roughly go up to ninety nine percent."

Swish! Bang!

A fierce wind was raised before Yun Che's eyes, and Hua Minghai had already vanished from his sight as the sound of the door being

hastily closed echoed.

This kind of speed was absolutely world shocking, would make ghosts weep, and stunned Yun Che for a long while before he recovered his senses.

This fellow, what kind of movement skill did he cultivate!?

His profound strength was more or less at the late stage Sky Profound, yet his movement skills were terrifying to such an extent!

The reason why Yun Che made Hua Minghai go out was obviously not because he was afraid to be disturbed, rather, he was afraid of him seeing the way he was going to treat Xiaoya. After all, if he were to expel the poison in the shortest time possible, he had to use the Sky Poison Pearl. If he didn't use the Sky Poison Pearl, Yun Che had to use ten million times the effort to dispel the cold poison... because the cold poison had already existed for as long as five years, and had long fused with the blood and meridians in her entire body. Not only would it be extremely troublesome to completely dispel it, it would also be accompanied by an extremely high risk.

Aside from the poison, she also had very heavy internal injuries... due to the cold poison's existence, not only did these internal injuries not heal, they had instead worsened day by day. To Yun Che, her internal failures were more problematic than the cold poison.

Yun Che extended out his left hand in front of Ru Xiaoya's bed, placing it on her chest. Sky Poison Pearl's green radiance slowly shined, then gradually spread through her entire body. Under the Sky Poison Pearl's power, the cold poison that had been wreaking havoc in her body for a full five years was quickly being eliminated without any resistance.

Like ants on a hot pan, Hua Minghai paced back and forth outside, but did not dare to make any stepping sounds.

A burst of a slightly cold night wind blew over, somewhat instantly

clearing Hua Minghai's mind. He was usually an extremely careful person, otherwise, he would not have kept Ru Xiaoya up till now. Yet today, he had actually brought a person he had only met for the very first time into their present hiding place, and even let him approach Ru Xiaoya alone. Now that he thought about it, he felt that it was inconceivable... perhaps it was the mysterious aura on Yun Che's body that allowed the bottom of his heart to give birth to an indescribable hope.

An entire hour passed by, and not a peep of noise came out from inside the house. This made Hua Minghai feel extremely uncertain, he wanted to pull open the door many times, but every time he felt that, he would do his utmost to hold himself back. At this time, Yun Che's not light, yet not heavy voice came from inside: "Come in."

Like lightning, Hua Minghai pulled open the door and dashed in. He saw that the medicinal ingredients in the room had not changed. Ru Xiaoya still laid in place, she had not even been moved. He quickly stepped forward and said with emotion: "How is Xiaoya...?"

As soon as he said that, his pupils suddenly enlarged... because he shockingly saw that the dark blue color on Ru Xiaoya's forehead had already disappeared.

Hua Minghai's entire body trembled with excitement. He held out a hand, pressed it on Ru Xiaoya's chest, and carefully probed with his profound energy... He no longer felt the slightest trace of the cold poison anywhere... not even a remnant was found.

"The cold poison in her body has already been completely dispelled." Yun Che said. How could it possibly take an hour for the Sky Poison Pearl to remove the cold poison in Ru Xiaoya's body? However, if it were too quick, it was unavoidable that it would be too shocking, so Yun Che sat for a while, dragging the time to last an hour.

Hua Minghai was so moved that he couldn't control himself. The two were tormented by this cold poison for an entire five years, it was their most terrifying nightmare, and they knew more than anyone

how dreadful this cold poison was, even so much that they had given up long ago about having the extravagant hope of curing this poison. When Hua Minghai brought Yun Che along, he also did not have the excessive hope that a miracle would occur, it was just that he was unwilling to abandon this last strand of hope... He never expected that a miracle would truly and honestly appear before his eyes.

"Xiaoya... Xiaoya..." Hua Minghai clasped Ru Xiaoya's hand and was so emotional that he spoke incoherently: "Did you hear that... your poison's gone... completely gone... Xiaoya... did you hear that..."

"Alright, don't bother her, let's go outside." Yun Che said: "Even though the cold poison has been removed, due to the cold poison's five years of erosion, her profound strength has completely collapsed, her internal organs are severely exhausted. If not for the large amount of Purple Veined Heaven Crystals' nourishment all these years, she would've inevitably died once the cold poison was removed. At present, she has not completely left the dangerous condition. In order to fully recuperate, she needs a really long time to do so. What she needs right now is proper rest."

Hua Minghai immediately restrained himself from talking as he properly tended to Ru Xiaoya's bedding and blankets. Then, he followed Yun Che out with light steps.

Yun Che took out a small bottle and gave it to Hua Minghai. Inside the bottle was a small amount of scarlet color liquid: "This is the blood of a fire attribute Emperor Profound True Dragon, it can disperse the cold energy that had filled her body during those years and also restore her vitality. There are a total of ten drops of dragon blood. You must drip one drop into three liters of water, then feed her three drops of that everyday starting tomorrow. Every time a month passes, you must add in an additional one drop... Remember, you must not add more drops, otherwise, her body would not be able to withstand it."

Even though it laid inside the jade bottle, with Hua Minghai's strong awareness, the pure dragon aura was completely perceived. He also

knew that for a weak body like Ru Xiaoya's that was filled with cold energy, a True Dragon's blood, even a fire attribute Emperor Profound dragon blood, was no different than a heavenly pellet.

Hua Minghai took the dragon blood and was so moved that he couldn't say a single word out.

"You have looked after her for five years, so you should be very clear on how to gradually cure her internal injuries and restore her vitality. You don't need me to talk excessively. But I have one thing to remind you about, within a period of three months, you cannot remove her from the Purple Veined Heaven Crystals. Her vitality is at an all time low at the moment so if she were to leave from the Purple Veined Heaven Crystals, any sort of mistake could possibly end her life." Yun Che said seriously. Saving the dying and healing the injured... was what he always did back then, and he had always been happy about it. But now, he no longer had that kind of mindset anymore, because compared to the number of people he had killed, the amount of people he had saved... was too far removed.

"Thank you... Benefactor!" Hua Minghai choked with emotion, then suddenly kneeled... This kneel, had more force than the previous kneel. The previous kneel was filled with endless unwillingness, but this kneel was filled with willingness: "I, Hua Minghai will remember your great kindness throughout my entire life. May I ask Benefactor for his great name? I, Hua Minghai will definitely use all my power to repay you."

"No need, I only occasionally do a doctor's duty." Yun Che said with a little sigh: "As for my name... I've already told you this before, my name is Ling Yun."

Toward this name, Hua Minghai was unmoved. Instead, he asked: "Could Benefactor's true name be... Yun Che?"

"..." Yun Che's brows violently twitched... Shit! What's this? I've only announced my name twice, and I said that it was "Ling Yun" both times, yet the other party all call out my real name... Could it be that

my name has already been spread to such an extent that everyone within Divine Phoenix Empire knows me?

Seeing that Yun Che had not said anything for a long time, Hua Minghai knew that his guess was right. He quickly continued: "When I infiltrated Divine Phoenix Sect, I just happened to hear the name 'Yun Che', and they mentioned that 'Yun Che' was from Blue Wind Nation. He wasn't a part of Divine Phoenix Sect, yet he possessed the phoenix bloodline. Benefactor is from Blue Wind Nation and can use phoenix flames... so I always thought that Benefactor was this 'Yun Che'.

So that's why... Yun Che was finally relieved. It was evident that the name "Yun Che" wasn't much, but people would pay attention to "someone outside of Divine Phoenix Sect who possesses the phoenix bloodline".

"Yes, I am the Yun Che you speak of. I came to Divine Phoenix City this time to settle this matter with Divine Phoenix Sect. That is also why I wasn't willing to give you the Phoenix Helianthus." Yun Che glanced at the night sky, then helped Hua Minghai up: "Okay, go back to look after your wife. You don't have to think about thanking me. After she recovers her strength, you should take her away from Divine Phoenix City and go to a safer place."

Hua Minghai said unhesitatingly: "Even though I am a thief, I will never forget how to repay a debt of gratitude. I've said it before, as long as you are able to save my wife, my life is yours. From now on, if Benefactor needs me for anything, don't hesitate to open your mouth. Even if it is extremely dangerous, I won't even wrinkle my brows! Especially if Benefactor wants something... Even if it's in the sacred grounds, I will still be willing to charge in for Benefactor."

Hua Minghai's last words stirred Yun Che's heart. He opened his lips, but before he could speak, he swallowed them back... In Divine Phoenix City, the thing he wanted the most was undoubtedly Divine Phoenix Sect's 《World Ode of the Phoenix》. If he could obtain the fundamental formula and the first four stages of the 《World Ode of

the Phoenix», he would completely master and comprehend his phoenix profound strength.

But 《World Ode of the Phoenix》 was Divine Phoenix Sect's core art. It was also 《World Ode of the Phoenix》 that allowed Divine Phoenix Sect to become the number one sect in the Profound Sky. The protection Divine Phoenix Sect would have for 《World Ode of the Phoenix》 would certainly be extremely tight. If Hua Minghai goes in to steal it, it was extremely possible for him to lose his life... That was after all, Divine Phoenix Sect's 《World Ode of the Phoenix》, normal things absolutely cannot compare to it.

He had just removed the cold poison from Ru Xiaoya. If Hua Minghai actually plants himself within Divine Phoenix Sect because of him, that would be the same as harming the two.

Seeing the distinct flash of hesitation in Yun Che's face, as well as him withdrawing his words, Hua Minghai quickly said: "Benefactor, is there something you want? Don't hesitate to ask, I'll definitely help you get it... If I don't repay this kindness, I won't ever be at ease."

Yun Che pondered for a while, then said: "Can you tell me what movement skill you use?"

Hua Minghai was somewhat stunned, then said after a slight hesitation: "It is my Hua Family's hereditary movement skill —— 'Extreme Mirage Lightning'."

=====

Chapter 412 – Hunted

“Extreme Mirage Lightning... This movement skill, can it be transferred to another person?” Yun Che asked earnestly.

“Ah...” Hua Minghai stilled his expression, then shook his head in fear and agony: “Sorry, Benefactor. I’ll never hesitate in whatever you want me to do, but only this... Extreme Mirage Lightning is my clan’s treasure bestowed upon us by heaven, and also our biggest taboo that can never be passed on to others. I...”

“I understand.” Yun Che nodded: “A clan’s profound techniques are originally not supposed to be spread out, I was being rude. Take proper care of your wife.”

After he finished speaking, Yun Che turned, leaving with slow steps.

“Benefactor... I...” Hua Minghai looked at Yun Che’s departing back, gritting his teeth with a face full of shame... What Yun Che had given him was no doubt a favor as big as the sky. He could easily accomplish the only thing he wanted, yet he just couldn’t do it... He was a man who hated owing a debt of gratitude to another, let alone such a great kindness. This kind of feeling made his heart feel unbearable pain.

“Don’t take it to heart.” Yun Che executed a backward wave: “You should be using all your energy on your wife at the moment, don’t be distracted by something that doesn’t matter. Saving a life can also be considered to be for the purpose of redeeming a bit of my sins. If you really want to repay me, then work hard to help your wife recover faster, which would not make me saving her be in vain.”

As his voice fell, Yun Che’s figure had already disappeared into the dark of night. Hua Minghai looked up ahead, not uttering a single word for a long while, with a complicated, indescribable expression on his face, as though he was struggling intensely about something.

“I never thought that you, someone who treats human life like grass,

who would annihilate an entire clan without blinking, would actually waste energy to save someone who has nothing to do with you.” Jasmine said with an extremely indifferent tone of voice.

“This proves that I am still inherently a good person, right?”

“...” Jasmine snorted.

By the time Yun Che returned to the inn, it was already the middle of the night. When he went back in his room, just as he was intending to push the door open while standing right at the doorway, his hands suddenly stiffened as both his brows sunk. All the nerves on his entire body had also instantly stretched taut.

Because he clearly felt that there was someone in his room!

The person hidden in his room was superb at concealment, if it was only by his profound strength and not spiritual sense, it would be impossible for him to discover his existence... Once he perceived this person's existence, a kind of hair raising, chilling sensation came right after. This kind of sensation told him that not only was the person inside terrifyingly strong, this person was here to kill him.

“Quickly, leave! It's someone at the eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm! He has already detected you!”

Under Jasmine's quick warning, Yun Che no longer had time to think as he Star God's Broken Shadow'd out of the inn and quickly dashed out.

Crash!

The door and walls being completely smashed sounded behind him as a scorching wave of wind also screamed from behind... This kind of burning sensation was clearly... phoenix flame!

Someone from Divine Phoenix Sect!

Yun Che's heart grew heavy... why was it someone from Divine

Phoenix Sect? And this killing intent clearly wanted to put him to death. Could it be... Feng Xichen!?

Yun Che's heart turned... Looks like it was due to the events back then, when he had revealed his phoenix flames in broad daylight in Falling Flame Merchant Guild and was mistaken as a Divine Phoenix Sect disciple, which allowed Divine Phoenix Sect to obtain news of him. They followed the clues to then find where he resided.

Seems like he had been too careless then. He was too preoccupied with noticing Hua Minghai that he had subconsciously forgotten this key fact... In Divine Phoenix City, Divine Phoenix Sect spies were everywhere!

Yun Che's speed obviously could not match a strong practitioner at the later stages of the Emperor Profound. In less than ten breaths, he had already chased to the point where there was only sixty meters between them. A violent wave of phoenix flame broke through the air at him.

RIIIP!!

The phoenix flame that had been violently ignited in the air was especially luminous in the night sky. Yun Che quickly dodged, avoiding the phoenix flame. Then, his heart steeled as he stopped to turn around... The person chasing him also stopped without overtaking him, because before his eyes, was his pitiful prey that simply could not escape his grasp.

"Who are you?" Yun Che asked with sunken brows.

The other party's gaze swept across his body, then laughed coldly: "You do indeed have the aura of phoenix profound strength. You are indeed the rumored bastard... Yun Che. I never thought that you would actually arrive so early."

"Heh," Yun Che coldly laughed in turn: "Look like your Divine Phoenix Sect is scared of me."

"Scared of you?"

"Right!" Yun Che ridiculed: "I came to Divine Phoenix City with the intent to settle the bloodline dispute with your Divine Phoenix Sect openly and honorably at the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, but you Divine Phoenix Sect are actually using such an unpresentable method like assassination. Seems like the so called Divine Phoenix Sect is only this much."

"Haha," The middle aged man laughed disdainfully: "In our Divine Phoenix Sect's eyes, you are merely a little reptile that had stolen our sect's bloodline. My sect is scared of a pathetic little reptile? Truly a joke as large as the heavens. Today is just because Thirteenth Prince wants your life."

"As expected..." Yun Che's gaze became even colder.

"A mere reptile from Blue Wind actually dares to offend Thirteenth Prince. Even if the Blue Wind Emperor kneels to beg for forgiveness on your behalf, you should not even think of living past tonight... However, dying in my, Feng Chihuo's hands, is enough to brag about when you go to the netherworld and enter the reincarnation cycle! Calmly meet your maker!"

Feng Chihuo's figure swayed, then he suddenly charged at Yun Che with phoenix flames ignited on all five of his fingers, aiming for Yun Che's chest. It was evident that he wanted to kill him in one strike... Eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm, a genuine high level Throne, against one at merely the Earth Profound Realm. If an instant kill was impossible, even he would feel that it was funny.

Yun Che's gaze flashed as he stepped a Star God's Broken Shadow, instantly splitting out three false images, dooming Feng Chihuo's grab to miss. Sucking in a deep breath, he gathered all the profound energy in his body and quickly fled toward the south.

The moment he grabbed empty air, Feng Chihuo was stunned. He was actually unable to clearly see how Yun Che had dodged with his

eyesight, and the rate in which Yun Che had fled right after had shocked him even more... He clearly was only at the Earth Profound Realm, but his speed was no less inferior to that of a low level Throne!

"Hmph! As expected, he has some skill." Feng Chihuo snorted coldly, as a trace of anger surfaced in his heart. Even though Yun Che's speed was way faster than what he had expected, this kind of speed still could not escape the palm of his hands. Besides, Yun Che only had profound strength at the Earth Profound Realm. It was impossible for him to fly, so he had no other choice but to run on ground, which meant that he could never escape his line of sight, nor his perception.

"Brat, let's see where you'll run to!"

Feng Chihuo growled. His entire body flew after Yun Che like an arrow from a bow, the shocking speed brought along the exceptionally ear-piercing sound of air being broken. Under the distinct difference in speed, within several tens of breaths, Yun Che was once again chased to sixty meters of difference. Yun Che, who was on the run, suddenly turned around again and tossed a pitch-black thing at the Feng Chihuo in midair.

The waning moon in the sky was completely hidden from view by the Primordial Profound Ark, making the night as black as ink. Feng Chihuo heard a sharp whistling sound in front of him, yet couldn't clearly see what it was. He didn't dare to use his body to obstruct it, for fear that the other party had tossed out a toxic poison. He quickly dodged to the side, and once it had brushed past him, did he clearly see that it was only an ordinary stone... It was probably a random stone Yun Che had casually picked up during his escape.

"Whoosh!"

The sound of something breaking through the air resounded once more, and Feng Chihuo's gaze grew disdainful. Casually slapping the stone into pieces, he sneered: "Truly a hilarious struggle, are you still

dreaming about escaping the palms of your lord's hands!?"

After a few breaths, Yun Che had already been chased to a distance of forty five meters apart. His expression was still, and he turned around again as a pitch-black object flew out of his hands once more.

Forty five meters of distance was already inside Feng Chihuo's attack range. He began to condense profound energy in his hand, and directly met that object. Without even looking at what it was, he casually slapped it away...

BOOM!!!!

The sound of profound thunder from the nine heavens resounded within Divine Phoenix City's quiet midnight. An enormous energy storm violently exploded in midair. From far away, it was as though an extremely magnificent firework had exploded in the sky.

The first two stones were merely a pretense tossed out by Yun Che.

But the third one, was the Heaven Decimating Orb Yun Che had obtained from the body of Xiao Wuyi!

Heaven Decimating Orb's might was incomparably large, enough to severely injure a low level Throne. With Feng Chihuo's abilities, if he had used all his strength to defend, it might actually be difficult for the Heaven Decimating Orb to bring about substantial injuries. However, in the cat chasing mouse game-like manner he used to pursue Yun Che, he simply did not defend at all. Inside the blaze brought about by the Heaven Decimating Orb, his entire left arm had been completely fried inside out, dripping with fresh blood. His entire phoenix robe had been burst into pieces, it was so powerful that even his chest, both arms, and face were littered with wounds all over. His hair had even been half bombed, changing into a field of rough disorder.

He looked miserable to the extreme.

As for Yun Che, he had fled long ago, not a trace of him could be found.

Even though there were many wounds, they were all just minor injuries, only the injury on his left arm was a bit severe. Compared to his external injuries, Feng Chihuo's chest had nearly burst from rage. He looked at his arm with a vicious expression as his entire body shook... He, a grand, high level Throne of Divine Phoenix Sect had actually been reduced to such a miserable shape by a mere junior of the Earth Profound Realm... This was the biggest humiliation of his entire life!

"Yun Che... I'm going to rip you into ten thousand pieces!!" Feng Chihuo's hair stood erect as his entire body combusted with a violent blaze. With a loud roar and a towering fury, he used his greatest speed to chase forward, his perception, had also been released to its maximum.

After running in his quickest speed possible for a distance, Yun Che had instead slowed down, then used all his power to control the fluctuation of his profound strength. To an escapee, night time was the best time for hiding, but at the same time, in the completely quiet night, even the most minute of movement would echo through the silence.

Feng Xichen had indeed ordered someone to kill him before the ranking tournament, and his mobilization was actually this fast... He had already been discovered, and Divine Phoenix City was also full of Divine Phoenix Sect's spies. In that case, Divine Phoenix City was no longer a suitable place for him to stay before the ranking tournament. Before dawn, he had to stay hidden from Feng Chihuo's pursuit and leave Divine Phoenix City at the same time.

As he was currently being hunted, Yun Che's mind would find itself at its most clearest state. Inside the darkness, in Divine Phoenix City, a place he was not at all familiar with, he was displaying his concealing and evading abilities to their peaks. Going along a strange and unpredictable route, he quickly approached the

southern part of Divine Phoenix City.

Time slowly passed by in the night, and the milky white color of twilight began to emerge from the eastern sky. Yun Che could already see Divine Phoenix City's tall, majestic southern gate in his field of vision... And in this boundless night, Feng Chihuo, who was crazily searching for him overhead could not find any trace of him.

Yun Che took in a deep breath, made himself look completely natural, and then walked toward the city gate. Just as he approached, he was obstructed by two heavily armored city guards:

"Orders from the Imperial Palace! Before seven in the morning today, no one is allowed to exit the city! Violators will be arrested on the spot."

=====

Chapter 413 – Profound Handle Exposed

The Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was in more than ten days, and the influx of people coming in Divine Phoenix City could be said to be increasing day by day. At this time, how could the city gates suddenly be sealed off?

The greatest possibility was that Feng Chihuo was angry that he couldn't find him through the entire night. Since he was angry to the point where he would have fainted and revived several times, he contacted Feng Xichen to pass down an order to temporarily seal off the city gates, allowing people to enter but not leave.

Yun Che moved two steps back. A few ideas quickly flashed through his mind, then, he suddenly accelerated, forcefully knocking the two city guards aside as he charged forward.

"Stop him!!!"

Yun Che's action was no different from poking a hornet's nest. Several tens of city guards nearby immediately rushed over. Yun Che lifted Dragon Fault and swept across without even looking at his surroundings. The might of the berserk heavy sword was like a Doomsday windstorm that ruthlessly scattered the besieging city guards flying. They couldn't get up for a long while, and even the weapons in their hands had been instantly destroyed.

The fact that the sky was only slightly bright, added to the fact that no one would dare be impetuous in Divine Phoenix City, meant that the city guards were relatively weak. Even though they had received the order to blockade the city, the city gates were still wide open, not shut. After Yun Che swept away the obstacles, without waiting for them to react, he had already rushed out of the city gates with an extremely fast speed. As he stepped outside the city, he summoned the Snow Phoenix, then flew off into the distance.

"Quick... notify Lord Chihuo." A city guard yelled out with all his

strength.

Fifteen minutes later, a current of heat hurtled above the city gates, directly chasing in the direction Yun Che had fled. It was precisely Feng Chihuo. The order Feng Xichen gave him was for him to assassinate Yun Che secretly. Not only was no one to know about it, he wasn't suppose to leave behind any traces. But it was clear that Feng Chihuo was already muddled by his anger. In order to thoroughly kill Yun Che, he had even brought about such a commotion. After all, being played with by a mere Earth Profound junior to a battered and exhausted state was a humiliation he had never suffered before. If he didn't kill Yun Che, it would be difficult for him to eliminate the hatred in his heart!

The Snow Phoenix Beast's speed was naturally faster than Yun Che by several fold. Even if Feng Chihuo went searching in the right direction, it was impossible for him to catch up in a short while. However, Yun Che was completely unfamiliar with the terrain outside Divine Phoenix City. The map Cang Yue had prepared for him only contained the route from Blue Wind Imperial City to Divine Phoenix City, as well as Divine Phoenix City's basic composition. There were no marks or anything about the topography outside Divine Phoenix City. Whether or not he was able to find a place to completely throw off Feng Chihuo was entirely left up to fate and luck.

And it was inevitable that Feng Chihuo, as a member of Divine Phoenix Sect, was extremely familiar with this region. At the same time, even though the Snow Phoenix's speed was fast, wherever it went, it would leave behind a sliver of cold air that would very likely turn into a trail that could be followed.

Under Yun Che's urging, the Snow Phoenix's speed finally reached its peak. Like a streak of lightning, it rapidly flitted across the sky. In the blink of an eye, it was already several tens of kilometers away from Divine Phoenix City.

On the way forward, Yun Che's expression was tranquil yet dark. Most of the space around Divine Phoenix City was spacious, it was

hard to find somewhere to hide. After an hour, the feeling of being pursued still did not come from behind, but Yun Che did not relax at all. He was certain that Feng Chihuo would not give up in his chase. The reason why he had not been overtaken was because the Snow Phoenix was not slower than Feng Chihuo by much.

Yun Che couldn't help but think of Hua Minghai... In terms of profound strength level, he could not amount to even one tenth of Feng Chihuo, however, in terms of speed, he was much more faster than Feng Chihuo. If he could cultivate that "Extreme Mirage Lightning", he could effortlessly throw off Feng Chihuo.

The only profound movement skill he possessed was Star God's Broken Shadow. Even though Star God's Broken Shadow was incomparably mysterious, it was limited to combat. Its existence perfectly made up for the heavy sword's largest flaw, allowing Yun Che to still wield a heavy sword that was several tens of thousands of kilograms in weight like a phantom. But Star God's Broken Shadow's activation was only an instantaneous short displacement, it was absolutely not used for normal high speed movements.

An endless range of mountains appeared on Yun Che's southwest side. Inside the mountain range were innumerable mountain peaks, the highest mountain was at least three thousand meters high. His heart stirred as he changed direction, speeding toward the row of mountains. Soon enough, he charged into the mountain range like a shooting star.

Once he entered the mountain range, an abnormal scorching sensation blasted forward, startling a few birds, scattering them about... These birds were completely red in color, and their bodies released a fiery aura.

As soon as he entered the mountain range, what he should've seen was green grass everywhere while feeling a slightly cold mountain wind, but once Yun Che went deeper in, he'd actually sensed that the air had distinctively gotten hotter. Every sort of vegetation also grew everywhere, but most of the plants here were red in color.

Furthermore, they all released the smell of ignited flame. Ninety percent of the profound beasts he encountered on the way, were also all fire attribute profound beasts.

Don't tell me it's because this place is close to Divine Phoenix City, and has something to do with the strong fire element within Divine Phoenix City?

After flying around for two hours, there still was no trace of Feng Chihuo coming from behind, as though he had completely thrown him off. Yun Che slowed down and the Snow Phoenix dropped from the sky, continuously descending until they were not even three hundred meters high, to hide in the many layers of mountains. Jasmine's low voice suddenly resounded within Yun Che's mind: "This place is somewhat different than usual."

"Different from usual? Where are you talking about?" Yun Che immediately asked.

"I thought that this place's heat came from the volcano nearby, or is from a high concentrated fire element zone. But when I probed earlier, I discovered that this place has exceptionally active fire elemental particles that actually come from an enormous, hidden profound formation that's extremely deep underground... The entire mountain range is enveloped in this profound formation. If I'm not mistaken, this enormous profound formation ought to have been set up by Divine Phoenix Sect around eight thousand years ago. At the same time, it also means that this mountain range is Divine Phoenix Sect's territory..."

"It seems like... you came to a place that you really shouldn't have entered!"

"Brat, let's see where you'll run off to this time!"

Just as Jasmine's voice fell, a loud angry roar resounded near Yun Che's ears. This voice came from... up ahead.

Yun Che raised his head. Feng Chihuo stood on a low mountain top in front of him with both hands behind his back.. Even though there was a great difference between them, he could still sense the surging fury released from his body. At first, Feng Chihuo thought that sending him, a Throne at the eighth rank, to personally assassinate him was like killing chicken with a butcher knife for cows. It was simply an insult to his status and ability. If not for the fact that Feng Xichen had personally ordered him, he absolutely wouldn't be willing to do so. However, once he found his target, such an extremely simple mission that insulted his rank had not gone smoothly at all. Instead, he had been dirtied by the other party's Heaven Decimating Orb... Within these several hours, Feng Chihuo's fury had not ceased. If not for the fact that his body was resilient, his chest would've burst open several tens of times due to his rage.

Yun Che was secretly shocked, if he had been overtaken by Feng Chihuo from behind, he would not be this shocked, because not only was Feng Chihuo's speed faster than the Snow Phoenix's, his familiarity with this Divine Phoenix region had far surpassed his. However, what shocked him was that Feng Chihuo appeared in front of him at such a close distance, but he had never detected him.

Jasmine knew what Yun Che was thinking, and said in a low voice: "Looks like there's big trouble up ahead. This profound formation that's at least eight thousand years old is not that simple."

Yun Che's brows sunk. Then, he clutched at the Snow Phoenix's snowy feathers on its back and yelled: "Little Chan... Go!!"

The Snow Phoenix Beast rapidly turned around, changing into a streak of an extremely fast white silhouette as it wildly flew in the opposite direction. From behind, came Feng Chihuo's loud roar: "You still want to flee! No matter where you go, even if you have a hundred lives, don't even think about escaping!"

The Snow Phoenix's speed reached its pinnacle as it quickly dove down, and the mountain range on the side quickly drew back, forming two long and narrow ravines.

Yun Che glanced backwards with clenched fists, urging the Snow Phoenix to suppress its aviation, to not fly higher than thirty meters. As they approached the ravine, he channeled Frozen End Divine Arts, instantly activating "Frozen End Illusory Mirror". At the same time, it enveloped him and the Snow Phoenix within, isolating their auras to a great extent. Then, he extended an arm, and allowed the Profound Handle to fly off into the other ravine.

This was a trick he used to disorientate those who chased after him... it was well-tryed and had never been defeated before.

Behind him, Feng Chihuo pursued with a speed that wasn't too fast, and in front of him was a bizarre, slowly revolving, fire-red profound formation. A white dot slowly moved inside the profound formation. As he looked at this white dot, Feng Chihuo exposed a ridiculing sneer... Right at this moment, his brows suddenly moved, because he suddenly felt that the direction in which the white dot in the profound formation was moving, was not the direction that Yun Che's aura went. A huge discrepancy had actually appeared...

"What happened? How could a discrepancy appear on the Great Phoenix Formation?"

Feng Chihuo stared blankly for a while. As he raised both his hands, the hovering red colored profound formation in front of him slowly enlarged. Along with the phoenix profound strength Feng Chihuo poured into the profound formation, it spun quickly. Then, two distinct scenes slowly appeared...

In one image was Yun Che flying really fast on a Snow Phoenix...

In the other, was shockingly... an extremely fast, flying orange yellow stream of light.

Yun Che's aura Feng Chihuo sensed... had actually came from the stream of light. Its aura and Yun Che's aura, were exactly the same!

Seeing the orange colored stream of light, Feng Chihuo was first

stunned, then, his pupils slowly contracted as his face revealed an expression of deep shock and incredibility. After a while, two words containing deep astonishment came out of his mouth...

"Profound... Handle!!"

The Snow Phoenix quickly passed through the ravine. As he looked onward, the highest mountain peak was already before his eyes, it was no less than four thousand five hundred meters tall. Feng Chihuo did not chase over, but Yun Che still did not sigh in relief. Instead, he felt that something was fishy.

He felt as if a pair of eyes had continuously been staring at him all along... how could that be possible?

Was I wrong?

"Run, keep running, let me see how far you can run to."

Feng Chihuo's voice suddenly resounded, and it still came from up ahead. Yun Che's complexion slightly changed as he raised his head... Not even ninety meters up ahead was a leisurely floating Feng Chihuo with an amused expression. However, Yun Che unexpectedly did not feel any killing intent from him, and even his anger had dissipated by a lot.

This time, Yun Che was completely certain that the feeling of being watched was not his misconception. The Feng Chihuo before him was obviously using some sort of method to lock onto his movements, and what helped him, was most likely the "profound formation" which covered the entire mountain range that Jasmine mentioned.

This time, Yun Che didn't flee at once. He coldly stared at Feng Chihuo: "Are you using this place's profound formation to track me?"

"Oh? You are actually able to sense the Great Phoenix Formation here? Oh... I almost forgot, you are also someone with the phoenix bloodline. Otherwise, you would not have been able to enter." Feng

Chihuo walked closer and laughed coldly: "Your concealment abilities were truly unexpected, to actually make me search for you without finding a single trace of your shadow until dawn. If you fled to some other place, you might have been able to escape me, but you just happened to rush here... I've lived for a hundred years, and have never seen such a perfect example of the saying 'walking straight into a trap.'"

"Great Phoenix Formation? What exactly is this place?"

"This is Phoenix Mountain Range, a place Divine Phoenix Sect uses to evaluate disciples of the young generation." Up till here, Feng Chihuo was no longer worried about Yun Che escaping the palms of his hand. He continued calmly: "And only those with the phoenix bloodline may enter. Other humans that approach would be repelled by the Great Phoenix Formation. Since it's an appraisal ground, we obviously have to monitor each and every disciple's movements. And I, just happen to be one of the supervisors of this Phoenix Mountain Range. With the help of the Great Phoenix Formation, I can control everything here, even so much that I can travel through the space here using the Great Phoenix Formation."

Yun Che: "!!"

"I had already known where you were the exact instant you entered the Phoenix Mountain Range. It's just that you were more crafty than I thought you were, so I didn't immediately take action to avoid you fleeing the Phoenix Mountain Range. Instead, I allowed you to go deeper in... all the way to here." Feng Chihuo gazed straight at Yun Che, then extended a palm: "You are now like a turtle in a jar, even if you dream about it, you should not think about escaping. But don't you worry, I suddenly don't feel like killing you anymore, because something that would greatly interest Sect Master, and even the Four Great Sacred Grounds has appeared on your body... I didn't expect that not only are you a bastard of our phoenix bloodline, you're also a demon from Illusory Demon Realm! I've clearly seen the profound handle you used earlier!"

“!!!” Yun Che’s expression immediately sunk as an extremely strong killing intent flashed through his eyes.

Yun Che’s overall strength had no doubt increased exponentially after awakening his profound handle, but he’d actually never used his profound handle in real combat before. Even when he had nearly been forced into a dire strait by Ling Tianni, he still did not think about using his profound handle. This was because while ordinary people might not recognize the profound handle, Heavenly Sword Villa, which was linked with Mighty Heavenly Sword Region in countless ways, might recognize it.

And the profound handle was a godly technique possessed only by Illusory Demon Realm’s Yun Family. As head of the Illusory Demon Royal Family’s Twelve Guardian Families, the Yun Family was no doubt one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds’ greatest enemies. And Illusory Demon Realm had long been made into demons by the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Once the profound handle was exposed, not only would the Four Great Sacred Grounds come at him, everyone within the Seven Nations would regard him as a “demon”.

If that happens, there would not be a single place in the entire Profound Sky Continent that he could seek shelter.

The consequences were ten million times more grave than exposing his phoenix flame.

Both of Yun Che’s hands tightened as his eyes became bone-piercingly cold. Previously, he’d used all his might to escape, but now, he absolutely could not run anymore! This person, who recognized his profound handle... he had to die!

No matter what, no matter how large of a cost he had to pay, he had to kill him!

=====

Chapter 414 – Trading a Life for a Life

“Run, why aren’t you running? Have you resigned to your fate, or have you already been scared witless?” Feng Chihuo laughed wildly: “Forget it, I ought to end our game of cat chasing mouse by now. Even though I spent so much time on you, with such an unexpected harvest, I can’t say that I’ve suffered any losses. I’ve even heard that you’re the Blue Wind Emperor’s son-in-law... Tsk, tsk. If that damned emperor of Blue Wind Nation and the other inferior nations were to know that a mighty prince consort was a demon from Illusory Demon Realm, I’m not sure how marvelous of a reaction they would have... Haha...”

After laughing to his content, Feng Chihuo’s face suddenly became darkened: “Even though I’m not going to kill you, once I give you to Sect Master... I’ll make you live a life worse than death! The debts you incurred after playing tricks on me... I’ll properly calculate them now!”

Feng Chihuo suddenly swooped down from the sky. With a sudden wave of his arm, a six meter wide column of fire instantly shot downwards. Just as it was about to approach Yun Che, it changed into a fire phoenix that danced in midair. As the temperature boiled, it nearly melted the ground.

Yun Che was not the least bit afraid of phoenix fire, but the profound energy attack of a high level Throne was still within the flame. Yun Che’s complexion grew grim as he instantly raised Dragon Fault. With a loud roar, the heavy sword force swung upwards against the air, straight for the fire phoenix.

Whoosh!!

Phoenix flame and the heavy sword’s windstorm directly clashed head-on. Yun Che’s hair had been blown up by the chaos as a distorted expression appeared on his face. The heavy sword force only lasted for half a breath before it had been completely smashed

apart. The fire phoenix crazily descended, charging at Yun Che and the Snow Phoenix.

The sound of phoenix fire exploding roiled like surging thunder, as the incomparably terrifying heat suddenly inflated the surrounding space. Yun Che's groans and the Snow Phoenix's mournful cries came from within the blaze. One was knocked to the east while the other was knocked to the west....

"Little Chan!"

The Snow Phoenix lost its balance, as though it was a dead leaf that was being swirled inside a gale, it fell several hundred meters away... Two stretches of ghastly blood red had quickly spread on the originally snow white pair of wings. After landing on the ground, it no longer made another sound. It was, after all, only a Sky Profound Beast, how could it withstand an attack from a high level Throne?

Bang!

Yun Che also heavily fell down, the fierce attack smashed two enormous holes on the ground. After he fell, the clothes on Yun Che's entire body were broken into pieces, dyed all over with bloodstains. All four of his limbs twitched unceasingly, and it seemed as if he used all his strength to lift Dragon Fault. While struggling to finally stand, he panted with his mouth open in huge coarse breaths.

"Jasmine, with my current body, what is the maximum time I can maintain 'Purgatory'?" Yun Che asked grimly.

Jasmine was also very clear that since Feng Chihuo recognized Yun Che's profound handle, he had to die no matter what. If he wanted to kill Feng Chihuo, he had to forcibly open Purgatory's gate. She said carefully: "Fifteen breaths... as for the most extreme limit, it cannot exceed twenty breaths. Otherwise, all the blood vessels in your body will rupture, even your Great Way of the Buddha won't be able to save you!"

"Tsk tsk, not bad. No wonder our prince had specially sent me to kill you. You do have some ability, after receiving a move that contains thirty percent of my strength, you actually had not been beaten half dead, and can even stand up."

Feng Chihuo casually dropped from midair toward Yun Che. The disdain in his eyes was as though he was looking at lamb about to be slaughtered. He moved his wrist, as malice flickered in his eyes: "You made quite a bit of blood flow from this arm of mine, there are even a few cracks that have appeared in my bones. In order to repay this favor of yours, tell me, should I snap every bone in your body, or pinch each and every one of them into pieces?"

Yun Che clenched his teeth and forcibly lifted the heavy sword as his entire body tottered on the verge of collapse: "Even if I die, even if I have to risk my life, I'm still going to... leave a few more injuries on your body!"

After he finished speaking, Yun Che roared. Swinging the heavy sword up, he smashed toward Feng Chihuo, who was only three steps away from him.

"Hahahaha!" The incoming heavy sword did not have the least bit of imposingness, rather, it seemed as if it was about to fall from Yun Che's grasp any moment. Feng Chihuo laughed out loud as he extended a hand to grab at Dragon Fault: "You alone, can actually injure..."

Just as Feng Chihuo's hand was about to touch Dragon Fault, Yun Che's expression suddenly changed. "Purgatory" opened, and Yun Che, who was on the verge of collapse, seemed like a ferocious beast that had suddenly awakened from the abyss as his entire body bursted with a incredibly frightening strength.

"Falling Moon Sinking Star!!"

A sky tremoring dragon cry came from Dragon Fault as the ground beneath Yun Che's feet suddenly shook. Cracks resembling spider

webs crazily spread... this sudden variation greatly changed Feng Chihuo's complexion. At such a close range, even if he was a deity, he would still not have time to react... That one strike brimming with all of Yun Che's power ruthlessly smashed on his arm.

Boom!!

The cracking sound of bone disintegrating was drowned within a world-shaking explosion. The surrounding mountain stones were all twisted upwards by the heavy sword tornado, then, they were all crushed into the most minute of fragmented dust. Feng Chihuo's left elbow bone had been directly smashed broken. Under the enormous attack, his entire person flew like a spinning top as he was smashed three hundred meters away, firmly ramming into a large mountain boulder, crushing it into smithereens.

With Yun Che's strength, defeating Ling Tianni at the sixth level of the Emperor Profound Realm required the joint help of Xia Qingyue. In normal instances, prevailing over Feng Chihuo at the eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm was something he had no chance of ever doing! If he was able to sustain Purgatory, he might be able to confront Feng Chihuo, but it was also near impossible... Besides, he could only maintain the Purgatory state for at most fifteen breaths. After fifteen breaths, he would be toying with fate, and after twenty breaths, he would be courting death.

And the only hope he had to kill Feng Chihuo... was to utilize all his strength and willpower, so much that he had to overdraft his life force! At the same time, he had to use any kind of tactics and tricks — no matter how shameless and despicable they were.

With Yun Che's current body strength, Feng Chihuo's attack that contained thirty percent of his strength was still a fire attribute attack, it was impossible to place him in too miserable of a state. Even the utterly tattered clothes and those numerous little wounds were all devised by him... they were all for this one moment. And the results were even better than what he had anticipated... directly crippling one of Feng Chihuo's arms!

Facing Feng Chihuo, who only had one arm left, his chances had naturally gotten better!

Feng Chihuo got up from the crushed rocks with an extremely angry snarl. His entire left arm dangled, its shape appearing to be hideously twisted. His right arm grabbed onto it as he felt intolerable pain. With most of the bones in his left arm broken, he howled, as if insane: "Yun Che... I'm going to tear you into ten thousand pieces!!"

Feng Chihuo had lived for over one hundred years, his combat experience was incomparably rich, so he was definitely not one of those who were arrogant and condescending. On the contrary, even when facing an opponent weaker than himself, he would still be very cautious... However, Yun Che was just too weak. Earth Profound Realm was two great realms weaker than him, how could he possibly be on guard? A fierce tiger going up against a wounded wolf might be on guard, but how could a tiger be on guard against a wounded young rabbit?

The acute pain in his arm was unbearable, yet far beneath the shock in his heart... The power Yun Che suddenly exploded out with just a while ago was only a strength a high level Throne could put forth, how could it appear from a profound practitioner at the Earth Profound Realm?

Just as he let out a howl, the figure before him swayed, and Yun Che had already attacked again, bringing along an imposing force not weaker than before. His eyes especially, flickered with a blood red radiance.

"Die!!" Instantly submerging in his anger and hatred, Feng Chihuo roared as his right arm shot out. The palm he poured his berserking profound energy in directly grabbed at Yun Che's chest... with the intent to immediately tear Yun Che's heart into pieces. Due to the arm that had been smashed broken, why would he care whether or not Yun Che was a demon from Illusory Demon Realm? Under his extreme fury, he only wanted to tear him into pieces.

RIIIP!!

Feng Chihuo's palm struck empty air, as four Yun Ches appeared around him at the same time. Since Feng Chihuo had plenty of experience, even though he was shocked, his mind had not been thrown into disorder. Instead of locking onto Yun Che's position, all the phoenix profound energy in his body rushed forth, launching out in all four directions.

Bang!!

Yun Che quickly dodged behind Feng Chihuo, then firmly smashed Dragon Fault on Feng Chihuo's back. At the same time, Feng Chihuo instantly ignited his profound energy and also firmly struck Yun Che's chest.

The two different forces exploded simultaneously, causing so much shaking that even the surrounding mountains violently trembled. A bloody flower burst out of Yun Che's chest as he was ruthlessly knocked flying. Feng Chihuo was even more miserable, he had been fiercely smashed to the ground by Dragon Fault, and then rolled far away like a gourd. A groove half a finger deep was smashed out onto his back. He used a palm to pound the ground and suddenly jumped up. Before he had time to stand firm, he suddenly discovered that the Yun Che he had sent flying was actually floating in midair. Then, Yun Che's entire body combusted with flame as he dove down like a shooting star.

Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!!

"Wha...What!?!"

Feng Chihuo widened his eyes, not daring to believe the fact that Yun Che was actually in midair, and was even borrowing the power that knocked him into the air. His gaze darkened as a ball of extremely powerful phoenix flame ignited on the palm of his right hand... Contained in this palm, was the unrestrained accumulation of all his strength, and he shot it at Yun Che within his raging roar.

Facing against Feng Chihuo's attack, Yun Che's descent had not diminished in the slightest, even the direction in which he was diving toward had not changed, as if he was willing to risk his life to receive Feng Chihuo's attack in order to smash out a strike of his own... Once his all out attack had come out, it was too late to retrieve it even if Feng Chihuo wanted to. Facing Yun Che's fighting style that was entirely trading a life for a life, Feng Chihuo's eyes fixedly stared wide, and he explosively roared: "You're courting death!!"

BOOOM!!!!!!

Yun Che's Dragon Fault and Feng Chihuo's palm heavily struck the other party's body at the same time... Numerous blood vessels on Yun Che's arm ruptured instantly as a huge expanse of blood burst from his chest. Several bones in his ribs and sternum broke apart, and several lines of gaps had even appeared on his internal organs. His entire person had been smashed over a height of three hundred meters.

While the sternum and ribs of Feng Chihuo's left side were all jolted into pieces, the position of his heart directly shifted by an inch as streams of blood sprayed out of the wound like a geyser. He was unable to believe that he had actually been severely injured to such an extent by a strike from a junior at the Earth Profound Realm, while his own all out attack had not smashed the other party into pieces. In fact, his power had not even entered the opponent's internal organs, and had actually been firmly resisted against.

That kind of power, that kind of body... how could it only be at the Earth Profound Realm... How was that possible!!

In this brief exchange, the two were both completely covered in blood and injuries. This was because what Yun Che wanted was not an exchange, the preservation of his own life, nor Feng Chihuo's defeat, rather, he wanted his death! In order to kill Feng Chihuo, he had to throw out all his power into his attacks in these short dozen or so breaths instead of dispersing his power and time to defend or evade.

“Sky——Wolf——Slash!!”

Without attending to his internal and external injuries, the midair Yun Che didn't wait for himself to regain his balance as he placed all his strength on his heavy sword once more. The silhouette of the Sky Wolf howled as it charged toward Feng Chihuo, furiously ramming onto his chest... Feng Chihuo conjured all the strength within his body to rigidly block the sky wolf silhouette, but due to the extremely fast propelling force of the attack, he was pushed backwards. It was only after both his legs instantly plowed two ditches over thirty meters long across the ground did he barely offset Sky Wolf Slash's might. However, before he had time to gasp for breath, Yun Che had already fallen from the sky, blasting a strike over.

Feng Chihuo let out a loud cry as he condensed his flame into a sword. But this time, he didn't attack Yun Che, rather, he put all his strength on the phoenix flame sword to suppress Yun Che's heavy sword... Each one of Yun Che's moves were executed without any concern to his own life, but how could Feng Chihuo willingly trade lives with Yun Che? Against such a terrifyingly large power and the lunatic Yun Che, who was trading injury for injury, his anger had already been rapidly replaced by dread and fear.

With every single sword strike Yun Che smashed out, several tens of blood vessels on his arm would burst open. Both his arms were instantly dyed with blood, as if they had just been submerged in a pool of blood. The wounds on his body endlessly spewed out blood, and the internal injuries in his body continually grew more severe as he attacked without reserve. But he didn't mind it at all; every single sword strike was vicious to the extreme.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom...

=====

Chapter 415 – Brutal

Each strike from Yun Che that Feng Chihuo blocked felt as though a mountain was ruthlessly ramming him, directly shaking him so hard that his internal organs felt like rupturing. Facing Yun Che's blood red eyes and the terrifying impact that passed through his arms, he began to genuinely grow fearful... At this time, under the suppression of Yun Che's heavy sword, let alone retreating to escape, he couldn't even let out a single word.

Yun Che's vision had already changed into a field of hazy red, and only Chihuo remained in this red colored world. The only thing in his heart was an abundant amount of killing intent. However, Feng Chihuo was still a high level Throne, even if it was Yun Che's attack in his strongest state, they were still blocked one after the other. Yun Che's expression grew more overcast as a streak of cyan suddenly emitted out of his left arm.

The lowest level profound handle was red, it became orange after possessing the Dragon God's bloodline, then yellow under the Evil Soul state. Under the Burning Heart state, it became green, and now that he was in the "Purgatory" state...

It had shockingly become the same cyan Yun Canghai possessed! Cyan colored profound handle was equal to one half of the user's strength!

Under the state where he pushed himself to the limit, utilizing the profound handle would undoubtedly accelerate his energy consumption by a substantial amount and cause an intense battering of impact which would lead to unpredictable consequences. However, in order to thoroughly suppress Feng Chihuo, Yun Che nevertheless decided to use the profound handle.

Bang!!

Feng Chihuo was already barely managing to withstand the heavy

sword. Once the profound handle came out, he no longer had any energy left to obstruct that, and was firmly hit on the head with the profound handle... The sound of an explosion instantly came from his head as his entire person was knocking off flying. Then, he fell one hundred fifty meters away on the ground, he smashed out a large hole several meters deep with his head and upper body buried at the bottom of the large hole.

“AH!!! You bas...”

Feng Chihuo released an animal-like roar as he ferociously lept out of the large hole. His entire face was filled with blood, his complexion, an even brighter red. On his forehead was shockingly a bloody dent the size of a fist. He was discomforted to the point where he appeared insane but before had time to let out a flurry of curses, the figure before his eyes flashed. An ash colored heavy sword ignited with phoenix flame once more appeared within his pupils, along with the cyan profound hand that had changed into a heavy sword.

Feng Chihuo's eyes became scarlet as both hands clutched his sword. He threw in all his power into the flame sword before greeting Yun Che's heavy sword and profound hand.

BOOM!!!!

In that instant, three short mountains near the two had simultaneously crashed down from the shaking. The mountains that had been reduced to level ground was as if a blood moon had risen. Inside the blood moon, all the boulders and trees had all been demolished into fine powder. The two people were dead leaves that had been caught in two separate storms as they lightly fluttered down in two different directions.

Bang!!

Feng Chihuo's body fiercely smashed onto an ancient tree. He fell flipped over on the ground and violently coughed. Every cough

would bring along a large amount of blood clots as he nearly coughed out the smashed pieces of his internal organs out... However, even at such a state, he still didn't have time to gasp for breath because Yun Che's silhouette emerged before his eyes like a ghost once more.

Yun Che's current condition looked even worse than his, his entire body was bloody, there wasn't a single spot on his face nor limbs that had not been dyed blood red. Especially the heavy sword he was grabbing onto with both hands, streams and streams of blood flowed and dripped down. However, his imposing aura and demonic speed had not decreased in the slightest. Just as Feng Chihuo's gaze captured him, in the next instant, Yun Che Star God's Broken Shadow'd to his front.

"You... lunatic!!" Feng Chihuo's eyeballs were shocked to the point they had nearly burst out. Even though he had received Yun Che's heavy strike, Yun Che had obviously also received the strike that contained all his power. He also could see how gravely injured Yun Che was currently... but under such a conditions, he actually was not suppressing his wounds, rather, he was continuing his assault!

Feng Chihuo had lived for over one hundred years. It wasn't as if he had never seen a lunatic before, but he had never seen a lunatic that had become crazed to this extent.

He tightly gritted his teeth. Just as he was about to gather up all the profound energy within his body, his eyes suddenly enlarged... reflected on his eyes was an azure blue dragon roaring up at the sky.

Dragon Soul Domain!

The soul shaking dragon cry resounded through the skies of the Phoenix Mountain Range, making numbers fire profound beasts all crouch on the ground while trembling in fear. Feng Chihuo's entire body began shivering as deep fright continually condensed atop his face. The profound energy he had just conjured had quickly scattered under his fright...

Yun Che's maintaining of the "Purgatory" state was also quickly approaching its utmost limit. If he could, he really wanted to use "Destroying Sky Decimating Earth" to obliterate Feng Chihuo, but due to the severeness of his internal injuries, his body was on the edge of collapse. If he used "Destroying Sky Decimating Earth" his body would perhaps explode instantly.

Using Dragon Soul Domain would overdraft his remaining power, making an enormous tear appear within his mental state. But under the circumstance of not being able to use Destroying Sky Decimating Earth, even if the price was huge, in order to put an end to this accident and completely eliminate Feng Chihuo, he opened Dragon Soul Domain without hesitation. Not only would Dragon Soul Domain allow him to hit his target, the most important thing it did was forcing all of the opponents profound energy defense to completely disintegrate.

If it was under normal circumstances, as a high level Throne, the effects of Dragon Soul Domain would lessen by a great amount to Feng Chihuo. But due to all the injuries on his body had greatly disorientated Feng Chihuo. With his mind mostly crushed, Yun Che suddenly charged in with the last of his gathered power condensed on top of both his hands.

"Falling Moon Sinking Star!!"

The heavy sword lifted, phoenix flame rose. Dragon Fault, which bore the last of Yun Che's strength, brought along the aura of a death god as it smashed toward Feng Chihuo's heart... Confronted with the fast approaching death, Feng Chihuo instinctively extended both his hands to protect his front within his trembling terror, barely managing to set up a profound energy defensive barrier.

Boom!!!!

The ground burst open. Under his crumbling state of mind, Feng Chihuo's constructed defense popped like a weak soap bubble. In the midst of the world shaking sound, lines and lines of cracks

rapidly spread beneath his feet, directly extending to more than three hundred meters. As for Feng Chihuo, he had completely disappeared from his line of sight... it was not known how deep his body had been sunk deep into the ground.

Pitter-patter...

Pitter-patter...

Fresh blood flowed from the webs of Yun Che's fingers like pearls from a broken string, quickly trickling drip by drip onto the ruins underfoot. His previous all-out attack made countless cracks appear on his entire body. Blood dyed his body, making him resemble a bloody demon god, an Asura coming out of the battlefield. Even the wind brushing past his body carried the pungent smell of blood.

Finally... over...

Bang!!

Dragon Fault powerlessly dropped from Yun Che's hands. In the midst of its heavy landing sound, the red light in Yun Che's eyes disappeared. The profound handle had also return back in his arm as his eyes slowly closed. After his entire body swayed, he finally heavily fell onto the ground... When he had decided that he had to kill Feng Chihuo, he knew that this battle would be a terribly brutal one. Because with his current strength, wanting to kill a high level Throne required him to pay an extremely large cost. He had finally succeeded... An Earth Profound killing a late stage Emperor Profound, he could be said to have created a never before seen legend in the Profound Sky Continent.

This outcome's crucial point stemmed from the very first time he had caught Feng Chihuo off guard and destroyed an arm. Otherwise, even in a state where he forced himself to the limit, it would be difficult for him to suppress Feng Chihuo.

"Have to... quickly... leave... this place..."

Yun Che struggled to stretch out an arm. Pressing the dirty before him, he had to exhaust almost all his strength to crawl a few inches forward. What he ought to do now should be tending to his wounds, but this place was Phoenix Mountain Rage, Divine Phoenix Sect's territory! Below him, still existed the Great Phoenix Formation. The sounds of his battle with Feng Chihuo was extremely loud, it was quite possible that it had already alerted a few members of the Divine Phoenix Sect. If he didn't leave right away, the consequences would be unthinkable. Forget about whether the person who came over was a Throne, even the lowest level disciple in Divine Phoenix Sect could take his life.

He looked at his left hand and continuously summoned for the Snow Phoenix. However, even though the profound seal had flashed a multiple number of times, The Snow Phoenix still had never appeared. The profound seal had not disappeared, proof that the Snow Phoenix had not died yet. However, Feng Chihuo's attack was enough to make it seriously injured to the point of near death.

"Huff... Huff... Ugh..."

Heavy moans of pain suddenly came from the direction where Yun Che held out his hand. Furthermore, it sounded far, yet near. Yun Che's complexion changed. Little by little, he turned his head around. A hand suddenly appeared from the very edge of the ravine carved out by a Sky Wolf Slash... Then, a completely bloody figure slowly crawled up.

Feng Chihuo!!

"Drats... he's not dead yet!" Jasmine said in a low voice.

It could be said that the current Feng Chihuo was at his most miserable state. His entire body had been badly mutilated, not the least bit of a human's appearance could be seen, but he was actually clearly alive. Moreover, judging by how quick he was climbing out of that ravine, it was clear that his condition was at least comparatively better than Yun Che's.

Impossible... Under Dragon Soul Domain... He basically had no power to defend... How could he not have died...

Feng Chihuo, who had climbed up, swayed as he stood up. Seeing the bloody Yun Che sprawled on the ground, he continued to sway as he let out a coarse yet crazed laughter: "Ha... Haha... Hahahaha... How... could a little... bastard... like you... kill me..."

He advanced forward. As he stepped closer to Yun Che, a terrifying maliciousness surfaced on his face: "I'm going to... tear your entire body... bit by bit... thoroughly into shreds..."

Right at this time, an enormous silhouette suddenly swept over from overheard accompanied by a somewhat frail long cry. Yun Che struggled to lift his head. After that, wild joy rose within his eyes: "Little Chan!!"

Half of the snowy feathers on the Snow Phoenix had become the color of blood, but it still strongly flew over. As it flew above Yun Che, both its wings swatted and three streaks of gleaming cold icicles launched straight at Feng Chihuo.

Pew pew pew!!

If it was in normal circumstances, how could the Snow Phoenix's attack possible harm Feng Chihuo? But Feng Chihuo's body was currently utterly broken, even his steps were unstable, so it was simply impossible for him to defend against the Snow Phoenix's attack. The three icicles easily pierced right through Feng Chihuo's body. Included among them was one that struck a fist sized bloody hole through his throat.

Feng Chihuo's eyes rounded. Under the icicle attack, he heavily fell backwards and moved no more. Beneath his body, was a quickly expanding large pool of blood... This time, he was dead to the point where he could no longer die. He had perhaps thought about how his life would end, but he never would have thought that he would die so tragically, nor would he have imagined that he would die

under the hands of a profound practitioner of the Earth Profound Realm and his contracted Sky Profound Beast.

Yun Che let out a deep breath of relief. As his mind relaxed, the side effects of using Dragon Soul Domain violently surged up, making his greatly impacting his consciousness into a muddled state. He extended a hand at the Snow Phoenix and said in a hoarse voice: "Little Chan... Let's... go... the higher the better... the farther the better..."

The Snow Phoenix conjured up a light breeze, lifting Yun Che up on its back. Then, it flapped his wings, flying high into the skies.

Yun Che's heart was at long last settled somewhat, and it was just at this time that Jasmine's cold voice suddenly sounded: "You'd best stay conscious.... You should know why it had not immediately arrived after you had called it so many times, it's inevitable that its wounds are extremely severe, not only that, it had been injured in the wings. Even though it managed to fly now, I doubt that it could fly far."

Yun Che "..."

Jasmine definitely didn't say that just to scare him. Yun Che bit the tip of his tongue, allowing himself a brief period of consciousness. He immediately felt the Snow Phoenix's entire body tremble acutely. Usually, when it encountered a large gale, it would still fly smoothly, but now, a casual mountain breeze blowing over would cause its body to violently sway.

"Little Chan... You can do it!" Yun Che yelled softly. If he could not fly out of Phoenix Mountain Range, he would definitely die.

However, he had obviously underestimated the Snow Phoenix Beast's injuries. After struggling to fly over a few kilometers, a strong breeze came head-on. Under this strong breeze, the Snow Phoenix immediately let out a painful cry as both wings suddenly spasmed before it dropped down.

“Little Chan!!”

In front of Yun Che's shout, the Snow Phoenix didn't react at all because it had already fainted in midair. Yun Che possessed the Phoenix bloodline, the Dragon God's bloodline, the protection of the True God's profound arts, and a completely changed body, so no matter how serious of an injury he obtained, he could still endure. But the Snow Phoenix was different, it was only an ordinary Sky Profound Beast. Struggling to fly for so long with its grave injuries was already its limit.

Following the Snow Phoenix's midair collapse, Yun Che didn't even have the energy to clutch at its snowy wings and was slowly separated from the Snow Phoenix as they fell... Not long after they fell, Yun Che's body heavily smashed into soil that wasn't even that hard... It was apparently a huge slanted slope, because after he fell, he quickly rolled downwards with the Snow Phoenix Beast. As he rolled, his half conscious vision saw the place they were tumbling toward. It was actually... an extremely steep cliff!! He saw various mountain peaks over the cliff... and none were higher than the mountain peak he was currently rolling down from.

In that split second, he immediately understood that he and the Snow Phoenix had fallen on top of that highest mountain peak in Phoenix Mountain Range. They were currently tumbling down from highest summit... from an altitude of over four thousand five hundred meters...

His body had finally tumbled down the cliff, then, his tumbling changed into a sharp drop... With his head facing upwards, he couldn't see the ground beneath him. He didn't know if the upper part of the mountain or the middle of the mountain was beneath him... or if he would directly drop to the bottom of the mountain.

The whistling of the wild wind swept over, with his mind and body severely overspent along with his grave injuries, he was unable to control his body that was currently in midair, so much that he was unable to conjure up any profound energy defense... He wasn't sure

if the bloodline he obtained from gods and his powerful natural defense could withstand the force of impact he would receive from falling under a state in which he had no profound energy defense... Whether or not his body and bones would directly be torn and crushed...

The howling of the wind drowned out all other sounds. Aside from the whistling of the wind, there was nothing in Yun Che's consciousness, he didn't even have the strength to scream. After several tens of breaths passed, the sound of the wind beside his ears still screamed out. Until finally...

Bang!!!!

He heard the enormous sound of himself falling and the barely discernable fearful cry of a girl...

All the painful sensations in his entire body quickly faded away along with his fuzz consciousness... Half of the last scene he saw was the tall mountain cliff, and the other half was the blue sky... then, the face of a girl that was as beautiful as a dream appeared from the blue sky. Her wide eyes were even brighter than the stars gazed at him. These eyes were as pure as the bright moon, brimming with sincerity, horror, astonishment, and curiosity... Yun Che had seen many beautiful women, but this illusory beauty in front of him still caused his mind to uncontrollably shake...

So beautiful...

Is it a fairy... from the heavens...

This image of a beauty that should not belong in the mortal world became the last thing Yun Che was conscious of. After that, he completely lost consciousness.

=====

Chapter 416 – Princess Snow

Not long after, Yun Che finally recovered some of his consciousness, and pain could be felt through every part of his body. In order to kill Feng Chihuo, he had paid a large price, one that was larger than he had expected. Nearly half of all his blood vessels had ruptured, seventy percent of his muscles received various levels of harm, and several tens of various sized gaps appeared inside his internal organs. If these injuries were on any ordinary profound practitioner's body, they would long since been dead.

The painful sensation told Yun Che that he had not died, as his bodily functions also began to recover. He vaguely sensed a current of warm profound energy slowly flowing through his body... This was not his profound energy, rather, it was someone else's. This stream of profound energy was gentle and careful, as if it wanted to heal his injuries, yet was also afraid of accidentally injuring him. This cautious and hesitant activity proved that the owner of this profound energy had never used profound energy to heal injuries.

Who could it be...

Who's saving me...

At this moment, the scene he saw before he lost consciousness appeared inside Yun Che's mind... That was a beautiful and pure face that should not exist in the mortal world. Even though he only had a glimpse of it in the extremely short instant before he lost consciousness, it still left a long lasting mark and had been engraved in the depths of his soul. No matter who saw it, that kind of beauty was impossible to forget for an entire lifetime.

Was it a dream... or a painting on a scroll? No... even in a dream, even if it was the best artist in the world, that kind of peerless beauty was impossible to portray.

That beautiful dream-like face made Yun Che's consciousness that

had just awakened feel an uncontrollable hazy intoxication, even the pain in his body had been forgotten. That current of warm profound energy slowly disappeared, and Yun Che's consciousness went silent.

Not long after that, Yun Che's consciousness awakened once more, and still felt that warm and gentle profound energy. The time after that, his consciousness continuously woke and slept. Every time it recovered, he would feel that stream of profound energy... or perhaps every time that stream of profound energy came over, his consciousness would awaken for a short period of time.

In the end, at some moment in time, the fingers on both of Yun Che's hands twitched, as his incredibly heavy eyelids opened bit by bit under the urging of his willpower.

What entered his eyes was a bright light and the blue sky. Yun Che's body had an astonishing recovery rate. As soon as he opened his eyes, he felt the existence of his body and four limbs. Even though they were heavy, he distinctly felt that he could control their movements. A bit of profound energy also had collected inside the originally empty profound veins. These profound energies also helped his body recover its bodily functions, so much that they allowed him to move in the simplest of actions... including standing up.

Yun Che grabbed the ground, gritted his teeth, and struggled to sit up...

"Ah, you're awake!"

The sound of a girl's voice came over to his ears, this voice was young and tender, a sound so ethereal that it seemed to not be from this world. When he heard this voice, an uncontrollable shudder came over Yun Che's soul, as well as a kind of crazy, unsuppressable longing... a longing to know the owner of this voice, to know what kind of girl could let out such a pure, ethereal voice.

He turned his head to look at the girl who was standing beside him...

It was a girl that seemed to have walked out of the fairy realm. Once he clearly saw her face, Yun Che's consciousness suddenly blanked out for an instant, not daring to believe the image before his eyes... because he didn't dare to believe that such an incomparably beautiful face existed in this world. Yun Che searched his own memories, yet still couldn't come up with any words to describe how this face looked like.

The girl wore a luxurious red garment, embroidered on top was a flying phoenix. This was not the first time Yun Che had seen a phoenix robe, but her phoenix robe was even more gorgeous than the one Yun Che had seen before. No matter the red or the golden color, both glistened brightly, as though every thread and every decoration was made of the world's most expensive material. However, this phoenix robe was like cosmetics on jade, overshadowed by her snowy creamy skin. If this extravagant outfit was seen someplace else, it would leave one dumbstruck, yet would never attract any of Yun Che's attention. His eyes fixed on the girl's face, incapable of moving away. Especially her beautiful eyes... they seemed to billow like blue ripples, condensed inside her dreamy, illusory pupils, becoming a illusory, poetic, fairy-like dream.

This was that fairy he saw before he lost consciousness... and not from his imagination, nor an illusion. She stood there quietly as her silky eyelashes fluttered, with not a single bit of impurity, her eyes had a joyous expression of clear mountains and springs. Then, she looked at him with somewhat nervousness. The gently wind lifted the corner of her skirts, bringing about a simple elegance, yet the most beautiful poem of this world could not describe it.

She looked to only be around fifteen or sixteen, her beautiful dreamy, liquid eyes were young. In terms of appearance, she couldn't compare with Xia Qingyue, but in terms of how delicate and perfect her complexion was, even Xia Qingyue, number one fairy of Blue Wind, was inferior. In Yun Che's two lifetimes, out of all the females he had encountered, in terms of complexion, only Jasmine could stand shoulder to shoulder with her. It was as if the heavens

avored her, and gave her this fairy-like complexion before his eyes.

If he was an ordinary man, he believed that his heart would definitely be lost, but he wasn't an ordinary man. In the entire Profound Sky Continent, it was perhaps impossible to find a second who could make him forget himself like that just with their complexion. He suddenly moved his gaze away, slightly bent his head as he calmed his heart. When he lifted his head to look at her fairy-like face again, it was still indescribably beautiful, but he was no longer distracted.

He opened his dried lips, speaking with a hoarse and rough voice: "Was it you... who saved me..."

"Um... It seems like it." The girl slightly perked her flowerlike lips and spoke as though she was uncertain: "This is the first time I tried to save someone, so I'm not sure if I did it right. It's been many days, and I wasn't sure if I should tell royal father, but good thing you woke up. Oh right, what's your name? Which elder are you under? Why did you fall down from Absolute Phoenix Cliff?"

The girl's casual "royal father" caused Yun Che's heart to violently tremble.

Royal father...

Extremely luxurious phoenix robe...

Around fifteen to sixteen years old...

And a face so beautiful to the point of being illusory...

Was she actually the one Hua Minghai spoke of, the "Princess Snow" known as Profound Sky's number one beauty!?

Originally, Hua Minghai had used an exaggerated tone of voice when mentioning "Princess Snow", so he never believed it. But this girl in front of him, it was indeed adequate for her to be titled "Profound Sky's number one beauty" because of her face.

However, if she really was Princess Snow, the most treasured pearl of Divine Phoenix Sect, the entire Divine Phoenix Empire's treasure bestowed by the heavens... then why was she here? When she said "many days", it meant that he had lost consciousness for several days. And in these past "many days", she had always been here! What exactly was going on? What exactly was the current situation he was in?

Yun Che's mind quickly spun as every kind of possibility rapidly flashed in his mind. He shifted his body, his cordial tone of voice containing a hint of terror: "My name is Feng Lingyun, under Nineteenth Elder. I was training alone inside Phoenix Mountain Range and encountered an extremely terrifying profound beast, then was forced to jump off Absolute Phoenix Cliff... I thank Princess Snow for saving my life."

The girl's eyes were clear, and as bright as early morning. In front of these beautiful eyes and this girl who had saved his life, it was no doubt an enormous sin to lie. But since he had not recovered from his grave injuries, what he had to do right now was to protect his own life, no matter what. He knew the reason why this girl had saved him, and the reason why she wasn't on guard with him was because he possessed the same phoenix aura she did.

"Ohhh..." Princess Snow innocently tilted her delicate head. Then, her fine brows bent, as she started to laugh lightly: "As expected of what royal father said, you knew who I was in an instant. Royal father said that within the sect, even though there aren't many who have seen me, as long as it's someone within the clan, even if they've never seen me before, they would recognize me instantly.

The girl laughed with sincerity, it was as if her laughter was heavenly music that came from between the clouds which could rinse the most evil of thoughts from the world. Yun Che opened his mouth, and uttered: "Your Highness is the most beautiful girl in the world, no matter who it sees Princess Snow, they would never recognize falsely... This place, where is this? Have I... disturbed Your Highness's

secluded cultivation?"

"This is Phoenix Perching Valley, a place that I've played in since childhood." Princess Snow was not on guard with Yun Che at all as she casually replied. Perhaps it was his phoenix bloodline, or perhaps it was because she had always been this pure, and never had contact with any sin, nor had to be on guard at all: "Royal father has been really busy lately and is afraid that I'll be hurt by others, so he allowed me to come here to concentrate on cultivating World Ode of the Phoenix. Aside from me and royal father, usually no one is allowed to enter, you're actually the first, you know."

"...Your Highness, then why didn't you tell... Sect Master about me? Your Highness is not afraid that I... could be a bad person?" Yun Che clasped his chest, checking the condition of his injuries.

"I did think about telling royal father." The girl stuck out her white, graceful, jadelike nose: "But if I tell royal father, he'll definitely kill you. You fell from such a high place, and is already this injured. If you're killed by royal father, that would be too pitiful, and Little White would be sad. Bad person? ...You're the same as me, a descendant of the Phoenix, how could you be a bad person? Besides, Little White is so beautiful and docile, its owner would never be a bad person."

What saved Yun Che was not only her profound energy, but her soft heart — even though he used such an abrupt method to enter her territory. Only... Little White? What did that mean?

By his ears, a somewhat weak, yet still resonant cry of a bird sounded. This sound made Princess Snow softly "ah" as she turned around, then lithely ran like a sprite toward a magnificent, snow white silhouette: "Little White, your injuries have not recovered, you're not allowed to move, otherwise, that means you're not being obedient... even if you see that your owner is awake, you still can't move rashly."

On the ground not even thirty meters behind Yun Che was the Snow Phoenix Beast. Its wings were unfolded, and the bloodstains on its

wings had been washed clean, without any trace of a bloody color. Princess Snow stood by its side and used her little snow white hands to lightly stroke its soft, ice-cold, snowy feather. From an agitated state, she made it obediently calm down as it carefully withdrew its wings.

Yun Che was shocked... it was the Snow Phoenix! It was actually okay! His own body could barely resist falling from such a high place, but the Snow Phoenix had already lost consciousness mid flight, unable to fully make itself float and use any defensive abilities. From such a height, it had sharply fallen down, so its bones and body ought to have been crushed. Why did it seem that its injuries were much more lighter than his own?

Could it be that this girl had saved the Snow Phoenix before it fell?

Then, the “White” she spoke of, was... Snow Phoenix Little Chan!

=====

Chapter 417 – Snow Dance (1)

“You’re the one... who saved Little Chan?”

Seeing the Snow Phoenix safe and sound, with injuries already largely healed, Yun Che felt much more at ease.

“That’s right.” Princess Snow turned around and said happily: “It fell down after you and I had to support it with my strength. Otherwise, Little White would have fallen to death already. Eh? Little Chan? That’s her name? Eh... What a weird name. I think that Little White sounds so much better, isn’t that right, Little White?”

Scree... Snow Phoenix lowered its head and let out a clear low cry. From how it acted, it seemed as though... It agreed with Princess Snow.

Through the profound seal, Yun Che felt that the Snow Phoenix’s injuries had already healed to about seventy percent. Flying out of the Phoenix Mountain Range would not be a problem at all. Even though its conditions were still extremely poor, staying at such a place would be too dangerous. Now that he had regained consciousness, he would have to leave immediately.

Yun Che gathered all the strength within his body and stood up unsteadily. As he stood up, Princess Snow’s beautiful eyes stared wide as she exclaimed worriedly: “You... Why did you stand up. With such serious injuries, you shouldn’t move around.”

Yun Che shook his head gently and said: “I thank Princess Snow for saving me and Little Chan. I will forever remember your kindness towards us. However, this place is Princess Snow’s territory. Me dropping down here is already an unforgivable crime. I do not dare... to disturb Your Highness... Little Chan... Let’s go... Ugh!”

A sudden intense pain came from his chest and Yun Che face paled immediately as he spat out a mouth of blood mist with a “puu”. His body staggered and he half knelt to the ground.

"Ahhhh!" Princess Snow screamed in shock and rushed towards Yun Che, instinctively wanting to go forward to lend him a hand. However, as she neared him, she suddenly stopped and even retracted the hand that she had offered. She'd even retreated a few steps and said nervously: "You... How are you? I already said, with such serious injuries, you shouldn't be moving around. Hurry up and rest. I... I will try my best to use my profound energy to help you recuperate your injuries."

Yun Che supported himself by placing his hand on the ground. After a while, he finally calmed down. He shook his head and persisted: "It's alright, I do not dare to continue to interrupt Your Highness. Furthermore, if Sect Master were to find out, I would definitely... Cough... Cough cough..."

Yun Che's chest rose intensely and he continuously spat out several blood clots. Even though he had regained consciousness, his internal and external injuries were still extremely severe.

"No worries," Princess Snow waved her snow white petite hand: "I won't blame you, nor will I tell my royal father so you can just be at ease and stay here to recuperate your injuries. If you were to persist any more, your injuries will worsen. Also... Also, I like Little White a lot. She's the most beautiful profound beast that I have ever seen. If you were to leave, Little White would have to leave with you... I really cannot bear it."

"..." Yun Che finally understood why Princess Snow was unwilling to let him leave. She even promised not to tell her father about it. Half of the reason was due to her soft personality, and the other half was no doubt due to... the Snow Phoenix!

Princess Snow said previously that this was a place that only she and her father could enter. Now that she had promised not to tell her father, it would mean that this place was practically the safest place within the entire Divine Phoenix Empire. Furthermore, looking at Yun Che's current situation, he was not suited to escape... Thinking about this, he instantly calmed down, calming his mind and blood. He sat

down on the floor: "Then... Your Highness, pardon my intrusion..."

When he finished speaking, he closed his eyes and started to channel Great Way of the Buddha, using the vital energy of heaven and earth to help recuperate his body... The passive recovery of the Great Way of the Buddha could not compare to when he actively channeled it. Once he regained consciousness, the speed at which he recovered was largely increased.

Seeing Yun Che willing to stay made Princess Snow heave a small sigh of relief. She carefully looked at Yun Che for a while before hopping over beside the Snow Phoenix and pouncing on it. Her whole body was on its body as she happily said: "That's great, Little White. We can play together now. Wahh~~~ Your feathers are so soft, so cooling... Why are you so pretty..."

Although Yun Che kept his eyes closed while treating his injuries, he could still hear what was happening. The fairy like voice drifted into his ears along with the wind, causing his mind to waver... Such good looks, such a great voice, so pure and flawless... Was she really a human child? Or was she someone born from gathering all of the world's most beautiful objects...

Phoenix Perching Valley was surrounded by mountains on three sides and the remaining south side, was the three thousand meter Absolute Phoenix Cliff. This place seemed to gather all the spiritual energy from the whole of Divine Phoenix Mountain and at one glance, it was all a pure clean green unlike other places which were dried and wilted crimson. Even the wind seem exceptionally clean and gentle. In the middle of Phoenix Perching Valley was a calm and clear lake. Beside the lake was a completely snow white and strikingly beautiful Snow Phoenix drinking from the clear lake water. Beside it was a girl that seemed as though she was a fairy from a painting.

The girl wore an elegant phoenix robe, but it was overshadowed by

her glistening jadelike skin. Her back view, side view were all like a fairy from dream. Without even looking at her face and just by her back view, one could tell that her beauty was one only deities possessed.

The young girl breathed in the clean lake air for a while, and then let out a melodious laughter. She raised her jade fingers and gently released her hair tie, letting her shimmering long black hair scatter like a broken dam. Each strand of hair seemed as though it had its own life and danced in the air before falling onto her shoulder.

As her jade hand lowered, the straps on her robe were gently released as well. The golden colored phoenix robe embroidered with a golden phoenix gently slid off her shoulders... Without the clothes, she was so perfect that it was hypnotizing. Her soul shocking jade body was exposed within the accompaniment of the gentle mountain breeze, along with her flawlessly snow white back, her thin waist, and her slender and flawless legs... and all of these could only generate the word "perfection" in anyone's mind. This view of just her back, was able to make a man lose control and go crazy.

She removed her golden shoes and revealed her snow lotus-like feet. She waved at the Snow Phoenix, and gently stepped into the lake with a flawless smile. Even without her jade feet in the pool water, they were already mesmerizingly glistening.

"Little White, do you want to bathe together? This is where where I bathe everyday."

The entire Divine Phoenix Mountain Region was scorching hot except for this place, which was quiet and clear. Even the lake water was slightly cool. The young girl scooped up lake water, allowing it to flow from between her fingers. The edge of her lips twitched slightly as she silently looked at the water flowing from her jade arms to the snow humps in front of her chest.

The lake water was extremely clear, so clear that the smallest grains of sand underwater could be seen. Her beautiful figure was even

more distinct, but unfortunately, no one was there to appreciate this great scenery. With her, was only a beautiful profound beast whose greatest interest was drinking in the sweet lake water.

"Little White, do you really not want to bathe together... Ugh, why do you already have an owner... I really like you... Because I like the color white, which is also the color of snow... When I was thirteen, Divine Phoenix City had a huge snowfall and that was the most beautiful scenery I have ever seen. I felt that all of me was fused with the white snow... However, after that day, I have never seen snow again..."

The young girl supported her beautiful face with her hand as she looked at the Snow Phoenix. Within her beautiful eyes was a blurred light. As she muttered to herself, her jade shoulders were exposed on the water's surface, its outline was pure beauty personified, the scene was extremely attractive.

"Ahhh..." The young girl suddenly shouted as she turned towards the south and gently said: "Little White, I think your owner has already woken up. Let's go find him."

She lightly flew out and put on the elegant phoenix robe back onto her mesmerizing jade body. She landed on the broad back of the Snow Phoenix as she shouted happily: "Let's go."

The Snow Phoenix cried happily as it stretched its wings and flew in Yun Che's direction.

This time that Yun Che went into meditation, was another two whole days. By the time he regained consciousness, his internal and external injuries had already recovered by about thirty percent, his profound strength had also recovered by about twenty to thirty percent. In less than a week, he should more or less be completely healed as long as he does not engage against anyone in the meantime. Otherwise, his injuries would no doubt become worse... As such, this place, where he was never interrupted, was the best place to stay.

The prerequisite for him being here was to not let anyone know he was here, and this decision laid with Princess Snow, who thought that he was a Phoenix disciple.

A white figure flashed past the sky and circled above his head before slowly landing in front of him. Princess Snow jumped down from the back of the Snow Phoenix and looked at him with a blossoming smile: "You're finally awake. Otherwise, Little White would be worried to death. Do you feel that your injuries are better?"

The girl's smile was simply too mesmerizing. Yun Che lost concentration for a moment before frantically saying: "I've recovered a lot. I thank Princess Snow for her concern. Look."

As he spoke, he stretched out his limbs which were already able to move freely.

"Wah! You actually recovered so quickly. I still thought you would take a long long time." As she said this, she took a look at the Snow Phoenix, and her tone suddenly turned rather sheepish: "However, your injuries have not completely recovered. You shouldn't move around too much. Stay here for more days, I won't let royal father know."

"Thank you, Your Highness." Yun Che smiled. He now knew that the reason Princess Snow was willing to let him stay was because she really liked the Snow Phoenix. The Snow Phoenix was a pure white elegant beast. Furthermore, it was an ice type, which was rarely seen in Divine Phoenix Empire. Within the fire elemental Divine Phoenix City, it could be said to be extinct. Therefore, it would make her curious and envious. Or perhaps, it was because she was too lonely and its arrival meant that she now had a companion to play with.

Having not eaten for days with a body full of injuries, waves of hunger pangs attacked Yun Che as he sat down. He took out his dragon meat and cooked it using his phoenix fire. Despite the huge body that the Flame Dragon possessed, there was not much meat left due to Yun Che replacing it for his meals. At the moment, up to

ninety nine percent of the meat had already been eaten by him. Within his Sky Poison Pearl, there was only a pathetic twenty five kilograms left. However, during this process, his skills at barbecuing the dragon meat increased by folds. Using what degree of fire, for how long, and using what seasonings to cook the most savoring of meat was now easy for him.

=====

Chapter 418 – Snow Dance (2)

Dragon flesh was originally the world's most delicious meat. This, added with his expert roasting technique, still made Yun Che, who had almost eaten all of the Flame Dragon's flesh, secretly gulp.

"Waah... Smells good! Something smells good!"

The fragrant aroma of the dragon meat lured over Princess Snow, who had always been playing with the Snow Phoenix. She stood there, staring unblinkingly at the skewered dragon meat in Yun Che's hands. Once she came closer, the intensity of the scent assaulted her nose, causing her to unconsciously gulp a few times.

"What is it? It smells so good... This is the first time I've smelled something this good."

Princess Snow was Divine Phoenix Sect's most precious pearl, the environment she grew up in was one an ordinary girl could never imagine. Accompanying her everyday was the most extravagant of meals. He never knew that the dragon meat he roasted due to his hunger would lure her over, and even made her secretly gulp cutely a few times. Yun Che's heart throbbed uncontrollably. He stopped burning his phoenix flame, and lifted up the already roasted dragon meat: "This is dragon meat, has Your Highness never eaten it before?"

"Dragon meat? I think I ate it before." Princess Snow was a bit uncertain: "But, I've never smelled such fragrant dragon meat... Can, can you let me have a bit of it? I really want to know how such a fragrant meat tastes."

Even though she was currently talking with Yun Che, her clear eyes continuously stared at the dragon meat in his hands. That hungry expression caused Yun Che to have an urge to pounce over to kiss her. At the same time, he was a bit sad... In her eyes, it's fine if I, the number one beautiful man in all of Blue Wind Nation, oh no, all of

Profound Sky Continent cannot compare to the Snow Phoenix, but it seems like I can't even compare to roasted meat...

Toward her hopeful, longing expression, even if Yun Che's heart was ten times more firm, he still wouldn't have the power to refuse. He handed over the already roasted dragon meat to Princess Snow, and said magnanimously: "Of course. If Your Highness likes it, you can eat all of these, I still have quite a lot leftover."

"Really... Thank you."

Princess Snow happily extended her white arm. Then, when she was a few seconds away from the dragon meat, she withdrew her hands back, and asked embarrassedly: "Can you... throw it over to me?"

"...Why?"

"Because royal father said this before, no one is allowed to touch my body, especially men. I can't not listen to royal father's words, so... so..."

Yun Che was slightly stunned... Hua Minghai said that during the time before and after Princess Snow turned thirteen, she had never appeared anywhere. This meant that Divine Phoenix Sect was extremely protective of Princess Snow. But he'd never expected that no one was allowed to even touch her body... The protectiveness Divine Phoenix Sect had for her was simply at an incomprehensible extent.

Then, him intruding into Princess Snow's territory, talking to her at such a close range, being in contact with her for so many days... If Divine Phoenix Sect were to know of this...

Yun Che immediately realized that he had touched upon Divine Phoenix Sect's huge... it's greatest taboo yet, one that was several times more taboo than him possessing the Phoenix bloodline!

.....

.....

Since he had already committed such a huge taboo... Then, committing it a little longer is fine! Besides... his grievances with Divine Phoenix Sect was getting progressively harder to dispel!

Yun Che smiled. Without saying anything, he pushed out with his palm, and the dragon meat slowly floated toward Princess Snow. Princess Snow stretched out a hand to take it while shooting Yun Che a light smile: "Then I'm going to eat it."

As her sweet voice fell, she gently sniffed it, then slightly opened her lips and bit into it with her pearly teeth. The deliciousness instantly made her eyes glow: "Waah~~ So good... too good! So there's actually such tasty meat in this world..."

The first swallow made the girl react exaggeratedly. She began to take consecutive bites. Her eyes blurred with intoxication as she became completely absorbed in the deliciousness that she had never tasted before. Even though she ate quite impatiently, her table manners were still pleasing, each and every small bite was graceful. As he watched her not wolfing down the food, Yun Che's gaze gradually became dumbstruck, even his stomach's hunger was forgotten. On this girl, no matter where on her body, and no matter what she did, she possessed a dazzling, irresistible charm that no one was able to resist.

More than a large half of the dragon meat had quickly been eaten. At this time, the young girl suddenly thought of something. She looked at the remaining dragon meat, then jogged over to the Snow Phoenix: "Little White, I'll give you something really yummy to eat, this is the best thing I've ever eaten, you know!"

Yun Che: " ! # ¥ %....."

Princess Snow placed the dragon meat near the Snow Phoenix's beak, yet the Snow Phoenix faced up, expressing its refusal. Yun Che walked over and said with a smile: "The Snow Phoenix Beast was

born from an extremely cold place and only eats ice, snow, or rain. It doesn't like eating meat."

"Oh, so it's like that." Princess Snow took back the dragon meat, tilted her head, and then asked quite earnestly: "Snow Phoenix Beast? This name is even weirder sounding than Little Chan. Little White still sounds the best, right, Little White?"

"Then I'll eat the rest all by myself!"

The young girl sat , leaning against the Snow Phoenix's soft body and slowly enjoyed the delicacy in her hand. With each bite, an incomparably beautiful smile blossomed on her snowy face. Seeing her like this, Yun Che was once more dazzled. He couldn't help but uncontrollably blurt out: "If you like it, I can roast it for you every day."

The young girl blinked her beautiful eyes, then began to laugh happily. Her brows bent into two crescent moons as her eyelashes softly fluttered like butterflies: "Hehe, you're so nice. I just knew that someone who's able to become Little White's owner must be a really good person."

"...Your Highness, why do you like Little Chan so much?" Yun Che asked.

Without even bothering to think, Princess Snow smiled sweetly in reply: "Because Little White is so beautiful. The most beautiful profound beast I've ever seen. Look, Little White's entire body of white is the same color as my favorite snow."

"You like... snow?"

"Mn!" After the word "snow" was brought up, Princess Snow lowered the delicious food in her hands. Lifting up her face that was even more fair than snow, she said somewhat absent-mindedly: "I've only heard of 'snow' from my royal brothers, but I've never seen it before. Snow had also never fell upon Divine Phoenix City before, but when I

was thirteen years old, a huge snow storm suddenly fell upon Divine Phoenix City... That was when I finally realized how beautiful snow was. The sky fluttered with white snowflakes, making me feel like I was in another world, and when snowflakes landed on my body, they were like beautiful fairies..."

"That day was the happiest day, most exciting day of my life, it was as though I had a beautiful dream. But very quickly, the snow melted. After that, I've always longed for snow, but have never seen it ever again. Royal father said that only the north of Divine Phoenix Empire has winter, where people can see snow. But royal father has told me many times that before I turn twenty, I'm not allowed to leave Divine Phoenix Sect... I really don't know when I can see snow again."

The young girl sat in a daze, her longing and thirst were distinctively printed in her eyes and expression. Yun Che didn't know why she would like snow that much, perhaps, only the purest of snow could stir her pure spirit.

"Your Highness, please close your eyes." Yun Che stood up, and suddenly said mysteriously.

"Ah? Why do I have to close my eyes?" Princess Snow looked at Yun Che in puzzlement.

Yun Che stretched out a hand, with the hollow of his palm facing upwards: "Your Highness doesn't need to ask. When you open your eyes, you'll understand."

"Mn, okay." Princess Snow apparently thought it was something fun as she closed her eyes with a smile.

Yun Che raised his head, then activated Frozen Cloud Arts... Even though he still had severe injuries on his person, his profound strength had recovered to about thirty percent, he still had enough energy to use Frozen Cloud Arts to make a little snow. Immediately after, a gust of cold wind rose as the surrounding water elements quickly assembled, fusing with the profound energy Yun Che

released, transforming into snow that fluttered in the sky, and slowly fell down.

"Your Highness, you can open your eyes now." Yun Che withdrew his hand and said softly before staring at her jade face, awaiting her reaction.

Princess Snow opened her eyes as a stretch of snowflakes also softly fluttered down on top of her nose. Then, even more snowflakes descended, brushing past her long hair, cheek, and hands... In that moment, Princess Snow went dumbstruck. Her lips opened and her expression grew misty as she stared blankly at everything, as though she had found herself inside a dream.

"It's snow... snow!"

Princess Snow happily stood up, both her hands cupped the unceasingly falling snowflakes as she happily jumped about in the snow, as though she was a fairy that had found home. Her happiness even seemed to have infected the atmosphere as the breeze became even more gentle.

"It's really snow... so cold, so beautiful."

She happily exclaimed in excitement, each sound she made was like the sweetest music in the world. Immersed within the snowflakes and a thin layer of recently accumulated snow, she faced upwards as happiness blossomed on her smiling face, as if she had unrestrainedly released all her joy within the snow.

"Are you the one who made it snow? How did you do it?" Princess Snow tossed the snow cupped in her hands at her own face. She looked at Yun Che with an emotionally moved and thankfulness. But even more so, there was a kind of faint admiration in her gaze.

"Secret." Yun Che smiled mysteriously. Seeing that she was this overjoyed, a sense of satisfaction rose in Yun Che's heart.

"Thank you!" Princess Snow smiled in elation. Even though she was

curious, she didn't really want to know the answer that much because she was already submerged in happiness and contentment. She spread out both arms and lightly spun inside the flying snow. Then, she adorably yelled at Yun Che: "I'll dance for you, okay?"

Without even waiting for Yun Che to response, or perhaps Yun Che had forgotten to reply, Princess Snow let out a heavenly laughter as she picked up the corner of her skirt. She tossed aside her small exquisite shoes and her flawless ankle and feet immediately appeared in Yun Che's line of sight. The pair of delicate feet that were pure and translucent, snow white and tender, stepped onto the white snow that was unexpectedly less fair than her delicate skin. Each of her toes were like the world's purest of pearls and jade, they were dainty, and glistened with the luster of gems.

Snowflakes still continued to float down. A small portion had also fallen onto Yun Che's body. Inside the world of snowflakes, Princess Snow began to gracefully dance. The lower skirt portion of her beautiful phoenix robe fluttered with her elegant movements. Crystals of jade, one after another, let out an enchanting brilliance. Even the golden colored phoenix on her clothing seemed to be gracefully dancing... But, how could the dance of the phoenix even match Princess Snow's beauty that made one breathless? Her delicate and tender body was like duckweed rippling on the surface of the water, like the willow branches swaying in the wind, and was so fantastical that it was like a dream... Even the dance of goddesses in the Heaven's palace, perhaps wouldn't be any greater than this.

Yun Che watched on dumbfoundedly, his gaze fixated without moving for a long time... Her laughter resounded beside his ears and inside his heart. The picture of her lithely dancing within the snow, every single moment was deeply imprinted inside his memories and soul.

He knew, that in his entire lifetime, he'll never be able to forget this graceful dancing silhouette.

=====

Chapter 419 – Changes in the Profound Ark

Unwittingly, the snowflakes had practically all floated down. The young girl also stopped dancing as she looked unbearingly at the quietly melting layer of snow beneath her feet. She looked at Yun Che, and said in a pitiful lovely voice: “My dancing, was it good?”

“Good...” Yun Che nodded with a hazy expression. He sounded as though he was sleep talking, his mind was still immersed within the dancing earlier.

Princess Snow had heard this sort of praise too many times in her life, but she still laughed happily: “Then... Make a little bit more snow, okay? I can continue dancing for you. When I watch the snowflakes fall, I can’t help but want to dance with them.”

“All right...” How could Yun Che possibly decline? She was like a celestial being, seeing her for even an instant would be an indescribable pleasure and luxury. It was a beautiful scene an ordinary person would never be able to see in their entire lifetime. He stretched out his hand toward the sky and condensed profound energy...

But as soon as Frozen Cloud Arts activated, a tearing pain immediately came from his chest. Yun Che groaned and quickly used his hand to press against his chest, forcibly swallowing the surging blood back down. However, his complexion was still deathly pale.

“Ah!!” Princess Snow exclaimed in surprise. Without even bothering to put her shoes back on, her delicate ice lotus-like feet left the layer of snow, stepping onto soft grass. She extended both hands, withdrew them once more, and then asked nervously: “Are... Are you all right? It’s all my fault, only focusing on letting myself see snow, and forgetting about your injuries... I’m sorry... I’m so sorry...”

The treasure of Divine Phoenix Empire was currently panickedly apologizing to him, an “ordinary disciple”. Her beautiful eyes

trembled slightly, filled with worry and self-blame. A spot in the depths of Yun Che's heart was touched, he did his best to smile: "Don't worry, I'm okay. I just accidentally stirred my internal injuries, I'll be better after a short rest."

When he finished speaking, Yun Che had already carefully sat down. He closed his eyes, slowly calmed his breathing, and the uncomfortable sensation quickly disappeared.

Only after hearing Yun Che's words and seeing his complexion gradually regain its color, did Princess Snow's worry and self-blame quietly scatter. Then, without being completely reassured, she sat in front of him as her eyes stared at him unblinkingly. She also didn't know why she wanted to have a proper look at this man, perhaps, it was because of some kind of hazy and mysterious feeling that came from him... This was the first time in her entire life that she had taken a meaningful look at a single person.

When the stirred internal injuries were pacified, Yun Che opened his eyes, directly meeting with Princess Snow's gaze. Being found out that she was peeping at him, Princess Snow blinked, and laughed sweetly, suddenly blossoming into a smiling expression that stirred Yun Che's soul. He also laughed, and said regretfully: "Your Highness, this is my fault for being wounded. Not only can I not make it snow for you, I even made you worry... My injuries would be much better tomorrow, at that time, I'll make it snow a lot for you."

"Okay!" Princess Snow readily agreed, then slightly tilted her head: "But, can you not call me Your Highness? It feels kind of awkward."

"Then... What should I call Your Highness?"

"My name is Feng Xue'er, you can call me Xuexue, or you can call me Xue'er. I really like those two names, 'Your Highness' doesn't sound good at all." Princess Snow said with a laugh.

If a Divine Phoenix Sect member swapped places with him, they would instantly be terrified. But Yun Che naturally did not care as he

smiled: "Alright, then from now on, I'll call you... Xue'er."

"Mn!" Princess Snow smiled lightly as she nodded, her star-like pupils gazed at his face: "Then can I call you... Big brother Lingyun?"

"Of course you can... but I'll like it even more if Xue'er calls me Big brother Yun. Because I feel like it's even more intimate than "Big brother Lingyun." Yun Che smiled... Even though they were missing one word, "Big brother Lingyun" and Big brother Yun" were two completely different concepts. Because the former... totally benefited that Ling Yun guy!

"Mn!" Princess Snow nodded in elation: "Big brother Yun... Big brother Yun... Big brother Yun... heh!"

Princess Snow called out three times in a row. That extremely sweet voice made all the bones in Yun Che's body go soft.

Divine Phoenix Imperial Palace, Phoenix Main Hall.

"This son and subject greets royal father." Feng Ximing said deferentially as he stood in front of Feng Hengkong.

With the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament getting ever so closer, it was still only secondary. What was most important, was that the Primordial Profound Ark's doorway was about to open. Even though no one had discovered the secrets of the Primordial Profound Ark in these several thousand years, there was no doubt that it contained a world-shaking treasure. Therefore, even after every failed attempt, the appearance of the Primordial Profound Ark was still be regarded as an enormous occasion for Divine Phoenix Sect. Everyone within the Divine Phoenix Sect believed that if they discovered the Primordial Profound Ark's secret, and obtained its treasure, Divine Phoenix Sect's strength would be on an equal footing with the Four Great Sacred Grounds in the true meaning... even surpassing them was a possibility.

When Feng Ximing arrived, he didn't even lift his head, as he faintly said: "What is it."

Feng Ximing's head was slightly bent, his posture humble: "Reporting to royal father, we've just recently received news from Spirit Earth Hall, a change has occurred on the profound seal on the ark door of the Primordial Profound Ark this morning. According to our past written accounts, this kind of change signifies that the ark door will open twelve days from now, a full four days earlier than we expected." Preparing for the Primordial Profound Ark was the reason why Feng Hengkong had very rarely appeared in public during this time frame.

Feng Hengkong raised his head, his face heavy: "Four days earlier?"

Feng Ximing nodded: "Yes. We have originally set the day after the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament as the profound ark's opening, but now, the profound ark's door is four days ahead of schedule, conflicting with the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament. And even if we shift the ranking tournament to an earlier date now, we still won't have enough time. Thus, in regards to how we'll handle this matter, I ask royal father for judgment."

Feng Hengkong stood up as his brows slowly pinched. The Primordial Profound Ark's doorway would only open for twenty four hours, every minute and second was incomparably precious, and it definitely could not be wasted. However, when he sent the invitation letters to the six nations previously, he explicitly indicated that the top three of the ranking tournament would be entitled to board the Primordial Profound Ark. If the competition was unfinished, how could the top three even board the Primordial Profound Ark when they didn't even exist? As for shifting the date of the ranking tournament to an earlier time, that was even more inappropriate.

Feng Hengkong muttered, his voice low and dignified: "The ranking tournament's original schedule is for a time frame of five days. The Primordial Profound Ark's matter cannot be delayed, and the competition also cannot be shifted ahead of time. Since the opening

of the Primordial Profound Ark's has been shifted four days ahead of time, then we can only compress the ranking tournament to last one day!"

"One day? This..." Feng Ximing's face revealed shock. This was unprecedented in all of the history of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament. Making the battle between seven nations last only one day, was indeed too tight, or perhaps it should be said that it was fundamentally impossible to accomplish.

"This is the only way. As to how to arrange that, the decision is yours." Feng Hengkong's gaze concentrated: "There must be no mishap in the exploration of the Primordial Profound Ark, and the ranking tournament matter is related to our Divine Phoenix Sect's prestige, it also must not have any errors. Deciding how to set that up will depend on your ability, this can also be considered a test for you. Any questions?"

Even though Feng Ximing was nervous, he still obviously did not have the courage to refuse as he promptly lowered his head: "Yes, this son will properly handle this according to royal father's wishes and will not disappoint royal father."

"Mn." Feng Hengkong nodded: "Since that's the case, if you have no other matters, you may withdraw. Remember to inform every Great Elder and Pavilion Master about this, so they can make preparations earlier."

"Yes... This son also has another matter to speak about, royal father. This matter is not big nor small, but this son and subject still thinks that it's best if he tells royal father."

"Speak."

Feng Ximing said cautiously: "A few days ago, huge sounds of activity suddenly came from Phoenix Mountain Range. When we came over, we discovered Thirteenth Brother's personal bodyguard Feng Chihuo there, and he died extremely miserably. The area around him had

also been widely destroyed, evident of him going through a desperate battle.”

With regards to Feng Chihuo’s matter, Feng Hengkong was naturally aware of it, but he clearly didn’t put it to heart as he said indifferently: “Only our sect members can enter Phoenix Mountain Range. Since he died there, then he had been killed by someone in our sect. We’ll instantly know once we investigate it.”

“Royal father speaks thusly. After some investigation, Feng Chihuo was pursuing someone who charged out of the southern gate in the early morning of that day. Going by what the city guards have stated, the sky had not brightened yet, so they did not get a good look at the person’s face. They only vaguely distinguished that the person had not reached thirty yet, and...”

“No need to say anymore!” Feng Hengkong impatiently swung a hand: “We don’t have the time to pay attention to such small matters. Since Feng Chihuo was murdered by someone within the sect, then it means that he’s unskilled. Are you saying that we have to personally investigate who murdered that good-for-nothing trash?”

“Royal father, quell your anger... Feng Chihuo’s tragic death is but a small matter, but... but...” Feng Ximing sucked in a breath, as a distinct nervousness appeared on his face: “The place where Feng Chihuo died is not even five kilometers away from Absolute Phoenix Cliff, and the place just to the side of Absolute Phoenix Cliff is Phoenix Perching Valley, where Xue’er is. Royal father has ordered guards to defend twenty five kilometers east, west, and north of Phoenix Perching Valley, yet no one is guarding the south side. This son and subject is worried that Xue’er might be disturbed, and perhaps that person might dare to intrude Phoenix Perching Valley...”

Before he had even finished talking, his entire body suddenly felt a chill, and he didn’t continue his sentence. Feng Hengkong’s eyes narrowed as his glowering eyes released a thick, ice-cold raidance.

"So... are you saying that you want to go over to Phoenix Perching Valley to see if Xue'er is safe?"

"No, this son absolutely did not have that intention, it's just... it's just that this son is afraid someone might disturb Xue'er." Feng Ximing said in terror. He had long anticipated that Feng Hengkong would react this way, but he still couldn't help but say it... Feng Hengkong was currently just too busy at this time, so perhaps he really might allow him to go over there to have a look... Even if it was a one in a millionth chance, letting him have a look at Xue'er was enough. However, it was evident that this was still an extravagant hope. Feng Xue'er was Feng Hengkong's biggest landmine... a landmine that absolutely could not be touched.

"Hmph! Absolute Phoenix Cliff is not the only thing south of Phoenix Perching Valley, there's also the Great Phoenix Formation. Aside from my sect members, no one is able to enter. In our Divine Phoenix Sect, there's still no one with enough guts to dare charge in Phoenix Perching Valley!! Xue'er can also immediately sound transmit to us as well. If she really has been disturbed, she would certainly notify us immediately. No need for you to worry... Scram!"

"Royal father, calm your anger, this... this son was worrying too much. This son and subject shall take his leave."

Feng Ximing withdrew in a panic... Once he exited Phoenix Main Hall, he turned around with firmly clenched teeth as a cold, resentful light flashed through his eyes.

=====

Chapter 420 – Promise

A scene of fluttering snow had shrunk down the distance between Yun Che and Feng Xue'er by an extremely great extent. Feng Xue'er's mood had also become extraordinarily cheerful; because to her, the fluttering snow as far as one's eye could see, had always been the most beautiful dream she had yearned for.

"Big Brother Yun, the snow you made, is a type of water attribute profound art, right?" Feng Xue'er cupped her charming cheeks with her hands, looking at him with a glimmering gaze. This pure and untainted sprite, all of her feelings were displayed on her snow-like face without any hesitation. At the same time she spoke these words, she also expressed her curiosity and yearning for this kind of profound art.

"Mhm, it's called 'Frozen Cloud Arts'. To be precise, it's a type of ice attribute profound art." Yun Che answered without concealment, because he believed that Feng Xue'er definitely had never heard of this profound art's name before. But he still casually added on: "Xue'er, have you ever heard of this profound art?"

"No." Feng Xue'er lightly shook her small head, and asked curiously: "But, why would you know ice attribute profound arts? Our Phoenix bloodline can burn the most ferocious phoenix flames, but wouldn't the power of fire attribute and ice attribute profound art conflict with each other? I had never heard of anyone in the sect that actually practiced water attribute profound arts. Royal father seemed to have said that there isn't even anyone in the entire Divine Phoenix City."

Water and fire suppressed one another, and could not have common grounds. Even if one cultivates them, when one type of profound energy is used, the other type must be suppressed to the utmost, otherwise, the two types of profound energy would cancel out by themselves, or even become chaotic. This was the most fundamental common sense of the profound way. Thus, practicing profound arts

opposite of one's own attribute, other than wasting energy and fruitlessly increasing the risk that one might stir up just by mere carelessness, it could be said to be completely useless. Divine Phoenix Empire's fire elements were extraordinarily lively, and was an extremely fitting place to practice fire attribute profound arts. The profound practitioners there all basically practiced fire attribute profound arts as well. Other than occasional foreigners, profound practitioners who practice water profound arts simply couldn't be found at all. Even foreigners, because of the fire element's activeness, their bodies and profound veins would feel discomfort of various degrees if water attribute profound arts were the only thing they practiced.

So, Feng Xue'er naturally had such a question.

Yun Che said calmly: "Xue'er, did you know that our Divine Phoenix Sect's force isn't merely limited to Divine Phoenix Empire? There are many clansmen who are sent to other nations since childhood, then conceal their phoenix bloodline and join the relatively powerful and prestigious local sect or force, thereby obtaining information and intel, making up our sect's information network."

Feng Xue'er's charming lips slightly opened, then, she lightly nodded: "Mn, this I know. Father has told me about this before... Big Brother Yun, are you someone who was sent to the outside since childhood?"

Feng Xue'er naturally wouldn't doubt Yun Che's words. Because constructing information networks, was one of the things that every single powerful sect had to do, and information networks, were even one of the lifelines of a sect. Heavenly Sword Villa, Xiao Sect, and even Blue Wind Profound Palace all had disciples planted into other great sects, not to mention the colossal Divine Phoenix Sect.

"Yes, the place I was sent to, is called Blue Wind Nation, and I've only returned to the sect this year." Yun Che nodded. He answered with extreme calmness without any undulation; it was almost impossible for even a person who was extremely experienced to notice the traces of a lie within his gaze and expression. But when these words

left his mouth, his heart and soul was violently clutched and pulled.

In these years of two lifetimes, in order to achieve a certain purpose, or for survival, he had spoken concealing and misguiding words countless times, and had been long trained to the point that his heart wouldn't change its rhythm and the expression on his face wouldn't alter in the slightest. But this time, the person he was facing was a girl who was more pure than even the snow itself, and had moreover saved his life... Such a lie, was only for concealing and achieving his purpose, and absolutely didn't have any intention to harm her; yet the sense of guilt and sin in his heart was record-breakingly intense.

"Blue Wind Nation..." Feng Xue'er knew this country, and also knew that it was the smallest nation of the continent. Her charming eyes blinked once, as she continued asking: "Then is Big Brother Yun's Frozen Cloud Arts, learnt from there? Since there are ice attribute profound arts, then would there be a lot of snow?"

"Mhm." Yun che nodded: "That is a place called the Snow Region of Extreme Ice. The entire five hundred kilometers over there, are all white snow."

"Five hundred kilometers... White snow?" Feng Xue'er's cherry lips opened up in surprise. She couldn't imagine just what kind of marvelous scenery that would be.

"An entire five hundred kilometers, all covered by snow, moreover, very very thick snow. Even if one shatters a dozen feet of the snow layer, what's beneath is still snow." Yun Che said while smiling. He believed that the Snow Region of Extreme Ice must be a heaven-like place for Feng Xue'er who likes snow. He narrated earnestly: "Because that place is very cold, the ice and snow over there wouldn't even melt in tens of milleniums... Look, all these surrounding mountains are all soil and stone, but at the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, even the ridges and peaks are covered by layers of snow and ice. The sky at where we are is blue, but over there, even the sky is projected to a pure white by the reflections of

the endless snow. In that entire world, there is only a stretch of white without bounds. The sky and earth can't be distinguished, it's so pure and quiet that one could hear the sound of their own heartbeat."

"Wah..." Fen Xue'er's hands had unwittingly covered her lips, her gaze as misty as fog: "Is there... really such a place... Snow Region of Extreme Ice... Snow Region of Extreme Ice..."

"Not only that, even though it's all snow, there are also many flower and plants. And the flowers there, are all ice flowers similar to crystals, and even the grass and trees are sparkling with the glimmer of ice. There are also very beautiful ice corals, and natural ice sculptures of various shapes. These, are all unable to be seen at other places. Because once these things leave the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, they would all very quickly melt. Also..." Yun Che pointed toward the Snow Phoenix: "Little Chan was also nurtured up at the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, so its feather is just like the white snow. In the entire Profound Sky Continent, Snow Phoenix Beasts only exist there. To have left that place with me, Little Chan has worked hard."

Snow Phoenix Beast uttered a light cry.

Feng Xue'er's entire person became stupefied there. She felt as if she had fallen into an illusory world that hadn't ever appeared even in her dreams. The beauty of that place, surpassed the most beautiful heaven she had fantasized about... Even with all of her knowledge, she couldn't draw how just how beautiful of a picture scroll that would be... Endless spanning snow, snow-white mountains, snow-white skies, sparkling and translucent trees and flowers, as flocks of birds as pretty as Little White fluttered and danced in the sky...

"Snow Region of Extreme Ice... Snow Region of Extreme Ice..." She muttered this name as if deliriously raving, feeling as though her heart and spirit had already melted.

"Does Xue'er want to go there?" Yun Che asked a question that he could completely be sure of the answer just by the look of her

expression.

"Mhm!" Feng Xue'er very strongly nodded, her white and glossy cheeks were adorned with a bit of excited blush: "So in this world, there's actually such a beautiful place. I really want to go, if I can arrived at that kind of world, and live over there... Wah~~ How blissful would that be."

"But..." The light in Feng Xue'er's eyes grew somewhat dim again: "Royal father has said that before I turn twenty, I can't leave Divine Phoenix City. Royal father is always so busy too, and also haven't left Divine Phoenix Sect in many many years. Even after I'm twenty, Royal father probably wouldn't have the time to take me there..."

"Then I'll take you there." Yun Che didn't even think, and uncontrollably blurted out.

"Ah..." Feng Xue'er let out a light cry, and at the same time revealed a deep surprise that made Yun Che feel unexpected: "Really? You're really willing to take me there?"

Toward his words, she believed them so firmly without any doubts, and was so unguarded against him; instead, due to the snow he made, a scene he described, hints and threads of a young girl's reverence was arisen toward him. A surge of complication emerged in Yun Che's heart, yet there was also the feeling of warmth. He nodded with strength: "Of course I'm willing. If you are still willing to recognize this "Big Brother Yun" when you are able to leave the Divine Phoenix City, as long as you want to, I'll definitely bring you to the Snow Region of Extreme Ice. I came to Divine Phoenix Empire from over there, and I very clearly know how to return. If we set off from the Divine Phoenix City, we'd arrive in half a month if we hurry.

"Hooray!" The girl uttered in high spirits. All of the slight disappointments from before vanished like smoke in thin air. Looking at Yun Che, she joyfully smiled like a most exquisite and beautiful doll: "Big Brother Yun, thank you, you are so nice... To be able to meet you, I am really very happy."

"To be able to view snow with such a beautiful girl like Xue'er, I am the one that's the luckiest." Yun Che said heartfully. However, he didn't know whether or not there would be a day that this promise could be realized... If, she was still willing at that time, then no matter the hinderance, he'd still use all his power to realize it... Perhaps it was to make up for the guilt in his heart, or perhaps, he wished to stand by her, shoulder to shoulder, in the depth of his heart.

"Heh, then it's a deal. After I'm twenty, Big Brother Yun will take me to Snow Region of Extreme Ice to see the endless fluttering snow... You definitely can't lie and take your word back, okay." Feng Xue'er said with a happy smile.

"Mn!" Yun Che nodded, and extended his pinky toward Feng Xue'er: "Let's pinky swear."

"Ah?" Feng Xue'er looked at the pinky Yun Che reached out, then looked at her own finger, as a puzzling expression revealed on her face: "Pinky swear... what does that mean?"

Yun Che lightly shook his finger, and said: "It lets us buckle our pinky together in order to prove that the words we speak will definitely be kept. No matter how many years pass, they will never change."

"Uu..." Feng Xue'er timidly extended her finger as lustrous as the fine jade, and said in a low voice: "As long as Big Brother Yun doesn't forget, I'll definitely keep my promise, but... but..."

But, her body, even if it was the pinky, had never made contact with men before. Because in Feng Hengkong's eyes, every single inch of her skin was the most precious treasure of the Divine Phoenix Sect. Anyone's touch, would all be an unforgivable tarnish. Even he, the father, couldn't touch either. In fact, if he were to choose between Divine Phoenix Sect and Feng Xue'er, he would unhesitatingly choose Feng Xue'er.

And the reason within this, was not merely that type of a father's

radical love and protection toward his sole daughter; the even more important reason was only known by a few within the Divine Phoenix Empire... Other than Divine Phoenix Empire, even the Four Great Sacred Grounds had gotten information from who knew where, and also noticed Feng Xue'er a long time ago. This also made Feng Hengkong's protection toward Feng Xue'er prudent to the point that made one unable to comprehend.

If he was to know that a man would actually sit so close to Feng Xue'er, and even engage in sweet talk... and even wanted to pinky swear with her, let alone that this person being the "bastard" he wanted to get rid of from the start, even if it was his own son, he'd unhesitatingly smash him into mincemeat with a palm under a flight of rage.

"Oh, I understand now." Yun Che seemed to only have realized just now: "Your royal father doesn't allow anyone to touch you, and you are afraid of your royal father's scolding, right?"

"Mn..." Feng Xue'er lightly nodded: "I can't disobey royal father's words. I'm more afraid... that after royal father knows, he'll be angry at you. Just last year, Twelfth Brother accidentally touched my shoulder, and was discovered by royal father. Royal father got so angry, and directly broke Twelfth Brother's wrist, and even said that he'll cripple him... I begged for mercy for Twelfth Brother, royal father usually complies with me a lot, but he really was very angry, and still confined Twelfth Brother for an entire half a year... It's my fault that Twelfth Brother is harmed. I don't want Big Brother Yun to be harmed because of me, too."

=====

Chapter 421 – Let Me Teach Big Brother Yun, Alright?

Just one touch on the shoulder... and even with phoenix robe in between... and it was even his son of flesh and blood... To actually break his wrist without any mercy, and confine him for half a year...

This Phoenix Emperor's cherishment toward his daughter simply had reached an extent that shocked heaven and earth! In comparison, the things he did these few days were enough for him to be executed by a thousand cuts, eight hundred times over!

And growing up in this kind of extreme protection, not only Feng Xue'er's heart, even her body was also pure to the extreme. And the purer the object, the easier it was to evoke the desire to taint and possess within the depth of men's heart — especially this kind of person like Yun Che, who never constrains himself.

Yun Che didn't retract his pinky, and instead said smiling as he looked at her star-like eyes: "Xue'er, your royal father really cherishes you. Him not wanting for others to touch you, is because he's worried that you will be harmed by others."

"Mn, I know, royal father is the person who cares about me the most in this world." Feng Xue'er said with a faint smile.

"However, if it's someone you like and is intimate with, there naturally wouldn't be any problems with physical contact, and can even make one another more intimate and fond of each other. Does Xue'er think that I am someone who would harm Xue'er, or someone who Xue'er is fond of?" Yun Che said with a pure and serious face.

Feng Xue'er unhesitatingly answered: "Big Brother Yun is so nice, of course I like Big Brother Yun. Being together with Big Brother Yun makes me really happy, Big Brother Yun has even realized the dream I had for many years."

"Mhm." Yun Che smiled, and extended his pinky before Feng Xue'er: "Then let us pinky swear."

"Ah... but... but..." Feng Xue'er was still hesitating and timid.

"Relax, there's only the two of us here, your royal father wouldn't see, wouldn't know, which means he wouldn't get angry. Also, Xue'er is already sixteen this year. Sixteen, is an age where Xue'er has already grown up. Your royal father can't protect you for a lifetime, so you need to start learning to be mature and independent. First of all, you need to make decisions while following the depths of your heart, using your own feelings and judgement, and not forever complying with words of other people."

With the protection Feng Xue'er had received, naturally no one would have ever said these kind of words to her. Coming from Yun Che's mouth, the impact brought about by these words to Feng Xue'er's heart, that didn't have a single speck of dust, could be well imagined. She had already gotten used to the way of life that had persisted for sixteen years. However, wanting to break through the world of self and restraint from the past till present, was more so an innate instinct hidden within the depth of the human consciousness. Words that had never been heard before, made Feng Xue'er's heart feel as if it had made contact with a whole different world, a world she had never experienced before. She listened to her heartbeat, and repeated Yun Che's words once and once again in her mind... Follow her heart, make the decision she wanted to make...

Finally, with great effort, Feng Xue'er made a resolution that could be said as the greatest one ever from the time she was born. She imitated Yun Che's actions, slowly extended her slender and fair pinky, and slowly touched toward Yun Che's pinky... Her movements were very slow, nervous, at a loss, and helpless... along with a kind of faint anticipation...

Finally, her pinky made contact with Yun Che's pinky on her own accord. Instantly, as if she had experienced an electric shock, she retracted her little hand back at once. But Yun Che did not give her such a chance, his finger quickly went forward, and fast yet gently buckled onto her pinky... Instantly, a tactile sensation soft and

smooth to the point of unfathomable came, as though he had touched the most flawless and pure warm jade in the world.

"Ah..." Feng Xue'er let out a light cry, her entire body became stiff for a bit. Her pinky subconsciously wished to struggle free, yet was tightly buckled down by Yun Che. Amidst nervousness, her pinky tightly twined with Yun Che's finger, her entire body more so didn't move at all, as she didn't even dare to open her eyes.

"Pinky swear, the words we spoke before will never be disavowed. After Xue'er is twenty, we'll go together to Blue Wind Nation's Snow Region of Extreme Ice to see the endless falling snow." Yun Che lifted his wrist, pulled Feng Xue'er's small hand, and said in dead earnest. Only, after his voice fell, he still didn't loosen his finger. His voice, also drove away Feng Xue'er's nervousness and helplessness to a great extent, and made her expression finally ease up somewhat.

Within the Sky Poison Pearl, Jasmine looked at Yun Che buckling Feng Xue'er's pinky with cold eyes, her exquisite yet unnatural little face was full of scorn: "Hmph, he's starting again. No matter where this damned fool goes, anytime he meets a somewhat pretty woman, he'll immediately reveal his nature of a pervert and beast, and will never change!!"

"Xue'er, how do you feel right now? Do you feel sad, or find it difficult to accept it?" Seeing that even though Feng Xue'er became calm again, her eyes were still closed and unwilling to open, Yun Che asked while moving a little closer.

"Oh... it's a very weird feeling." Feng Xue'er's eyelashes faintly trembled, as she answered softly.

"Weird?"

"It's a kind of... indescribable feeling, but it's not loathsome, nor is it sad... Uu... I never had felt this kind of weird feeling... Also my heart is suddenly beating so fast... Big Brother Yun, can you tell me what kind of feeling this is?"

"I can't tell you this, rather that it need Xue'er herself to feel and understand." Yun Che said with a faint smile. His expression at the moment, was exactly like a big bad wolf who was sneaking up on a little white rabbit. After a bit of hesitation, he suddenly grasped over her entire hand... Feng Xue'er's hand was very small, and was completely grasped within his hands in one go, just like that.

"Ah..." Feng Xue'er uttered a faint cry, yet the reaction this time, wasn't as acute as the time before. Even the struggling only happened in that one subconscious instant at the start.

"Then, how about this, what kind of feeling does Xue'er have?" Xue Che gently held Feng Xue'er's tiny hand... There was a kind of softness and tenderness he couldn't describe; just holding her hand in silence like that, he felt his entire body's nervous system uncontrollably becoming lax, not willing to let go no matter what.

"Heartbeat... became faster..." Feng Xue'er lightly muttered: "So making contact with Big Brother Yun would actually be such a weird feeling... Big Brother Yun, can we stay like this a little longer... I really want to know what kind of feeling this is."

This kind of request, how could Yun Che not agree; how he wished he could hold her hand forever.

With her eyes closed, Feng Xue'er sensed the feeling earnestly. After a while, she softly uttered: "I still don't understand... I seemed to... have felt Big Brother Yun's heart beat. Wah! Big Brother Yun's Phoenix bloodline is so pure, even purer than that of my royal brothers... Eh?"

Feng Xue'er opened her eyes, and looked at Yun Che puzzled: "So weird, why hasn't Big Brother Yun cultivated the 《World Ode of the Phoenix》 yet?"

Even though Yun Che possessed the 《World Ode of the Phoenix》's fifth and sixth stage profound skills, these were only the profound skills carried on by these two stages. A profound skill's activation

required a profound art with corresponding power, while Yun Che jumped over this rule with the power of the Evil God's seed and his own comprehensive ability, forcefully activating the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix and Star Scorching Demon Lotus with the most basic of phoenix flames. But in terms of power, they naturally were much inferior to activating them with the genuine Phoenix profound art.

Therefore, just from the aspect of the World Ode of the Phoenix's profound art, it could indeed be said that Yun Che hadn't practiced it in the slightest. A person who cultivated World Ode of the Phoenix could tell just by casually probing his profound energy attribute.

Yun Che curbed his expression, and said: "Because in these earlier years, I had always been at Blue Wind Nation. For hiding my identity, not only does the Phoenix bloodline need to be concealed, I more so can't cultivate the World Ode of the Phoenix. This year, I had just returned to the sect. Nineteenth Elder is busy every single day, and didn't have the free time to teach me. And since I've been out for many years, there aren't any fellow clansmen I'm very familiar with either, so naturally no one would be willing to teach me the World Ode of the Phoenix."

"So that's the case~, no wonder..." Feng Xue'er thought for a bit, then a glint suddenly flashed in her eyes, as her expression became excited: "Then does Big Brother Yun want to learn the World Ode of the Phoenix?"

"Of course I do." Yun Che unhesitatingly nodded: "But..."

"Since you want to, then let me teach Big Brother Yun, alright?" Feng Xue'er said with a cheerily smiling expression, as if this was something that would make her very happy.

"You... teach me?" Yun Che's heart and mind violently shook a bit.

When Feng Xue'er had mentioned "World Ode of the Phoenix", the thought of making Feng Xue'er teach him World Ode of the Phoenix had flashed through his mind before, but was immediately

extinguished by him. Because he had already deceived Feng Xue'er in regards to his identity, and he didn't have the heart to scheme against her once more... even if the World Ode of the Phoenix was extremely important to him.

But he didn't expect that Feng Xue'er would actually voluntarily propose to teach him World Ode of the Phoenix.

Yun Che's mood instantly became incomparably complicated.

Seeing that Yun Che didn't answer right away, his expression becoming hesitating and complicated, Feng Xue'er became somewhat anxious instead. She swayed Yun Che's hands, and said as if she was acting spoiled: "Big Brother Yun, just agree to let me teach you, okay? Big Brother Yun lets me eat so many delicious things, and for beautiful snow, you've even agreed to take me to Snow Region of Extreme Ice... I haven't been so happy in such a long time. I also really want to do something for Big Brother Yun. Even though I've never taught anyone before, I can definitely teach very very well... Big Brother Yun, just comply with me okay, okay?"

Yun Che looked at her, and said with a smile that was yet not a smile: "Xue'er, is it that you want me to stay here for a longer period of time, so you can play with Little Chan every single day?"

With a little than half of her intentions being easily exposed, Feng Xue'er began to smile shyly: "Not only Little White, I also really like Big Brother Yun right now, and want Big Brother Yun to accompany me for a while longer... Before, I've always been alone here, doing the same thing every day, it really is boring. But with Big Brother Yun and Little White here, I feel like I'm so happy that I'm about to go crazy. Just let me teach you World Ode of the Phoenix, Big Brother Yun can leave after he learns it, okay?"

From Feng Xue'er's perspective, teaching World Ode of the Phoenix to a Divine Phoenix Sect's fellow clansman really wasn't much, because it was a profound art that every single phoenix disciple knew how to use, and could be cultivated if one possessed the Phoenix bloodline.

Ones who possessed the Phoenix bloodline, yet didn't cultivate World Ode of the Phoenix was instead abnormal.

Seeing how Feng Xue'er was at the moment, if he were to refuse, she would instead feel at a loss. He originally didn't have the intention to 'steal' World Ode of the Phoenix from Feng Xue'er, but...

"Okay." Yun Che chose to gladly agree, and said half jokingly while half exclaiming to himself: "Letting Xue'er... Princess Snow to personally teach me World Ode of the Phoenix, it seems as though I'm dreaming."

"Hehe!" Feng Xue'er cheerfully laughed: "This is the first thing I'm doing for Big Brother Yun, I'll definitely take it very seriously. Then... how about we start right now?"

"...Okay."

"Big Brother Yun is wounded right now, and just by chance can quietly comprehend the profound formula when recuperating. Then, I'll teach Big Brother Yun the fundamental formula right now. Big Brother Yun needs to attentively comprehend it, okay?"

Amidst the soft voice, Feng Xue'er lifted her finger, and pointed at the center between Yun Che's brows without touching him. A stroke of firelight faintly flickered... Instantly, World Ode of the Phoenix's fundamental formula distinctively emerged within Yun Che's sea of consciousness.

=====

Chapter 422 – Complete Profound Formula

World Ode of the Phoenix's fundamental formula flowed into Yun Che's mind. What throbbed first was not Yun Che's mind, but the Evil God's fire seed. A flame also starting burning within Yun Che's mind, gradually imprinting the drifting profound formula firmly into his soul.

The requisites to learning the World Ode of the Phoenix, required having the Phoenix bloodline. Even when possessing the Phoenix bloodline, it would still take a very long time to comprehend the fundamental formula of the World Ode of the Phoenix. This was because the World Ode of the Phoenix was essentially a profound art that belonged at the plane of gods, the flame laws it contained were far above that of ordinary profound flames. Even the weakest first to six stages required an immense difficulty for the user to perfectly comprehend, and was absolutely not something ordinary profound arts could compare to.

But towards Yun Che, this wasn't at all a concern. That was because the existence of the Evil God's fire seed allowed him to easily understand and comprehend laws of fire of any shape and form. With the Evil God's fire seed, Yun Che's current body was like an unpolished jade that could be sculpted at will. Even if it was this powerful World Ode of the Phoenix, the process of comprehension would be as simple as directly carving it into his body.

After reading the fundamental formula of the World Ode of the Phoenix once in his heart, Yun Che had already understood it clearly. Those profound formulas turmoiled in his soul, then suddenly combined together, creating a vast and boundless world... That was a dark sky of stars with countless heavenly bodies within, and in the next moment, scorching flames suddenly burned up, and entirely engulfed this colossal cosmos. In the sea of fire that could overturn the world, a loud and resonant phoenix cry suddenly sounded, as a golden colored phoenix spreaded out its wings, bathing in flames, born from the sea of fire..

A surge of scorching yet vast aura filled Yun Che's mind to the brim, and also caused him to feel as if he had opened a gate to another world all of a sudden, as his body was also placed within a whole new world...

.....

As the profound formula entered Yun Che's body, he closed his eyes and became motionless. Princess Snow quietly sat in front of him, her beautiful eyes continuously watched Yun Che, in order to prevent unusual conditions such as soul damage and profound energy going into chaos during his comprehension mode. But as an hour passed, Yun Che was not only completely calm during this period, even his breathing had completely stabilized, and was steady to the point that it seemed as if he had fallen asleep.

Princess Snow showed a sign of relief, she once again looked at Yun Che for a while, and muttered to herself in a low voice: "It seems he has started to comprehend. There should be no problems if this was the case, but it should take a long time..."

"Little White, let's go play!"

Feng Xue'er stood up, and just as she was about to go towards Little White's side, a layer of mist-like flames suddenly flared up on Yun Che's body.

Feng Xue'er stopped in her tracks and looked at Yun Che with a surprised expression. The spontaneously ignited misty layer of flames adhered onto Yun Che's body, slowly flowed and shifted on the surface of his body, and gradually burned higher and higher. Right after, these flames again extinguished and an illusionary Phoenix's image emerged behind Yun Che's back. At the same time, the phoenix mark on Yun Che forehead appeared by itself, and released a dazzling golden light.

"Ah...."

Feng Xue'er uttered an astonished cry as she stared blankly at the phoenix mark on Yun Che forehead. That was a phoenix mark that anyone who carried the bloodline of the Phoenix would have. When igniting Phoenix flames, unless one deliberately conceals it, the phoenix mark will emerge by itself. Princess Snow still had her stupefied look, as she stared blankly at the golden phoenix mark on Yun Che's forehead. The expression in her eyes was in unrest, as the emotions contained within her gaze suddenly became incomparably chaotic...

The Phoenix's image lasted for a long time, before it finally slowly vanished, and the golden imprint on Yun Che's forehead also faded along with it. Yun Che also opened his eyes at this time, and at the first glance, he saw Feng Xue'er's eyes that were filled with astonishment.

"Big Brother Yun, you actually... have already completely comprehended the fundamental formula, and thoroughly mastered the bloodline and World Ode of the Phoenix's profound art?" Feng Xue'er stared her eyes wide, and said with a voice that carried a heavy tone of disbelief.

"That's right." Yun Che nodded: "Isn't this very easy... Right, Xue'er, how long did it take me in total?"

"It only took... an hour."

"An hour... is this considered very short?"

"Short to the point of unfathomable!" Feng Xue'er's emotions turmoiled: "The fundamental formula is the foundation of World Ode of the Phoenix's cultivation, only after thoroughly comprehending it, would one be able to harmonize their bloodline and profound art; it's also the most most important, and the most most difficult step. Even under the help and guidance of the senior generation, and even if one's comprehension ability is very great, it'll still need to at least take over a year, and some would need several years... But Big Brother Yun, you only used... an hour!"

"Uh..." With the Evil God's fire seed, no matter how difficult the fire attribute profound art, it was all just like the lift of a hand for him. Only after hearing Xue'er saying it like this, did he suddenly realize that mastering the fundamental formula just like that, was indeed a somewhat exaggerated speed. Just as he was pondering how he should explain, he then saw Feng Xue'er's charming face already blooming with utmost reverence: "Wah! Big Brother Yun, you're too amazing. You're the most most most... most terrific genius that Xue'er has ever seen! Back then royal father had praised me for comprehending the fastest, but compared to Big Brother Yun, I'm way way inferior."

"Um..." Yun Che somewhat embarrassedly pressed his forehead: "How could I be as amazing as Xue'er said? It's clearly Xue'er who has taught me well, which is why I could comprehend it so fast."

"Heh! Big Brother Yun only knows how to coax me. I only had given the profound formula to Big Brother Yun, and didn't give any other help and guidance, and more so didn't use profound energy to as a guide. As if it's got anything to do with me at all, it's Big Brother Yun himself who's amazing." Feng Xue'er said with a broad smile.

"No no, of course that isn't the case." Yun Che said with a serious face: "Xue'er is good looking, of noble status, with a kind nature. To be able to be taught the World Ode of the Phoenix personally by Xue'er, would be a blissful thing for anyone. Like this, any kind of miracle have a chance of happening. If it was a harsh old granny who taught me, I probably wouldn't have comprehended it within ten years."

"Hehe..." Even though she knew that Yun Che was coaxing her, she still laughed very cheerfully: "I had originally wanted to teach Big Brother Yun bit by bit, but since Big Brother Yun is so amazing... then I'll just teach all of World Ode of the Phoenix's profound arts to Big Brother Yun, maybe Big Brother Yun can similarly comprehend them very fast."

As she spoke, Feng Xue'er extended her jade hands. A speck of

dazzling red light congealed up between her fingers, then, she carefully touched it onto the center of Yun Che's brows... Instantly, the complete profound formulas of the first to the fourth stage, all slowly and clearly entered Yun Che's sea of consciousness.

The World Ode of the Phoenix, from the fundamental formula to the first four stages that belonged to Divine Phoenix Sect, was acquired just like this by Yun Che in such a complete and intact fashion.

Yun Che had already received the Phoenix's blood for nearly three years. Even though he forcefully learned two phoenix profound skills, he never was able to cultivate the World Ode of the Phoenix. The World Ode of the Phoenix could be said as something he had always yearned for even in his dreams, and he knew how difficult and dangerous it would be to obtain this World Ode of the Phoenix from Divine Phoenix Sect. He didn't expect that he would obtain Divine Phoenix Sect's complete World Ode of the Phoenix precisely today.

If he went through layers upon layers of danger, schemes, gambles, or even blood and obtained the World Ode of the Phoenix, he would have no qualms about it, and let out three hearty laughs.

But at this moment, obtaining it without spending any effort at all, instead made him to be somewhat at a loss.

Because what Feng Xue'er had given him wasn't merely World Ode of the Phoenix, but also a heart that completely trusted and was intimate with him, as well as feelings without the slightest speck of dust and impurity.

Yet the premise of everything, was his deceit toward her... Even if it was a deceit where he had no other choice.

As the first four stages of profound formula flooded in, the fifth and sixth stage profound formula that had long ago been engraved within Yun Che's mind and soul was awakened at the same time. For a moment, the six stages of profound formulas combined and joined together by themselves, converging into the World Ode of the

Phoenix's complete first to sixth stages. Even though Yun Che's mind was slightly in chaos, the Phoenix profound energy had already automatically channeled and fused following the profound formulas that entered Yun Che's mind... So, he closed his eyes, ridded the distracting thoughts, and concentrated on comprehending the profound formulas.

As the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament neared, Divine Phoenix City also became more clamorous day by day. The profound practitioners of the six nations who were participating in Ranking Tournament, as well as their escorts, all one by one arrived at Divine Phoenix City. To be qualified to participate in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, they were no doubt the younger generation's most tip-top prodigies of the six nations. And the people who accompanied them here, and also similarly beings at the pinnacle of the political and profound world within the six nations... Without exception, the emperors of the six nations all personally came.

However, these people who could all look down upon a nation, when arriving at the Divine Phoenix City, there was no choice but for them to lower their heads, and be cautious and prudent. At this time, there were only three days left until the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament. In the six nations, other than the Blue Wind Nation, the other five nation's participants had already all arrived, and were settled at the core encampment of Divine Phoenix Empire, Phoenix City.

"Hm? Blue Wind Nation's people still aren't here today?" Listening to his subordinate's report, Feng Ximing pondered.

"Yes. I just especially asked the city gate people, there hasn't been any Blue Wind participants entering the city. Should we immediately sound transmit to Blue Wind Imperial Family to inquire?"

"No need." Feng Ximing lifted his hand: "Hmph! Tiny Blue Wind Nation is also merely a joke at this Seven Nation Ranking

Tournament. I had thought someone interesting would happen in this session, looks like, this prince has really overestimated that kid called Yun Che. This prince had actually really believed that he would personally come participate in this Ranking Tournament like he had yelled out. I reckon that he has already hid somewhere he'd believe we can't find him with tails between his legs."

"No need to hurry and prepare the Blue Wind Nation's dwelling location. It's better that they don't come, not only will that help us cut down the Ranking Tournament's schedule, it also just happens to give royal father... another exceptionally good excuse. Withdraw for now... Right, today's welcome banquet, there's no need to arrange Blue Wind Nation's seats either."

"Yes."

"...A long long time ago, there were two young profound practitioners, one of them was named Zu Kun, the other named Liu Ti. They were of ordinary aptitude, and were frequently bullied and mocked by others. So they worked hard for prosperity, and decided to assiduously train together. Every single day before the sun even came up, as long as they heard the crow of roosters, they would get up from the bed and practice swordsmanship. Day after day, year after year, finally... They both got hit with the bird flu."

"What is bird flu?" Feng Xue'er asked very curiously.

"Mn, it's a very terrifying virus." Yun Che said in dead earnest: "This story, is called "Working hard at the first crow of the rooster". The moral of the story is that we definitely have to keep away from the bird flu."

"Uu... This story is so boring. I still want to hear the story of Snow White... After Snow White and the Frog Prince got together, what will happen then? I really want to know."

"This.... Let me think about it properly." Yun Che scratched his scalp.

"Think of it properly okay... Big Brother Yun, say ahh." Leaning on Yun Che's shoulder, Feng Xue'er put her half-eaten dragon meat skewer beside his mouth, and watched him take a big bite out of it with a grin.

Once the pandora's box was opened, the former taboo would rip apart a gap ever increasing in size. The Feng Xue'er who would definitely not have any contact with anyone before, was very naturally leaning together with Yun Che, eating the same meat skewer with him under various leads by Yun Che.

If Feng Hengkong saw this scene at this moment, he'd definitely be angry to the point of hovering between life and death. Slapping Yun Che into mincemeat on the spot would even be considered letting him off light.

=====

Chapter 423 – Leaving Phoenix Perching Valley

After a long while, Yun Che finally thought of the following storyline. He cleared his throat, and just as he was about to narrate, the Phoenix God Jade hung in front of her chest suddenly flickered with a scarlet-colored light.

Feng Xue'er took up the Phoenix God Jade, her expression, suddenly became somewhat sullen.

"Xue'er, what is it?" Yun Che immediately asked.

Feng Xue'er looked at Yun Che, and said with a pitiful expression in her eyes: "It's royal father... He's about to come here right now, then take me back to Phoenix City. Big Brother Yun..."

"...Why is he taking you back right now? Your royal father making you stay here alone, wasn't it because he'll be busy with the matter of the Ranking Tournament and Primordial Profound Ark. But right now should be the time he's the busiest." Yun Che said somewhat puzzled.

Feng Xue'er lightly shook her head: "Royal father had said, this is the first Seven Nation Ranking Tournament ever since my birth, and he'll take me there on-site. If I'm willing, he can even take me onto the Primordial Profound Ark. Royal father taking me back now, should be because all of the affairs have been properly prepared."

"You will go... to the site of the Ranking Tournament?" Yun Che's heart slightly shook.

"Mn... Big Brother Yun, quickly leave this place. If royal father sees you here, it'll be... it'll be bad." Feng Xue'er stood up, her expression somewhat panicky. She grabbed Yun Che's arm, but didn't push him away, rather, unwittingly gripped tighter.

There were three days left from the start of the Ranking Tournament; in fact, he should've left a long time ago. The reason as

to why he hadn't yet left, he knew very well in his heart... It was because he wasn't willing to part with Feng Xue'er. Her features, voice, heart, every single look, every single expression in her eyes, were all firmly attracting him, making it as if he were sucked into an endlessly beautiful starry sky, sinking deeper and deeper within.

In this world, no one can withstand her charm... And Yun Che, due to an accident stemming from many causes, with extraordinary luck, became the first person who could make close range contact with her.

"It's indeed time for me to leave." Yun Che exclaimed in his heart. Attentively watching Feng Xue'er's eyes flickering with light, he lifted his hand, put it atop Xue'er's head, as his fingers slowly slid off along the contour of her hair... This unduly intimate action, caused Feng Xue'er's eyes to only tremble a bit. But, she did not show any signs of rejection: "Xue'er, these days, I will always remember. Thank you, and thank the heavens for letting me meet you."

"...Big Brother Yun's words are so weird." Feng Xue'er minted her charming lips: "Later, we will still meet again, isn't that right?"

"Of course." Yun Che smilingly nodded: "Because I've already promised to take Xue'er to see the endlessly flowing snow. My promise to Xue'er, will never be forgotten."

"Mn!" Feng Xue'er nodded, her expression finally becoming somewhat cheerful. Her eyes carried unwillingness to part, yet her hands were gently pushing Yun Che: "Even though, I really hate to part with Big Brother Yun, it really is time for Big Brother Yun to leave... Royal father will arrive here in less than a quarter of an hour. If you still don't leave, you'll really be discovered by royal father."

"...I'm going." Yun Che's hand moved away from Feng Xue'er's shoulders. After glancing at her with incredible meticulousness, he finally turned around, then called over the Snow Phoenix Beast.

Snow Phoenix Beast flew up to him, and just as he was about to hop

onto Snow Phoenix Beast's back, Yun Che stopped in his steps. He turned around, his hands quietly clutched tight, and at last he still said in a small voice: "Xue'er, if... let's say if one day, you found out... I have lied to you about some things, will you hate me? Will you still consider me your Big Brother Yun?"

"Ah?" Yun Che's sudden words, made Feng Xue'er a little at a loss: "Why would Big Brother Yun say such a weird thing? How is it possible for Big Brother Yun to deceive me?"

"I'm saying, just if... if there are some things, I really have deceived you on, would you hate me?" Yun Che's voice became even quieter; a sentence that wasn't lengthy, yet was spoken with extraordinary difficulty.

"I... I don't know." Feng Xue'er shook her head, the expression in her eyes was somewhat stumped, as if she couldn't understand the question Yun Che had put forward. She lightly spoke: "But, in these days together with Big Brother Yun, what I have felt are all Big Brother Yun's kindness toward me. Snowing for me every day, teaching me how to build snowmen, cooking delicious food for me, telling me many interesting stories... Big Brother Yun's smile is pretty, and his gaze is also very gentle. These days, I've been so happy every day, even the dreams I dream when sleeping, had become very blissful."

Yun Che: "..."

"This kind of Big Brother Yun, I don't believe he would be willing to deceive me. Even if... even if he really deceived me, then he must've had no other choice, and not in order to harm me." Every single word of Feng Xue'er, was sincere and relaxed; this was the voice coming from her heart: "I will forever remember Big Brother Yun's kindness, and the matter he promised me... In the future, no matter what happens, I believe that Big Brother Yun will never harm me, and I'll never do anything that'll harm Big Brother Yun either."

The last sentence of Feng Xue'er, made Yun Che somewhat puzzled.

But even more so, it fiercely stirred up his heart. He no longer spoke, because no matter what he said under Feng Xue'er's gaze that was as pure as snow, it would be incomparably pale in comparison. He leapt onto the Snow Phoenix Beast's back, took off into the air under Snow Phoenix Beast's carriage, and directly flew toward Absolute Phoenix Cliff. Feng Xue'er had already told him, that the other three directions of Phoenix Perching Valley all should have people guarding there. If he were to safely leave without alarming anyone, he would still need to go through Absolute Phoenix Cliff.

"Big Brother Yun, I'll come here often in the future... I will wait for Big Brother Yun to appear once again..."

"Big Brother Yun, you can't forget the words said between us. After I'm twenty, you definitely have to take me to Snow Region of Extreme Ice..."

"Big Brother Yun, Little White, I'll miss you guys very much..."

The sound of wind howled beside his ears. Feng Xue'er's voice came from below against the wind; the voice at last, even carried a sobbing tone that was being repressed with effort.

A few thousand meters in height, wasn't much for Snow Phoenix Beast. Very soon, Absolute Phoenix Cliff's summit appeared before Yun Che's eyes. Yun Che dismounted from Snow Phoenix Beast's back, and stood beside the cliff. Within the dark green colored valley that was like an otherworldly utopia, he could faintly see that fairy-like beautiful silhouette.

She was the princess of Divine Phoenix Empire, the most brilliant jewel of the entire Profound Sky Continent. She had been protected to the utmost limit... But at the same time, she was also lonely... Which was why, in these days he had carelessly intruded into her world, she was so happy and excited.

"Little Chan, do you want to accompany her, by her side?" With his gaze looking down, Yun Che suddenly spoke.

“Screee...” Snow Phoenix Beast slapped her wings, and let out a quiet cry. Its majestic head continuously made a few... nodding movements!

Huh? Nodding!?

With an extremely bitter and unsatisfied expression in his eyes, Yun Che gave Snow Phoenix Beast a fierce stare... Even if Xue'er's charm can't be resisted, even if you really want to stay by her side, you are still my contracted profound beast right nowwww!!! Can't you be a little bit more reserved, even if you have to fake it a little!

...Forget it.

Yun Che's mouth became askew. He extended his wrist, as the Snow Phoenix Beast's profound imprint emerged on the back. With a thought, the profound energy connection with Snow Phoenix Beast was directly severed. The profound imprint on the back of his hand, also slowly vanished.

Snow Phoenix Beast completely recovered its freedom. It spread its wings and took off, and circled and danced above Yun Che's head, letting out sharp cries that one couldn't tell whether it was from excitement or unwillingness to part.

Seeing the Snow Phoenix Beast that regained freedom, what was more in Yun Che's heart wasn't sadness, but a sort of relaxed feeling. He said with a faint smile: “Little Chan, go ahead. Staying with me, you will only face hardships and danger everywhere. Accompanying Xue'er, she likes you so much, and will definitely treat you well. You no longer need to suffer laborious hardship with me anymore... Go.”

Scree~~~~

A long cry resonantly sliced through the skies. After Snow Phoenix Beast danced and fluttered for a while, it finally descended, and flew toward the Phoenix Perching Valley below. Very soon, those two snow-white colored silhouettes slowly assembled together.

Yun Che let out a faint laugh. After taking another deep glance in the end, he took two steps back, then put away all of his unwillingness to part, and walked toward the south.

"Why did you let Snow Phoenix Beast leave?" Jasmine couldn't help but ask: "You still can't fly right now. Without Snow Phoenix Beast, what will you do when you need to fly?"

Yun Che shook his head, and said: "Giving the Snow Phoenix Beast to Xue'er, isn't just because Xue'er likes it. It is because that I don't know whether or not I can successfully preserve my own life during this session of Ranking Tournament. If I am unlucky... At least Snow Phoenix Beast doesn't need to die together with me. Not only can it be saved, it can be considered a tiny bit of repayment to Xue'er... Her heart was sincere toward me, yet I, still have deceived her after all that's said and done."

"Hmph..." Jasmine sneered: "Deceiving girls, isn't that your habitual method of doing things! You had never been so conscious of your guilt before, isn't that so."

"That's not the same." Yun Che curled his lips: "Conquering and deception are two entirely different concepts, a little girl like you wouldn't understand."

"..." Jasmine was disdained to reply, and asked conversely: "On the matter of whether or not you can keep your life, I actually have good news to tell you."

"Good news?"

Jasmine said indifferently: "If I'm guessing correctly, after your Phoenix bloodline was found out by Divine Phoenix Sect, what you dread the most isn't Divine Phoenix Sect, but the true progenitor of Divine Phoenix Sect... the other Phoenix Spirit, just like the Phoenix Spirit you met at the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range back then."

Yun Che's footsteps stalled a little, then he slowly nodded: "You are entirely correct. Back then, when I left the Phoenix's trial grounds, the Phoenix Spirit had also warned severely, that I must be cautious of the other Phoenix Spirit's existence. Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix Spirit had always thought the Phoenix Spirit who granted me heritage was killed by it a long time ago. If it found out that the Phoenix's bloodline in me stems from another Phoenix's legacy... Then, the one who will be harmed, will not only be myself. The Phoenix Spirit of the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range, as well as the Phoenix tribe who just recently broke away from their curse, may also encounter a great disaster." Yun Che uttered a low sigh: "Yet with the bloodline's exposure, there would be no other choice but to face Divine Phoenix Sect as soon as possible. Otherwise, the ones who will be implicated would be people at my side... So, on the way here from the Blue Wind Nation, I had always prayed for that phoenix beast to always be residing in the dark, and won't have any interest to probe into affairs of the Ranking Tournament.

"About this Phoenix Spirit, there's already no need for you to worry." Jasmine said emotionlessly.

"Why?"

"Because... it's already dead!"

"What? Dead?" Yun Che's footsteps stopped at once: "Are you sure? Wait! How did you know it's dead?"

"Heh..." Jasmine laughed insidiously: "You don't need to mind how I found out. It shouldn't be too long since its death, but I am certain that it has already died! However, even though it died, there's a high chance that the bloodline and memories have been passed on. So, in this world, there are perhaps still people who can discern that your bloodline comes from another Phoenix's legacy."

Yun Che's spirit was instantly roused up. Words spoken by Jasmine in such a confidence tone, naturally he wouldn't doubt them: "Very well! If Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix Spirit really has died, then, my

greatest worry is also gone! Like this, during the Ranking Tournament, I will be able to perform without any worries of future consequences!”

“And so? How confident are you to make Divine Phoenix Sect no longer find trouble for you, and also survive?”

“Seventy percent!” Yun Che said with swelling confidence: “Perhaps, I’d even be able to go for a stroll on that mysterious Primordial Profound Ark!”

=====

Chapter 424 – Phoenix City

Yun Che descended from Absolute Phoenix Cliff, left the Phoenix Mountain Range, pondered for a bit, and then directly returned to Divine Phoenix City, heading straight toward Phoenix City.

Phoenix City was located in the south-western area of Divine Phoenix City. While belonging to Divine Phoenix City, it also existed independently, and was a special city within a city. Just like the Divine Phoenix Imperial Palace, Phoenix City was also the core base of Divine Phoenix Sect. The difference being, one was the core of authority, and the other was the core of force. While the two, both possessed incomparably strong deterrence force.

Within Phoenix City, there was a place called Phoenix Realm, which was the place where the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament had always been conducted at.

Nearing Phoenix City, a sense of pressure that made one palpate, and a distinctly scorching air surged against one's face. Above the gigantic city gate was a huge, majestic, awe-inspiring phoenix. Yun Che stopped in his steps, but didn't walk inside. As a tournament participant, he ought to have dwelling places that were already arranged, but there would certainly be a great deal of uncertain factors if he moved in here, since his identity was special. Him coming this time, was only to scout out the location. After confirming the location of Phoenix City, he turned around and left, then quickly disguised himself and checked in at a remote and quiet inn.

From the start of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, three last days were left.

Three days, were enough for him to finish absorbing the Sky Profound Universal Pellet.

After entering the inn and properly surveying the surroundings before closing the room's door, Yun Che took out the Phoenix

Halianthus, Devil's Flaming Blood Crystal and the other materials, then quickly refined them with the Sky Poison Pearl. Very soon, an entirely scarlet colored pellet that seemed as if it had just been soaked in fresh blood emerged within Yun Che's palm. As the pellet took form, a surge of berserking aura also instantly discharged, violently pushing away the surrounding air.

Lifting up this newly refined Sky Profound Universal Pellet, Yun Che didn't even think, and threw it in his mouth without hesitation.

The Sky Profound Universal Pellet melted the moment it entered his mouth, and instantly turned into a lava-like heatwave, flooding into the profound veins and meridians of his entire body. Instantly, a pain as if he was being stabbed by needles came from his entire body. Yun Che closed his eyes, his expression entirely tranquil, as if he felt nothing. This kind of pellet that could forcefully raise one's profound strength in a short period of time would certainly have an extremely fierce medicinal property, and the risk would often be much greater than the reward. But Yun Che, after all, had the Phoenix Blood and Dragon's Marrow, with the Great Way of the Buddha as protection; he could even consume and drink an Emperor Profound Dragon's flesh and blood with the body of an Spirit Profound Realm back then. With a body of the Earth Profound Realm currently, consuming the Sky Profound Universal Pellet would be even less of a concern.

Even so, under the ferocious medicinal property of the Sky Profound Universal Pellet, it was still very unpleasant for Yun Che. As the medicinal power slowly dissolved outwards, the heat steam that flooded into his profound veins also became more and more ruthless and fierce. Even though his expression was calm on his face, his forehead was already quietly covered with fine, dense sweat.

.....

The time it took to absorb the Sky Profound Universal Pellet was around what Yun Che had expected. When he completely finished

absorbing, and opened his eyes, it was already the early morning of the third day.

Yun Che stood up and extended his hands. In these three days, his clothes were soaked through once and once again by sweat, and was emitting a pungent smell of sweat. He opened up his palm, and a small profound energy whirlpool appeared in the center of his palm. And as he closed up his palm, the profound energy whirlpool immediately dispersed, letting out a resounding sound of popping air.

"The extent of the increase in power is about the same as I expected. From Sky Profound Realm, there is finally only one step away." Yun Che clenched his fist, and muttered to himself: "Jasmine, how long did it take for me to absorb it.?"

"Three days."

"Oh... What? Three days?!"

Yun Che quivered, and fiercely jumped up. He quickly took a look outside the window, judged the time a little, then scampered off toward the door: "Jasmine! Why didn't you call me! Today is the date of the Ranking Tournament you know, there's still quite a long distance from here to Phoenix City!"

"I don't have the obligation to warn you."

As he rushed to the doorstep, Yun Che stopped in his steps. He smelled his sleeves a little, and heavily shut the door he pulled open once again: "Oh well, let me take a bath first."

Jasmine: "..."

When Yun Che came rushing to the Phoenix City, it was already nearly nine in the morning. From the start of the Ranking Tournament, less than half an hour was left.

The front of the Phoenix City gate was surrounded by densely packed crowds. These people were all ones who weren't qualified to enter, or didn't manage to get an admission ticket, and could only unwillingly pace back and forth outside of the city, hoping they could receive the tournament feed at the first moment. Yun Che quickly pushed the crowd aside and rushed to the front of Phoenix City's main city gate, then was stopped by two Phoenix disciples.

"Show your qualification for entrance." One of the Phoenix disciples who stopped him said lazily. The same kind of words, he probably have repeated countless times today.

"I am the participant from Blue Wind Nation." Yun Che said succinctly, and at the same time took out his participant emblem.

The moment the red participant emblem was taken out, the two Phoenix disciple's gazes instantly concentrated in attention. As they made out the two words "Blue Wind" clearly, they looked at each other for a bit, and revealed the same kind of odd expression in their eyes. One of the Phoenix disciple shouted at the inside: "Senior Brother Zhanyun, Blue Wind Nation's participant has arrived!"

"Hah? Blue Wind!?"

Very soon, a young person with a robust physique walked out. He saw the participant emblem in Yun Che's hand at a glance, then gave him a stare and said softly: "We had thought that your Blue Wind Nation didn't dare to come, you actually came at this time. You are treating this Ranking Tournament way too flippantly... Forget it, let me personally bring you guys in. Where are the people other than you?"

"None." Yun Che shook his head: "Just me."

"Hah? Just you alone?"

"That's right, Blue Wind this time, only has me alone as the tournament participant. There aren't any others, nor are there any

escorts. I'll trouble you to bring me in, the Ranking Tournament is about to start." Yun Che said calmly.

Feng Zhanyun sized up Yun Che from head to toe, then probed his profound strength on a whim. The corner of his lips flattened, as he was too lazy to say anything else. He said heedlessly: "Oh well, since you've come, then come with me."

"Senior Brother Zhanyun, should we report this to Great Elder?"

"No need." Feng Zhanyun waved his hand: "The Ranking Tournament is about to start, there's no need to distract him with such a trivial matter. After all, he's only here to show a formality, just make the arrangements as you wish."

Phoenix City was the core ground of Divine Phoenix Sect, and naturally wouldn't let outsiders step in as they wish. The means to get through to Phoenix Realm's core, was a somewhat long and narrow rigid passage. On both sides of the passage came the auras of fire profound formations. Clearly, anyone who dared to try to step into areas outside of the passageway would definitely encounter attacks by the profound formations.

Entering Phoenix Realm, before even nearing the Ranking Tournament's arena, a wave of bustling and impassioned air had already blasted head on. When entering the arena, Yun Che's entire person went stupefied for a bit.

Cang Wanhe had told him before, that to the Blue Wind's profound practitioners, the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was a disgrace they were most unwilling to talk about. But to the other six nations, it was the most important and grand occasion for the profound practicing world that came every twenty five years. When a session of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament approached, from emperors to commoners, none of them wouldn't follow with all their heart. For this ranking tournament, they would even start preparing five years prior.

And at this moment, Yun Che finally began to understand what the “Seven Nation Ranking Tournament” seldomly mentioned by the Blue Wind Nation meant.

The enormous scale of the arena, far surpassed his expectations, and the overwhelming majority of the arena, was naturally the audience seats. At a glance, the crowds were bustling with activity, endless and boundless. From top to bottom, the entire arena was filled with people, and definitely was no less than several million in number. In the sky high above, numerous people were flying about like locusts.

Comparing the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament’s atmosphere and scale with this... It could be said that the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament wasn’t even qualified to be compared.

The incomparably enormous seating areas were divided into several sections, and every single section were filled with people, with no empty seats at all, but they still could be considered distinctively divided. At the frontmost area of the seating, Yun Che saw the respective insignias of five nations, and the five nation’s participants and escorts sat amongst these seats. Behind them, were all basically the supporters of their own country. Before the Ranking Tournament even began, the faces of each and every one of them were thoroughly flushed, their eyes glowed, and their expressions were filled with excitement and expectation. To them, being able to enter the ranking tournament’s scene to cheer for their own country and testify the tournament’s course, was already an honor that they could flaunt for their entire lives.

The main seating area of the arena naturally belonged to Divine Phoenix Sect. However, the Divine Phoenix Sect’s frontmost seats were empty, and Divine Phoenix Sect’s big shots haven’t arrived yet.

Yun Che’s gaze quickly swept around, yet he couldn’t find Blue Wind’s seating area at all.

“Heh, how is it? Are you startled, is it that you’ve never seen such a

great spectacle since the day you were born?" Feng Zhanyun asked as he looked at Yun Che with the corner of his eyes.

"Why is there no seating area for Blue Wind Nation?" Yun Che asked with his brows knitted.

"Why should there be?" Feng Zhanyun curled his lips, and asked back: "Your Blue Wind Nation's profound practitioner coming to this Seven Nation's Ranking Tournament, isn't it just for making up the number of 'Seven Nation', or perhaps... Heheh, adding a little laughing stock. Speaking of which, you guys ought to have seats, after all, you lot are at least an independent nation. But up until three days ago, we still haven't received any news from the Blue Wind Nation, and thought that you guys aren't even bothering to 'make up' a number, so we didn't prepare anything regarding your Blue Wind Nation, including seating."

Yun Che's brows tightened up, and didn't speak.

This wasn't a problem of whether or not seating was prepared, even if Blue Wind Nation declared to not participate a few months ahead of time, there still should be Blue Wind Nation's seating area here... Because this was the most basic recognition and respect for a genuinely existing nation.

But in the entire arena right now, the six nations were all present, only Blue Wind Nation's seating area didn't exist... This was simply already not putting Blue Wind Nation in their eyes without any intention to hide it! It could even be a deliberate act of contempt and humiliation.

He believed that there must be many spectators from the Blue Wind Nation in the arena. Every single person of the Blue Wind Nation seeing this kind of scene, would definitely become so angry that their lungs would explode.

"And it's fortunate that we didn't prepare. Only a kid like you came from Blue Wind. Tsk tsk, if a chunk of seating for Blue Wind was

reserved, that'd really be too wasteful. As for you... Hm, there aren't any other empty seats, you can only stand here I suppose. When you are required to enter the stage, you can just fly over from here, how convenient is that... Oh right, you seemed to only be at the Earth Profound Realm, and can't use the Profound Floating Technique yet. Then just do as you fit, I guess. I, Feng Zhanyun personally bringing you here, and even arranging a place here for you to stand, is already gaining a lot of face for you, enough for you to go flaunting about it for a decade or so."

The "here" Feng Zhanyun was talking about, was a corner at the utmost edge of the colossal arena. Not only was the location extremely bad, the center of the arena couldn't be seen if one's eyepower wasn't enough, it couldn't even be considered a seat! If one really had to find an advantage for this position, it could only be that this location could overlook a great half of the arena.

=====

Chapter 425 – Arrival of the Sacred Grounds (1)

"Kid, I can't help but say that I really admire your courage and cheek. If it was me, let's not even talk about coming alone; just speaking of this Earth Profound Realm... Heh heh, I wouldn't have the face to enter this arena." Feng Zhanyun smiled mockingly. Suddenly, his complexion flickered, and his gaze turned towards the center of the main seats. His voice stirred excitedly: "Sect Master, Young Sect Master, and the Great Elders have arrived... Ah..."

At this time, Feng Zhanyun's breathing suddenly became hurried and brief. His eyes stared forward rigidly, and his voice began trembling: "Ah... ah-ah-ah-ah... that's... could it be... Princess Snow!?"

The incomparably enormous arena was capable of holding almost three million people; just the sound of everyone's breathing amounted to rumbling thunder. But at this moment, the enormous arena instantly became incomparably silent, such that even a pin drop could have been heard, and it seemed like everything had frozen in motion. Everyone's gazes were directed upward, attentively watching the phoenix flame that had been lit in the sky.

The flame in the air assumed the shape of a flying phoenix. Atop the phoenix flame, several silhouettes descended slowly. Among the Divine Phoenix Sect's seats, all of the participants from the Divine Phoenix Sect were already seated; even the princes, elders, hall masters, pavilion masters, and city masters were already there. But the foremost fifteen seats of the Divine Phoenix Clan were still vacant. And the position of these fifteen seats were evidently higher than that of princes and elders!

Today, the owners of these fifteen center seats finally arrived.

The silhouettes in the air slowly descended as they stepped on the Phoenix flame. Included among these people were the Divine Phoenix Sect's Feng Hengkong and Great Elder Feng Feiyan. Young Sect Master and Crown Prince, Feng Ximing, was also lined up

grandly. The other ten people were all elder and city master-level existences that were at the peak of strength and prestige in Divine Phoenix Sect. Without the least exaggeration, any individual among these people was a super existence capable of showing disdain in the Profound Sky. They stood together, their enormous imposing manner enveloping the entire arena, making all three million people in the arena have a heavy suffocating feeling.

However, including the Divine Phoenix Sect Master Feng Hengkong, not one person became the focal point of everyone's gazes. Everyone's gazes, as if locked by some irresistible force, fell onto the delicate and tender figure of the young girl standing beside Feng Hengkong. She was dressed in luxurious phoenix clothing and wore a Phoenix Jade Crown. The Phoenix Jade glass that hung down from her crown completely shrouded her visage, rendering one incapable of even getting the slightest glimpse of her skin and grace.

But when people looked at such a girl, whose complexion couldn't even be seen, their souls would still suddenly surge intensely. They were unable to describe such a feeling, as if they had fallen into an illusory dreamland all of a sudden, watching a girl that had walked out of a dream... Although they couldn't see her face, every person's heart was filled with the incomparably firm belief that she must have the world's most perfect appearance, no less than that of a heavenly fairy.

This seemed like some kind of magic, and also seemed like a dreamy temperament that shouldn't belong to a young girl from the mortal world.

At this time, the Feng Hengkong and Feng Feiyan-level existences beside this young girl completely became decorative props, the many stars around the arched moon. In fact, while Feng Hengkong and the young girl stood in the middle, and the others stood evenly spread around them, the center of the region they encircled wasn't Feng Hengkong... but that young girl.

"Princess Snow... it's the fabled Princess Snow!" Within the arena, a

man yelled with incomparable excitement.

"Besides Princess Snow, who can stand on equal footing with the Phoenix Sect Master... Besides Princess Snow, who can possess such celestial character... Heavens! I'm actually seeing the fabled Princess Snow..."

"Having spent a tenth of the family property in order to get ahold of this entrance ticket, I felt a little conned originally... But to be able to catch a glimpse of Princess Snow, even if I lost the entire family fortune, it would be completely worth it!"

"I couldn't be dreaming, right? Princess Snow only appeared that one time when she was thirteen... Today, I'm actually witnessing her charm and grace with my own eyes..."

"It's a pity, we can't see Princess Snow's face. The thirteen year old Princess Snow already possessed the beauty of a heavenly being; the sixteen year old Princess Snow right now... who knows to what extent her beauty has developed."

"Know satisfaction already, you! Being able to witness Princess Snow's figure with your own eyes, is already a fortune gained by your former incarnation! How could Princess Snow's heavenly appearance be something that common folks like us are qualified to appreciate!"

.....

.....

The enormous arena once again became clamorous. The impassioned mood that had filled the entire arena, had all turned into the excitement and exclamation towards Princess Snow, making the people almost forget why they came here today. They felt that even if they were to leave the arena right now without being able to see the ranking tournament, being able to have a glance at Princess Snow's beauty was already more than tens of millions times worth it.

In this entire world, to be able to instigate such a great shock with an

entrance, moreover with covered features, Princess Snow would be the only one!

Feng Hengkong's gaze was tranquil yet dignified. His eyes swept through the entire audience, and wasn't slightly surprised at this abrupt commotion. His gaze turned, and when it fell onto the Feng Xue'er beside him, the dignified gaze instantly became incomparably gentle, so gentle as though he was afraid his gaze would bring her harm.

This number one hegemon of the Profound Sky Seven Nations, a supreme being like the Emperor of Heaven's Palace, would also only reveal such an expression in his eyes when facing this sole daughter of his.

"Princess Snow... It's really Princess Snow."

Feng Zhanyun's face became thoroughly flushed. His legs were trembling, he was excited and moved to the point of almost slacking down onto the ground. His hand pressed at the position of his heart with power, as if he didn't do it, his heart would even jump out from his thoracic cavity. He had already planned to just throw Yun Che here and leave right away, but Princess Snow's appearance made his footsteps unable to move any longer. His two eyes fixedly watched on, as his soul had almost flew outside of the world.

Yun Che was naturally aware of Feng Xue'er's charm. Looking at the charming figure of Xue'er in the distance, and looking at Feng Zhanyun's expression... As a man, he really wanted to flauntingly roar: Not only have I seen Xue'er's true appearance, I've even touched her hand and hair, do you believe me!? Are you envious!?

Of course, he absolutely didn't dare to speak these words. Watching everyone's reactions, he was certain that if he really shouted out, Feng Hengkong wouldn't need to tear him apart personally; everyone present would use their gazes to pierce him until he looked like a porcupine!

Yun Che tapped Feng Zhanyun, pretended to be puzzled, and asked: "Aren't you from the Divine Phoenix Sect? Why are you still so excited to see Princess Snow? Could it be that the people inside your sect don't ordinarily see her?"

"Of course! In this world, how many people have the qualifications to be near Princess Snow!" Feng Zhanyun said emotionally: "Princess Snow is usually kept beside the Ancestral Phoenix God; she's the first person in the history of my Divine Phoenix Sect that the Ancestral Phoenix God has personally given guidance to. Other than Sect Master and the Great Elder-level people, meeting Princess Snow is simply impossible..."

Having spoken to this point, Feng Zhanyun suddenly snapped awake from his excitement: "F*ck! Why'd I just say all this to you! You've practically run through eight million years of good luck! Someone only at the Earth Profound Realm, representing Blue Wind Empire as a stopgap, was actually able to see Princess Snow on the spot... Your life can be considered worth it now!"

"...Yes, yes." Yun Che nodded, then silently knit his eyebrows... Ancestral Phoenix God? Without a doubt, it should be that Phoenix Spirit! He asked probingly: "You just said... Ancestral Phoenix God? I've heard that your Divine Phoenix Sect has at least five thousand years of history. Your ancestor can live up to five thousand years old?"

Feng Zhanyun used a gaze as though he was looking at a retard and gave Yun Che a glance from the side: "In the end, you're just a nobody from Blue Wind Empire; how could you understand my Divine Phoenix Sect's inside information. Our Ancestral Phoenix God is the world's most powerful spirit! What does an insignificant five thousand years mean; the Ancestral Phoenix God has an everlasting life! It will always protect my Divine Phoenix Sect, and will never wither away. Are you aware of the Four Great Sacred Grounds? The Four Great Sacred Grounds all have tens of thousands of years of history, but five thousand years ago, my Divine Phoenix Sect rose

abruptly. In less than three hundred years' time, it has become the number one sect in the Profound Sky Continent. The Four Great Sacred Grounds have never tried to suppress us; do you know why? Heh heh, it's because of the existence of our Ancestral Phoenix God! Even if it was some Saint Emperor, Sovereign of the Seas, Heavenly Monarch or Sword Master, they still wouldn't dare to act rashly in front of my Ancestral Phoenix God..."

Feng Zhanyun finished speaking loftily, then curled his lip disdainfully: "Forget it, speaking about this to you is useless. In your lifetime, I estimate your limit will be the late stages of the Sky Profound Realm. Even if you cultivated for ten thousand lives, you still wouldn't be able to touch the Ancestral Phoenix God's current strength."

"Oh~~~" Yun Che answered without much thought, then sank deep into thought... From what Feng Zhanyun had said, not only did the Ancestral Phoenix God still exist, it had an unlimited lifespan, and it made even the Four Great Sacred Grounds cower in fear from its might.

Yet Jasmine had said with an extremely certain tone... that that Phoenix Spirit had already died.

Could it be, the Divine Phoenix Sect had concealed the fact that the Phoenix Spirit had died this entire time?

This was extremely probable! After all, the Phoenix Spirit's existence was an enormous deterrence to the Four Great Sacred Grounds. If news of the Phoenix Spirit's death spread out, then the greatest deterrence of the Divine Phoenix Sect would no longer exist. Furthermore, it would also no longer have the qualifications to challenge the Four Great Sacred Grounds anymore.

The Phoenix Flame beneath Feng Hengkong and company went out, and they landed on the ground, then sat down in their seats. Feng Xue'er sat besides Feng Hengkong, a position on the same level as that of Feng Hengkong! The other people all sat behind them. Yun

He silently watched Feng Xue'er's silhouette, and his heart sighed lightly... Xue'er, the next time you see me, what will your feelings be? Will you be hurt and sad... If that's the case, even I will be incapable of forgiving myself.

As for Feng Zhanyun, he already thoroughly didn't have any desire to leave. He stared fixedly at Feng Xue'er's dream-like silhouette, and his face filled with an expression of infatuation and devotion... Yun Che estimated that right now, even if he struck him with a rod, he wouldn't leave.

Feng Hengkong just sat, took a glance at the time, swept his gaze across the distinguished seats reserved for those from the Four Great Sacred Grounds, and said: "Have the honored guests from the Sacred Grounds arrived yet?"

"They are always conceited with their status, and would never arrive until the last moment, there is no need for Sect Master to mind. Their intentions are set on the Primordial Profound Ark, they will certainly come." Feng Feiyan said expressionlessly. He was the directly related older brother of Feng Hengkong, and was only seven years older than him, yet he looked to be twenty or thirty years older. With his cultivation, at two hundred years old, he could totally look no different than twenty or thirty, but it was very clear that he did not choose to deliberately control the characteristics of age with profound strength.

"Mn." Feng Hengkong slowly nodded: "Since they are honored guests, we'll wait for fifteen minutes longer."

"Hahahaha, no need for fifteen minutes. An honored invitation of the phoenix, how could I, this Ling, not come."

An ear-splitting hearty laugh sounded from above, and instantly resounded through the entire arena as if a gale, jolting to the point of causing everyone's eardrums to severely quiver. Right after, the enormous pressure belonging to an Overlord enveloped down, as a green colored figure quickly flashed through the air, then fell upon

the “Mighty Heavenly Sword Region” seat like a ghost.

The moment the voice sounded, Yun Che’s thoughts flickered at once. Because he was extraordinarily familiar with this voice. And when that person descended, Yun Che’s brows also moved along with it...

Sure enough, it was Ling Kun!!

The person at the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament back then, who was invited as witness by the Heavenly Sword Villa! That time, he had even taken the initiative to throw out an olive branch at Yun Che, inviting him to join Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.

Who would’ve thought the person representing the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region at this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament would also be him!

=====

Chapter 426 – Arrival of the Sacred Grounds (2)

"Haha," Feng Hengkong stood up, and cupped his hands at Ling Kun: "Elder Ling, it has been twenty-five years; I trust you have been well."

"As expected, the one coming from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is this person again." Feng Zhanyun murmured with a low voice.

"Again? Which means, it was him last time as well?" Yun Che asked.

"That's right. The people of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region all reportedly practice their sword in tranquility, yet this Ling Kun instead travels the seven nations of Profound Sky for years on end, and is the person who stays outside of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region for the longest time. Even though his status at Mighty Heavenly Sword Region isn't very high, it seems that he has received much of the Sword Master's recognition."

Ling Kun also gave Feng Hengkong a wave: "I naturally have been well. Rather than that, Sect Master Feng's aura has become even more thick and profound, this Ling is already far, far behind."

"Haha, Elder Ling is being modest." Feng Hengkong laughed faintly, then his tone changed: "Elder Ling, would the one who has arrived together with you, be Young Hall Master Ye?"

Once Feng Hengkong's question ended, the complexions of the Phoenix Elders behind immediately changed slightly as they raised their heads upwards in succession.

"Hahahaha!"

Another hearty laugh came from a distance overhead. This laughter was not as vast and powerful as Ling Kun's but it was willful and flamboyant, and there were only a few in the Profound Sky Continent who would dare to laugh this unrestrainedly in Divine Phoenix Sect's territory. Amidst the wild laughter, an illustrious white radiance akin to the blazing sun suddenly projected in the sky above. On the other

side, an equally dazzling floating crescent moon appeared as well. This sun and moon instantly snatched away all the brilliance in this space.

A young man slowly walked out from within the radiance of the circular sun and crescent moon. Dressed in white, his brows were as sharp as swords and his eyes glistened like stars. His face was like white jade, the slanted and slender brows penetrated deeply into his hairline, as an aloof yet nefarious smile hung on his face... To be more precise, that was an obscene smile. While he himself, didn't have any intentions of hiding this "Obsceneness".

He opened his arms, and at once, two women bewitching in every way walked out from the radiance, swinging their water snake-like waist, and threw themselves into his embrace from both sides. The man bursted into a loud laughter, and under the light of the sun's and moon's brilliance, the sleeves of his robe fluttered as he slowly descended while holding two women. Moreover, he continuously moved his hands up and down on the two women's bodies, as if this were a place with no people. Under his caressing and stroking, the two bewitching women moaned again and again with their waists wringing about.

"This person..." Yun Che's brows greatly knitted, but it wasn't because of his utterly unbearable conduct under the eyes of everyone. Rather, it was because from this person's body, he felt an extremely dangerous kind of aura.

The more unbridled and pompous someone was on the surface, they would often be some useless person who only drinks and eats, and would be very easy to deal with... But on this person, this rule did not apply at all! The warning of danger Yun Che felt due to a certain aura on him, was incomparably intense.

"As expected of Phoenix Sect Master; these little gimmicks of mine, really are inadequate in front of Phoenix Sect Master." As the young man landed, the brilliance of the sun and moon finally vanished as well. Yet he didn't land on his seat, and instead landed in front of

Divine Phoenix Sect's seating area, less than a mere ten steps away from Feng Xue'er's seat. He let go of the two women, took a step forward, as he slightly raised his hand, his eyes narrowed halfway: "Sun Moon Divine Hall's Ye Xinghan, greets Phoenix Sect Master. I have already heard Phoenix Sect Master's prestige for a long time, to be able to meet today is the blessing of my three lifetimes."

"What? Ye Xinghan!?"

Hearing this youth reveal his name, the audience instantly cried out in surprise. Because, this was the name of Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master! The person from Sun Moon Divine Hall this time, was actually the Young Hall Master!!

Though Feng Hengkong had already learnt that Ye Xinghan was unbridled with women, he didn't expect him to be so debauched. He faintly smiled, and said: "Young Hall Master's words are too strong. Rather, Young Hall Master's name is like a thunder which pierces the ear. Meeting you today, your excellence is superior than your reputation... Young Hall Master's seat is to the right side of Elder Ling. Three honored guests, please enter your seats."

"No need to hurry." Yet Ye Xinghan leisurely rebuffed. His gaze shifted, and fell upon Feng Xue'er's body. A pair of long and narrow eyes instantly squinted, as they radiated an extremely scorching light...

Up until now, it could be said that Ye Xinghan have had his way with countless women. And the women who he took a fancy to, their looks, physique were all one chosen from a thousand. It could be said that his immunity toward women's looks and disposition was extremely high, yet at the moment he saw Feng Xue'er, he felt all of the blood in his entire body start to boil, as every single cell in his body throbbed madly.

For the first time in his life, Ye Xinghan had a feeling of not daring to believe that she actually exist, while she was clearly before his eyes. It was even to the point where he couldn't imagine just what kind of

celestial beauty was underneath this sort of air that transcended worldliness. The desire to possess crazily sprouted and grew within his chest cavity and soul... At the same time, her physique, was more so unparalleled under heaven...

She was simply the most flawless woman, the most flawless incubator!

"Could this Phoenix goddess be, the Princess Snow known as the number one beauty of Profound Sky?" Staring at Feng Xue'er, Ye Xinghai spoke with his eyes pursed up. Everyone in the world knew the name of Princess Snow, and everyone in the world also knew to what extent Divine Phoenix Sect protected Princess Snow. Therefore, even if one had millions of intentions toward Princess Snow, they definitely shouldn't, and also wouldn't dare to reveal such intentions in front of Feng Hengkong and Divine Phoenix Sect's crowd. Yet this Ye Xinghan had the gaze of a wolf, his wrists rolling, not concealing his desire that was as scorching as a fiery inferno in the slightest... No one knew if it was because his desire had gotten to his self-control, or... he simply wasn't afraid of Divine Phoenix Sect's fury at all.

The various elders and disciples of Divine Phoenix Sect all revealed the expression of anger. A few core disciples were already on the verge of exploding into a flight of rage; their fists clenched tightly, as they wished they could immediately rush up and fight Ye Xinghan to the death. Princess Snow was their jewel of Divine Phoenix Empire, the sacred goddess in everyone's hearts. They definitely would not allow anyone to taint or lay a finger on her... even if it were laying a finger in terms of gaze and words!

"This bastard... He's courting death!!" Feng Ximing's hands clenched tightly, his finger joints making "pop pop" sounds. The other princes were also gnashing their teeth in anger... However, the identity of "Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master" caused them to not dare to act rashly at all, even though they were extremely furious... That was the Young Hall Master of a Sacred Ground! The future ruler of a

Sacred Ground!

If they shed all pretenses of cordiality with this Ye Xinghan, that would undoubtedly be having a fallout with the entire Sun Moon Divine Hall! Even though Divine Phoenix Sect was the number one great sect of Profound Sky, they still didn't have the courage to shed all pretenses with a Sacred Ground yet... Unless they are forced till their last straw.

Contrary to one's expectations, Feng Hengkong instead had a calm expression. He said to Feng Xue'er: "Xue'er, this one is Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master Ye Xinghan. Even though he is lustful by nature and unbridled with woman, he can still be considered a seldom outstanding youth. Say hello to him."

Feng Hengkong's words, made it hard for people to make out the negative connotation, but this tone of extreme dullness, was already faintly revealing the fury hidden behind his endurance.

Feng Xue'er stood up, and lightly bowed: "Xue'er greets Young Hall Master Ye."

Feng Xue'er's voice was gentle like water, and misty as the cloud, making Ye Xinghan's heart and soul surge from listening to it. He started at Feng Xue'er, and said with a grinning face: "Young Sis Xue'er is being too unfamiliar. The address of Young Hall Master Ye is both vapid and foreign, just call me Big Brother Ye. Young Sis Xue'er's voice is like the voice of a goddess, more beautiful than anything I can imagine. Being known as the number one beauty of the Profound Sky, your visage must be more so incomparably gorgeous. I wonder if I can have the honor, to witness Young Sis Xue'er's otherworldly charming looks."

"Crack!"

A deep crack instantly appeared on the chair under Feng Ximing. He clenched his teeth tightly, and was just about to stand, but was pulled back by a huge hand right away. Feng Feiyan pressed him

down, and said with a low voice: "Do not fly into a rage. How could Sect Master allow him to lay his finger on Xue'er in the slightest."

Feng Ximing's chest moved up and down, his eyes bloodshot, but he still suppressed his anger with great effort, enduring with effort and didn't act up again.

Feng Xue'er replied with a gentle and calm voice: "Please forgive Xue'er for refusing. Xue'er's looks are crude, and difficult to enter by Young Hall Master's eyes."

Ye Xinghan bursted into a loud laughter: "If this number one beauty of the world could also be called 'crude', then there wouldn't be any woman that could be viewed in this world. Since Young Sis Xue'er isn't willing... then that's fine. This place is under the gaze of the masses; how can Young Sis Xue'er's otherworldly charms be tainted by the gazes of a bunch of common folks. Going face to face with Young Sis Xue'er some other day, and appreciate you alone, wouldn't that be more pleasant... Hahahaha!"

Amidst the wanton laughter, Ye Xinghan turned around, drew the two women toward him, as he walked toward his seat with undisciplined steps. However, after having seen Feng Xue'er's fantastical figure that was as illusory as a goddess, he felt the two women as charming as flowers beside him were simply vulgar to the extreme, causing him to no longer have the desire to feel them up.

"This bastard... If he dares to harm Princess Snow, even if he is whatever Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master, this daddy will still fight him to the death!!" Feng Zhanyun's hands clenched into fists, his eyes bloodshot as he fixedly stared at Ye Xinghan. That gaze, was akin to looking at an enemy who could not coexist under the same sky with him.

"Jasmine, how strong is this Ye Xinghan?" Yun Che asked in a quiet voice.

"Tyrant Profound Realm middle stage. He's a being you absolutely

cannot afford to offend! Even the two women beside him, are high ranked Thrones! You'll have to pay quite the price if you want to defeat either of one of them." Jasmine warned coldly: "The level of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, is not something the current you is qualified to touch. By all means, you better not overestimate your ability and seek your own death."

Yun Che didn't speak, his expression overcast.

The moment Ye Xinghan entered the seats, Ling Kun immediately moved over to him, and said with an extremely quiet voice: "Young Hall Master, so it seems your purpose for coming personally, is as expectedly this Princess Snow."

Ye Xinghan's palm inserted into the bosom clothing of the woman on his right, kneading wantonly, his eyes queer and obscene: "At the first glance of her, I already knew this name of number one beauty of Profound Sky was indeed well-deserved. Only today did this young master find out, that there would actually be such a perfect woman in this world. Just her silhouette and presence, was already enough to subdue this young master... Heh!"

"Seems like, Young Hall Master is resolute on this." Ling Kun smiled faintly: "But it seems that Young Hall Master was a bit too hasty. At this Divine Phoenix Sect, Princess Snow can be considered the greatest taboo!"

"Too hasty? HAHHAHA!" Ye Xinghan laughed wildly: "In the world of I, Ye Xinghan, there had never been such a phrase of too hasty! The woman I took a fancy for, they think they can stop me with just their Divine Phoenix Sect!?"

Ye Xinghan extended his slender finger, and gently stroked along the waist of the woman on his leg, as a dangerous smile emerged on his face: "Elder Ling, do you believe me... In no more than three days, this Princess Snow, will completely become my, Ye Xinghan's, woman. Her body, her bloodline... would all forever belong to me, Ye Xinghan. Even if their Divine Phoenix Sect does not admit it, they'll have to

admit!"

Ling Kun's eyelids jumped... Words coming from Ye Xinghan's mouth, definitely wouldn't be baseless words. Since he dares to say so, then he possessed definite assurance. He once again lowered his voice, and laughed along with him: "Young Hall Master's words, I naturally believe them ten thousand times. Then, I'll congratulate Young Hall Master ahead of time."

Turning his eyes to the side, Ye Xinghan looked at Ling Kun: "That woman with the 'Nine Profound Exquisite body'... It can't be that Elder Ling has forgotten, right?"

"Heh, how could this old man forgot about this matter. However... the one and half kilos of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, I wonder if Young Hall Master..."

"Don't worry, the legendary Nine Profound Exquisite Body... Let alone one and half kilos of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, even fifteen kilos would be worth it! However, Elder Ling should also know, this Purple Veined Divine Crystal is too hard to find, and is also often consumed ordinarily. In these two years, bit by bit, this young master had also only saved up one kilogram."

Ye Xinghan took out a spatial ring glinting with a purple light: "In here, is one kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystal. I wonder, how much information of that woman can I get with this kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystals?"

=====

Chapter 427 – Supreme Ocean Palace: Ji Qianrou

Ling Kun received the ring. After sweeping a glance at the things inside, his eyes flashed with an unconcealable hint of excitement. He didn't return the spatial ring to Ye Xinghan and instead put it away with a smile: "Young Hall Master is indeed straightforward, looks like this old man calling Young Hall Master to do such a transaction was indeed a choice that couldn't be more right.. That woman has just turned nineteen this year, and is in Blue Wind Nation."

"Blue Wind?" Ye Xinghan revealed astonishment, then snorted faintly: "That tiny little place where one would feel as though they were lowering their status if they went there, is actually able to produce one who possess the godly body of legends, 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body'? Elder Ling, are you certain that it was the 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body'?"

Ye Xinghan's last sentence had a distinct hint of a warning overtone. Blue Wind Nation was an inferior land that regarded the Emperor Profound as its summit, making him completely unable to believe that it could have any relationship with the "Nine Profound Exquisite Body" that was difficult to find even once every ten thousand years. Ling Kun's expression didn't change at all as he said lowly: "If I wasn't certain, even if I had more courage, I wouldn't dare do this transaction with Young Hall Master. If Young Hall Master uses this Nine Profound Exquisite Body as a incubator, it is inevitable that your cultivation would increase by bounds! In comparison, an insignificant one and a half kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystals cannot be said to be anything."

Ye Xinghan restrained his expression as he chuckled: "Having done so many deals with Elder Ling, I'm obviously extremely relieved by Elder Ling's words. I will slowly gather the other half kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystals. When that time comes, Elder Ling must not disappoint me."

"Ha! When that time comes, Young Hall Master should just wait to get

ahold of a great surprise!" Ling Kun said with narrowed eyes. He didn't say that the woman who possessed the Nine Profound Exquisite Body was one whose beauty was no less inferior to that of Princess Snow. Even though it would greatly increase the cost of his bargaining chip, it would easily make Ye Xinghan immediately pay close attention to Blue Wind Nation's number one beauty, Xia Qingyue. If that happened, he would lose half a kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystals.

Seated near an unremarkable corner was an unremarkably dressed person who coldly gazed at Ye Xinghan's back figure. Both of his hands slowly tightened as words brimming with deep-rooted hatred came out between his gritted teeth: "Sun... Moon... Divine... Hall..."

Heavenly Mighty Sword Region and Sun Moon Divine Hall had arrived, but Absolute Monarch Sanctuary and Supreme Ocean Palace still had yet to come. Feng Hengkong didn't seem to have been affected by Ye Xinghan's arrogance. He serenely sat down, and glanced at the time again. There were still several tens of breaths left until the start of the ranking tournament.

At the moment, a gently breeze suddenly blew over, bringing along the faint aroma of flowers that made anyone who scented it feel intoxicated. Suddenly, the fluttering of many flower petals that came from who knows where, suddenly appeared above the arena. Whether the petals were pure white, captivating red, or gloriously yellow... they danced, filling the sky with extreme beauty.

"It smells so good..."

"Did some goddess arrive?"

"It must be a goddess from the Sacred Grounds that have come... I'm too lucky today, not only have I seen Princess Snow, I even have the chance to see the grace of a fairy from the Sacred Grounds!"

Seeing the sky filled with dancing petals and the touching fragrance of flowers, every man in the audience became excited as their

scorching gazes looked up above. The floating petals began to become more and more crowded together, as the fragrance also became more and more rich and intoxicating. Suddenly, a huge ball of petals extravagantly burst open in mid air. Under the enormous rain of flower petals, an endlessly charming silhouette emerged.

This was a man handsome and pretty to an extreme degree. A suit of snow-white attire, his black hair was like ink, the color of his face fair like jade, his facial features was as if they had been carved out by an artist, delicate beyond compare. His brows were as slender as the new moon, slightly bent and raised on one end; his eyes were like the cherry blossom, and the fluid gaze like a young girl's stirred within. Everyone below raised their head up high, and looked at this man who was slowly floating down with endless petals in a stupefied manner. No matter men or women, all of their hearts birthed an feeling of being ashamed of their inferiority.

"What an elegant and eminently handsome man!" Yun Che couldn't help but to exclaim, and at the same time silently added in his heart: "Almost catching up to me."

The moment Ye Xinghan and Ling Kun saw this man emerging, the expressions on their faces simultaneously changed... But it definitely was neither shock nor fear, and they were instead showing an expression of extreme distress. Ling Kun roared with a low voice: "F*ck! Why is it this guy!"

The moment Feng Hengkong saw the flower petal rain down as far as one's eyes could see, he had already stared blankly for a bit. As the snow-white figure appeared amidst the flower petals, Feng Hengkong... this dignified Divine Phoenix Emperor, Sect Master of Divine Phoenix Sect, actually quivered from his entire body, as his pupils even contracted for a split second. He hastily roared: "Ximing... go... go welcome him in our stead."

Before Feng Ximing had the chance to respond, the man's gaze had already fell upon Feng Hengkong's body. Instantly, his slender and curved brows stuck up on their ends even more. His fluid glance

flowed, his hands covered his mouth, as he revealed an...
overbearingly flirtatious smile. From his mouth, a tender and gentle
voice came out: "Little Kongkong, this one has finally met you again.
Not being able to meet you for a hundred years, this one has missed
you to death, you know... Have you missed this one?"

.....

.....

The entire arena instantly became so quiet that a needle falling
could be heard. Everyone without exception were flabbergasted, as
their eyes and jaws fell to the ground.

This this this this... this person...

Just was he a man... or a woman... Or was he half man half woman...
Or was he neither a man nor a woman...

This expression... this posture... these eyes and brows... this voice...
and referring to themselves with third person... wait! The "Little
Kongkong" he was saying... could it be...

Could it be he was calling... Phoenix Sect Master Feng Hengkong!?

Holy shit!!

Feng Hengkong was already about to find a place to hastily hide
himself, but a "Little Kongkong" dropped out of the sky. This made
the Phoenix Sect Master, who didn't have a change of expression
under Ye Xinghan's insolence, shiver from his entire body, his
expressions convulsing as he nearly sprayed out a mouthful of old
blood on the spot.

Feng Ximing hastily greeted up with great anxiety, as he spoke in a
respectful manner: "Junior Divine Phoenix Prince, Feng Ximing,
greet... Senior Ji. Welcome to the Divine Phoenix Empire, Senior Ji,
your seat has already been prepared. I respectfully ask Senior Ji to
enter the seats."

"Yah!" Ji Qianrou's coquettish eyes as if waves of water, measuring up Feng Ximing from head to toe. That gaze as gentle as water, made Feng Ximing's entire body feel numb. With his waist swinging, he walked toward Feng Zhiming with extreme amorosity, as he began to giggle tenderly: "So it was actually Little Mingming, no wonder you are so handsome, almost catching up to my Little Kongkong. When this one saw you last, you were still a two or three years old little baby. In the blink of an eye, you've actually grown so much. Come, let this one feel you up, and see if you've gotten more robust."

As Ji Qianrou walked, his soft waist turned like a dancing water snake, the two halves of his hips swung left and right. If he was a woman, that definitely must be a scenery that made one unable to take their eyes away, and even sprout out blood...

But now, all the men only felt their stomach turning.

This was someone of the Sacred Grounds?

Was this really someone of the Sacred Grounds!?

Before Feng Ximing was even able to regain his senses, his hand was already taken up by Ji Qianrou and gently stroked in his palms: "Little Mingming's skin really is so smooth, this one likes the feeling of smooth skin the most. Little Mingming needs to keep maintaining this, okay..."

As if just waking up from a dream, Feng Ximing retracted his hand like a lightning bolt. His body retreated non-stop, as he felt his heart cramping and a thick layer of goosebumps rose up on his entire body... Especially the hand that was touched by Ji Qianrou; it was simply like tens of millions of ants were crawling on it, causing him to wish dearly that he could immediately chop his entire hand off.

He finally understood why his royal father who did not dread heaven and earth would reveal a terrified expression the moment he heard the name "Ji Qianrou", lest that he was unable to hide in time. Cold sweat drenched his forehead, as he said in an extremely sorry state:

"S-S-Se-Senior Ji, the Ranking Tournament is a-a-a-about to start, I ask Senior Ji to e-enter the seats."

Such a simple sentence, Feng Ximing couldn't help but to speak it stutteringly and with incoherence. Ji Qianrou kneaded his fingers, as he said flirtatiously: "Little Mingming, what are you being so hurried for. This one hasn't given Little Kongkong a deeply affectionate hug... Little Kongkong, this one has already come, why aren't you rushing up yet? Could it be in these hundred years, you didn't miss this one at all?"

Feng Hengkong's entire body trembled, as his neck even grew thicker by two sizes from stifling himself. He finally couldn't endure any longer, and roared angrily: "Ji Qianrou! If you dare to babble nonsense like this again, We... We... We will throw you out!"

To be able to make the dignified Phoenix Sect Master lose his control and act up under the eyes of everyone, Ji Qianrou was probably the only one in Profound Sky Continent who could.

Facing the berserk Feng Hengkong, not only did Ji Qianrou not panic at all, he instead laughed tenderly again: "Hehehehe, you are shy again. Little Kongkong really hasn't changed from before. Alright alright, this one will just comply with you. After this Ranking Tournament is finished, you'll have to properly treat this one to drink, okay... Little Mingming can also come too~."

After he finished speaking, with a twist of his waist, Ji Qianrou walked toward his seat gracefully and delicately.

Feng Hengkong: "~!#\$%..."

Feng Hengkong sat down at once, his forehead fully covered with cold sweat. At this time, he suddenly felt the Feng Xue'er on his side was currently looking at him with an extremely strange gaze. His eyes stared wide, his expression instantly became somewhat frantic, as hastily explained: "Xue'er, it's definitely not what you think. That Ji Qianrou, he's just a lunatic, Xue'er does not need to mind him."

"I know, royal father." Feng Xue'er nodded, then began to lightly laugh: "Little Kongkong... Hehe, so royal father's name can actually be so cute too."

Feng Hengkong: "¥x%\$(/^\%\$##\$%O+#..."

"So... this is the rumored witch... ah no, transvestite?" Feng Zhanyun almost fell onto his knees. Their Divine Phoenix Sect's Sect Master, was actually teased by a man to the point of going mad on the spot... He felt that his outlook of the world was nearly crumbling.

"This person... isn't simple." Propping his chin, Yun Che muttered as if deep in thought.

"Jasmine, what is this person's cultivation?"

"Late stage Tyrant Profound... A high level Tyrant to the letter! Also the kind of level that you absolutely cannot offend!" Jasmine said indifferently.

Supreme Ocean Palace's seat was precisely to the right side of Sun Moon Divine Hall. After Ji Qianrou sat down, the Ye Xinghan and Ling Kun to the side were both sitting upright and still; let alone greeting with words, it was like they hadn't seen him at all. Ji Qianrou voluntarily moved closer, and said full of tender feelings: "Little Hanhan, we haven't met in so many years, this one has missed you to death, you know. Have you missed this one?"

Ye Qinghan's face convulsed, his chest undulated, as he stiffly forced out two words from the gap between his teeth: "Shut up!"

"Hmph!" Facing Ye Xinghan's rough manner, Ji Qianrou spat, and poutingly turned his head away: "So nasty, all of you stinky men are the same, each one more unfeeling and heartless than the previous. This one can't be bothered with you, hmph!"

The muscle on Ye Qinghan's face spasmed to a great extent, but he finally let out a big breath of relief. But right away, this Ji Qianrou who claimed that he "can't be bother with you" once again moved

closer with the tenderness of soft water.

"Little Hanhan, do you really not want to pay me attention anymore? In these years, this one really has missed you, y'know."

"Look, the current Little Kongkong is much more mature than a hundred years ago, and has a more manly feeling... He really is too enchanting. Compared to this kind of little fresh meat like Little Hanhan, as expected, this one still likes Little Kongkong's type the most."

"Aya, Little Hanhan, why have the women beside you grown more and more lacking. Look at this skin, so rough, much more lackluster compared to this one's."

"Little Hanhan..."

That tender and sweet voice made Ye Xinghan's heart spasm, his limbs convulse, his meridians twitch... His entire body was spasming, simply in a living hell. If not for the fact that he couldn't beat Ji Qianrou, and was also unwilling to conflict with this monster who could dismember someone's corpse with a sweet smile, he really wanted to rip his head off and stick it up his ass.

"Elder Ling..." Ye Xinghan said gnawing his teeth: "Three pieces of Purple Veined Heaven Crystals... switch seats with this Young Master!"

A row of cold sweat instantly dripped down Ling Kun's forehead, as he said hastily: "This... this... cough cough, this isn't a problem of Heaven Crystals or Divine Crystals. This old man is already old, can't bear too much hardships, and still want to live a few years longer..."

Ye Xinghan: "..."

Author's Note: 【After writing this chapter, my stomach suddenly felt inexplicably uncomfortable. Let this one go release and mediate a little...】

=====

Chapter 428 – Change of Match Schedule

The starting time of the ranking tournament had already arrived, yet Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's seat was still empty. Feng Hengkong did not declare the start of the Ranking Tournament here and now, and instead stared at the sky above... If the other three Sacred Grounds came late, he could choose to not wait, but for Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, he had to wait.

Without making Feng Hengkong wait for too long, an aged yet peaceful voice, distantly came from the skies above.

"Sigh... This Gu has come late due to affairs that had to be taken care of, and has made everyone wait for a long time. I'm ashamed, extremely ashamed."

The voice was illusory and lingering, as if it came from the end of the horizon. At the same time, a gentle yet boundless aura descended from the sky, enveloping the entire arena. This aura that was rich and dense to the extreme, made one instantly think of the ocean, the cosmos, the abyss... Endlessly vast, majestic without limit.

"Monarch!" In Yun Che's mind, Jasmine's voice that carried a slight hint of surprise came.

Yun Che's mind instantly shook.

Monarch!? The person who has come, was a Monarch!?

Sacred Ground letting a Young Hall Master come, was already extremely unusual... But why would they actually send a Monarch!

In the Profound Sky Continent, Divine Profound Realm was a myth-like existence, rumored to be an illusory realm that humans simply could not reach. Sovereign Profound Realm, was then the highest peak of this world; a Monarch, was fully deserving as the greatest sovereign ruler in the entire Profound Sky Continent! And Monarchs, also only exist within the Sacred Grounds and Divine Phoenix

Empire. Even in the Sacred Grounds and Divine Phoenix Empire, they were exceedingly rare.

At this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, Yun Che could be considered as having finally widened his horizon at last. Even though they belonged to the same continent, Divine Phoenix Empire and Blue Wind Empire were like two entirely different worlds. At Blue Wind Nation, Thrones were already the limit that could not be surpassed. But here, Thrones were all over the place, Overlords ran amok, and now even a Monarch had actually appeared!

A silhouette also slowly floated down from above. This was an elderly man in a light yellow robe with a horsetail whisk in hand. With white hair and brows, the air and disposition of a celestial, his face gentle, as though a taoist celestial who was about to ascend to the heavens.

When the other three Sacred Ground's people came, Feng Hengkong only stood up to greet. But this time, Feng Hengkong directly left his seat, and greeted forward with hurried steps. Behind him, Feng Feiyan and the crowd of elders also left their seats and followed in succession.

Feng Hengkong came before the elderly man with quick steps, and said as he saluted respectfully: "Junior Feng Hengkong of Divine Phoenix Sect, greets Spiritual Master Gu Cang."

Of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, Absolute Monarch was head. While the elderly man before him, was a being of Grand Elder rank at Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. Even the Saint Emperor would need to pay him some respect. And since always, the interactions and communication between Divine Phoenix Sect and Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had been the closest. Even though it wasn't apparent, Divine Phoenix Sect indeed always had the intention to huddle close with the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary,

Spiritual Master Gu Cang didn't have the slightest imposing manner nor arrogance as a Grand Elder of a Sacred Ground. With a swing of his horsetail brush, he returned a salutations and said while

laughing: "This Gu has arrived late for reasons, I have truly committed offense, and I hope Phoenix Sect Master is magnanimous in forgiveness."

Feng Hengkong said: "What are you saying, Spiritual Master Gucang. Your elderly grace coming personally, is already the greatest honor of our Divine Phoenix Sect... Oh? Junior recalls that Spiritual Master Gu Cang ought to have brought a disciple along, why is it that..."

"Haha." Spiritual Master Gu Cang laughed lightly: "This Gu indeed had come bringing a disciple, only for him to witness the Ranking Tournament and explore within the Primordial Profound Ark to learn through experience. I hadn't expected, that he had a chance encounter with an acquainted person of olden days in this Divine Phoenix City, so he rushed this old man to come by myself, hahahaha."

"So that's how it was. To able to be taken in by Spiritual Master Gu Cang as the last disciple, your honored disciple must possess an extraordinary aptitude. Spiritual Master Gu Cang, please." Feng Hengkong extended his hand, gesturing at Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's seat.

As Gu Cang entered his seat, Ling Kun, Ye Xinghan and even Ji Qianrou all stood up, and respectfully conducted a rite for juniors toward seniors in dead seriousness. This action, invoked Yun Che's thoughts. Spiritual Master Gu Cang's status at Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, could be somewhat deduced from this.

Everyone of the Four Great Sacred Grounds were also all present now, as the site had also become entirely silent. It was finally time for this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament to begin.

Following a meaningful glance from Feng Hengkong, the Great Phoenix Elder Feng Feiyan took off into the air, and flew until he reached the arena's center. An awe-inspiring and resonate phoenix cry exuded from his body. Following that, flames that surged to the skies explosively burned up, and shot up to until over one hundred

meters in height, making everyone's gaze fixedly focus onto him without exception.

Feng Feiyan looked in all four directions, as he spoke in a loud and clear voice: "This humble one is Divine Phoenix Sect's Head Elder, Feng Feiyan, and it is an honor to meet heroes and young geniuses from all over the world. I represent Divine Phoenix Sect, and I thank all of the friends from faraway lands for visiting Phoenix City. This session, is the thirty-ninth session Ranking Tournament of our Profound Sky Seven Nations, and will be hosted in its entirety by I, Feng Feiyan, and witnessed by the honored guests of the Four Sacred Grounds! Held once every twenty five years, the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, is a battle for our Profound Sky Seven Nations' young prodigies to contest in profound strength, spread their name through Profound Sky, and promote the prestige of their nations..."

"Wah! It's actually personally hosted by the Great Elder. Hm? That's odd! Why would it be hosted by Great Elder?" Feng Zhanyun said with a surprised expression. Clearly, he didn't know that Great Elder would personally host this Ranking Tournament beforehand. Even if someone told him beforehand, he probably wouldn't have believed it. Because in the past, the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was at most hosted by a low rank Elder.

"Could it be that there is something special about this Ranking Tournament?" Feng Zhanyun said in a low voice.

Other than the Grand Generations and Princess Snow, Feng Feiyan's status in Divine Phoenix Sect, was almost second to only Feng Hengkong. Even Crown Prince Feng Ximing, would need to act very respectfully in front of him. Letting him personally be the host of this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, made even the few from the Sacred Grounds revealed slight surprise. The audiences in the seating area more so held their breaths, and looked at Feng Feiyan in an respectful and admiring manner. The voice resounding beside their ears, every word was thunderous.

The Great Elder personally as host, was an entirely different concept

from normal elders or palace masters as host. Everyone had faintly noticed something odd from within. Sure enough, after Feng Feiyan finished reading the formal speech, he suddenly looked up as his finger pointed toward the sky above: "Everyone please look up. That's right, this enormous shadow blotting out the sky and sun, is precisely that Primordial Profound Ark which appears every three hundred years which harbors unknown mysteries!"

"The Primordial Profound Ark had always appeared at my Divine Phoenix City's skies, and throughout history, only us Divine Phoenix Empire possessed the right of exploration as well. But this time, Sect Master's heart is generous and broad, and is willing to scale the Primordial Profound Ark with friends of the six nations, and share the mysteries of Primordial Profound Ark. In this session's Ranking Tournament, the top three in rankings may choose three people each to explore the Primordial Profound Ark together.

Even though it was top three in rankings, everyone knew that the first would unquestionably be Divine Phoenix Sect. Therefore, people of the six nations with the fortune to enter the Primordial Profound Ark, would at most be six people from two nations.

"However," Feng Feiyan's tone suddenly shifted, as he said: "Just a few days ago, my sect suddenly noticed that the profound seal at Primordial Profound Ark's main doorway had actually loosened ahead of time, which also means that the Profound Ark's main doorway would open four days earlier than expected!"

"Hm?" The brows of all of the people from Sacred Grounds shifted.

"Four days in advance? Which is to say, Primordial Profound Ark will open as soon as tomorrow?" Ye Xinghan said in a low voice.

"That should be so... No wonder this Feng Feiyan was made to personally host this Ranking Tournament. There was indeed unforeseen matter." Ling Kun also spoke in a low voice: "If my guesses are correct, this Ranking Tournament, will be concluded as soon as possible."

Feng Feiyan continued: "My sect had initially planned to start to explore the Primordial Profound Ark on the second day after Ranking Tournament's conclusion, yet this time, the Primordial Profound Ark will open tomorrow in advance! The Primordial Profound Ark would only open for twenty four hours every single time. Twenty four hours in an entire three hundred years, naturally, no time can be wasted! But the words spoken by my Divine Phoenix Sect, are of enormous weight, and we will absolutely not go back on them. Therefore, in order to explore the Primordial Profound Ark tomorrow in collaboration, this session of Ranking Tournament's match schedule, will also undoubtedly be compressed to a great degree... The top three, would need to be decided by today!"

Clamor~~~~

The moment Feng Feiyan's words were spoken, the entire arena became turbulent. They all understood the words, the Primordial Profound Ark would open ahead of time... And at the same time, this session of Ranking Tournament would be compressed into a single day... Which meant that it was to be concluded today!

The match schedule would at least last for five days for every Ranking Tournament in the past, without any exception. Between the contending seventy tip-top young experts coming from the seven nations, every single round would need to be fought in round robin. Previously, even five days of matches would be scheduled fully, and situations of the tournament's schedule extension would often happen. In the time as short as a day, it simply could not be done.

The expressions of those participants, as well as each nation's Emperor and hegemon all changed greatly... Seven Nation Ranking tournament was a great matter of an entire country; the results of the rankings, were connected to the position and prestige of the next twenty five years of a nation. For this Ranking Tournament, every single nation could prepare with all their might several years ahead of time, and rare treasures accumulated for over twenty years would all be used without being stingy in the least... For those young

participants, this Ranking Tournament was more so the highest stage for them to perform, the greatest chance to spread their name throughout the world! If the previously five days of match schedule were really to be condensed into a day... The time for them to perform, would unquestionably be compressed by an entire eighty percent!

This kind of discrepancy, how could they be willing and satisfied?

And the spectators numbering more than three million who obtained the qualification to enter the arena through great pain, they originally would have enjoyed an entire five days of the pinnacle's battle, yet all of a sudden only one day was left, they naturally were extremely unthrilled as well.

"No wonder the Great Elder was needed to personally host." Yun Che muttered to himself in a low voice: "So it was to suppress the situation that may possibly happen with the awe of the Great Elder. If the match schedule is shrunk down to one day..." As he muttered till here, his brows suddenly twitched as a feeling that was anything but reassuring emerged in his heart.

The clamor suddenly exploding in the arena was entirely within Divine Phoenix Sect's expectations. Feng Feiyan's expression did not change, as his voice abruptly became louder by some: "Even though the match schedule is forced to be compressed, there is no need for anyone to worry. This Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, would still be absolutely fair and square! So much that... it would be even more fair and square than the previous few dozen sessions! It will determine the ranking of strength of us Profound Sky Seven Nations in even less bias!"

Feng Feiyan's words, made everyone reveal a stupefied expression... The match schedule being compressed from five days to one, yet it would be more fair?

Feng Feiyan continued: "The former sessions of Seven Nation Ranking Tournaments, seventy young prodigies battled in turns,

contending against one another, and the end rankings were decided by the highest placement of each nation's contenders. However, this kind of ranking style emphasizes the strength of apex profound practitioners. But in actuality, what could manifest a nation's strength the most ought to be the overall strength of a nation's participants. Thus, this session of Ranking Tournament, would cancel the individual matches, and change into team battles! In every single ranking match, every single profound practitioners of the two sides must all enter the stage!"

The arena was instantly filled with the sound of discussions, ceaselessly clamorous. Yun Che's eyes stared wide, as he fixedly stared at Feng Feiyan whose expression was cold and stiff, and violently cursed:

F*ck!!

=====

Chapter 429 – Seven Nation Ranking Tournament: Start

Feng Feiyan ignored the clamor and continued: “Even though it is a team battle, it would still similarly be able to display every single person’s strength! While also being able to fairly examine a nation’s young generation’s comprehensive level! At the same time, it would also adhere to the condition of compressing the competition schedule to a maximum degree, without missing any bit of fairness! If we do it thusly, do our friends from the six nations have any objections? If there are any objections, feel free to speak up.”

Feng Feiyan faced the six nations... Accurately speaking, he faced the seating area of the five nations with a blank face and calm voice.

If they were confronted with such a drastic change of schedule, if the one before their eyes was a mere ordinary elder from Divine Phoenix Sect, as emperor and hegemon level figures of the six nations, they might indeed object.

But currently, the person talking to them was actually Divine Phoenix Sect’s Great Elder! One whose rank was higher than a Divine Phoenix Prince! Even if all six nation’s emperors were added up together, his might, power, and name also did not fall short. Beneath Feng Feiyan’s gaze, the six nation’s emperors and hegemons all felt as though an iron plate was pressing down on their chest, even breathing was extremely difficult. How could they possibly dare to say anything? About this matter, it was evident that Divine Phoenix Sect had already one-sidedly made the decision, so how could they dare not agree? They all quickly nodded, expressing their agreement.

“Very good!” Feng Feiyan nodded: “Since our friends from the six nations don’t have any objections, then this year’s ranking tournament competition shall be conducted thusly. The rules of the team battles are basically the same as individual battles, and are similarly round robin. Every nation will battle with everyone from another nation and will advance through the ranking tournament through wins! Then, the two victorious nations will then fight one

another to advance, winner will be placed in front. In order to cut down the tournament schedule and lighten the consumption of every nation's participating profound practitioners, our Divine Phoenix Sect will not be participating in the round robin matches. The final victor of the matches will then be able to fight our Divine Phoenix Sect's profound practitioners. If they win, they will then be this year's champion! In this way, within the round robin matches, every nation's profound practitioners would only be required to fight five matches, for a total of sixteen matches! One day of time, is already enough."

Feng Feiyan's meaning was quite clear, Divine Phoenix Sect was not participating in the round robin, and would only fight with the strongest team of the six nations. For this point, Feng Feiyan didn't ask whether or not the six nations had any objections, because it was basically not necessary. And no one from the six nations thought that this was not proper, or feel dissatisfied, because Divine Phoenix Sect's level was one that the six other nations were fundamentally unable to contend against. With how terrifying Divine Phoenix Sect was, even if every profound practitioner from the six nations were added up, they would still be easily suppressed into a dog by a profound practitioner from Divine Phoenix Sect.

After so many Seven Nation Ranking Tournaments, in the other nations' eyes, they were all in fact "Five Nation Ranking Tournaments", because Divine Phoenix was too strong and Blue Wind was too weak. Every time they fought, it was always to determine the ranking of the five nations. If they placed second, it was equivalent to placing first. And if they placed sixth, it was the same as being a shameful dead last. They absolutely did not dare have the delusion that they could defeat Divine Phoenix Empire, but at the same time, they would never condescend themselves to being on par with Blue Wind Nation.

"As for the other rules of the match, I'm assuming that there is no need for me to waste time to say what's more than necessary..." Feng Feiyan swept his gaze around as his tranquil gaze brought along a

kind of intangible imposingness... The Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was the most distinguished event for Profound Sky Continent's profound practicing world. Every session was paid the greatest attention to. And such an unprecedented great change in schedule that hadn't even been informed beforehand, had actually just been decided on the spot with a few words. No one dared to object, and no one dared to reveal any discontentment.

This was Divine Phoenix Sect's completely overwhelming deterrence.

"Eyoyo~, this one had expected to see many days of matches, and now it only need a single day to be finished... This one's mood suddenly became so cheerful mhmnn... Little Hanhan, is your mood the same as this one?" Ji Qianrou narrowed his cherry flower eyes, and sent a flirtatious glance toward Ye Xinghan.

Ye Xinghan's face distorted, as he said with a downcast voice: "Ji Qianrou! If you dare to speak with this young master again, this young master will kill you!"

"Yoh..." As if frightened, Ji Qianrou shrunk his neck down, and then, the expression in his gaze became both innocent and grievant from being wronged: "Little Hanhan, why would you so suddenly frightened at this one; you almost scared me stiff. If you suddenly frighten this one again, this one will get angry okay~. Once this one becomes angry, maybe he would become a little devious, and cause you to no longer have any women to play with at night~."

With a tender and soft tone that was about to weep, Ji Qianrou shot a slight glance with timid eyes at the two bewitching women glued by Ye Xinghan left and right side. Instantly, the two's body trembled at the same time, their pupils expanded as they projected an immensely deep fear... Because the moment they were touched by his gaze, that kind of terrifying feeling... was as though their throats were being held within the poisonous fangs of a king cobra.

"You..." Ye Xinghan knew the terror of this monster better than anyone else. Sealing up his mouth, he didn't speak anymore.

"I declare that Profound Sky Continent's thirty-ninth Seven Nation Ranking Tournament has officially begun!"

Feng Feiyan's voice resounded through the arena, and also declared the start of this session's Seven Nation Ranking Tournament. With a swing of his arm, a stroke of firelight flickered past. Instantly, an enormous flame profound stone was erected in the center of the arena. Looking at this profound stone, Yun Che who had the experience of Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, instantly understood what it was used for.

Yun Che extended his arms, and glanced at his palm. One after another of sceneries at Heavenly Sword Villa back then emerged in his mind. He muttered to himself in resentment: "Looks like, I'll be mocked by the crowd again! God damn, my fate was decided to be mocked at by crowds again and again from the moment I was born!"

In every single session's Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, the profound strength assessment would always be an essential process. Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was the same. Half of the Profound Strength Assessment was to show off every single participant's profound strength level... After all, profound strength level basically divided one's true strength. The other half, was to assess one's age.

"In all previous sessions of Ranking Tournaments, the participating profound practitioner's age cannot be more than twenty five years old. If there are cases of excess age, the right to participate will be immediately taken back." Feng Feiyan slowly descended from the skies, landed by the Profound Assessment Stone's side, and said in a loud voice: "Right now, I will be using the last session of Seven Nation Ranking Tournament's ranking results as order, and read out the name of the Seven Nations. Every nation's participants ought to enter the Phoenix Stage with the participant emblem, declare their names, then take the assessment on profound strength and age.

"Navy Tide Nation!"

Feng Feiyan said that the ranking of the last Seven Nation Ranking Tournament's placements were to be announced as order, but the first name he called, was the second place nation in the last session. On the surface, this may seem to be modestly putting Divine Phoenix Sect as the last one to enter the stage appropriate of a host. But the unspoken words, how couldn't it be that Divine Phoenix Empire was entirely disdainful in being mentioned on equal terms as the other six nations?

In the last Ranking Tournament, Navy Tide placed second, first of the six nations. The moment the three words 'Navy Tide Nation' fell, a ball of cold profound light suddenly shone at Navy Tide Nation's seating area, and drew two enormous words of "Navy Tide" in the skies above. Seven young men and three young women simultaneously took off into the air, and landed onto the Phoenix Stage in the time the corner of their clothes fluttered. Instantly, a wave of cold energy undulated outwards like water ripples from above the Phoenix Stage.

Navy Tide Nation was located to the extreme north of Profound Sky, with cold skies and frozen lands all years round. And because of that, the profound practitioners over there basically all cultivate ice attribute profound arts. Of the ten youths, the oldest looked to be around twenty five, the youngest looked to have just reached twenty. The moment they entered the stage, the audiences behind the Navy Tide's seating area instantly exploded like hot oil on a pan, roaring out waves of voices that shook the heaven and earth.

"Navy Tide! Navy Tide! Navy Tide!!"

"Go Navy Tide! Crush the five nations!!"

"Wah! That's the 'Flower Viewing Prince', Han Ruyu! Number one of Navy Tide Ranking Tournament for two times... As expected, he came!"

"Waaaaaaah... It's Flower Viewing Prince... my idol... Ah!! So handsome! I'm about to faint..." A few maniacally infatuated girls

screams while covering their face.

The enormous waves of clamor were like the rolling thunder, quaking to the point of making Yun Che's eardrums quiver. Jasmine's voice came from the side of his ear: "Seven late stage Sky Profound, and two half-step Emperor Profound... And one early stage Emperor Profound. Similarly of the same younger generation and in the same piece of continent, in comparison, Blue Wind Nation really is much too inferior!"

"That's something that can not be helped either." Yun Che said with indifference: "Blue Wind Nation is the smallest, and also has the shortest history. Their accumulation is truly too shallow, so naturally there would be an enormous difference that cannot be filled up."

"Feng Wuhui of Navy Tide Nation's Snow Mountain Sect, has come forth to contend!"

The first young profound practitioner came forth, revealed his participant emblem while revealing his name and sect in a lofty manner. Then, he took a step forward, stood in front of Feng Feiyan, and pressed onto the Profound Assessment Stone with his palm.

The Profound Assessment Stone flashed with a radiance, and following after, his physical age and profound strength were clearly displayed.

Twenty three years old, Sky Profound Realm level eight.

The audiences of Navy Tide Nation instantly uttered out a cheer that jolted the skies. Being able to achieve such a profound strength level was above average even in the most apex domain of the six nations.

Navy Tide Nation's profound practitioners came forth in succession, their profound strength level wasn't in the slightest different than what Jasmine had said... Seven late stage Sky Profounds, and two half-step Emperor Profounds. And at this time, the last profound practitioner of Navy Tide finally came forward.

The other nine profound practitioners all had lofty faces, only this person had on a calm expression from beginning to end, with a smile faintly hidden within. He looked to be extraordinarily young; his face was like white jade, his lips like vermilion cinnabar, and was a to-the-letter handsome man. In between his brows, there even carried a hint of eccentric aura enough to make women easily drown within it. He walked forward slowly and leisurely as if wandering in a yard. As he took his first step, Navy Tide's audience seats had already thoroughly exploded. Various kinds of exaggerated shouts... Especially the screams from women, nearly ripped apart the Phoenix Stage.

"Flower Viewing Prince? The hell is that?" Yun Che propped his chin as he heard such a title from the female's screams... This title, was simply conventional and lame to the point of being unbearable.

"This person is called Han Ruyu, rumored to be the current number one of Navy Tide's younger generation. Attending Navy Tide Ranking Tournament twice at age of seventeen and twenty, he got first in both times. His prestige at Navy Tide Nation could be said as the sun in the sky, and even Navy Tide Nation's ruler receives him as guest of highest honor... Heh, even to the point where I had heard of his name." Feng Zhanyun curled the corner of his lips, as he said with great disdain: "He's quite awe-inspiring at Navy Tide Nation, but if he comes to my Divine Phoenix Sect, he'd only be so much, and probably can't be considered as reaching the average."

With a smile on his face, Han Ruyu extended his white jade like hand and pressed onto the Assessment Stone...

Twenty three years old, Emperor Profound Realm level two!

WHOOAAA!!!

The audiences of Navy Tide Nation went completely mad as the sounds of cheers turned from raging waves into the profound thunder of the ninth heaven, while the faces of other five nation's profound practitioners all slightly changed.

"What... This time, Navy Tide Nation actually had a Throne!?"

"I had thought that our Throne this time would certainly shock the entire arena, but I didn't expect that one would actually also appear in Navy Tide Nation! Looks like, if we go against Navy Tide Nation this time, it will be a tough battle again. However, we don't have any reason to lose either!" Black Fiend Nation's Emperor spoke in a overcast tone.

"Not bad!" Feng Hengkong, who had always been silent, nodded at this time: "Seems like this time, Navy Tide Nation finally improved by a bit."

"Holy shit! He's actually a Throne... Moreover, Emperor Profound Realm level two!" Feng Zhanyun had astonishment all over his face: "Thrones under twenty five years old could actually also appear in the insignificant six nations, tsk tsk, amazing, how rare. This kid called Han Ruyu, not just Navy Tide this time, he has spread his name throughout the six nations. The second place of this Ranking Tournament, may perhaps end up in Navy Tide Nation's hands yet again."

"Black Fiend Nation!"

Navy Tide Nation's profound practitioners were done, yet they didn't return to their seats, and instead directly entered Phoenix Stage's exclusive match preparation area. Feng Feiyan's shout once again sounded, as ten young profound practitioners, all wearing black attire, jumped onto the Phoenix Stage... This time, Black Fiend Nation's audiences instantly exploded; the sound of screams they exuded wasn't any weaker than Blue Tide Nation's in the slightest.

"Wu Huihong of Black Fiend Nation's Yin Hell Sect has come forth to contend!"

"Lü Haoyan of Black Fiend Nation's Purple Fiend Isle has come forth to contend!"

• • • • •

Navy Tide Nation, Black Fiend Nation, Grand Asura Nation, Sunflower Dew Nation, Divine Incense Nation... The five nations of Profound Sky went up the Phoenix Stage in the order of the last Seven Nation Ranking Tournament's placements. In fifteen minutes of time, all of the five nation's profound practitioners were finished with their assessment, and entered the match preparation area. What was left, were only the two extremes... Divine Phoenix Empire and Blue Wind Nation.

Author's Note:

【Memo: Elementary Profound Realm → Nascent Profound Realm
→ True Profound Realm → Spirit Profound Realm → Earth
Profound Realm → Sky Profound Realm → Emperor Profound
Realm (Throne) → Tyrant Profound Realm (Overlord) →
Sovereign Profound Realm (Monarch) → Divine Profound Realm
(Profound God) →→→→→→→→。】

=====

Chapter 430 – Group Mockery

Yun Che carefully looked at the ages and profound strength of the five nations' young generation's profound practitioners, then sighed in his heart. At this time, he was increasingly more and more aware of how great of a matter the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was, and why no one in Blue Wind Nation ever bothered to mention, or even be interested in it. It was practically a disgraceful taboo. From beginning to end, even though the combined strength of Navy Tide, Black Fiend, Grand Asura, Sunflower Dew, and Divine Incense's profound practitioners were somewhat varied, the difference wasn't too large. The previous ranking tournament's number two, Navy Tide, had come with an early stage Throne, two half step Emperor Profounds, and seven late stage Sky Profounds this time. As for Divine Incense Nation, which had been placed only above Blue Wind in the previous session's ranking tournament, last place of the five nations, they had brought a half step Emperor Profound, eight late stage Sky Profounds, and a mid stage Sky Profound... That kind of disparity truly couldn't be said to be large at all. As long as luck was on their side, there was a possibility for any nation to place second in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament.

In comparison, only Blue Wind Nation was tragic beyond words.

Aside from Xia Qingyue, within Blue Wind Nation's profound practitioners that were under twenty five years of age, not even an early stage Sky Profound Realm could be found.

Half step Emperor Profound was merely the peak of the those below twenty five years of age within the five nations, yet it was the peak of Blue Wind Nation's entire profound practicing world.

In fact, Navy Tide Nation and Black Fiend Nation had even individually brought out a Throne below twenty five!

What remained after the five nations, were Blue Wind Nation and Divine Phoenix Nation. Feng Feiyan swept a glance past the seating

area, then said indifferently: "As everyone can see, it is not known why, but Blue Wind Nation is absent from this session's Ranking Tournament, with not even a single sound of activity. Hmph, Blue Wind isn't great in the profound anyway, so whether or not they participate in this ranking tournament has absolutely no influence on the results of the rankings. Instead, this will cut down the matches, which is better than ever."

The seating area immediately burst into roars of laughter, everyone knew what sort of pitifully low and miserable existence Blue Wind Nation was within this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament. The other six nations came to battle for prestige and glory, yet Blue Wind Nation... only came every time to fill in the Seven Nation number. And to this session, it seemed as though they didn't even have the courage and face to server as a stopgap anymore.

Inside the arena, there were few Blue Wind citizens, but it didn't mean that there were none. The words that came from the Great Phoenix Elder completely humiliated them. But they could only tighten their fists, clench their teeth, and silently endure this humiliation with no face to speak out.

"Tsk tsk, Blue Wind kid, there's still time for you to press your tail between your legs and run away. With just that measly strength of yours, if you really were to go up... and you're even going up there alone, let alone losing face, you'll even lose your butt... hey! Shit!"

Before Feng Zhanyun had even finished speaking, the Yun Che beside him had already leapt up. After a few leaps, he directly dashed toward the Phoenix Stage.

"Wait! Who said Blue Wind Nation had no participants!!"

A thunderclap-like shout resounded through the arena. When the shout ended, Yun Che had already executed his last jump. Within everyone's astonished gaze, he heavily landed on the Phoenix Stage as the ground beneath him vibrated with noise. He looked at Feng Feiyan with a calm yet proud expression and lifted his right hand to

reveal the participant emblem imprinted with the words "Blue Wind": "Yun Che of Blue Wind Nation has come forth to contend!"

"Ah!"

Feng Xue'er involuntarily let out a soft cry.

"Xue'er, what's wrong?" Feng Hengkong turned his head around lightning quick, as he asked in astonishment.

"N... nothing." Feng Xue'er shook her head, her voice slightly quivering: "It's just that I was thinking about something earlier, and was somewhat absent-minded, then suddenly saw someone jump onto the Phoenix Stage... I was a bit startled... It's really nothing."

Even though Feng Hengkong still had some doubts, he didn't inquire any further. At this time, Feng Xichen, who sat in the rear suddenly stood up, and suddenly exclaimed: "Royal father, that's him... he's that Yun Che!"

"He actually came." Feng Ximing said lowly: "Looks like he still is a bit knowledgeable, since he knows that no matter where he runs, he'll never be able to escape the palms of our hands."

"That's him?" Feng Hengkong's gaze slightly converged as he said faintly: "Him daring to come here today can be considered to be a bit courageous. Don't mind him, or else it'll affect the ranking tournament. Since he came, he shouldn't have the delusion of ever escaping."

Feng Xue'er quietly listened in on their conversation, her mind a field of chaos.

Feng Lingyun...

Yun Che...

Big brother Yun... is Yun Che...

Not Feng Lingyun...

How... could this... be...

"Crap! How could it be him!!"

In a corner of the spectator seats, an extremely unremarkable person quivered a little with a face full of surprise when he saw Yun Che hop onto the Phoenix Stage. As soon as he finished exclaiming in his heart, a youth sitting to his right who looked to be around seventeen stood up rapidly with a swoosh. He was so excited that his entire face was thoroughly red, both arms trembled as he shouted: "Boss! As expected, you came. I just knew that you'll come!! I didn't come here in vain... I just knew that you wouldn't not come!"

Seeing how this youth acted, excited to the point that he almost stopped breathing, he nudged the youth's clothes and asked: "Hey, lil' bro, you know this person? Could it be that you're someone from Blue Wind Nation?"

"Of course I know him!" That youth said with a face full of excitement: "He's my boss, you know! The reason why I came here from so far away is just to watch his match!"

"He's your boss? Shit, such a coincidence! He's also my sworn big brother! The reason why I came here... uh, uh. Oh oh, it's also to come watch his match!"

"Is that true?" The youth asked as he looked at him with a face full of suspicion.

"What's your name?"

"Ling Jie! Ling Jie of Blue Wind Nation's Heavenly Sword Villa!" The youth said with pride.

"Ling Jie? Who's Ling Yun to you?"

"That's my big bro... How do you know my big bro's name?"

"Of course it was mentioned to me by Boss Yun."

"You really know my boss? What a coincidence! Right, what's your name? Which nation are you from?"

"Oh, my name's Yan Xiaohua, no home no country. I can tell at the first glance that I'm older than you. You can call me Big Bro Hua, Boss Hua, Old Hua... Any is fine!"

"Yan Xiaohua? Why do you have such a feminine name!"

"Of course it's because I'm born handsome and elegant, so my name gotta be a bit elegant too. At least it's much better than your name without any skill involved."

"Tch!"

Yun Che's appearance, undoubtedly became the entire arena's focal point. When the five nation's profound practitioners entered the stage previously, what had sounded were heaven shaking cheers. But this time, it was the entire arena's discussions and laughter... Cheers were the only thing lacking.

"The other participants all came flying over, yet he actually came leaping over... it couldn't be that he hasn't even reached the Sky Profound Realm, right?"

"You dumbass! He's from Blue Wind Nation. Tsk tsk, Blue Wind Nation, you know. Don't tell me that you've heard of someone below twenty five in Blue Wind Nation above the Sky Profound? This kind is at most in the Earth Profound Realm... I remember in the previous Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, that the highest level within Blue Wind Nation's participants was also Earth Profound Realm... In fact, they even had those in the Spirit Profound Realm, hahahaha. It makes me laugh whenever I recall that."

"Wah! Someone from Blue Wind Nation actually came? Divine Phoenix Sect didn't even prepare Blue Wind Nation's seats. Clearly, they didn't even think that someone from Blue Wind Nation would

come, yet this guy actually went up there by himself... Tsk tsk, profound strength at only the Earth Profound Realm. He's not even at my level, is he that desperate to lose all his face?!"

"You must not know this. In Blue Wind Nation, being at the Earth Profound Realm under twenty five in Blue Wind Nation is already the highest existence. I heard that the instructors in their imperial family's profound palace is only Spirit Profound Realm. Earth Profound Realms could even be a Palace Chief at a branch Profound Palace."

"Shit! You serious? Then wouldn't I become a main branch Palace Chief if I go there? Hahahaha... eh? How come only one person came up? Don't tell me that Blue Wind Nation only brought one person?"

"Hahahaha... It's simply funny enough to make one's head fall off from laughing. Even if Blue Wind Nation came here, they should at least bring ten people, after all, the matches this time just happen to be team battles... This daddy's gonna die from laughter."

"It's still good if they've come. With Blue Wind Nation here, this last place can't be snatched by anyone."

.....

.....

Inside the incomparably large arena, every corner was filled with the sounds of wanton laughter and ridicule. In front of one that was only at the Earth Profound Realm, yet was able to represent Blue Wind Nation in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, a kind of intangible "higher" form of superiority birthed within the hearts of every profound practitioner of the six nations. One after another, they looked at him with a kind of amused, pitying, and mocking gaze... so much that it seemed as though Yun Che was on trial.

Yun Che was too familiar with this kind of scene. Back then, in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament when he represented Blue Wind

Profound Palace, he, who had the lowest profound strength level was looked at with contempt and mockery by nearly everyone present. All kinds of voices and gazes spun all around him. It seemed as though this time was a repeat performance of what happened two years ago. Only, two years ago, all the sounds of taunting didn't affect him in the slightest, and this time, it didn't affect him at all either.

Within the arena, although there were very few profound practitioners from Blue Wind Nation, it didn't mean that there were none. The reason why they came today was to watch Yun Che's might. A month ago, when Yun Che left Blue Wind Imperial City for Divine Phoenix Empire, Cang Wanhe spread the news of Yun Che going to represent Blue Wind Nation in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament by himself to the practicing world the very next day. He had originally told Yun Che that if Blue Wind's profound practitioners were to know that he was going to participate in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, it might even suddenly ignite hope... hope that would wipe away their previous disgrace! Because Yun Che had created miracle after impossible miracles in Blue Wind Nation! He had even become a legendary figure in the hearts of Blue Wind profound practitioners.

Because if he came represent Blue Wind Nation in this competition, he would definitely amaze the world and wipe away all their previous shame!

In this one month, many Blue Wind profound practitioners were filled with hope and zeal, coming to Divine Phoenix Empire from a great distance... Even though the difference between Blue Wind profound practitioners and the other six nations within the arena was large, it was not known how many more had come compared to the previous session.

Faced with the entire audience's laughter and mockery, those sparse and scattered Blue Wind profound practitioners looked at Yun Che. Some clenched their fists, some gritted inwardly, and some sneered, waiting for Yun Che to beat them to a pulp. Some couldn't endure it

any longer as they roared in a loud voice: "Shut the hell up! Not only is our Blue Wind Nation's Yun Che the number one of the young generation, he's number one of the entire profound practicing world... Even though he is only at the Earth Profound Realm, he could still fight against an Emperor Profound!"

"Earth Profound Realm... fight an Emperor Profound? BWAHAHAHA!!" It was as if the surrounding audience heard the funniest joke in the world as they all erupted in wild laughter: "Did this kid forget to take his medicine when he left home? Earth Profound fight an Emperor Profound? Hahahahaha..."

The Blue Wind profound practitioner who spoke was so mad that his face became thoroughly red. His companion pulled him in place and shook his head: "Don't mind them! Wait until Yun Che reveals his might, they'll naturally all shut their mouths... Yun Che! This time... you have to seize glory for our Blue Wind in front of the entire world's outstanding warlords!!"

=====

Chapter 431 – Powerful Divine Phoenix

“So you’re Yun Che?” Feng Feiyan sized him up. Without even waiting for his reply, he casually detected the presence of the Phoenix bloodline on Yun Che’s body, and immediately spoke: “As expected... Does this mean that Blue Wind this time, has only sent you alone?”

“That’s right.” Yun Che frankly answered calmly.

Feng Feiyan lowered his voice and said coldly: “Since you’re here, then fight through this ranking tournament smoothly. After the conclusion of the ranking tournament, there will be someone who’ll come to properly settle the matter about your Phoenix bloodline. However, if you’ll allow yourself to die on this Phoenix Stage, that’s also not a bad choice... Hmph, then, go test your profound strength.”

The place where Yun Che stood was quite a distance from Feng Feiyan, yet his huge aura continuously pressed down on Yun Che’s body and soul. However, his expression was nevertheless a field of tranquility, without any signs of oddness at all. He didn’t say anything else to Feng Feiyan as he walked toward the Profound Assessment Stone and placed his palm on its surface.

Nineteen years old, Earth Profound Realm level ten.

The profound strength level displayed on the Profound Assessment Stone had undoubtedly caused the entire audience to roar with laughter. Yun Che removed his hand from the Profound Assessment Stone and leisurely walked to the match preparation area in the midst of a sky filled with laughter and mocking gazes. As the seated profound practitioners from the other five nations saw him approach, none did not reveal an extremely contemptuous expression... Within the disdain were even revulsion and pity, perhaps they thought that having such a person as an opponent was an insult to their strength and reputation.

Yun Che casually stopped at a corner. Not too far to his right, were

ten of Navy Tide Nation's participating profound practitioners. One among them shot a glance at Yun Che, and beamed while speaking in a voice loud enough for Yun Che to hear: "No wonder I keep thinking that the name 'Yun Che' was familiar, I suddenly remember now, it seems like in Blue Wind Nation's Ranking Tournament two years ago, the one who seized first place was this 'Yun Che'."

Another person said with a grin: "Tsk tsk, tenth level of the Earth Profound Realm at nineteen can indeed be considered as number one of little Blue Wind Nation's young generation."

"Hmph!" Han Ruyu slightly slanted his eyes, faintly snorted from his nose: "It's only a pathetic little clown."

"Heheh, Junior Brother Han is right, but this little clown is the impressive 'number one' of Blue Wind Nation, you know. Hahahaha..."

Yun Che raised his eyes, indifferently swept a glance over those people, and then turned his head around, not bothering to look back a second time.

"It's actually him." Ling Kun looked at Yun Che with a thoughtful expression.

"Oh? Elder Ling actually recognizes this Blue Wind commoner who can't even be considered trash?" Ye Xinghan asked with narrowed eyes.

"This kid is not as simple as how he appears on the surface." Ling Kung answered. Back when he was in Heavenly Sword Villa, it was due to Yun Che's shocking mastery of the heavy sword that caused him to ask Yun Che to enter Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Then, he perceived that he possessed the Phoenix bloodline, which naturally left a considerably deep impression on him. A few months ago, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region received news of Yun Canghai's suicide, which automatically removed the seal on Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace, and the fact that the person who

had mistakenly been shut inside had also come out alive.

He never thought that he would actually see Yun Che here.

"This little brother's obviously not that simple." Ji Qianrou's tender voice came from the side: "He has such a pitiful cultivation level, yet did not have any change in expression beneath the Great Phoenix Elder's imposing oppression. Look, not only is his cultivation level low, he's even here alone without even an escort, and is being mocked at by so many people... it's just too pitiful. But his deep expression has always been calm, making one feel fascinated..."

Ji Qianrou twirled his finger and slowly stuck out his tongue to lick his lips in a circle: "If it's not a lot of nerve, then this little brother has many hidden depths... The main point is that... he matured quite attractively, he's this one's most favorite type..."

Ji Qianrou's posture and cheeks flushed with the color of peach blossoms made a chill go through Ye Xinghan, he nearly vomited out the food he had yesterday.

After the six nations was the ranking tournament's host, Profound Sky Seven Nation's senior chief... Divine Phoenix Empire!

"Phoenix disciples, enter the stage!" Feng Feiyan turned toward Divine Phoenix Empire's seats, and roared.

As soon as Feng Feiyan's voice fell, ten streaks of human silhouettes soared from Divine Phoenix Empire's seating area and then became ten Phoenix fire silhouettes. As the flames covered their entire bodies, they were like ten dancing phoenixes dancing in midair, releasing a scorching and heavy mighty pressure. The cauterizing high temperature were like surging ocean waves that spread throughout the entire arena in the blink of an eye, making those who had relatively low profound strength feel as though their own bodies were about to ignite.

Yet the emergence of Divine Phoenix Sect's disciples, didn't bring

about such cheers like the ones of the prior five nations. As the host, naturally, the number of Divine Phoenix Empire's citizen was the greatest. But they all looked at the image of the phoenix dancing in midair with fervorous gazes, as none cheered uncontrollably... Because, Divine Phoenix Empire was the eternal king, the overlord that would never be defeated! They simply didn't need to cheer, and more so didn't need to boost morale. Even though they were similarly participants of this ranking tournament, in the eyes of those from Divine Phoenix Empire, their true position, was the judge participating amongst them!

Phoenix flame burned in midair as ten streaks of phoenix fire silhouettes meandered closer to the Phoenix Stage. Then, along with a long bird cry, they all landed. The instant they touched the Phoenix Stage, all the Phoenix flame immediately extinguished, revealing ten majestic young figures wearing fiery red phoenix robes.

How the Phoenix disciples' came onto the Phoenix Stage, and the formless might that was naturally released from their bodies completely suppressed all of the previous six nations' disciples. The Phoenix disciples didn't make any mighty movements, didn't slovenly walk forward, and didn't even announce their names as they directly placed their palms on the Profound Assessment Stone.

The Profound Assessment Stone lit up... what was different from before was that this time, not only did the Profound Assessment Stone reveal the age of their bones and profound strength, even their names had appeared.

Feng Feibai — Twenty four years old — Emperor Profound Realm level five.

The entire arena was instantly filled with shocked cries; the first person that came forth to be assessed, his profound strength level had already entirely pressed above every profound practitioner of the six nations... But there were only shocked cries, and no cheers. Because the ones who uttered cries, were all those from the six nations, while Divine Phoenix Empire's people were all calm. Because

this kind of might, this degree of crushing oppression, simply couldn't be anymore ordinary.

And very soon, those of the six nations discovered, under extreme shock, that this Feng Feibai, whose strength was already extremely terrifying in their view and could be said as opposing the heavens, was actually merely the weakest of the ten from Divine Phoenix Empire!!

Feng Lingyun —— Twenty three years old —— Emperor Profound Realm level six!

The second one who came up, was a vigorous looking woman with short hair. When her age and profound strength was revealed, the entire audience cried in shock once again without question. Even Yun Che's brows severely jumped a little.

Emperor Profound Realm rank six, a height equal to Ling Tianni! Not to mention that Ling Tianni was over one hundred years old, he was more so publically recognized as the number one of Blue Wind's profound practicing community! Yet this Feng Lingyun, was only twenty three years old! And that was only the tip top of the Divine Phoenix Empire's younger generation... Moreover, she was a woman!

A twenty three year old female disciple of the Divine Phoenix Empire, in Blue Wind Nation, was on equal terms with the strength of the number one. Such a difference between the sky and earth, made Yun Che unable to help it but to lament once again.

Feng Boyi —— Twenty five years old —— Emperor Profound Realm level six.

Feng Lanshan —— Twenty four years old —— Emperor Profound Realm level six.

Feng Mingzhu —— Twenty three years old —— Emperor Profound Realm level six.

.....

.....

Phoenix disciples came forward one by one; the words displayed on the assessment stone made the six nation's profound practitioners all flabbergasted, as their open jaws couldn't close for a long time. Naturally, they knew long ago that there was a considerable gap between the six nations and Divine Phoenix Empire. But only after personally seeing it today, did they understand how enormous this gap was!

Amongst the six nations, a total of two Thrones appeared... One Emperor Profound Realm level one, the other Emperor Profound Realm level two. These two Thrones of twenty five years of age, could be said to be the greatest pride of Black Fiend Nation and Navy Tide Nation's profound practicing circle in these several hundred years, and were even considered miracles.

However, even the weakest of Divine Phoenix Sect's participating disciples were nearly half a realm stronger than them!

Moreover, it was half a realm at the Emperor Profound level!!

The difference was just like that of a candlelight and the moon; it simply couldn't be compared on equal terms.

"I-I-I... Is this even real? People of Divine Phoenix Sect, are all... this powerful!?" Ling Jie's entire person was already stunned. As he stared at the profound strength levels that were emerging one by one on the Profound Assessment Stone, he didn't dare to believe his eyes at all. These, were all only Divine Phoenix Sect's young disciples... Their profound strengths were actually no weaker than his grandfather Ling Tianni!!

His grandfather, who was publically accepted as the number one of Blue Wind, actually could only be compared to young disciples of not even twenty five in Divine Phoenix Sect!!

Such a huge disparity, made it extremely difficult for Ling Jie to

accept..

"Of course, I just knew that such a Blue Wind little bro like you would be startled." Hua Minghai had on an unsurprised expression as he said very slowly: "Tsk ts, strong nations such as Navy Tide and Black Fiend's gap with Divine Phoenix Sect was already no less than that of heaven and earth; so about your Blue Wind, hohum... I heard that in your Blue Wind, Emperor Profound is already the pinnacle? But at Divine Phoenix Sect, Emperor Profounds are simply as prevalent as dogs. Without entering Sky Profound at eighteen and Emperor Profound before thirty five, they wouldn't even have the face to call themselves Phoenix disciples."

Ling Jie intensely gulped down a mouthful of saliva, and couldn't speak for quite a while. As he saw each and every one of those incomparably shocking profound strength levels, he, who previously had an enormous amount of confidence in Yun Che, now had his confidence collapsed for the most part. Half a year ago, only after being almost killed and joining forces with Xia Qingyue, did he finally defeat Ling Tianni, who was at the sixth level of the Emperor Profound Realm... But now, these people sent out by Divine Phoenix Sect, were all strong beings at the level of his grandfather.

While on the side of Blue Wind, there was only Yun Che alone!

How the hell could this be played!?

Hua Minghai gave Ling Jie's stumped face a side glance, and guessed what he was thinking right away: "Damn! Kid, don't tell me you came here with the notion that Boss Yun would defeat Divine Phoenix Sect? Did you eat too many brain-dead pills or something!"

"Um..." Ling Jie scratched his head, and said meekly: "Because Boss is powerful beyond limits, and even defeated my grandfather, so I had always thought that in the young generation of the entire continent, Boss should be unparalleled... I didn't expect that Divine Phoenix Sect would actually be so powerful. This really is too... too ridiculous."

"How ridiculous," Hua Minghai had the impression of looking at an idiot in his eyes: "You think that Divine Phoenix Sect's five hundred years of accumulation and the bloodline of a deity is good-for-nothing? Then I wouldn't fret to tell you, for just a mere Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, Divine Phoenix Sect doesn't need to be too serious at all. So these ten people may not even be the strongest ones under twenty five. In any case, I don't believe that Divine Phoenix Empire would lay out the trump cards of their younger generation in an unnecessary situation just like this. Whatever, I reckon that if I keep on talking, that little heart of yours couldn't bear it anymore. Later, this big bro will cram a proverb into you, mn, called viewing the sky from the bottom of a well."

Ling Jie's eyes stared unmovingly. He, couldn't speak for a long time, and his self-confidence received an unprecedented blow. At Blue Wind Nation, he was also a prodigy whose name stirred the profound practicing world and was publicly accepted to be able to surpass Ling Yun. But if he was placed before this Divine Phoenix Sect... it would be simply too harsh to even look at.

=====

Chapter 432 – First Match: Navy Tide VS Blue Wind

Seeing the huge blow Ling Jie took that made it seem as though his beliefs had crumbled, Hua Minghai couldn't help but promptly console him: "You don't really have to be so pessimistic either, I've also experienced Boss Yun's strength. Even if it's impossible for him to defeat those abnormals from Divine Phoenix Sect, handling the other five nations is not a problem... Mn, mn. One person against ten is no problem! Fighting against ten alone with the identity of a profound practitioner from Blue Wind, how impressive is that! How shocking! Blue Wind Nation would then greatly gain prestige from now on! Boss Yun's name would resound throughout the seven nations and shake their world! And you... uh, and me, will bear witness to it all!"

Once Hua Minghai said that, Ling Jie's spirit suddenly shook as his mood immediately became happier. He nodded heavily: "Right, right! Big bro Hua, you're right! Boss, you have to give it your all... Aaah! Just thinking about Boss defeating ten alone and slapping everyone who looked down on Blue Wind's face... I almost can't control my excitement!"

"Mn! This kind of spirit is much better." Hua Minghai nodded with satisfaction. Then, as he looked toward the arena, his gaze became heavy...

The course of the matches and their conclusions are minor...

But the matter about the Phoenix bloodline in your body... how exactly are you going to solve that? You specially coming here to participate in this ranking tournament ought to be for the purpose of the bloodline matter...

"Oh right, Big bro Hua, are you really called 'Yan Xiaohua'? Why do I keep feeling that this name of yours... seems to be fake."

Hua Minghai turned around, stared at Ling Jie, and said solemnly:

"Can't tell... that you're actually a little smart."

Very quickly, the assessments of the nine participants of Divine Phoenix Sect had finished. Aside from Feng Feiban's fifth level of the Emperor Profound Realm, the other eight were at the sixth level of the Emperor Profound Realm.

It was at this time that Divine Phoenix Sect's tenth person stepped forward... His expression was as calm as water. While carrying a faint smile, the space between his brows displayed a kind of inherent nobleness. His attire was somewhat different than the other nine, embedded on his fiery phoenix robe was a radiantly burning golden colored Feng, and phoenix robes inlaid with gold meant that those who wore them were direct successors of the Divine Phoenix Imperial Family.

Following his footsteps, the first signs of restlessness finally appeared within Divine Phoenix Empire's seats as loud exclamations of surprise sounded.

"That's... Fourteenth Prince!"

"Waah! Fourteenth Prince is actually personally participating in this ranking tournament!"

"I heard that Fourteenth Prince is exceptionally talented, the other princes, even the Crown Prince is not as gifted as he is. It could be said that he is number one of Divine Phoenix Sect's young generation! When he was only ten, he had already stepped into the Sky Profound."

The restless voices made Yun Che's attention land on this "Fourteenth Prince's" body. While also a prince, the difference between the impression he and Thirteenth Prince Feng Xichen gave Yun Che was as different as the sky and earth. He had a sort of bone-deep noble aura without any deliberate restraint of his arrogance, and a kind of... oppression that would directly infiltrate the heart.

This person...

Feng Xiluo —— Twenty two years old —— Emperor Profound Realm level eight.

WHOOAAA!!!!

The layer of noises triggered by the previous nine top-notch geniuses of Divine Phoenix Sect combined could not compare to this short instant of commotion. Not only was it the six nation's profound practitioners, even Divine Phoenix Empire's profound practitioners were entirely dumbstruck at that moment, and essentially did not dare to believe their eyes.

Even though it was extremely shocking, being in the mid stages of the Emperor Profound at twenty five was completely acceptable to those from Divine Phoenix Empire.

But, late stage Emperor Profound at twenty two... a twenty two year old high level Throne! Even in Divine Phoenix Empire, where strong beings were all over the place like clouds in the sky, it was almost a legend!

Feng Xiluo's eyes were calm and tranquil. While faintly smiling, he took on the entire audience's shocked cries and gazes that seemed like they were looking up at a child of god. Yun Che's gaze stayed on him for a while, and his eyebrows secretly knitted...

This person's strength... was actually comparable to the Feng Chihuo he could only defeat by exhausting all of his trump cards, while even nearly losing his life!

Even at Divine Phoenix Sect, Feng Chihuo's position wasn't low at all. And his age, was also at least one hundred years old... But this Fourteenth Prince, was only twenty two years old!

This was questionably the person with the most terrifying aptitude that Yun Che had ever seen in the Profound Sky Continent.

"Mn, amazing. Fourteenth Prince actually made a breakthrough again." Divine Phoenix Sect's Third Elder Feng Feiran exclaimed: "Such an aptitude, really is astonishing. Seems like, there's hope for Fourteenth Prince to reach Overlord at forty... In the future, hundred years later, he definitely can attain Monarch."

"What Third Elder said is right, Fourteenth Brother's aptitude is indeed world shocking, and is rarely seen in a thousand years even in our Divine Phoenix Sect. As his elder brother, I am really ashamed of my inadequacy." Feng Ximing said, half exclaiming with half modestly.

Surveying over the other princes, some had calm expressions and nodded in agreement... But in the depth of their eyes, jealousy that was concealed with great effort flashed through each one without exception.

"Not bad." Feng Hengkong, who was always extremely strict to his sons, also slowly nodded at the moment, as a praising smile emerged on his face.

"Hoh, looks like quite an amazing prodigy appeared in Divine Phoenix Sect." Playing with his fingers that were as slender as leek, Ji Qianrou said with a smiling face.

"Hmph! That's still only worthy of being called a prodigy in these seven nations." Ye Xinghan disdainfully laughed, then narrowed his eyes, as he pleasantly enjoyed the two women coquettishly rubbing on his body. His gaze looked toward Feng Xue'er from time to time as the depth of his eyes burned with an incredibly intense flame of desire.

"A pity, his looks aren't the type this one likes. Otherwise when drinking with Little Kongkong, he could be brought along... mnghmm."

Ye Xinghai wisely shut his trap, and refused to get into the conversation for the life of him.

The ten participating Divine Phoenix Sect profound practitioners all descended the Phoenix Stage, entering into the match preparation area. On the arena, Feng Feiyan's heavy voice sounded: "The Seven Nation's participating profound practitioners have all reached their positions. Even though profound strength level is the most important label of strength for a profound practitioner, it cannot represent one's strength entirely either! There are ten billions of profound practitioners, and ones who could challenge above their ranks are innumerable! The final ranking of the Ranking Tournament, will still need to be judged from the true strength of each nation's profound practitioners... Moreover, it will be judged from the comprehensive average strength of a nation's top-most ten profound practitioners!"

"The order of entering the stage, will still be randomly assigned via the profound stone. During battle, all of the participating profound practitioners are not allowed to leave the center area, and are not allowed to use any forbidden medicines that temporarily increases one's strength in a short time. Otherwise, the right to participate will be immediately taken. During battle, unable to get up for ten breaths of time, unconscious, forfeiture, as well as being blown down the Phoenix Stage, will all be considered as defeat. Once all of the participants of a nation are defeated, the match will end. On the Phoenix Stage, you all can use any kind of weapon and protective gear, but no poison and concealed assassination tools can be used. Any tactics and means can be used, no matter how despicable and shameless; because gears, brains, and flexibility, is also apart of your overall strength!"

"No more superfluous words. The Thirty Ninth Seven Nation Ranking Tournament has officially begun!!"

Feng Feiyan's voice resounded throughout the entire arena. As his voice fell, he extended his palm, and a ball of flame fell onto the profound stone.

A scarlet light momentarily flashed through the profound stone, as three dark red words slowly emerged: Navy Tide Nation.

One of the sides of the first match, was precisely the Navy Tide Nation that ranked second in the last session.

"Very good, entering the stage early means there will be more time to recover later." Navy Tide Nation's profound practitioners all raised their heads and looked at the Phoenix Stage, their face filled with confidence and loftiness. In the battle of the six nations, since Divine Phoenix Empire was not participating, they wouldn't have the reason to lose to anyone... And only their Navy Tide Nation, was the most qualified to challenge Divine Phoenix Empire and step onto the Primordial Profound Ark.

"Go."

Ten Navy Tide profound practitioners took off into the air, and leapt up the Phoenix Stage at the same time. Every single one of them had lofty expression in their eyes, their will to fight awe-inspiring. At the same time, their gazes also looked toward the profound stone, awaiting their first opponent.

"Victory for Navy Tide!"

"No matter which of the other five nations become our Navy Tide's opponent, they will encounter a nightmare, without exception!"

"Navy Tide! Crush the opponent as much as you want!"

"Waaaaahh... Flower Viewing Prince is so cool!"

The loud shouts coming from Navy Tide Nation was deafening. Atop the seating area of Navy Tide Nation, Navy Tide's ruler, as well as the profound practicing world's hegemony also had changes in their expressions, as they became expectant and serious. This was a battle concerning the next twenty five years of Navy Tide Nation's status and prestige. Even though they, who were ranked second in the last session, still had absolute confidence this time, they still shouldered quite a bit of pressure... Before encountering the final Divine Phoenix Empire, they absolutely could not afford to lose.

Very quickly, the name of the other nation participating in the first match also appeared on top of the profound stone.

Blue Wind Nation.

The entire audience's shouts were cut short. Then, the entire atmosphere immediately changed greatly.

"F*ck! It's actually Blue Wind! What's this?"

"I originally thought that I could see Navy Tide's might... How could this be a fight? Anyone one of them releasing a fart could knock him down."

"Hahahaha! Navy Tide Nation's luck is really good, running into a filler character the moment they're up."

Yun Che looked at the two words Blue Wind, narrowed his eyes, then suddenly jumped up as the entire arena roared with commotion that came from every direction.

"Looks like that kid's going up. One person against ten, tsk tsk tsk tsk, how impressive!"

"Damn! They're actually up against Blue Wind Nation first. How boring, hurry up and kick that Yun Che brat off, then quickly move onto the next match!"

"Don't even say anything, even though this brat's strength is trash, the skin on his face isn't your ordinary thickness. If it was me, I definitely wouldn't have the guts to go up to lose that much face. I'm guessing that in at most three breaths, this kid would be cleanly knocked down."

"Three breaths? My Navy Tide Nation's top geniuses actually needs three breaths to take care of a brat? Even a casual attack would be an instant KO! If this kid was even a little bit smart, he ought to have obediently surrender immediately. Otherwise... if any of my Navy Tide geniuses are even a little heavy in their attacks, losing half his

life would be considered light.”

“Go, Yun Che... Go! Let them see your might!!” Appearing within the arena were also scattered shouts cheering for Yun Che, but these sparse and weak sounds were easily drowned out instantly by the waves of sound coming from Navy Tide Nation.

“Haah, how boring. I originally wanted to fight a satisfying splendid first battle to properly raise my prestige... but it was unexpected this kid.” An extremely angry faced Navy Tide profound practitioner in front of Yun Che said as he held both hands against his chest. He casually cast a glance at Yun Che, then didn’t bother to look a second time.

The other nine profound practitioner’s attitudes were more or less the same. For some of them, they didn’t even properly look at Yun Che after he had gone up on stage.

“Thirty Ninth Seven Nation Ranking Tournament’s first match, Navy Tide versus Blue Wind Nation... Match start!”

Feng Feiyan immediately declared the start of the competition, but after his voice fell, neither side had a person that assumed a battle stance. Yun Che stood in place while staring expressionlessly at the Navy Tide Nation’s profound practitioners that were in front of him, and Navy Tide Nation’s ten participating profound practitioners stood with a lazy posture as they faced him with bitter faces. Let alone a battle stance, even their eyelids drooped, for they didn’t even feel like opening them.

“What to do? Who’s going to go up?” A Navy Tide profound practitioner asked: “In any case, I’m definitely not going up.”

“Shit! Why the hell are ya’ll looking at me? I’m definitely not gonna go up. Since six years ago, I can’t even be bothered with oppressing newbies below the Sky Profound.”

“The reason why I came here from so far is to spar against the

world's warlords and randomly raise my fame. Fighting with this guy is an insult to my strength... Whoever wants to go up can go up, but I'm not going up even if you beat me to death!"

"Then... Junior Sister Ji, how about you go?"

"Hmph! Such a useless man is not worthy enough for me to act."

The ten profound practitioners of Navy Tide Nation pushed and shoved one another. No one was willing to come forth and fight with Yun Che, as if fighting with Yun Che was the greatest of humiliation to them... It would be more so impossible for ten to go up at the same time. If they really did that, perhaps the rumors would later circulated in this way... Navy Tide Nation, ten against one, defeated the sole profound practitioner of Blue Wind Nation... They couldn't take being disgraced like so.

And right now, Yun Che's situation could be summarized with one sentence:

Silently watching a bunch of fools pretend to be great.

=====

Chapter 433 – Slap Slap to the Face

"This group from Navy Tide Nation is just too much!" Ling Jie clenched both fists as he said with a resentful face: "Just you all wait, very soon, you all won't even be able to laugh."

Once he finished speaking, he suddenly saw Yan Xiaohua gritting his teeth, fisting his palms, stomping his feet, looking like he suddenly had an epilepsy. He widened his eyes and asked hurriedly: "Big bro Hua, what's wrong?"

"I... hate... Ahhh!!" Hua Minghai violently grabbed at his own hair: "If I knew this crazy... oh, no, Boss Yun had come to participate in the ranking tournament, I wouldn't have been here, and would instead open a betting stand outside... Buy Navy Tide Nation's win for 1-1.2, buy Blue Wind Nation's win for 1-10. Everyone will definitely take me as an idiot and then madly buy for Navy Tide Nation... Then, I'll be rich... rich!! Unfortunately, I don't have a chance anymore! My greatest opportunity in becoming one of Profound Sky's billionaires, Ahhh!!!"

"..." Ling Jie looked on with disdain.

When Navy Tide Nation's profound practitioners continued to push each other around, the always silent "Flower Viewing Prince" Han Ruyu finally opened his mouth. He smiled faintly, and spoke in a kind of disdainful and pitying tone of voice: "It's only a pitiful roof jumping clown that's not even worth us wasting our strength... Don't even bother to go up, it's best if we let him willingly surrender."

Han Ruyu was number one of Navy Tide Nation's young generation, the strongest within the ten, and was also their core, so he naturally obtained the other nine's agreement: "Sir Han is right, it's best if we let this guy willingly go. I reckon that he also can't wait to leave."

And at this moment, Yun Che's voice suddenly came from behind: "You guys finished talking yet? Hurry up please, I'm in a rush."

A hint of arrogance was within Yun Che's harsh voice... Someone who seemed to not even be able to withstand one of their blows, a trash level person whom they don't even think is worth defeating, had used such a tone at them. As lofty strong practitioners, they obviously felt extremely unpleasant. The frontmost Navy Tide profound practitioner turned around and sneered at Yun Che: "What, are you in a hurry to leave?"

"You're only half right." Yun Che chuckled: "I'm in a hurry to send you off the stage."

"You're courting death!" The Navy Tide practitioner who spoke immediately went in a rage... A trash that wasn't worth looking at had actually dared to be so arrogant in front of him, how could he stand it!

"Looks like you group of idiots can't even come to a conclusion."

Once the obviously insulting word, "idiot" came out, the expressions of all ten from Navy Tide Nation changed... They could insult and mock the other party without restraint because they believed that they were lofty strong practitioners. Them insulting one who was weaker was in accordance with natural laws, but being called an "idiot" by a weakling was a blood debt that simply could not be tolerated.

Just as they were about to launch into verbal abuse, Yun Che's figure suddenly swayed, and just disappeared in place from their line of sight... And out of the ten, not one saw through how he had disappeared. Before they could turn their bodies around, a fierce calamity-like storm suddenly came from behind.

Boom!!

What resounded above the Phoenix Stage was a sound as world shaking as profound thunder. Four profound practitioners who stood together simply did not see what had happened, and felt as though their bodies had been ruthlessly smashed by a humongous heavy

hammer. Their minds crashed as their entire bodies flew into the distance like a bundle of straw...

With Dragon Fault already in hand, he swept four flying in one strike. Then, he flashed with Star God's Broken Shadow, and smashed two consecutive Overlord's Fury down.

Boom!!

Boom!!

"AHHHH!!!"

A Navy Tide profound practitioner finally regained his senses, but all he could do... was to utter a miserable shriek.

In merely two breaths of time, Yun Che had sent out three strikes. Under the three strikes, nine figures were accompanied by bloody arrows that filled the sky, and were blasted flying into the distance... All knocked flying off the Phoenix Stage. The one who flew the furthest flew out more than six hundred meters, heavily smashing into the spectator area.

On the third breath, Yun Che had already dashed toward the last Navy Tide profound practitioner... Han Ruyu.

This sudden change in events caused Han Ruyu's pupils to contract to the size of a needle. The terrifying air current that was directly heading for him caused all the nerves on his entire body to instantly tense. Beneath the thoroughly frightening huge chaos, he simply did not have time to counterattack or evade, and could only instinctively construct a profound energy defense barrier.

Bang!!!

Under Dragon Fault's berserk power, his profound energy defense entirely broke into pieces like a layer of frail glass. Han Ruyu's entire body shook as though his chest had been struck by a mountain, and wildly sprayed out a mouthful of blood. He was directly sent flying

up high, but Yun Che still did not stop moving here. Instead, he suddenly leapt up, instantly reached Han Ryu's altitude, and revealed a cruel sneer...

"You kept on calling me a 'pitiful clown' earlier, right? Then what the hell are you? Heh... Flower Viewing Prince? I think that from now on, you ought to be a... Crippled Flower Prince!!"

Amidst his low and heavy voice, the Dragon Fault in Yun Che's hands fiercely swung down... and violently whipped onto Han Ryu's... face!

SMACK!!!!

That crisp sound of whipping and bones fracturing distinctively transmitted into everyone's ears. Han Ryu's right side jaw bones and teeth instantly shattered into pieces, as half his face entirely collapsed within. Letting out a scream of agony, his entire person was like a spinning top that was whipped out with great power. Flying outwards while spinning with great speed, he crashed into Navy Tide's seating area amidst an enormous "bang".

"Uu..." Han Ryu's eyes bulged outwards, his face full of blood. His face's shape that could be considered perfect became ruined and hideous... If he had gone to Blue Wind Nation before, and gotten news of Yun Che's power and how ruthless he was when striking out, then even if he had ten times the guts, he still wouldn't dare to mock Yun Che as a 'clown'. Looking at the bloodstain before his eyes, after letting out a groan of extreme agony, he face planted down, and lost consciousness.

The colossal arena instantly became deathly quiet. Everyone rigidly stared their eyes wide, as though all of them suddenly fell into a dream world.

All of these happened too fast; from Yun Che suddenly striking out to Navy Tide Nation's nine profound practitioners being blown off the Phoenix Stage, only two breaths of time passed!! The next two breaths of time, the number one of Navy Tide's younger generation,

was smashed back the Navy Tide's seating area by Yun Che in two swings.

Four breaths of time... In merely four breaths of time, one person... blew all of the Navy Tide Nation's profound practitioners down the Phoenix Stage! And the strongest amongst them, Han Ruyu, who was called Navy Tide Nation's miracle, was immediately heavily injured and lost consciousness on the spot!!

Everyone... those who were mocking, laughing, acting with contempt, jeering, ignoring, and didn't pay any attention at all... all became dumbstruck at this moment. Even Feng Hengkong's expression went stiff for an instant.

Bang!!

Yun Che fell from midair; he did not deliberately control the momentum of falling, as his body dropped down from carrying Dragon Fault which was over ten thousand kilograms in weight, bringing about a deafening sound of landing. While this trembling sound, also shocked everyone awake from complete stupefaction...

"H...H...H...How is this possible... Just what happened?" A profound practitioner stared with his eyes wide. Even now, he still didn't dare to believe his eyes.

"He's only... Earth Profound Realm? Really just Earth Profound Realm... alone... instantly defeated Navy Tide?" The voice of the speaking profound practitioner was trembling. His eyes stared straight; the gaze he looked at Yun Che with, was as though he were looking at a demon god from another world.

"Illusion... It must be... fake, right..."

Navy Tide Nation's profound practitioners' had all lost their voices. They looked wide-eyed at the Blue Wind profound practitioner who they loathed, mocked, and considered a joke, instantly blasting all of their Navy Tide prodigies flying as though a gale was sweeping

falling leaves; the miraculous prodigy Han Ruyu, who was unmatched by anyone in their eyes, being smashed by two sword strikes from the opponent into an unbearably appalling and tragic sight...

They felt that their world nearly collapsed entirely.

“Yun Che!! Yun Che!! This is our Blue Wind Nation’s Yun Che!! Are you seeing this, this is our Blue Wind Nation’s Yun Che!!”

Blue Wind Nation’s profound practitioners also only woke up from being stunned just now. Almost all stood up, moved to the point that they couldn’t handle themselves. What they saw with their eyes.... Four breaths, just a mere four breaths! He alone, blew all of Navy Tide’s ten top-most prodigies off the Phoenix Stage... And Navy Tide Nation, was even ranked second in the last session; under Yun Che’s sword, let alone retaliate, they didn’t even have the ability to resist!

How awe-inspiring was this! How domineering... How glorious!! All of the mockery, sneers, and humiliation they received were released by an innumerable amount of time. Pride filled every single corner of their body and spirit. They had never been prouder of being a Blue Wind citizen at this moment in their entire lifetime.

“Boss!! Y-y-y-y....you’re too cool!!” Ling Jie stood up, his entire face flushed red like blood. He was already excited to the point of not knowing how to describe his frame of mind with words. Back then at Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, Yun Che showed his awe-inspiring might and took first place. But the mightiness of these four breaths of time, exceeded the that time by no less than tens of millions of times! Because he was at the Seven Nation’s highest performance stage, sweeping Navy Tide Nation’s most apex profound practitioners in front of the extraordinary people of the entire Profound Sky Continent!!

“Ssss...” Hua Minghai fiercely inhaled. Naturally it wasn’t from being scared, but from excitement: “Nicely done... Sss! Those slaps on the face, are so loud and clear! Having lived for so many years, it’s still

the first time that this daddy has seen such a loud and refreshing slap to the face... Those from Navy Tide Nation are now probably as stifled as though they had swallowed feces. Ohahahaha..."

The nine Navy Tide Profound Practitioners had already all climbed up. Standing without moving, they stared blankly at the Yun Che on stage, their complexions ghastly pale, their entire bodies quivering as though their soul had left their bodies...

=====

Chapter 434 – The Six Nations’ Closing (1)

The nine Navy Tide profound practitioners had already crawled up. They simply stood there, and looked dumbfoundedly at Yun Che who was standing on the stage. Their expressions were pale and their bodies were trembling, as though their souls had already departed from their bodies...

“Yu’er... Yu’er!!”

In the seats of Navy Tide Nation, a sorrowful cry could be heard. A middle-aged man had already charged towards Han Ruyu who had already fainted on the ground. His body, and even his voice, was trembling severely. Han Ruyu was number one in Navy Tide Nation’s young generation, a genius who could hardly be encountered in a thousand years, and was even the hope for their Navy Tide profound world. In this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, he even bore the most, and heaviest of Navy Tide Empire’s wishes. However, in his life’s one and only Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, on his very first match... he was actually defeated in such a miserable manner, with but a single strike.

Han Ruyu was after all, an early-stage Throne. If he were to exchange blows with Yun Che head-on, though Yun Che would still be able to easily defeat him, at the very least, it would have taken five exchanges of blows, and he definitely could not have gained victory so easily and completely. Naturally, only Han Ruyu could be blamed for everything that had happened. He basically did not put Yun Che in his eyes at all, and hence, he did not even have the chance to react to Yun Che’s sudden burst of force.

The sword strike Yun Che slammed on his face with was not actually heavy, otherwise, his entire head would have burst apart. Yet, it was enough to easily ruin half of his face. Because being called ugly was what Yun Che hated the most, and even the word “clown” was a taboo.

The middle-aged man shook him for a long while, but Han Ruyu was unable to wake up at all. He suddenly turned around, and stared at Yun Che with deadly eyes. "Junior from Blue Wind! Your heart is actually this wicked... The ranking tournament is nothing more than a simple exchange, yet you actually... acted so viciously!!"

This middle-aged man was Han Ruyu's father. His name was Han Hongyu, Sect Master of "Coldbellow Sect", the number one sect in Navy Tide Nation. No matter which part of Navy Tide Nation he stepped his feet on, he was a mighty individual whom the entire profound world would tremble in fear from. With his might and rage, even if it was the ruler of Navy Tide Nation facing him, he would still be terror-stricken. However, how could Yun Che be frightened by him? Laughing coldly, he said. "His skills weren't competent, yet you're still blaming me for being too ruthless with my attacks? In the rules announced by Elder Feng earlier, there wasn't a single line which restricts the strength of one's attacks. Even if he were to die on the Phoenix Stage, he can only be blamed for being too weak. He's unable to clearly weigh his own abilities, yet, he still wished to court death by entering the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, no one else but him can be blamed for this!"

Yun Che had heavily injured Han Ruyu, who was claimed to be the future hope of Navy Tide Nation, and had even ruined his face, yet, not only did he not have the slightest intentions of being sorry, his rebuttal was filled with such arrogance. Han Hongyu was so furious, his entire body began to tremble. If this wasn't the place where the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was held, he would have definitely charged out and exert his powers at Yun Che long ago.

"Enough!" At this moment, Feng Feiyan finally spoke. He collected his astonished expression, and faintly glanced at Yun Che. With a considerably calm voice, he announced. "For the first match, victory goes to Blue Wind Nation!!"

As Feng Feiyan had spoken, no matter how much hatred and fury Han Hongyu was harboring, he naturally didn't dare to say anything

more. He carried Han Ruyu up, took out all of the spiritual medicine he had on his body, and hurriedly saved him... However, in his heart, he knew that this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was over for Navy Tide Nation. The fact that the nine people had suffered light injuries and Han Ruyu being heavily injured were just secondary, the key factor was the blow to their spirits... Their confidence, pride, and even their faith, had most probably been completely destroyed by Yun Che. In the next upcoming matches, even if Han Ruyu were to wake up and strain himself up the stage, they would no longer be able to gather even the least bit of their momentum.

Anyone with discerning eyes was able to see that Yun Che had purposely thrown such heavy sweeps at the ten great profound practitioners of Navy Tide Nation. The reason was very clear as well... They were pushing the matter around among themselves. Every single one of their actions, words, and expressions, were all filled with scorn and humiliation towards Yun Che. And what Yun Che gave them in return, was an extremely ruthless retaliation! In regards to Navy Tide Nation falling to such a state in a blink of an eye, they only had themselves to blame for it.

Yun Che walked down from the Phoenix Stage, and slowly walked towards the preparation area. Currently, towards Yun Che, the eyes of the practitioners of the other nations had undergone a great change. The belittlement they had earlier, had already turned into a deep fear... and even dread.

"Heh, he's rather interesting." Among the participating practitioners from Divine Phoenix Sect, Feng Xiluo swept his eyes across Yun Che while holding his chin with his hand, and lightly smiled.

"Aiyoyo! This sure is incredible." Ji Qianrou leaned his chest forward, and his pair of amorous eyes stirred. "This little brother sure gave everyone a very big surprise... The degree of strength he unleashed earlier, can basically be compared to the fourth level of the Emperor Profound Realm."

"A peak Earth Profound comparable to a mid-stage Emperor

Profound... It's a sight I have never seen before in my life." At this moment, Gu Cang who had been silent, lightly spoke out, and gave an incomparably high praise... Evidently, Yun Che's combat strength which completely did not conform to his profound strength, had even shocked this Monarch-class individual of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.

"Royal father, he's really incredible." Although Feng Xue'er was striving to suppress her own emotions, she still could not help but speak out. Her voice was as light as the wind. No one was able to see her facial expression, and her emotions carried in her voice were hard to discern as well. "However, isn't his profound strength merely at the Earth Profound Realm? Why is he so strong?"

This was actually the first time Feng Hengkong had ever heard her own daughter praising someone on her own accord. His brows furrowed, and his expression was a little heavy. "It seems like I have completely misjudged this person... His profound strength is indeed only at the Earth Profound Realm. Beneath my eyes, it's impossible for him to disguise it. However, the strength he unleashed earlier, actually approaches the strength of a mid-stage Emperor Profound..."

Feng Hengkong did not say anything more. When the disciples of their Phoenix Divine Sect face off against disciples of other sects, basically all of them were able to accomplish level-skipping matches.

However, in regards to an Earth Profound exerting the abilities of an Emperor Profound Realm, he had lived for several hundred years, yet he had never seen, nor heard of anything like it! Although he knew of the name 'Yun Che' due to the matter of him harboring the Phoenix bloodline, he had never taken this matter to heart. Because a small figure like this, was basically unworthy of an Emperor to pay attention to, and any one of the lowest class disciples could handle it. However, currently, from that shocking display that occurred in a mere four seconds, he could not help but really pay attention to this Blue Wind practitioner who clearly was only at the Earth Profound

Realm.

Feng Hengkong turned around. With his calmest gaze, he stared at Feng Xichen... Feng Xichen was someone who had witnessed Yun Che's abilities, however, in order to conceal the ugly fact that he was miserably abused by a Blue Wind practitioner, he concocted a huge lie. And, to cover this lie of his, he even sent Feng Chihuo to assassinate Yun Che... Ever since he received the news that Feng Chihuo had cruelly died, his mind had been in a state of panic. And then, he even sent several more waves of men, yet he was no longer able to find any trace of Yun Che... When Yun Che appeared on the Phoenix Stage, his heart had been beating wildly.

And Feng Hengkong's eyes which lightly swept towards him, caused his entire body to suddenly stiffen. His expression instantly paled as cold sweat dripped down from his forehead... He simply sat there, and did not dare to move a single inch.

The atmosphere of the entire Ranking Tournament had undergone a change which no one could have ever expected. Blue Wind Nation and Yun Che... These two names which initially had been taken as jokes and cannon fodders, had currently, completely become the biggest focus of the entire tournament. Their shock, dismay, and utter disbelief... And the ridicule and scorn made by these people who believed themselves to be high and mighty earlier, currently looked that silly and laughable. Their faces were burning red, as though they had been given a ruthless slap.

Eliminating ten people single-handedly... An Earth Profound defeating an Emperor Profound... Everyone could already predict that the structure of this Ranking Tournament was destined to be completely overturned because of the sudden appearance of this monster from Blue Wind Nation.

The Seven Nation Ranking Tournament continued. In the second match, Black Fiend Nation was versus Divine Incense Nation.

The Black Fiend Nation was ranked third previously, while Divine

Incense Nation was ranked sixth. However, in this match, they still fought to an exceptional stalemate. In a team battle, an individual's top-notch abilities were no longer the deciding factor, rather, it was a contest of their overall combat strengths and teamwork... In the end, after a battle that lasted for half an hour, Black Fiend Nation which had an early-stage Throne suppressed the other party throughout the entire match, and gained victory over Divine Incense Nation.

This should have been an extravagant match, however, the cheers from the entire stadium wasn't that intense. Because even if it was ten times more extravagant, it was still far from being as soul-shaking and visual-blowing as Yun Che sweeping away Navy Tide Nation in four seconds. And, a large group of people were still stuck in that soul-shaking moment. They could not completely regain their senses at all.

Third match, Navy Tide versus Sunflower Dew.

In terms of overall strength alone, it was no doubt that Navy Tide was stronger than Sunflower Dew.

However, in this battle, Navy Tide Nation was actually beaten by Sunflower Dew Nation basically one-sidedly. Han Ruyu was still unconscious... And most probably, even if he woke up, he would still act unconscious. He definitely would not have the face to face the entire stadium. The rest had all suffered light injuries, with the most serious issue being that their spirits were still in a half-collapsed state. It was nine against ten, and they had no will to fight either. In the end, Sunflower Dew won.

And the Navy Tide profound practitioners who came down the stage with dark and stiff faces, were drowned in the saliva of the Navy Tide audience.

Fourth match: Blue Wind versus Sunflower Dew.

When the profound stone revealed the three words "Blue Wind Nation", the entire stadium instantly quietened down.

If Sunflower Dew Nation was the first to be matched against Blue Wind, then the Sunflower Dew audience would undoubtedly react the same way as Navy Tide. However, currently, the entire Sunflower Dew audience was dead silent. There was no longer a single person who expressed their excitement and ridicule. The joy they had from their victory against Navy Tide Nation earlier, had instantly been suppressed to nothingness.

The faces of Sunflower Dew's ruler, hegemons, and especially the ten participating profound practitioners from Sunflower Dew, had drastically changed. A deep fear was revealed in their eyes.

"It's actually... this guy!" A Sunflower Dew profound practitioner forcefully took in a cold breath. A strength to wipe out the entire Navy Tide team in four seconds, one would tremble in fear just by thinking about it. And what's even more frightening was his ruthlessness, or better to be said, vicious battle style. Putting aside the heavy injuries, he actually directly ruined someone's face!

"Do not be discouraged!" A core profound practitioner of Sunflower Dew Nation gritted his teeth, and said with a sharp voice. "Don't forget, the key reasons why that Yun Che was able to wipe out Navy Tide, was because Navy Tide had underestimated him, and that Yun Che had suddenly launched a sneak attack! If we attack with all our strength and work together... with him alone, I don't believe we're unable to win!"

The other nine people hurriedly nodded in consent, but in their hearts, they were secretly cursing. Yun Che was able to wipe out Navy Tide because of a sneak attack? Your grandfather sneak attacks! Why don't you try launching a sneak attack at ten Navy Tide profound practitioners yourself!?

Forget about underestimating, even if the ten of them were unprepared and squatting cozily on the ground, they would still be able to retaliate at any moment and abuse you into a dog!

=====

Chapter 435 – The Six Nation's Closing (2)

Yun Che sprung up with a leap, and landed atop the Phoenix Stage. This time, no one mocked him for not even being able to use Profound Floating Technique anymore, no one mocked him for coming from Blue Wind Nation anymore, and even more so, no one mocked him for being Earth Profound Realm. Every one of them had serious expressions, especially Sunflower Dew's spectators, their expressions were all anxious to the extreme.

All gazes were focused onto Yun Che; even the four from Sacred Grounds, who didn't bother to watch the previous battle raised their heads as well, and looked toward Yun Che... They wanted to know whether or not this person who clearly was only Earth Profound, yet possessed such unusual combat power was merely short-lived like a Queen of the Night that bloomed only once, or that... He really could exhibit a true strength of a middle stage Emperor Profound at the Earth Profound Realm.

The ten from Sunflower Dew Nation entered the stage, then quickly formed into a battle formation. Each and every one of them had on grim faces, as if they were facing a great enemy. Sunflower Dew Nation was a seafront nation, the majority cultivated in water attribute profound arts, and their weapons were generally blades and swords. Before the match even started, they had already all pulled out their weapons. On the surface of their bodies, a light blue colored profound energy glow stirred with wave-like ripples.

Yun Che had also already taken out Dragon Fault. As the sword's tip touched onto the floor, an instantaneous shaking sound was made as the entire Phoenix Stage had even clearly trembled a bit. The ten profound practitioner from Sunflower Dew Nation also trembled along with it, their gazes which looked toward Dragon Fault was instantly filled with fright.

It merely touched onto the ground... That heavy sword in his hands... Just how terrifying of a weight did it have?!

"Seven Nation Ranking Tournament fourth match, Blue Wind Nation versus Sunflower Dew Nation, match start!"

The moment Feng Feiyan's voice fell, all of Sunflower Dew Nation's ten profound practitioners moved in an instant. Ripples of water surged, the glimmer of swords harsh and cold, as they directly closed in and assaulted Yun Che from all sides... The instantly surging blue colored profound light proved that they had actually used their full strength right from the start!

Clearly, that scene of Yun Che sweeping Navy Tide Nation away had left them with too great of a dread, as they simply didn't dare to hold anything in reserve.

"Countercurrent Sword Formation!!"

The strongest core profound practitioner took the lead. As the Sky Profound Sword in his hand swiftly danced, a sword beam bright to the extent of glaring was actually like flowing water, directly rushing toward the bottom half of Yun Che's body with an extremely eccentric and hard to grasp trajectory. Yun Che's body didn't move, and his left hand suddenly reached out. Channeling Frozen End Divine Arts, a cold light like that of stars glittered in the center of his palm.

Cling!!

The sword beam filled with turbulent profound energy of water was instantly frozen. Terrifying cold energy traveled from the frozen sword beam onto the sword, then onto his body, causing his arm to feel as though it was being ruthlessly stabbed by tens of million steel needles.

"AHH!!" The Sunflower Dew's core profound practitioner uttered a scream, as he retreated in a flurry. Only by channeling profound energy with all his might, did he finally barely manage to suppress the cold energy on his arms. The gaze he used toward Yun Che, was already filled with fear.

"What... What profound art is that?"

"Even the sword beam was actually frozen!!"

Ping!!

The energy sword beam from Sunflower Dew's profound practitioner shattered apart just like a frozen physical entity, scattering into a pile of fragmented ice. Yun Che opened both his arms, then, his entire body explosively flashed with blue light. As three dots of cold light flickered, three huge trees of Frozen End rose steeply from the ground and grew quickly. In the blink of an eye, countless branches of ice and foliage of snow dispersed out, weaving into a densely packed net of ice, shrouding the entire Phoenix Stage from view...

"Waah..." Astonished cries filled the arena.

Feng Xichen's eyes stared wide, agitated to the point that half of his bottom fell down from the chair from trembling... This was clearly the move used back then by the other girl whose strength was at least as strong as Emperor Profound, which directly locked up his two accompanying bodyguards. He distinctly remembered, it was precisely this terrifying ice attribute profound art that could actually freeze even the phoenix flame! He had never thought that Yun Che would actually be able to use this ice attribute profound art as well!

Beneath the tree gigantic trees, the ten Sunflower Dew practitioners were undoubtedly all sealed within. Those branches and leaves of ice crystals that appeared extremely gorgeous, were still like dreadful chains from hell, firmly binding and suppressing every single part of their entire bodies. The ten all stared with wide eyes, crazily channeling their profound energy, but none could struggle free by even the slightest bit. Instead, their entire bodies froze stiffer and stiffer under that catastrophe-like cold energy, as their blood almost solidified.

Yun Che's face was expressionless. Swinging up the heavy sword, Dragon Fault drew out a enormous arc whilst carrying a faint

dragon's cry.

BANG!!!!

The overbearing power of the heavy sword swept horizontally outwards like a hurricane. The huge trees of Frozen End were instantly blown into pieces by the impact, the fluttering ice crystals were like stars blotting out the sky, magnificent to the extreme. As for the Sunflower Dew profound practitioners who were sealed and frozen within, they also flew far away along with the sky blotting ice crystals at the moment the Tree of Frozen End shattered, and fell more than three hundred meters away.

After landing, among the ten, none were able to stand up. The surface of their bodies were covered by a thin layer of ice, their complexions pale white, their lips blue and purple. Only after shivering for a long time while curling up, did they finally barely suppress down that frightening coldness and recover their strength to stand up. But other than that, they weren't really wounded either.

Yun Che ruthlessly oppressing Navy Tide, was because of their absolutely unrestrained humiliation and disgusting words and face. As for Sunflower Dew, since there was no enmity, it was natural to be a little more gentle when striking out.

"Blue Wind Nation wins." Feng Feihan glanced at Yun Che with a cold and serious gaze, then verdicted the outcome.

Sunflower Dew Nation's spectators were all silent, as the escorting profound practitioners also silently left their seats, to lend their arms to those Sunflower Dew practitioners who were swept out of the Phoenix Stage. Yun Che sweeping Navy Tide away in four breaths back then wasn't an illusion, and was even more so not irreproducible like a night flower blooming only once... Similarly, in just a short four breaths, Sunflower Dew Nation's ten profound practitioners were also all blown out of the Phoenix Stage. It was only that they were relatively lucky, and no one was injured by much. Moreover, with Navy Tide as a cushion, their conviction wouldn't go

so far as to collapse.

Yun Che's second battle once again resulted in an overwhelming victory. This time, there was already no one who dared to doubt Yun Che's mighty strength... Even if he had come from Blue Wind Nation, and was only at the obviously pitifully weak Earth Profound Realm.

"Ice profound energy? Why would he cultivate ice attribute profound arts?" Feng Hengkong gazed at Yun Che, as a puzzled expression formed between his brows. The great majority of the people present did not know about Yun Che and Divine Phoenix Sect's grievances, but Feng Hengkong did indeed know about Yun Che possessing the Phoenix bloodline... Possessing the Phoenix bloodline, yet cultivating ice attribute profound arts, moreover, to be able to display such a shocking power with it... This made him unable to not be secretly astonished in his heart while feeling puzzled.

"Seems like, a considerably interesting fella appeared in this session." In the match preparation area, a Phoenix disciple looked at Yun Che with his head turned to the side, and said while grinning.

"Senior Brother Feibai, if you are to blast away ten trash from the Phoenix Stage, what would be the shortest amount of time required?" A Phoenix disciple asked on a whim.

Feng Feibai smirked, as he extended four fingers: "Probably also four breaths. But this doesn't mean that I recognize that his strength is on the same level as me. His weapon is the heavy sword, which suits group battles in the first place."

"Hahahaha, that is of course. Even though his strength is unexpected, how can he compare to Senior Brother Feibai."

"However, to be honest, the strength he displayed until now, ought to not be all of his strength either. If I were to go against him, I really do not dare to say that I would definitely win. But if he wishes to beat me, heh, that's more so absolutely impossible." Feng Feibai said with a lofty laugh,

"Haha, as it should be. But this kid, to be able to receive such an evaluation from Senior Brother Feibai, it can be considered that he hasn't lived this life of his for nothing."

"Like this, it looks like the opponents we'll fight with mere formality would actually be Blue Wind Nation. This really is something that can't be expected no matter what." Another Phoenix disciple said while shrugging: "But the problem is, who would we choose to go up by then? Blue Wind only has one person, it's not like we can all go right? I can't pull my face down that low."

"If worst comes to worst, we can draw lots, rock-paper-scissors is fine too." A Phoenix disciple said indifferently.

Even though this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament had chosen the means of team battle in order to shorten the match schedule, in the end, when challenging Divine Phoenix Empire, Divine Phoenix Empire could totally send out ten people to fight... However, Blue Wind only had Yun Che alone. Their Divine Phoenix Empire, as the seven nations' high and mighty overlord that was unsurpassable and invincible since ancient times, how could they possibly fight against one with ten?

As the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament continued underway, the person who was treated as laughingstock at first, had now become the most dazzling focus of the entire tournament.

Grand Asura Nation versus Black Fiend Nation, Black Fiend Nation wins.

Divine Incense Nation versus Sunflower Dew Nation, Sunflower Dew Nation wins.

Navy Tide Nation versus Grand Asura Nation, Grand Asura Nation wins by a close margin.

Blue Wind Nation versus Grand Asura Nation, Blue Wind Nation wins.

.....

Divine Incense Nation versus Blue Wind Nation... Divine Incense Nation surrendered right away.

.....

Blue Wind Nation versus Black Fiend Nation... Blue Wind Nation wins!

The time consumed by a team battle was naturally much longer than an individual match. Not including the match of challenging Divine Phoenix Empire, there were a total of fifteen matches today. Divine Phoenix Empire had originally estimated that one match would take thirty to forty-five minutes, thus, even if the match schedule was compressed by a great extent, the time of one day was still somewhat scarce.

However, it was only four in the afternoon, and the fifteenth match was already over.

Because as long as it was a match that Yun Che went up in, every single one of them would be finished in the blink of an eye. After five matches, the total amount of time spent fighting didn't even surpass thirty breaths of time. The fourth match, Divine Incense Nation who knew that it was simply impossible to win, more so surrendered directly, so as not to let their nations' genius profound practitioners face injuries and deaths.

Navy Tide, Sunflower Water, Grand Asura, Divine Incense, Black Fiend; the five nations' level of profound strength, indeed far surpassed Blue Wind Nation. Similarly, in regards to the younger generation, Blue Wind Nation would be completely crushed by these five nations. But Yun Che's strength, wasn't merely just the apex of Blue Wind's young generation; it was more so the apex of Blue Wind's entire profound practicing world! It had long ago surpassed the level of the six nations' young generation by an incomparably far distance.

During this half a year, the one he annihilated was one of the strongest sect of Blue Wind Nation, the one he defeated was the number one of Blue Wind, the one he crushed was the Prince of Divine Phoenix, the one he killed... was even a bodyguard level being of Divine Phoenix Empire!

So how could it be possible for these five nations' young practitioners to even imagine, or compare to these experiences and achievements.

In Yun Che's eyes, these apex experts of five nations' young generation, were just like infants who had just learned how to walk. Let alone ten, even if there were twenty or thirty, he could easily crush them the same.

In terms of the same age, the level he was at was already not the six nations' level at all, but was at the seven nations' overlord... Divine Phoenix Sect's level!

As for the direction this tournament went, no one was able to predict it in advance. After Yun Che overwhelmingly defeated Black Fiend Nation, the last match of the six nations' battle also closed its curtains. And this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, entered the final epilogue with a speed unforeseen by anyone.

Challenging Divine Phoenix Empire!

=====

Chapter 436 – Phoenix Flame

“Navy Tide Nation, zero wins, sixth place of the Six Nations!”

“Divine Incense Nation, one win, fifth place of the Six Nations!”

“Grand Asura Nation, two wins, fourth place of the Six Nations!”

“Sunflower Dew Nation, three wins, third place of the Six Nations!”

“Black Fiend Nation, four wins, second place of the Six Nations!”

“Blue Wind Nation, five wins, first place of the Six Nations!”

Following Feng Feiyan’s announcement, the arena became a field of commotion. The six nations’ performances were extraordinarily harmonious, and did not need tiebreakers. As for the ranking results, absolutely no one was able to predict them before the start of the matches. Navy Tide Nation, top-ranked nation of the last ranking tournament that brimmed with confidence, had brought out a genius in this ranking tournament, yet he had been swept away Yun Che; their morale collapsed as they were utterly beaten. Blue Wind, which had always been there for a mere formality and a source of laughter, was now overwhelming dominant. With merely a one-man army... it had flattened the five nations! Shocking the entire audience.

Those few Blue Wind practitioners had long become emotionally moved... Blue Wind Nation had always been treated as a laughingstock and had only been able to gain a name of humiliation for itself in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament. But now, it had firmly stepped on top of the heads of all five nations! They had finally been able to thoroughly let off steam and stand proud. This was unprecedented in all of history, something they didn’t even dare dream of thinking about in the past.

And the one who brought them this tremendous glory was Yun Che.

What the Blue Wind practitioners wanted now was for the ranking tournament to quickly end. They would dash to those huge merchant guilds, and even if they had to spend all the money on them, they had to immediately purchase Hundred Thousand Sound Transmission Talismans and quickly transmit this great news of endless glory back to Blue Wind Nation.

Yet there was not the slightest of happiness on Yun Che's face. Since entering the arena up until now, his expression was always a field of calm... because in his heart, he was very clear that his previous matches were merely done to accomplish Cang Wanhe's dream; it was only for winning glory for Blue Wind, and nothing more. But this was not actually the true purpose that he had come to participate in the ranking tournament for.

To him, the real vicious battle... was about to start only now!

"The Six Nation Rankings have already been determined. Yun Che, do you wish to proceed on and battle my Divine Phoenix Empire?" After announcing the six nation rankings, Feng Feiyan's gaze turned toward Yun Che as he asked solemnly. Following the fall of his voice, an extremely low voice was sound-transmitted at Yun Che: "But I suggest that you'd best save a bit of effort."

At this time, only Yun Che and Divine Phoenix Empire's ten top-notch disciples remained in the preparation area.

The gaze of the entire audience fell upon Yun Che's body, waiting for his response. Whether or not he picked to challenge Divine Phoenix, the name "Yun Che" would spread throughout the Profound Sky Seven Nations within one night, becoming a name that would surge through all of the Profound Sky practicing world. Him not choosing to challenge them was alright, and him being crushingly defeated when challenging was also alright, none of that would be of any effect... because that was Divine Phoenix Empire, Divine Phoenix Sect!

Before Feng Feiyan's voice fell, Yun Che had already leapt up high,

landing on the Phoenix Stage as Dragon Fault immediately appeared within his hands. The enormous heavy sword's pressure rolled up a screaming wind vortex, roughly splitting apart the surrounding atmosphere. He stood on the stage, raised his head, and said: "Of course I'll fight! I didn't come here today to aim for a measly second place! Instead... I came here to stomp your Divine Phoenix Sect down!"

Once Yun Che's extremely arrogant words came out, the entire audience instantly quieted. Then, he was drowned in sounds of ridicule coming from everywhere.

"F*ck! This guy's actually this arrogant. Judging by his words, could it be that he's absurdly thinking of defeating Divine Phoenix Sect?"

"What arrogance?! It's just simply ignorant to the point of being ridiculous."

"Who do you think you are?! Wanting to become number one, dream on!"

"Just because you defeated the five nations by yourself, you think you're qualified to challenge Divine Phoenix Sect? And to even stomp Divine Phoenix Sect down... That's just the biggest joke I've heard in my entire life!"

"You had already been impressive enough, why the f*ck are you rampant in front of Divine Phoenix Sect... I'm even blushing for him in embarrassment."

.....

Just due to this one line from Yun Che, everyone's astonished lament toward him changed into taunts and sneers that filled the stadium. Especially Divine Phoenix Empire's profound practitioners, they were a stretch of wild laughter and sneers, as though they heard the funniest of ignorant jokes. Profound practitioners from the five nations that had been swept by Yun Che were originally holding

back their bellyful of grievances, but now, it was as if they had found something to vent through. They taunted him without restraint as though jeering at a toad that wanted to eat swan meat.

"Haha..." A Phoenix disciple in the preparation area coldly laughed: "I initially thought that this kid wasn't that simple, but it looks like he's only an idiot who overestimates his abilities."

"Very normal, after impressively sweeping through the five nations, the unprecedented inflation of his ego is understandable." Another Phoenix disciple shrugged.

"But he obviously found the wrong opponent. It seems like took us to be the same as those five nation group of rookies that aren't even worth looking at. Haa, he is, after all, from Blue Wind. I suppose that's just how large of a scope he has." The Phoenix disciple that spoke drew back the corners of his mouth as he shook his little finger.

On the Divine Phoenix Empire's seating area, the various princes, elders, and palace masters all laughed in disdain. However, Feng Hengkong's brows sunk as his gaze became sharp and overcast. At this moment, he realized that he was mistaken about something... He originally had the same thoughts as Feng Ximing and the rest, thinking that Yun Che had taken the initiative to come to the ranking tournament to challenge Divine Phoenix Sect because he knew that he could not hide. After all, he, with the Phoenix bloodline, only had two fated choices to make.

One was to swear loyalty to Divine Phoenix Sect and become a Divine Phoenix Sect member forever, so to preserve his life.

The other was to die.

Him taking the initiative to come could mean that he had selected the former. If he allowed Divine Phoenix Sect to find him, then it obviously meant that he chose the latter.

Feng Hengkong had always thought that him coming to the ranking

tournament while displaying his might without restraint was him deliberately exhibiting himself to Divine Phoenix Sect, proving to them that he was not trash, that he had the qualifications to enter Divine Phoenix Sect.

But now, once those words of his came out, it was obvious that he was provoking Divine Phoenix Sect!

And those purposefully brief sweeps on his opponents in each and every match... If thought like that, then he wasn't even showing off, and instead... was giving Divine Phoenix Sect a demonstration!

What exactly does he want to do? Could it be that he truly thinks that he had the qualifications and ability to go head on against Divine Phoenix Sect?

"Haha, then you mean you wish to represent Blue Wind Nation and defeat Divine Phoenix Empire to seize first place in this session's ranking tournament?" Feng Feiyan laughed faintly. Even though he laughed, there was not the least bit of emotion. His thoughts right now, were about identical with Feng Hengkong's... The reason why he came here, was not to reach a compromise with Divine Phoenix Sect with his surrender; instead, he clearly wanted to use force!

Feng Feiyan sneered inwardly... Yun Che having such strength at only nineteen years of age was comparable to the upper echelons of his peers in Divine Phoenix Sect. As for his level skipping abilities, they were nearly unimaginable. With his show of talent today, if he was willing to permanently become a member of Divine Phoenix Sect, he, as an elder, would be the first to approve. Even if he had offended Thirteenth Prince in the past, that could also become a bygone. He believed that Feng Hengkong and the other elders were also of the same opinion.

After all, no sects would want a wastrel, and no sect would reject an astonishingly gifted young disciple.

He previously thought that Yun Che had opened a way out, so much

that he might even even acquire a position that wasn't low in Divine Phoenix Sect, but he just so wanted to pick a death route!

"Daring to proclaim that you would stomp our Divine Phoenix Empire down in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, you are the first one since forever." Feng Feiyan put on a fake smile: "Even I suddenly admire your boldness somewhat."

What he said was "boldness", not "courage" or "guts". Naturally, the element of ridicule was comparatively more.

"However, this 'first place', won't be realized with words, and won't be realized with delusions either; rather, it'll depend on whether or not you have such qualifications and strength!" Feng Feiyan's voice became heavier by some, as his gaze turned toward the ten participating profound practitioners of Divine Phoenix Sect: "My Phoenix disciples, did you understand that? Blue Wind Nation's profound practitioner has already issued challenges to you, and also proclaimed that he will take the first place in this Ranking Tournament. Which one of you will go forth?"

What he said was "which one", not to fight as a team.

Yun Che was alone. Even though for all ten of Divine Phoenix Sect's people to be dispatched wouldn't be violating the rules at all, it would undoubtedly draw the mockery of others. And with their Divine Phoenix Sect's dignity, they definitely felt that it was beneath them to do so. Therefore, what Feng Feiyan meant was to clearly just dispatch one person, yet the other meaning was clearly... any random one, would easily beat Yun Che.

Just as Feng Feiyan's voice fell, a person amongst the Phoenix disciples walked out with slow steps. He said with a mild yet insipid tone as he walked: "It is nearly five in the afternoon now. Just two more hours, and the skies will darken. But tomorrow's matter of exploring Primordial Profound Ark is more important than even the heavens, and require sufficient time to make prior preparations. So this match, ought best to be finished quickly."

As he spoke, the man had already gently floated up. His phoenix clothing fluttered as it brought up numerous dazzling streams of golden light, then landed on top of the Phoenix Stage as though a light feather. He looked at Yun Che with a smile on his face: "So this match, let this prince do it."

"Ah... it's Fourteenth Prince!" A wave of shocked cries came from the spectator seating area. This outcome, was entirely out of their expectations.

"Fourteenth Prince would actually personally act to deal with Yun Che? Isn't this thinking too highly of him!"

"Did you hear what Fourteenth Prince said? He's doing it in order to save time, and finish the battle quickly. After all, tomorrow is the day to enter the Primordial Profound Ark."

The one who leapt onto the Phoenix Stage and stood before Yun Che, was shockingly the Fourteenth Prince of Divine Phoenix Empire... The one who possessed terrifying aptitude, whose profound strength was as great as Emperor Profound Realm rank eight —— Feng Xiluo!

Facing Yun Che, he faintly smiled, without any posture of anxiousness before a battle.

Feng Hengkong secretly nodded... Using Feng Xiluo to battle Yun Che, was also the outcome he most wanted to see. Even though Yun Che had swept through everything before and the combat power he exhibited was around the fourth level of the Emperor Profound Realm, any of the ten Phoenix disciples could still crush him. However, no one could guarantee that this would be all of Yun Che's strength. If he had hidden it to some extent, and also possessed extremely powerful trump cards, then the Phoenix disciples who battled with him would have the possibility of not winning, and even losing.

Even though this possibility was next to nil, even it was only a one out of a billionth chance, they still absolutely could not be rash!

Because the Divine Phoenix Sect, who had been the mightiest in Profound Sky for an entire five thousand years, could not afford to lose! They absolutely must not lose, either.

But if it was Feng Xiluo who came on stage, then there would definitely be no possibility of losing.

At the same time, the lines Feng Xiluo spoke when coming onto the stage were also incredibly ingenious; they didn't expose the high regard they held Yun Che at in the slightest, but rather was a type of condescension... Because the reason for him to personally exchange moves with Yun Che, was to "save time". Which was clearly saying that he could easily defeat Yun Che with the effort of lifting a palm.

"Hm!" Feng Feiyan nodded: "That's fine too. Seems like, watching an entire day's of matches also made Fourteenth Prince's hands somewhat itchy. Then, Divine Phoenix Empire, will let Fourteenth Prince Feng Xiluo have a battle with Yun Che! Even though our Divine Phoenix Empire has ten participating people, we still disdain to oppress someone through an unfair numbers advantage!"

"Thirty-ninth session of Profound Sky Ranking Tournament, the battle that decides first and second place, now begins!!"

With a wave of his palm, Feng Feiyan cleanly and succinctly issued out the order to start the match.

Whoosh!!

Feng Xiluo raised his arms, as a ball of scorching hot flames burned up in the center of his palm. Looking at Yun Che, he said with an insipid smile: "Yun Che, even though I don't know where you got your confidence from, you will right away find out how laughable this confidence of yours is. You and the ones who were defeated by you are beings of two different levels; while I and you, are also the same. But before this, I will give you a chance, to let you properly experience my Divine Phoenix Sect's unparalleled phoenix flames."

"Experience phoenix flames?" Yun Che replied with the same dull

smile: "That won't be necessary. Phoenix flames huh, I can't say who will experience whose yet!!"

Yun Che extended his palms, and a ball of scarlet colored phoenix flames burned up extremely quickly. The height that the flames soared, had even far surpassed the phoenix flames in Feng Xiluo's hand.

Clamor————

The moment the phoenix flames in Yun Che's hand were revealed, the entire arena instantly blew up. The expressions of the Phoenix disciples all changed simultaneously. Feng Hengkong as well as Feng Feiyan and the others all knitted their brows greatly.

Hua Minghai and Ling Jie nearly fell down beneath their seats from being startled. The two both knew very well that Yun Che possessed the Phoenix bloodline... When he directly voiced his provocation at Divine Phoenix Empire, these two were already frightened quite a bit. But now, under the condition that Divine Phoenix Sect didn't take the initiative to mention the matter of his bloodline, he actually ignited phoenix flames in front of all the outstanding people in the world on his own accord...

Him specially coming here, was it just to resolve grievances, or was it to fight it out until the end!!

=====

Chapter 437 – Heating Up

“Ph... Phoenix Flame?!”

“That’s right! That is indeed the Phoenix flame’s aura, it’s impossible for any other profound fire to imitate.”

“How is Yun Che suddenly able to ignite Phoenix flames? Don’t you have to have the Phoenix bloodline in order to ignite Phoenix flames? Could it be... that Yun Che is of the Phoenix bloodline?”

“Yun Che can’t be a member of Divine Phoenix Sect, or else why would he come out to represent Blue Wind Nation and dare to provoke Divine Phoenix Empire... Could it be that he’s of Divine Phoenix Sect’s bloodline that leaked out?”

“But Divine Phoenix Sect absolutely wouldn’t allow the bloodline of the Phoenix to be leaked out in the slightest...”

The Phoenix flames Yun Che had ignited caught everyone’s attention. No one would’ve ever thought that such an unexpected scene would appear at the beginning of the last match.

Forget about the entire audience of spectators, even those from the Four Great Sacred Grounds had shocked expressions.

“Hehh, looks like a pretty good program is about to start on stage.” Ye Xinghan narrowed his eyes, as though watching a play. Shooting a glance at Ling Kun, he asked lazily: “Elder Ling it appears that you don’t see too shocked about this.”

“Because two years ago, I already knew that this kid possessed the Phoenix bloodline.” Ling Kun answered.

“Oh?”

“My guess was right, it was due to Divine Phoenix Sect’s pressure that he came to participate in this Seven Nation Ranking

Tournament, to settle this bloodline matter. It's just that the way he intends to settle it is quite intriguing... I am the same as Young Hall Master, let's see what's the next item on this program. However, I don't believe that this Yun Che kid is simply courting death." Ling Kun leaned on his seat, also with a posture of watching a play.

Feng Feiyan was the nearest to Yun Che. He too, totally did not expect that Yun Che would actually take the initiative to ignite the Phoenix flame in front of everyone present and expose the fact that he possessed the Phoenix bloodline. Since the situation had already become like this, he naturally didn't bother to remain silent. His brows sunk as he said sternly: "Yun Che! My sect was planning to settle the matter about you possessing our Divine Phoenix Sect's bloodline after the ranking tournament, so it wouldn't influence the course of this ranking tournament, but it seems like you can no longer hold yourself back!"

"Right, I can't hold back any longer." Yun Che leaned over to the side, his face cold and grave, without the least bit of fear: "Because you Divine Phoenix Sect, owes me an explanation!!"

Yun Che's words were like thunderclaps echoing on a clear day, shocking the entire audience stupid.

The mighty lord of the Seven Nations, the unshakable Divine Phoenix Sect... owes him... an explanation?

He, a profound practitioner from Blue Wind, actually wants Divine Phoenix Sect to give him an explanation?

Feng Feiyan was stunned, then he didn't know whether he should be angry or laugh: "Divine Phoenix Sect owes you an explanation? Hahahaha... In my entire life, I have never heard a joke as funny as this one."

Yun Che was expressionless as he distinctly enunciated each word: "Half a year ago in Blue Wind Imperial City, my wife Cang Yue and I were celebrating our wedding in the imperial palace. On that day,

the entire nation was suppose to celebrate with us, and overflow with joyousness. But..." Yun Che's gaze shifted, accurately focusing on Thirteenth Prince Feng Xichen, who was sitting in Divine Phoenix Empire's seating area: "Your Divine Phoenix Sect's Thirteenth Prince Feng Xichen actually brought two people along, unsolicited. Not only did they wreck my great wedding without reason, they even threatened to put me to death on the spot. If not for the fact that this Thirteenth Prince was a little weak and was driven away after being beaten severely injured by me, I probably would've died on my wedding day for no reason..."

"I previously had no grievances nor enmity with Divine Phoenix Sect, yet you guys wished to take my life just based on the comical word "bloodline". Is this your Divine Phoenix Sect's way of doing things?! If you guys still want to save some face, shouldn't you be giving me an explanation in front of everyone present?!"

Yun Che's righteous words were shocking to the core. He was but one person in Divine Phoenix City, in Divine Phoenix Sect's main headquarters, in front of Divine Phoenix Sect's core members and three million Profound Sky people, yet held no fear as he severely questioned this incomparably enormous number one sect of the Profound Sky Continent.

Aside from shock, everyone's reaction toward this was still shock. They never would've imagined that there would be someone... who was even just a young practitioner from Blue Wind Nation that had not reached twenty, would publicly question the entire Divine Phoenix Set without fear. How bold was this? How courageous, how brave?

And Yun Che's words had also more or less given the entire audience a basic summary of the grievances between Yun Che and Divine Phoenix Sect. Clearly, when Divine Phoenix Sect knew that Yun Che possessed the Phoenix bloodline, they sent Feng Xichen to deliver the ranking tournament invitation letter, and to handle Yun Che on the side... Because half a year ago, was exactly the time of when the

six nations received their invitation letters.

Everyone knew that their bloodline was Divine Phoenix Sect's biggest taboo, and that was understandable. For any sect, they absolutely wouldn't allow their core techniques to be leaked out, let alone the Phoenix bloodline, soul of the entire Divine Phoenix Sect.

But it seemed like this Thirteenth Prince Feng Xichen couldn't show off his prowess in front of this hard headed Yun Che, and had instead suffered a huge loss.

Feng Xichen's entire face became thoroughly red as everyone's gaze made him feel as though he was sitting on pins and needles. In front of the entire audience, Yun Che had actually just spoken out the events of that day. As a Divine Phoenix Prince, not only had he lost his dignity, his face had been completely obliterated. The lie he told Feng Ximing and Feng Hengkong had also no doubt been exposed... He firmly tightened his fists as he suddenly grew dizzy, so depressed that he nearly fainted right away. The expressions on the other princes' faces that gazed upon him were mostly all of gleeful delight for his misfortune.

Feng Ximing immediately stood up from his seat as he roared in a stern voice: "Insolence! Our Divine Phoenix Sect has always guarded our bloodline for five thousand years, and has never allowed even a bit of our bloodline to go out, everyone knows this! Yet you, are a bastard and mixed breed that our sect accidentally left wandering outside! According my Divine Phoenix Sect's sectoral rules, you either return to my Divine Phoenix Sect and won't allowed to leave for eternity, or you'll receive my sect's sanctions—— Death! How dignified was my Thirteenth brother; for him to personally deal with your matter was already giving you a face and chance as great as the sky. If you do not return to Divine Phoenix Sect, killing you would more so be right and proper. What face do you have to make a big fuss here!"

"HAHAHAHA!" Yun Che uttered a hearty laugh, and asked in reply: "Right and proper? Bullshit! I, Yun Che, was born in Blue Wind

Nation, grown up in Blue Wind Nation. Never have I used any resource of your Divine Phoenix Sect, nor have I ever received the slightest bit of grace from your Divine Phoenix Sect; I've never even drank a single mouthful of water from your Divine Phoenix Sect! Yet you start talking about whether I return and submit, or die... You actually still have the face to say right and proper? On what basis!!"

"On the basis that you have our Divine Phoenix Sect's bloodline! On the basis that you are a bastard who seeped out from my Divine Phoenix Sect!" Feng Ximing said in a stern voice.

"What a joke!" Yun Che coldly laughed with disdain: "Then, just on what basis do you think that the Phoenix bloodline in me, comes from your Divine Phoenix Sect!"

"Does that even need to be proven?" Feng Ximing also returned with a cold laugh: "My sect's Phoenix bloodline, comes from the grace of the Phoenix God, and was thereby able to proliferate, forming into the Divine Phoenix Sect today. In the entire Profound Sky Continent, only our Divine Phoenix Empire possesses the Phoenix bloodline!"

"Is that so?" Yun Che slowly spoke: "Then how do you know, that my Phoenix bloodline doesn't come from another legacy of the Phoenix God? The Phoenix Divine Beast had long ago disappeared in the ancient eras. The 'Phoenix God' spoken by you lot, is a tiny soul entity dispersed by the Phoenix Divine Beast for the purpose of leaving behind its bloodline. Scattered in various corners of the world, even in the same continent, there is a chance for multiple to appear, not simply one alone. You lot can obtain the heritage, on what basis do you think others can't!"

The moment these words of Yun Che's were uttered, the expressions of Divine Phoenix Sect's people all simultaneously changed. Feng Feiyan's face abruptly darkened, as he roared lowly: "Insolent youngster! To actually dare defile my sect's Phoenix God... You think I won't kill you here and now?!"

"Ha, fighting a battle of tongues with you lot really is wasting my

energy." Yun Che uttered a sneer. With the howling sound of wind before him, Dragon Fault was swung up, pointing at Fen Xiluo, as phoenix flames explosively burned on the sword's body: "Didn't you say that I, Yun Che, am a bastard leaked out of your Divine Phoenix Sect? Alright... then I'd like to see whether or not there is anyone of a similar age as me that can fell me here! If the young generation of your Divine Phoenix Sect who possess the orthodox bloodline doesn't even have anyone who can defeat me, then wouldn't that prove... that you guys, are the true bastards?!"

"How truly preposterous!" If not under the gazes of everyone, with the Sacred Grounds on the side as it was also the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament's arena, Feng Feiyan really wished he could just disregard his status as Great Elder, and personally go up and take Yun Che's life with a slap. With Divine Phoenix Sect's power and influence that imposed their might over the world, before them, just who did not tremble with fear and act respectfully? No one had ever dared to challenge Divine Phoenix Sect's dignity like so.

He pointed at Yun Che, and said with an overcast expression: "Well, very well... As a bastard whose body flows with the blood of our phoenix, you actually still dares to be so unbridled and arrogant... Very well! Fourteenth Prince, no need to hold back! Let this bastard understand what the pure and genuine Phoenix bloodline is!"

"Great Elder, be at ease." Feng Xiluo insipidly replied. His eyes narrowed and looked straight at Yun Che as he said with a low voice: "Haha, I originally only wanted you to immediately roll off the Phoenix Stage. But now, I've changed my mind. If I accidentally slipped and crippled your limbs and bloodline later, don't blame me, okay."

"I'm just afraid that the one crippled, will be you." Yun Che said in a cold voice.

"Still being insolent when death is upon your neck, truly laughable yet pitiful!" Feng Xiluo raised his arms as the palms of his hands simultaneously burned up with phoenix flames. Just as he was about

to step forward, a profound energy sound transmission from Feng Hengkong suddenly traveled to his ears:

“Do not underestimate the enemy! Attack with all your strength... kill him right away!”

Feng Xiluo froze for a bit, then his hand posture suddenly changed, as a scarlet colored lightning hissed through between his hands, then transforming into a approximately eight feet long lance that was entirely scarlet red like hot iron.

“It’s the Emperor Profound Weapon... Divine Phoenix Lance!! Fourteenth Prince actually utilized Divine Phoenix Lance from the start!”

“Seems like His Highness is completely enraged. I reckon it’s to make Yun Che lose miserably with the quickest speed, making him unable to speak up again.”

“Once Divine Phoenix Lance is out of the bag... Guess, how many moves does His Highness need to defeat him?” A Divine Phoenix disciple said leisurely.

“Seven moves.” Another Phoenix disciple casually answered.

“Seven moves? You really are thinking too highly of that Blue Wind brat.” The Phoenix disciple in front of him curled his lips to a great extent, then sneered: “At most five moves, that brat would be burnt to the point that his biological father wouldn’t recognize him!”

=====

Chapter 438 – Dragon Fault, Divine Phoenix

An Emperor Profound sword, an Emperor Profound lance; just the mere aura of the two Emperor Profound weapons distorted the air above the Phoenix Stage. Feng Xiluo shifted his eyes, glancing at Yun Che's Dragon Fault as his brows slightly raised... The Divine Phoenix Lance in his hands had more than three thousand years of history, experienced numerous battles and refining, and had long ago developed a consciousness. Only the strongest practitioner of Divine Phoenix Sect's young generation was worthy of possessing it. Once the Divine Phoenix Lance came out, numerous other lances would tremble.

But at this moment on the Phoenix Stage, Dragon Fault's aura was actually mutually contending against it, with both sharing the limelight! The Divine Phoenix Lance that he was immensely proud of, was actually unable to suppress a Blue Wind practitioner's Emperor Profound heavy sword!

But very quickly, his attention shifted away from Dragon Fault. Forget about the Emperor Profound sword in his hands, even if it was a Tyrant Profound sword, he would not still not care. He used one hand to casually support the lance as his other hand stretched out toward Yun Che. With an entire body full of openings while not concealing the contempt he had for Yun Che, he said: "Make your move, it is beneath my dignity to make the first move against a bastard who overestimated his abilities."

"Really? I just happen to feel the opposite."

Yun Che laughed coldly as he stepped forward. Phoenix flames violently ignited on his entire body, rapidly spreading toward Dragon Fault. A shocking aura suddenly burst forth like a volcanic eruption as he directly struck forward toward Feng Xiluo. Relying on the Sky Profound Universal Pellet to forcefully promote his strength, Yun Che's currently overall strength had long surpassed the level he was at before, back when he was fighting Feng Chihuo. And with every

increase in profound strength, his overall strength was amplified by several folds if compared to an ordinary profound practitioner. Hence, even though he was faced with such a contrast in level, the Feng Xiluo who surpassed Feng Chihuo, he was still not afraid.

“Imposing aura, is not bad. However... that’s not of any use.”

Facing Yun Che’s blazing heavy sword attack filled with an astonishing imposing aura, Feng Xiluo still wore an indifferent smile. With a leisurely posture, his right hand that grasped onto the Divine Phoenix Lance was still horizontal, without any indication of him attacking with his lance. Only his left hand slowly extended, casually releasing out a Phoenix fire beam that was as sharp as lightning.

RIIIP!!

The Phoenix flame above Dragon Fault collided with Feng Xiluo’s fire beam in the sky, creating an ephemeral ear-piercing tearing sound. The two flame radiances immediately conjured wisps of smoke, the Phoenix flame on top of Dragon Fault was torn apart as though it were paper, instantly becoming two halves.

The faces of Divine Phoenix Empire’s profound practitioners and Phoenix disciples all revealed sneers as they jeered at how much Yun Che had overestimated himself. Ling Jie and Hua Minghai’s heart immediately rose to their throats... The imposing aura of Yun Che’s strike was incomparably large, but Feng Xiluo was a terrifying level eight Throne!!! In front of Feng Xiluo’s absolutely overwhelming strength, his unreasonable strength could be said to not be threatening at all. Saying that it was unable to withstand a single blow was not too excessive.

“Heh, trash is trash...” Feng Xiluo’s face was filled with contempt, but just as he revealed his sneer, it immediately froze on his face. He had indeed easily torn apart the Phoenix flame, but after the flame, a force as great as a mountain suddenly came battering over. This force was unreasonably tyrannical, and had even caused him to stop breathing for a short while.

The Phoenix flame Yun Che had released was just ordinary phoenix fire that did not use the World Ode of the Phoenix. Possessing both the Phoenix bloodline and World Ode of the Phoenix, if Feng Xiluo wished to control ordinary phoenix fire, it was naturally as easy as pie. However, he was absolutely unable to tear apart the peerless berserking strength of the heavy sword!

Feng Xiluo startled, and the Phoenix flame in his hands immediately burst out with full power. However, the oppressiveness of Yun Che's heavy sword far exceeded his expectations; his arm sunk down as his entire body was pushed back. His gaze sharpened. As he swung his right arm, the originally motionless Divine Phoenix Lance released an angry aura that soared to the skies. Like a huge ferocious flame beast, it heavily smashed toward Dragon Fault.

"Boom!!"

Divine Phoenix Lance and Dragon Fault fiercely collided as countless Phoenix fire beam diverged outwards, scattering to become scarlet colored flame serpents that filled the sky. An enormous current of energy exploded between the two people, exactly like that of a small scale volcanic eruption. Feng Xiluo's gaze darkened, then, with an explosive force, the Phoenix flame on top of the Divine Phoenix Lance immediately rose by several fold, directly knocking Yun Che up in the air.

Bang!!

Yun Che spun in midair, and steadily landed over sixty meters away. Beneath the recoil, Feng Xiluo was also heavily forced back a step... Although it was merely a step back, to him, it was already the highest humiliation.

Ling Jie and Hua Minghai now let out a long breath of relief... Even though one was knocked in the air and one, who hurriedly attacked with a lance, had taken a step back, the difference between Yun Che and Feng Xiluo was still far too distant. However, neither of them had suffered a grave defeat, and making Divine Phoenix Sect's number

one genius take a step back was still considered to be consoling.

"Not bad, not bad at all." Feng Xiluo levered the lance and slowly nodded, his face with the expression of a strong practitioner praising a weaker one: "I never expected this, you're actually a tiny bit stronger than what I had imagined. Even though it's mainly because I only used thirty percent of my strength, you still were able to force me to swing my Divine Phoenix Lance once, worthy of praise."

Yun Che only kept a calm face, not even bothering to smile.

"Very well, since I've already used the Divine Phoenix Lance, then I'll let you properly have a taste of the Divine Phoenix Lance's power. Though both are Emperor Profound Weapons, weapons are still dead. How large of a power they could display still depends on its owner. Hold onto your Emperor sword tight, let me play for a while longer, don't drop it after only two or three moves." Feng Xiluo held the Divine Phoenix Lance horizontal to his chest with the faint smile of an inquisitor, as the invisible imposing aura that came from the Divine Phoenix Lance slightly distorted the surrounding atmosphere.

The corners of Yun Che's mouth twitched, forming a faint smile. Feng Xiluo was a genius, there was no need for any doubt, and he was also the top genius of Divine Phoenix Sect, the number one sect. However, the word "genius" often coexisted together with the word "arrogance", this was true in no matter which plane. Especially when they were met with praise and other people's admiration throughout one's life. As for those who never had a rival within their peers, even if they appeared humble on the surface, they had long since made it a habit to never put anyone in their eyes.

This also included Yun Che.

However, what was different about Yun Che was that although he was arrogant, he would never deliberately underestimate an opponent.

"Then, let the games begin... you'd better receive them well!"

Feng Xiluo swung the Divine Phoenix Lance and the Phoenix flames on its entire body immediately combusted as a scorching heatwave surged in every direction. Wrapped in Phoenix flame, the Divine Phoenix Lance trembled unceasingly while uttering a phoenix cry at the same time, as though it was alive.

Crack!

The Phoenix Stage below Feng Xiluo's feet suddenly ruptured.

This time, Feng Xiluo moved first. With a raise of his long lance, a tsunami-like flaming tornado charged toward Yun Che. The shattered stones below were lifted up by the tornado, turned into fine powder midair.

"Ayah, His Highness seems to be a little bit serious now. Looks like he's not really in a good mood because he was forced to use the Divine Phoenix Lance earlier." A Phoenix disciple commented.

"Tch! His Highness was just too careless, that's all. If he added a little more force back then, how could that Yun Che brat possibly make His Highness use the Divine Phoenix Lance? But it looks like His Highness being in a somewhat bad mood is right. This Yun Che brat... hehe, he's finished. I can't even imagine how tragic he'll be."

The entire atmosphere above the Phoenix Stage was completely thrown in disorder as a terrifying aura that clearly expanded the air itself became visible to the naked eye. In front of this remarkably strong attack, Yun Che's expression turned grim. Opening "Burning Heart", he ignited a surging Phoenix flame, then fearlessly met it head-on. The berserk profound energy poured into Dragon Fault as a "Falling Moon Sinking Star" ruthlessly smashed onto the flaming tornado.

"He's courting death!!" Seeing that Yun Che did not block or retreat, and was instead actively confronting the attack, three words simultaneously appeared in every Divine Phoenix profound practitioner's heart.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

As a chain of profound energy explosions crazily echoed, the splattering Phoenix flame was like a shower brought along by a storm as it madly danced about. The Phoenix Stage below the two suddenly split apart, as fine cracks quickly spread out, resembling spiderwebs; the longest crack spread directly to the edge of the Phoenix Stage.

The Phoenix Stage was a place where Divine Phoenix Sect held internal competitions, so it was naturally incredibly firm. It wasn't constructed of ordinary stone, but rather, the toughest of jade stone. In the previous six nation battles, even though the matches were intense, the Phoenix Stage's pavement was not damaged in the slightest. But now, a large expanse of the Phoenix Stage had ruptured due to the collision of the two's weapons.

"Wha... What kind of a power is this!!"

Not one of the five nations' participating practitioners were not trembling with fear. They had personally experienced how hard this Phoenix Stage was; even when they used all their strength to smash upon it, they couldn't even make a little hole... How terrifying was this power that had actually split apart the Phoenix Stage?!

BOOOM!!!

After the last echo of explosion, the two parted in the midst of scattering flame and broken stone. Then, they landed on separate edges of the Phoenix Stage... Feng Xiluo landed steadily, and Yun Che... also landed steadily.

"Wh... what!!"

Everyone was shocked still; all of the eyes of Divine Phoenix Empire's citizens convexed, not daring to believe their own eyes.

Everyone clearly saw how terrifying Feng Xiluo's lance strike was, for even the incomparably hard Phoenix Stage had been split apart.

But Yun Che had actually blocked it... and had even completely blocked it!!

With five thousand years of history and the World Ode of the Phoenix as its core and foundation, numerous profound techniques had been created by Divine Phoenix Sect. What Feng Xiluo cultivated was the extremely powerful "Absolute Flame Divine Phoenix Lance". The moved used previously was "Absolute Flame Divine Phoenix Lance's" powerful "Glorious Phoenix Dance".

When he had been forced to use the Divine Phoenix Lance due to Yun Che's attack, he was secretly resentful, so he decided to directly defeat Yun Che with a "Glorious Phoenix Dance"... Never did he expect that it could actually be completely blocked by Yun Che.

Not only was the Yun Che in front of him standing stably, his expression was calm, without any indication that he had been harmed; even his aura didn't have the slightest bit of turbulence. And at this moment, his figure suddenly blurred, appearing behind Feng Xiluo so fast that he didn't even have time to breathe. With a swing of his sword toward his waist, a surging profound energy storm assaulted Feng Xiluo, lifting the entirety of the Phoenix robe he wore.

"Phoenix Sweeping the Heavens!" Feng Xiluo's complexion darkened as the Divine Phoenix Lance was thrown out, screaming alongside a scorching heatwave.

Bang!!

As the Divine Phoenix Lance fiercely smashed onto Dragon Fault, an intense dragon cry simultaneously sounded with a sharp phoenix cry. Both of the two's Phoenix flames were torn into thousands of chaotically fluttering flame tongues, burning the atmosphere with hissing sounds.

Boom Boom Boom Boom Boom.....

Flames scattered higher and higher as a large majority of the Phoenix Stage was submerged inside the tongues of flame which filled the sky. The two people and two Emperor weapons, were like two enormous cruel sharks that frantically tore within the sea of fire as they clashed wildly. Each collision would cause the Phoenix Stage to tremble acutely.

So intense that even the entire arena faintly quaked.

The expressions of Divine Phoenix's profound practitioners changed, the expressions of profound practitioners from the six nations also changed. Even the expressions of Divine Phoenix Sect's big shots had become heavy.

In front of Feng Xiluo, who was using the Divine Phoenix Lance, Yun Che... was actually still not at a disadvantage!!

Within the entire audience, almost every person did not dare to believe what their eyes were seeing.

Especially the six nation's profound practitioners, their souls continuously shuddered acutely. That frightening collision and that strength, terrifying to the point of unfathomable, incessantly burst apart the Phoenix Stage... Was this really a battle between two youths?

Forget about Feng Xiluo, he was, after all, of Divine Phoenix Sect's imperial bloodline, and was even known as the number one genius of Divine Phoenix Sect in this generation. But Yun Che came from Blue Wind, and he was even younger than Feng Xiluo by three years... To actually be strong to such an extent, how exactly did he cultivate?!

Those profound practitioners of the five nations that had exchanged hands with Yun Che previously were stunned on the spot... They were originally resentful because Yun Che had defeated them with a brief sweep, but now, as they stared blankly at Yun Che's power, they realized that Yun Che had completely gone easy on them. If Yun Che

felt like killing all of them, it would be as easy as blowing off dust.

=====

Chapter 439 – Moon of the Phoenix

The heavy sword uses overbearingness as its principle; even though the lance could not match the heavy sword in overbearingness, it was much more agile than the heavy sword. The sea of fire continued to spread amidst the two Emperor Profound weapons, and had already gradually spread outwards to over one hundred and fifty meters, as the flames engulfed the two's figures. From the spectator seats, one could only hear the thunderous collision sounds and the overwhelming tide of flames that ferociously danced non-stop.

Ling Jie and Hua Minghai both leaned their upper bodies forward, their eyes stared wider than an ox... Ling Jie had never questioned Yun Che's might, but he absolutely had never dared to think that Yun Che would actually be so much more powerful than when he defeated his grandfather, Ling Tianni, back then! The Yun Che back then was at the seventh level of the Earth Profound Realm, and currently, he was at the tenth level of the Earth Profound Realm... This difference of three levels in the Earth Profound Realm was actually like two people as different as heaven and earth!

"Boss Yun... was actually... this strong..." Hua Minghai's voice trembled as he spoke with a dull face. What Yun Che currently faced up against was the number one of the Divine Phoenix Sect's young generation, you know!! He had actually fought without being at a disadvantage! As he thought back to the time when he had been knocked down from the sky with one palm after being seen through in his disguise as Yan Xiaohua when attempting to approach Yun Che, cold sweat instantly fell from his forehead... If Yun Che didn't go easy on him back then, his little life would've long ended to the point where he couldn't die anymore.

In the preparation area, the complexions of all nine genius Phoenix disciples changed... They had previously been fully confident that Yun Che could never be their match, and defeating him would be as easy as turning one's hand. But now, they just discovered that they

were viewing the sky from the bottom of a well. The arrogant and conceited one was not Yun Che... but they themselves!!

The terrifying strength Yun Che displayed could easily suppress any one of them!

"This guy..." A Phoenix disciple gritted his teeth as he said resentfully. A person born from Blue Wind, who was even younger than them in age, and was even mocked and belittled without any restraint, actually exhibited a strength that made even them feel frightened. This made their face burn with fever, and their heart distressing to the extreme.

"Indeed excessively strong." Another Phoenix Disciple deeply took a breath in: "This kind of combat strength, is basically nearing the eighth level of the Emperor Profound... Even though it greatly shocked us, to triumph over Fourteenth Prince is still only wishful thinking."

"That's right. Fourteenth Prince hasn't used his full strength at all yet. The World Ode of the Phoenix was merely used to the second stage at most. I just don't understand, why does he want to fight with that brat with this kind of condition?"

"It ought to be that Fourteenth Prince wanted to see this kid's limit? Hmph, it's almost over one hundred exchanges now, this must already be the utmost limit of Yun Che's strength. As long as Fourteenth Prince is willing... He can completely suppress Yun Che at any time."

"Phoenix Wings Breaks Mountains!!!"

Amidst the wave of fire, Feng Xiluo ripped apart the flames, took off into the air, and smashed his lance down. As land-slide esque loud noise resounded, the phoenix flames atop the Phoenix Stage were seemed to be swept up by a hurricane and completely went into a boiling state. A dozen meter wide huge pit was smashed out from the incomparably tough Phoenix Stage. Under the impact from the

enormous energy, Yun Che was blown far away, landing on the edge of Phoenix Stage.

Feng Xiluo floated in midair, his gaze locking onto Yun Che's position, as a trace of sinister curl appeared on the corner of his mouth: "Not bad, to have actually endured again, then... how about this move."

Feng Xiluo raised his arms up, lifting the Divine Phoenix Lance high up in the air. In an instant, it was as though the ferociously burning sea of phoenix flames received some kind of irresistible pull, as they all took off into the air, rushing straight at the skies. Then, they quickly compiled at skies above the Divine Phoenix Lance's tip. In a blink of the eye, above Feng Xiluo, there converged a nearly sixty meters wide, red as blood... Moon made of flames!

"AHHHHH...W-W-What is that!!" Ling Jie's eyes stared wide, as he shouted with an alarmed voice. The entire arena, was also entirely filled with shocked shouts.

In every single round of exchange Feng Xi Luo did with Yun Che, he would always sprinkle down large amounts of phoenix flames. The phoenix flames continued to burn on the Phoenix Stage, not extinguishing for a long time, and finally converged into a sea of flames... But at this time, it was unexpectedly all gathered up by him in an instant. Very clearly, the phoenix flames he sprinkled out when fighting with Yun Che back then, was all preparing for this moment.

The moon of flame on the lance tip was bright red and glaring, its imposing might as tumultuous as a tsunami, as vast as a mountain. Even those spectators over a kilometer away felt as though their chests were being pressed down by a heavy stone plate, unable to breathe. It could be imagined just how terrifying of an imposing pressure Yun Che, who wasn't even sixty meters away from Feng Xiluo, was bearing.

"It's really a tough job for you to play with me for such a long time. To be very honest, your strength has made me somewhat astonished. Your limit, I have also probed to a good extent. Yet unfortunately, my

limit, you do not have the qualification to see." Feng Xiluo smiled dully. Even though the mightiness of Yun Che's strength wasn't merely making him 'somewhat astonished' at all, it was entirely shocking. But still, he was the number one prodigy of Divine Phoenix Sect, and the strength Yun Che displayed as of now, still had no way of defeating him. He said with a relaxed expression: "For people of the same age, to be able to play for so long with me, you can actually be considered the first. But too bad, it was merely in deliberation by me. I was merely deliberately taking time laying out phoenix flames, so that I can give you a... most magnificent... death!!"

"Divine Phoenix Lance Final Style —— Moon of the Phoenix!!"

Feng Xiluo's black hair fluttered, his phoenix attire flapped in the wind, as the Divine Phoenix Lance swung down in midair. Instantly, the enormous moon of flame in the air rumbled, then, like a meteor on the horizon, it abruptly plummeted down toward Yun Che.

Rrrmmm...

Everywhere the Moon of the Phoenix arrived at, the space would be severely deformed from compression. The Phoenix Stage below actually distinctively caved in under the incomparably enormous power. Feeling the enormous energy this Moon of the Phoenix carried, Yun Che's expressions became extremely solemn. His steps quickly drew back, after a few steps, his back leg all of a sudden stepped onto the edge of the Phoenix Stage.

The Phoenix Stage restricted the two's area of battle; falling off from the Phoenix Stage meant losing this battle. If it was an ordinary battle, he still could choose to dodge with all his strength with the help of Star God's Broken Shadow. Yet for him who couldn't fly, who was forced to a dead end, other than stepping down from the Phoenix Stage, there was no chance to dodging at all.

Sss... Sss...

Moon of the Phoenix enlarged in the reflections on his pupils and

gradually filled his entire field of vision. Under the powerful energy surges, Yun Che's ears were entirely engulfed by the extremely violent energy's rumbling sounds, and couldn't hear anything else at all. The flame's scorching could not affect him in the slightest, but the chaotic profound energy within, was destroying Yun Che's clothing piece by piece.

Yun Che's brows slowly sunk down. Just as Moon of the Phoenix was less than thirty meters away from him, a fierce glint suddenly flashed through his eyes.

"Haa!!!"

With a loud roar, Yun Che raised his heavy sword across. Both of his arms swelled, as his blood vessels could distinctly seen popping up on his skin, swollen to the point that they might burst at any time. His entire body's profound energy was channeled to its limit, pouring into his arms without any reservation. Behind him, a streak of the Sky Wolf's dark blue image roared in fury.

"Sky Wolf Slash!!"

Yun Che vaulted up, and initiatively met toward the Moon of the Phoenix. The heavy sword Dragon Fault, injected with the Sky Wolf's strength, ferociously smashed onto the Moon of the Phoenix. The azure colored Sky Wolf image, as though a sharp sword that could break through every obstacle, violently pierced into the flame moon.

BOOM!!!!

Moon of the Phoenix exploded with a loud bang, bursting out an overflowing wave of flame that covered the sky and the sun, even submerging the entire Phoenix Stage, which naturally engulfed Yun Che within. However, this wasn't actually where the true power of this "Moon of the Phoenix" move laid; the flames that burst apart did not disperse just like that, and instead turned into one after another malevolent lances of flame. In the blink of an eye, the entire sky above the Phoenix Stage was entirely filled with lances of flame.

Thousands upon thousands of them, under the control of Feng Xiluo's power, all shot toward Yun Che's location.

It was as though a lance shower that reeked of blood had descended.

"Die!!" Feng Xiluo laughed wildly in a loud voice. He was convinced that just the explosion from the Moon of the Phoenix was already enough to leave Yun Che barely alive, as well as destroy all of his profound energy defense. And the following lances of flame, would bore countless see-through holes on his body, violently killing him on the spot.

Originally, he didn't plan to kill Yun Che; after all, this was the arena of Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, and he was in the front of the Seven Nations and Sacred Grounds. Killing one's opponent was likely to invite denunciation, and there even would be unnecessary trouble. But killing Yun Che was the order that Feng Hengkong personally sound-transmitted to him, so naturally he would act to kill without any qualms.

"B... Boss!!"

Ling Jie's pupils constricted in fear, his legs trembled non-stop. Looking on helplessly as Yun Che was engulfed by the burst flame moon, then being pierced right after by countless terrifying lance beams... Under this kind of frightening attack, even ten lives would entirely wither away.

"...This is really... too scary, Yun Che ought to have... thoroughly died, right?"

"You don't say! If he still isn't dead even from this, I'll walk backwards from now on."

"Sigh, a waste of a peerless genius outside of Divine Phoenix Empire, but he just had to..."

"This isn't something that can't be helped either. How could it be

helped that he possessed the Phoenix bloodline; unless he chose to surrender and pay allegiance, he would never escape the fate of opposing Divine Phoenix Sect. With the unyielding temperament Yun Che displayed, he obviously won't choose the former in any condition. That's also understandable. Such a peerless prodigy who reached this point relying on just himself, how could he be willing to suddenly be controlled by a large sect."

"Divine Phoenix Empire actually had such a terrifying move... It really is too scary."

Feng Xiluo's body slowly descended from the sky, his face carrying a complacent smile. The reason why he used "Moon of the Phoenix", was precisely to create such a magnificent yet stunning effect, in order to cover up the awkward situation he made before from wrongly estimating Yun Che's strength.

However, just as the tip of his foot was about to touch the Phoenix Stage, his pupils abruptly constricted, as the smile on his face also instantaneously went stiff.

The firelight exploded out by the Moon of the Phoenix and the overwhelming lances of flame began to quickly dissipate. From within the phoenix flames that was gradually becoming thin, he saw a figure that just stood there. In the next moment, the phoenix flames broke apart, revealing Yun Che's grave and stern face.

"Wha... What!?" Feng Xiluo's expression greatly changed for the first time. Beside his ears, shocked cries from all directions resounded as well.

The flames continued to extinguish, gradually revealing Yun Che's intact figure. Grasping Dragon Fault in his hands, he quietly stood there, letting the surrounding flames freely scorch him. The clothing on his body was damaged in many places, his hair was also somewhat messy. However, the expression in his eyes was not in the least turbid. Under the tattered clothes, the exposed skin was flawless intact in every chunk... Only the location on his chest had

three more bloody holes that weren't very deep.

The berserking energy of Moon of the Phoenix were basically all pure Phoenix flames, and would at most deal impacts to him, without being able to harm him in the slightest. But the Phoenix Lance mirages that came right after, forced him to activate "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" with no other choice. After taking over thousands of times of bombardment, "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" was finally broken, as three streams of Phoenix Lance mirages crashed onto his chest. But with his true dragon's body, this kind of concentrated attack from dispersed energy could merely pierce out three vague bloody holes on his body.

When Yun Che fought with his life on the line against Feng Chihuo, one third of the blood vessels and bones in his body broke, and even then, he completely recovered in less than ten days of time. This little injury, however, that didn't even touch the bone, simply couldn't even be considered much of an injury to him.

=====

Chapter 440 – Phoenix Flame Sears the Heavens

“It’s... it’s Yun Che! He actually... did not die!!”

“Not only still alive, it looks like he hasn’t even sustained any heavy injuries.”

“With such a ferocious attack, even a layer of the Phoenix Stage had been peeled off, yet he actually hasn’t died yet... how is that possible!!”

The entire arena practically exploded, this definitely was the most inconceivable, most unbelievable scene they had ever seen in their entire lives.

Even for the four from the Sacred Grounds, a distinct flash of astonishment had flashed across their faces.

“Ah... ah... ah...” Ling Jie opened his mouth wide, unable to close it for a long time. Yun Che was still alive, and had not received any heavy injuries, yet the first thing he felt was not that of joy, rather, he felt the same kind of astonishment as everyone else, and even fear. This was because everyone had watched Yun Che get drawn into the Moon of the Phoenix, then get bombarded by a myriad of lance mirages... in that kind of situation, how could he still be alive?!

“What... th... This is abnormal... One hundred percent abnormal!!!” Hua Minghai, who had seen “the world”, and self-proclaimed that he was one of the strongest beings of the Profound Sky Continent, was shocked till his eyeballs almost popped out of their sockets.

Within the blazes, Yun Che looked straight at Feng Xiluo, and took a step forward... This step of his, had caused the astonished Feng Xiluo’s heart to jump fiercely. This time, facing Yun Che, he was truly fearful. He finally started to understand that he had simply underestimated Yun Che’s strength by an enormous margin. At the same time, the other party had also been concealing his true abilities.

"Other than knowing how to spout ridiculous, cocky words, there's nothing more to you." Yun Che squinted and ridiculed.

At this point, the uppermost layer of jade on the Phoenix Stage had completely been shattered, the area beneath Yun Che's feet had been destroyed to fine sand. The two of them stood thirty meters from each other, the atmosphere incomparably cold. Yun Che had a face of calm, yet the corner of his mouth curved upwards as if mocking. Feng Xiluo furrowed his eyebrows, his eyes wavering.

Yet at this point, Feng Xiluo's eyebrows unhurriedly spread back, as his expression became calm again. He instead drew the corners of his mouth into a thin line... Revealing a sinister smile.

"Very good... This is extremely good." Feng Xiluo's eyes sank down, a little murderous aura gathered within his eyes, reigniting the Phoenix flames on his body as he spoke. The Phoenix flames spiraled upwards rapidly, his bones from head to toe started crackling explosively, as a wave of increasingly powerful aura exploded from his body: "I would never have thought that a bastard accidentally leaked from my Divine Phoenix Sect could actually be this strong, making me completely underestimate your power."

"But, a bastard will always be a bastard, at this level, you merely qualify to force me to use my full power, but as a bastard, you can feel proud on your way to hell!"

The Phoenix flames continued to burn and the aura from Feng Xiluo continued to inflate. In a few breaths time, it would have completely surpassed the aura from before!

What he said was not wrong, he indeed did not use his full strength before.

But he had lost a bit of control; every sentence of his contained ridicule, which exposed the lack of tranquility and the fury in his heart. He was a prince of Divine Phoenix Sect, the strongest in the younger generation of the world's number one sect. In the future, he

would become the highest ruler of the entire Profound Sky Continent! But in front of a huge crowd, he was forced to use his full strength on an unknown profound practitioner with a profound strength of only the Earth Profound Realm, whose age was even younger than his.

Now, he could not be bothered with anything else as he activated his profound strength without restraint, channeling World Ode of the Phoenix at full power... If he didn't use the most savage method to decimate Yun Che till there was not a single bit of him left, he would never be satisfied!

"His Highness has finally used his full strength... Damn! He was actually forced by Yun Che to use his full strength!" The Phoenix disciples in the arena said roughly, the astonishment on their faces still not completely dispersed.

"His Highness must be totally furious now! If Yun Che doesn't die now, then I'll be damned to die!!" Another Phoenix disciple gnashed his teeth as he spoke. It wasn't just Feng Xiluo, even they were deeply astonished and humiliated.

The Phoenix flames on Feng Xiluo's body rose higher still, and his aura continued to climb. Under the immense pressure from his aura, the area around him practically became a sheet of vacuum; everything within the vacuum was slapped away with unreasonable power.

Bang!!

With a deep explosion, the Phoenix flames flashed violently, ending its climb. Feng Xiluo's entire body was wrapped within the raging Phoenix flames, grasping on to the Divine Phoenix Lance, a dark look glinted in his eyes as he smiled sinisterly. His Phoenix robes swelled, his black hair fluttered unrestrained, as lightning-like Phoenix flames hissed and twisted around his body... Behind his back, Unhurriedly unfolding behind his back, was actually a pair of scarlet phoenix wings!

The pair of phoenix wings were immersed in flames, it totally did not look like an illusion, but like that of real phoenix wings!

The Feng Xiluo at this point, looked like a blazing devil come to life.

"Eh? Is this the legendary... the fourth stage of the World Ode of the Phoenix, the highest stage, 'Body of the Phoenix'? Ye Xinghan looked at Feng Xiluo's transformation and said, full of interest. While speaking, he reached both of his hands through the bottom of the clothes of the two bewitching women, completely oblivious of the looks from his surroundings.

"That's right." Ling Kun nodded his head: "This stage activates the Phoenix bloodline, allowing the form of a Phoenix to appear on the body. The accompanying Phoenix flame skill 'Phoenix Flame Searns the Heavens' is the Divine Phoenix Sect's most powerful signature move."

"A level eight Throne, operating the World Ode of the Phoenix to this stage, his aura has unexpectedly, even faintly, exceeded a level nine Throne, this World Ode of the Phoenix indeed has some methods too." Ye Xinghan squinted and said.

"Ah ya yah, this one doesn't understand Little Hanhan's words."

The moment Ye Xinghan finished talking, the voice of Ji Qianrou, which made his entire body suddenly have goosebumps, arrived in his ears: "This little prince is at most boosting his strength by two levels with the help of the World Ode of the Phoenix. This has even gotten Little Hanhan's praise, yet Yun Che, ah... He can stride across tens of levels of fighting abilities by just casually lifting his hand, but why haven't I heard Little Hanhan praise him to the heavens?"

Ji Qianrou's words made Ye Xinghan and Ling Kun feel alarmed at the same time, even Spiritual Master Gu Cang's eyebrows fidgeted slightly. Following Yun Che's increasingly shocking performance, they had almost forgotten... Yun Che's profound strength was merely at the Earth Profound Realm, level ten!!

Contending against the level eight Throne, Feng Xiluo, at full power with only the strength of the Earth Profound Realm...

What kinds of secrets were Yun Che hiding on his body?!

Like a fire god descending upon earth, Feng Xiluo's entire body released an energy that showed disdain to the whole world, causing the hearts of all the young profound practitioners in the arena to tremble. The fearful looks of admiration they cast at him was like looking at an insurmountable god. They too, did not imagine that the Feng Xiluo, whose power was fearsome to such an extent, had actually not used his full power. The power of Feng Xiluo at this point was obviously twice as powerful as before!!

"This happens to be the highest stage of my Divine Phoenix Sect's World Ode of the Phoenix." Feng Xiluo extended his palm towards Yun Che, Phoenix flames hissing on his palm: "A pity that you're only a bastard, with no rights to learn this unbeatable profound skill graced by the divine spirit. Now, you can struggle as much as you like, because after today, there will be no chance for you to struggle again."

Looking at the Phoenix flames on Feng Xiluo's body and listening to his arrogant speech, the look in Yun Che's eyes was as if he were speaking to a genuine fool: "You seem to have made similar speeches several times already, does it really feel that good to slap yourself every time? Idiot!"

Yun Che's words was like using a salt-soaked knife to furiously stab at Feng Xiluo's already bloody wound. The last word, "idiot", made him explode with fury... Since a young age, who did not treat him with respect? Even Feng Hengkong had always praised him with pride. With such great talent, even towards the crown prince, Feng Ximing, he was always haughty without restraint. Who would dare to call him an "idiot"?!

Feng Xiluo laughed back in anger, then sneered with incomparable darkness: "Little bastard, even at death's door, you still dare to

provoke my rage. I originally planned to give you a delightful death, but now... I've changed my mind. I will leave you in the Phoenix flames... more dead than alive!!"

"With only your Phoenix bloodline from five thousand years ago that has been thinned and jumbled through hundreds of generations, do you truly think you're worthy enough to raise Phoenix fire in front of me?" Yun Che muttered and laughed coldly.

Those words of his were definitely not pretentious. Back in Blue Wind Imperial Palace, when facing the two black and red elders following Feng Xichen, he had used the simplest of Phoenix flames and managed to suppress the two men's Phoenix flames which were backed by the World Ode of the Phoenix. Since Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix bloodline was passed down from one generation to the next, in order to guarantee the purity of the bloodline, Divine Phoenix Sect would only wed internally, and rarely wed outsiders... unless the other party had extremely high talent or position. Even so, each generation further, the bloodline would eventually thin and mix.

But Yun Che was bestowed the purest Phoenix Blood directly from the Phoenix Spirit!!

Thus, purely speaking of the purity of the Phoenix Bloodline, Yun Che was completely suitable to be Feng Xiluo's ancestor!

And even his ancestor by a few hundreds of generations!

"I'll show you what exactly are real... Phoenix flames!!"

Yun Che cried out deeply, and his body blazed with Phoenix flames. But this time, it was not just simple Phoenix flames, he also channeled World Ode of the Phoenix, directly raising it to the fourth stage... Instantly, the aura of the Phoenix flames erupted as the temperature abruptly surged. The blaze which was originally wild suddenly seemed to be boiling, while dancing frantically.

On Yun Che's back, a pair of Phoenix wings also appeared. The color

of this pair of Phoenix wings was even deeper than that of Feng Xiluo's.

"World Ode of the Phoenix!!"

Feng Hengkong and the others instantly sat up. Their faces were of shock... and even fury!

The Phoenix bloodline was the core of the Divine Phoenix Sect, and the World Ode of the Phoenix was the other core.

Yun Che not belonging to the Divine Phoenix Sect, but possessing the Phoenix bloodline was already violating one of their biggest taboos, but now... He even possessed the World Ode of the Phoenix!!

In the five thousand year history of the Divine Phoenix Sect, situations of a bloodline leakage would happen occasionally, but this was the first time, that even the World Ode of the Phoenix had appeared on somebody not from the sect.

It was no wonder that even Feng Hengkong turned pale.

Feng Xiluo's face turned dark, revealing a malevolent expression: "Little bastard! Not only do you have my sect's Phoenix bloodline, You even secretly learned my sect's World Ode of the Phoenix... You must die today!!"

Maintaining the fourth stage of the World Ode of the Phoenix was accompanied by a large consumption of energy. As he looked at Yun Che similarly activating the World Ode of the Phoenix, an intensely uneasy feeling arose in Feng Xiluo's heart. He let out a growl and his phoenix wings unfolded. The Phoenix flames behind him rushed into the air, conjuring a sea of fire, covering the entire sky of the stadium in red.

"Die... Phoenix Flame Sears the Heavens!!"

Even though it was if an immense flaming mountain was collapsing towards him, Yun Che remained calm. As he reached out with his

palm, the Phoenix flames on his body violently exploded as well.

Phoenix Flame Sear the Heavens!!”

The same World Ode of the Phoenix stage four, the same Phoenix skill. Two waves of Phoenix fire seas covered the skies and land, making the Phoenix stage suddenly seem tiny... as they violently clashed.

Boom~~~~~

The entire Phoenix realm trembled frantically. In an instant, the flaming waves overflowing in the sky exploded crazily, spiraling hundreds of meters upwards, completely swallowing the Phoenix Stage. The faces of the audience consisting of more than three million profound practitioners, all shined pure red; even the sky had entirely changed color, as if the blue sky was burning.

It was as though a bright sun had suddenly descended.

Yun Che and Feng Xiluo’s silhouettes were completely engulfed within the flaming waves. The two of them were not even three meters apart, yet their line of sights passed through the flames, firmly colliding together.

“Just a bastard like you, is enough to challenge this prince with Phoenix flames!? In not even ten breaths... You will be completely burnt to ashes!!” Feng Xiluo growled with a malevolent expression.

Yun Che’s face darkened, his voice filled with ridicule: “Even if I stood still here, your Phoenix flames should not even think of hurting a strand of my hair, but it’s beneath me to do something like that... because I want to compete with Phoenix flames, and beat you outright! I want to let you know...”

“Who’s the real bastard!!”

=====

Chapter 441 – Realm Suppression

The initially pitch black arena was now a sheet of scarlet, as if it had fell into a blazing hell for a moment. At this point, the fire that sears the heavens, which had reached hundreds of meters into the air started to fall, then break away from the Phoenix Stage, spreading frantically towards the surroundings.

A terrifying wave of heat, as if from a gigantic wave of flames from purgatory rolled over, as if portraying a scene from the approach of doomsday. Even though they were separated by a distance of several hundred meters, those profound practitioners all felt as though their bodies were about to melt from the burn. Even if they conjured all their profound energy defense to defend against it, it was still unbearably painful... the entire arena was filled with shouts of extreme terror.

Huu...

The rows of seats nearest to the Phoenix Stage began to melt, then combust, and the violently moving Phoenix flames still continued to spread rapidly. Feng Feiyan flew up high and roared deeply: "Quickly, construct a barrier!!"

The moment his voice fell, every Overlord had already started to mobilize, the Overlords from the five nations and a few elders from the Divine Phoenix Sect flew hastily, spreading out to various locations. Bubbling with profound energy, a ring shaped defensive barrier started to extend, link and grow, locking up all of the violently moving Phoenix flames within, such that all the pressure and heat were safely isolated.

The chaos in the arena finally settled down a little, but nobody was able to suppress the shock which was plastered across their faces. They were all wide-eyed and stared blankly at the heart of the arena which had been entirely transformed into a sea of fire, afraid of missing out on a single second of the scene, because they knew that

they would probably never get to see this kind of overwhelming scene a second time in their lives.

The participating profound practitioners from the five nations all pulled back from their positions, their faces pale from amazement, because their seats were the closest to the Phoenix Stage. They were all thus affected when the Phoenix flames went berserk. Those slightly affected had their clothes burned into a terrible mess, the unluckier ones were burned in more areas. Looking at the Phoenix flames isolated by the barrier, they broke out in cold sweat that streamed like waterfalls. They didn't dare to imagine that they were actually fighting with such an abnormal person before... and were unexpectedly still alive.

These profound practitioners who were able to participate in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament were undoubtedly the top geniuses from their nations. As top geniuses, they naturally had a kind of deep superiority, self-confidence and even arrogance. This was due to them believing that they would become the leading characters in the Profound Sky Continent in the future, their generation's rulers. But at this point, all the self-confidence they had, and even their conviction, had thoroughly collapsed. Facing this disaster-level strength, forget about the present, they felt that even if they devoted their entire lives, they would never be able to reach this kind of level.

The flames blazed with increasing intensity. Defending the surroundings of the barrier, the few Divine Phoenix Sect elders were still fine, but the only Overlords of the five nations were trembling with fear. Whilst supporting the barrier, as Overlords, their two hands were cooked red, the pain was hard to bear, and their hearts were dumbstruck to the extreme... These two competing were not world-renowned exceptional fighters, but two youngsters who were merely around twenty years old! After cultivating for several hundreds of years to become their respective nation's only Overlords, they, who ruled over the skies, actually felt a kind of inferiority in front of these two terrifying youths.

If they were already like this at this age, then their future achievements would simply be unimaginable!

Those from Divine Phoenix Sect could no longer sit still anymore; from Feng Hengkong to the Elders and Palace Masters, all had already stood up. In the entire arena, no one was more calm than Spiritual Master Gu Cang; he only watched in silence without a trace of disturbance on his face. At this moment, his eyebrows suddenly twitched, because he had felt his disciple's aura.

Spiritual Master Gu Cang concentrated his mind, sending a profound sound transmitted message with his incomparably thick profound energy: "You're finally here, show your Sacred Grounds identification to the Phoenix City guards, they will naturally bring you here. You are just in time, if not, you would've missed out on a genius gifted by the heavens, whose future achievements may not be inferior to yours."

Very quickly, he received a sound transmission from the other party: "Really? Divine Phoenix Sect is Profound Sky Continent's number one sect, every generation will probably have this kind of genius."

Spiritual Master Gu Cang shut his eyes, sound transmitting again: "No, the person your master is referring to, is not from Divine Phoenix Sect, but the same as you, from Blue Wind Nation. With his abilities, he ought to have been famous in Blue Wind Nation for a long time, you may have heard of his name... This young person's name is Yun Che."

For a long time, Spiritual Master Gu Cang did not receive his disciple's reply. His attention returned to the ball of Phoenix flames blazing across the skies.

The Phoenix Stage continued to deteriorate at an amazing speed, beneath Yun Che and Feng Xiluo was astonishingly red lava. Within the center of the two waves of Phoenix energy, the two of them continued the sustained release of their Phoenix profound energy, but both their expressions were entirely different.

Yun Che was completely tranquil, from his expression to the looks in his eyes, they were all without ripples. However, Feng Xiluo's eyes were scarlet, his entire face was completely twisted and his throat unceasingly produced muffled growls. When compared to before, if he still had reserves, then now, he was completely releasing his full power, practically squeezing out power from his bone marrows. If not for his sweat evaporating immediately, his entire body would have already been completely soaked.

Yet despite that, his Phoenix flames were actually totally blocked by Yun Che. No matter how much he tried, he was unable to suppress it.

At the same time, although he was of the Phoenix bloodline, and had an extremely high resistance and control over the Phoenix flames, it was still impossible for him to be as invulnerable to fire as Yun Che. As time passed, the flames from Yun Che roasted his entire body, causing unbearable pain. Most of his hair was burnt, and every part of his body began emitting a burnt stench and strands of black smoke.

Half of his low roar was from frantically releasing profound energy, the other half was him howling in pain.

But his physical pain could not be compared to the fear in his heart.

Phoenix flames were the strongest profound flames in the Profound Sky Continent. The Phoenix bloodline was the only bloodline of a god in the Profound Sky Continent! If the Divine Phoenix Sect's history was as long as the Sacred Grounds', over ten thousand years, just relying on this bloodline of god would allow them to surpass the Sacred Grounds! Furthermore, he was a prince of the Divine Phoenix Sect, his inheritance was that of a prince, the strongest of the strongest Phoenix bloodline, and he was the strongest genius in the current young generation of the Divine Phoenix bloodline...

However, someone whom he originally did not even take seriously, someone he called a "bastard", could actually block his full powered

Phoenix flames!!

Moreover, his bearing was incomparably relaxed, looking like he still had energy to spare.

The growl from Feng Xiluo's throat got even hoarser, his teeth were almost bitten into pieces, but even after a whole ten breaths, he still had no way of suppressing Yun Che.

"I don't believe... I don't believe... I am a prince of Divine Phoenix... the imperial blood flows through my veins... How could I lose to a bastard like you... how could I lose to a bastard like you!!"

Feng Xiluo's voice was incomparably withered and hoarse; the moment he opened his mouth, a strand of black smoke floated out, one could only imagine to what degree was he forced to.

The moment he spoke, his aura wavered, Yun Che scrunched his eyebrows, the pressure of his Phoenix flames abruptly increasing.

Zss~~~~

Feng Xiluo's hair was quickly burnt, the originally almost two foot long black hair was quickly reduced into charcoal.

Feng Xiluo had long used up all his energy. He didn't have the least bit of reserves, as his phoenix flames were suddenly suppressed by Yun Che. He simply did not have an iota of extra strength to retaliate. He started to feel his body and flames get suppressed more and more, all of his flames were being swallowed by Yun Che's flames.

Fear appeared in his eyes, followed by a flash of despair. Then, all of it turned into malevolence and insanity...

"How could I... lose to... a bastard like you!!!!"

Feng Xiluo roared hoarsely, his eyes as red as blood. Raising his head, he fiercely spat out a large mouthful of blood. The fresh blood landed on Feng Xiluo's body and began to combust quickly.

The look in Yun Che's eyes changed slightly... because the blood that Feng Xiluo had just spat out was not any ordinary blood, it was his blood essence!!

Ordinary blood could be regenerated, but there was practically no possibility of regenerating blood essence. What it consumed was neither physical nor profound energy, but innate ability, life, and their power source!! Unless a profound practitioner was pushed to death's door, he would never choose to burn his blood essence.

Feng Xiluo had gone completely mad!!

If the opponent was someone the same age as Yun Che, with the same profound strength, if he lost, even though he would be disappointed, unsatisfied, and maybe lose some rationality, he would never go as far as to lose all sense of reason and burn his blood essence.

However, Yun Che had been hiding his true strength all along, exhibiting his extremely weak profound strength. Thus, as a Phoenix prince, as well as the young generation's number one, Feng Xiluo, would consider himself to be high and mighty in front of Yun Che. In front of all the heroes of the world and in front the Profound Sky's seven nations and sacred grounds, he would act as if he were a judge, show contempt, ridicule, disdain and even call him a "bastard" in every sentence.

If he lost just like that, while using his most powerful Phoenix flames, then all the contempt, ridicule, disdain and insults which he used on Yun Che would be returned to himself countlessly. All the attitude he had earlier would simply become the arrogance and conceit of a clown. Previously, when people mentioned him, they would think about his glory and fame, but after today, the first thing they would think of would be an utterly ridiculous clown! He couldn't even defeat somebody he called a "bastard"; he would no doubt become some trash not even comparable to a "bastard", irrevocably becoming this generation's laughingstock and disgrace.

As a result, no matter what, he could not lose... Even if it meant igniting his blood essence, he definitely couldn't lose!!

As his blood essence ignited, Feng Xiluo's suppressed Phoenix flames instantly soared, pressing tyrannically against Yun Che. His pupils were full sorrow, as he then laughed derangedly: "Bastard... you can die now!!!!"

While facing Feng Xiluo, Yun Che had the superior physique, profound arts, profound skills and purity of the Phoenix bloodline. Only comparing the strength and density of profound energy, would Yun Che be vastly weaker than Feng Xiluo. After the crazed move of igniting his blood essence, in a few breaths, Yun Che was suppressed to the point he was forced to retreat step by step, in the blink of an eye. The Phoenix flames on Yun Che's body were swallowed whole.

Yet even so, not to mention a frantic look, there was not even a sign of astonishment on Yun Che's face, only a deep look of pity... He narrowed his eyes and raised the World Ode of the Phoenix to the fifth stage — "Star Felling Flames"!

BOOOOM...

The Phoenix flames on Yun Che's body suddenly surged. The initial blaze, which had an incomparable temperature abruptly clambered up again; the initially incomparably frantic flames became even more frantic... at this instant, all the Divine Phoenix Sect members present, from the highest Sect Master Feng Hengkong, to the lowest ordinary Phoenix disciple, all clearly felt the Phoenix blood in their own bodies throb for a moment...

That kind of bizarre feeling, was neither the suppressing of strength, nor the suppressing of aura, it was clearly a kind of... suppressing of realm!!

=====

Chapter 442 – Defeating Divine Phoenix

Swoosh!!!

As he relied on burning blood essence to forcefully control Yun Che , Feng Xiluo laughed hysterically with a face of distortion. In the midst of his hysterical laughter, he suddenly felt a frightening and unusual heat erupt, causing his entire body to feel as though it had burst into flames. The powerful Phoenix flame that he had obtained in exchange for burning his blood essence, had at this time, instantly disappeared like a small canoe being swallowed by a huge wave...

“WARGHHH...”

An utmost pathetic scream rang throughout the arena. The flame waves that had been maintained continuously had suddenly collapsed like towering mountains in Feng Xiluo's direction. A figure that was completely ignited in flames flew out from the sea of flames, like dried leaves that had been suddenly blown by a gust, as he hit heavily onto the defense barrier that was maintained by several overlords.

“Xiluo!!!”

“Fourteenth Prince!!!”

The gold from Feng Xiluo's Phoenix robe was made using an exceptionally special and rare material that was incredibly hard to destroy. From the remains of gold on the burning figure, the members of Divine Phoenix Sect could easily recognize that this person was most definitely Feng Xiluo, as they revealed expressions of shock.

Feng Feiyan, who was the closest, immediately rushed towards him like lightning and instantly used his profound energy to completely extinguish the flames on the previously burning Feng Xiluo.

Feng Xiluo was completely limp, his breathing was slight and he was

completely unconscious. All his hair had been completely burnt off. His body was filled with burns and the more serious parts were all burnt black. Other than that, it didn't seem as though he suffered internal injuries. Although the burns were serious, they were still an external injuries. With the resources that Divine Phoenix Sect could gather, it was possible to completely recover other than leaving a few scars... With Feng Feiyan's abilities, he could easily tell that Yun Che had intentionally kicked him out from the sea of flames. Otherwise, Feng Xiluo would have burnt to death in a few more moments.

However, he face immediately revealed complete outrage. This was because Feng Xiluo's condition... Was obviously a result of burning essence blood!!!

He was the number one prodigy of Divine Phoenix Clan's from this era. How could he give up his talent and life and just burn his blood essence like this!!!

When the two Phoenix flames collided, everything was engulfed within the flames, and he couldn't tell what was happening. If he knew that Feng Xiluo would self ignite his blood essence, he would've even interfered with the match just to stop him from doing so.

Feng Feiyan was fuming on the spot. He wanted to slap Feng Xiluo at least a few hundred times and also eliminate Yun Che with his bare hands. However, at this time, Feng Hengkong arrived with a group of elders. With knitted brows, he asked: "Big Brother, how's Xiluo?"

Feng Feiyan looked up and gritted his teeth as he spoke: "He's pretty much fine, however he... Actually burned his blood essence!"

"What!" The faces of Feng Hengkong and all the elders changed immediately.

"Bastard!" Feng Hengkong clenched his fists tightly as his face turned green. The one he resented the most was not Yun Che, but instead Feng Xiluo. Since young, Feng Xiluo possessed unrivalled talent and growing up, no one of the same age was able to match him. This

caused him to be rather arrogant. He didn't even really respect his thirteen brothers who were older than him. However, having such talents as he did, arrogance was natural. Feng Hengkong was always the most satisfied with him and never once scolded him before.

Today however, he encountered an opponent who was younger than him, who was able to exceed him completely! How could he be able to take losing? Furthermore, just before the match, he humiliated and insulted Yun Che in front of everyone. No matter what he said and did, he acted as though Yun Che's life was completely in his hands. When he was defeated by him, his willpower snapped immediately!

It snapped to the extent that he was willing to do a crazy act such as burning his blood essence!

Losing, would no doubt would be shameful, but with his talent, he would definitely become a Monarch that would overlook the world! However, since he burnt his blood essence, the consequence was killing off his own talent. His future would not be limitless like before. For Divine Phoenix Sect, this would become a huge loss.

In his rage, Feng Hengkong felt like strangling his disappointing son.

What made him even more shocked was that even though Feng Xiluo burnt his blood essence, he was still completely beaten by Yun Che.

Yun Che's instantaneous burst of Phoenix flame earlier had such a high suppression that it felt like... It was clearly a higher level than that of the World Ode of the Phoenix!!!

"Send him to Jade Phoenix Hall to receive treatment immediately." Contained within Feng Hengkong's voice was an unbelievable amount of suppressed rage. He turned his head furiously, and looked below, his eyes flashing with bone chilling bloodlust.

The Phoenix flames finally extinguished layer by layer, revealing Yun Che's silhouette. Yun Che was kneeling with one knee and he

breathed deeply. However, he did not look like he suffered any injuries; even his hair was perfectly intact. Within the raging Phoenix flames, he didn't suffer any burns at all!

The area he stepped on was still part of the Phoenix Stage. However, the stage that was nearly three meters tall was now completely missing. Below Yun Che's feet were charcoal black debris that looked nothing like the jade stone that formed the stage.

The barrier formed by the Overlords had vanished and a scorched smell, along with heat, spread across the whole arena. With one look, everyone had a dazed expression, and they couldn't snap out of it. At this point, no one could figure out an acceptable term to explain their feelings.

That indescribable thought and vision... It seemed as though it had inverted every one of their beliefs.

The whole arena of nearly three hundred thousand profound practitioners... From the weakest to the strongest, not one of them could have predicted this.

Not one person!

Their minds excitedly echoed with this one phrase...

Divine Phoenix Empire... LOST!!!

Defeated by Blue Wind Nation!

The strongest Divine Phoenix Empire's young generation, was beaten by someone from Blue Wind Nation... And that profound practitioner was even younger than him!!!

No one dared to believe such a result, and no one dared to imagine it! For more than five thousand years, no one had managed to accomplish it either.

Today however, they witnessed a moment where this came true!!! A

match that broke a historical record that stood for five thousand years! A young profound practitioner that broke a five thousand year record.

Although Feng Hengkong was about to explode and even had felt a newfound killing for Yun Che, he didn't act or even speak... Because no matter how bad Feng Xiluo's injuries were, no matter what bloodline or status Yun Che had, this was the Profound Sky Seven Ranking Tournament. Yun Che beat Feng Xiluo fairly during the match with three hundred thousand people as witness, including those from the Four Great Sacred Grounds...

As Sect Master of Divine Phoenix Sect, if he dared to take action against Yun Che now, it would undoubtedly be beneath everyone's eyes, and would ruin Divine Phoenix Empire's respect and awe, drawing everyone's ridicule.

He also knew fully well that Yun Che only dared act this way because of this reason!

However, him controlling his emotions did not mean that all the elders of Divine Phoenix Sect could do so as well. After Feng Xiluo had been carried away, Feng Feiyan's body sank and he looked at Yun Che with a face full of rage and disdain: "Little kid from Blue Wind, you actually dare injure... our Fourteenth Prince! You're... courting death!!"

He didn't mention that "Feng Xiluo had been forced to burn his own blood essence", otherwise, it would be seen as a joke amongst jokes.

Feng Xiluo was obviously not weak, and despite not suffering much injuries after defeating him, who burnt his blood essence, it was still taxing on Yun Che. He panted and seemed as though he did not have sufficient energy to stand up, but he still looked fierce and even retorted righteously: "So what! This a Profound Sky Seven Nation Ranking Tournament match, and I beat him Feng Xiluo fair and square! During a match, injuries are a result of inferior skills! Could it be that your Divine Phoenix Empire are sore losers who can't afford

to be injured? Are you going to kill me now that I've enraged you!"

"You!" Feng Feiyan was extremely angry, and now that Yun Che retorted back, the color of his face changed. However, before he could react, another angry shout came from the seats:

"That's right! This is a ranking Tournament match. Whether one is injured or not is dependent on one's abilities! If one lacks skills, how can others be blamed! Who are you to blame Yun Che!" Ling Jie strained his throat and gathered all his profound strength to shout.

Just as Ling Jie finished, Hua Minghai also shouted loudly: "That's right! During a match, even when one is killed, the matter is not pursued. This is an unchanged fact about the history of the Profound Sky Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, and a rule even an idiot would know! Furthermore, this was a rule set by your Divine Phoenix Empire. Does that mean that contestants from other nations are allowed to get injured, but not anyone from your Divine Phoenix Sect!"

Just as the two of them finished, the entire arena turned into an uproar. All those agitated and excited profound practitioners from Blue Wind Empire all became hot-headed and shouted along with them... Soon, more and more people started shouting. Not just people from Blue Wind Nation, even profound practitioners from the five other nations started cheering for Yun Che, calling for unfairness. The fact that Yun Che defeated Feng Xiluo was not pride for Blue Wind Nation, it was also pride for the all six nations. This was the first time such a fairy tale happened for the six nations!

In the blink of an eye, the uproar spread around the whole arena...

"For many tournaments, so many of our profound practitioners have gotten injured and we have not pursued matters. Now that one disciple from Divine Phoenix Sect has gotten injured, what gives you the right to pursue matters! It looks like you wanted to take revenge immediately too?"

"The honorable Divine Phoenix Sect could only amount to this much?"

"Even an idiot could tell that Yun Che already showed mercy. If not, that Fourteenth Prince would have turned into ashes by now. Not only do you not thank Yun Che, you want to question and threaten him!"

"As the number one sect in the Profound Sky Continent, could you at least save a little face!"

"If you want it like that, why not just scrape the Profound Sky Seven Nation Ranking Tournament?! People from the other six nations can be killed and injured, but not one person from Divine Phoenix can be injured?"

"If you dare to take revenge on Yun Che, even if you are ten times stronger than us, we six nations will look down on you for generations to come!!!"

.....

.....

The commotion spread quickly, and soon the whole arena was on Yun Che's side. The last few that shouted nearly blasted everyone deaf. If it was simply one person, facing the absolute pressure of Divine Phoenix Sect, even if he was completely unhappy, unsatisfied, and looked down on them, he would not dare to question the Divine Phoenix Empire. However, among the millions of profound practitioners from the six nations, there were those who dared stand against them unfazed. The more they spoke, the harsher it became... Yun Che beating Divine Phoenix Sect was pride for all the six nations, and all the other profound practitioners were proud of this. The fact that they could question Divine Phoenix Sect, was no doubt a satisfying experience.

And this, was the result that Yun Che hoped to see, or should we say,

predicted.

=====

Chapter 443 – Coming to Battle!

As the Great Elder of Divine Phoenix Sect, a top figure in this world, confusion was also plastered across Feng Feiyan's face. He had lived for hundreds of years, but this was his first time encountering such a situation without knowing how to respond to it. His heart was even angrier, but he didn't have the guts to rashly deal with Yun Che at all. It would be easy for him to kill Yun Che, but when facing the questioning of the entire arena, if he really did make a move, it would evoke the anger of the six nations' profound practicing world. The entire Profound Sky, even people of Divine Phoenix Empire, would treat him with disdain and contempt.

Divine Phoenix Empire being questioned by the six nations, was an unprecedented situation!

Divine Phoenix Crown Prince Feng Ximing stood up. Using robust profound energy, he instantly drowned the clamoring with a deep voice, announcing to the arena: "You can be reassured, although our Divine Phoenix Empire has never lost a ranking tournament, we will absolutely not be sore losers! Furthermore, none of my Phoenix disciples are afraid of getting hurt! What my Divine Phoenix is questioning about, is not whether Yun Che has injured my sect's prince, but rather, his bloodline and profound arts!!"

"He claims to be a citizen of the Blue Wind Nation, but his bloodline is of the Phoenix bloodline that belongs to my Divine Phoenix Sect! The profound arts he has just demonstrated, is the world-renowned World Ode of the Phoenix belonging to my Divine Phoenix Sect!"

"The leaking of bloodline is my Divine Phoenix Sect's taboo, over the past five thousand years, it has never been tolerated! The leaking of profound arts, is the most severe of taboos! Amongst all of you, which sect would tolerate their own core profound art appearing on an outsider's body... Great Elder questioning Yun Che, what's wrong about that!"

The ears of those whom Feng Ximing shouted towards trembled. The Divine Phoenix Crown Prince's might struck terror into people's hearts, and he clamoring in the arena settled down after a few breaths. Yun Che raised his head and said with a sneer: "Heh! Up till now, you guys still have the cheek to say that my Phoenix bloodline originates from you lot! You repeat over and over again, saying that I am a bastard leaked out from your Divine Phoenix Sect... then, why is it that the one who has inherited the royal bloodline, who possesses the most gifted bloodline, lost to me in a competition of purely Phoenix flames! When all's said and done, who deserves to be called a bastard! If I was leaked from your bastard bloodline, then what are you guys even considered!"

These words of Yun Che simply caused Feng Ximing to not be able to utter a response for a long time. He barely thought of a response with great difficulty, and when he was about to utter the word "you", an ordinary yet, imposing voice arrived through the air, causing him to suddenly close his mouth.

This was because the voice belonged to Feng Hengkong.

"Quiet, stop talking. All of you."

Feng Hengkong shifted in midair. Turning his body, he returned to his seat. His face was incomparably calm, abnormally calm; there was not a hint of anger to be seen, and even his voice was as calm as stagnant water: "Stop arguing about the issue of bloodline and profound arts for now. This is, after all, the ranking tournament arena, all the heroes and our Sacred Grounds friends are here, and they are here for the ranking tournament, not to watch us settle our sectorial affairs. Anything else can be settled after the ranking tournament."

The moment Feng Hengkong opened his mouth, the entire arena went silent immediately. He turned his gaze to Yun Che and said mildly: "Yun Che, regardless of other matters, you have defeated Feng Xiluo. That is indeed impressive, but you've got one thing wrong. You have defeated Feng Xiluo, but you have not defeated my

Divine Phoenix Sect!"

The moment Feng Hengkong's voice landed, nine scarlet red silhouettes rose into the air, surrounding the skies above Yun Che, each of their bodies burning with Phoenix flames.

WHOOA—

The arena instantly became noisy!

Everyone only reacted then. It was true that Yun Che defeated Feng Xiluo... but that was merely defeated Feng Xiluo! The participating team of Divine Phoenix Sect had a total of ten people!

Apart from Feng Xiluo, there were still nine more!

Yun Che had defeated Feng Xiluo, but his profound strength was vastly depleted. If the nine Phoenix members attacked, it would simply be a one-sided battle, it would even be a little shameless... However, that would not violate the ranking tournament rules at all.

Ordinarily, Divine Phoenix Sect would absolutely not commit such a self-deprecating act. Before fighting with Yun Che, they too had only mobilized Feng Xiluo alone.

But, now that things had come to such a state, with Feng Xiluo defeated, they had already lost all face, and could not afford to throw the ranking tournament away as well! Besides... this was the most suitable opportunity to eliminate Yun Che!!

"Oh no!" Hua Minghai's face turned dark, he clenched his teeth, and said: "This Phoenix Emperor... is obviously trying to use this chance to kill Boss Yun!!"

"What!" Ling Jie revealed a horrified face.

"After Feng Xiluo is defeated, the other nine from Divine Phoenix Sect continuing to battle is totally according to the rules. Nobody can denounce that. And previously, when the entire arena was shouting

for Boss Yun, most of them were yelling for mutual acquitting in the case of serious injury or death... This emperor, is obviously borrowing our previous demands to use our own words against us, allowing these nine people to "justly and honorably" kill Yun Che!"

"Bullshit... this... this doggy emperor!!" Ling Jie's eyes opened wide, urgently shouting: "Boss, quick concede!"

"Concede your sister!" Hua Minghai slapped Ling Jie's skull, gritted his teeth and said: "Boss Yun's character is practically harder than profound iron, even if he had to die, he would never concede!"

"Don't worry for now!" Hua Minghai breathed in deeply: "Boss Yun doesn't seem to be courting death today. He probably has thought of such a situation before... I can't say for sure, but he may have a plan!"

Ling Jie nodded. He could only clench his jaws and watch wide-eyed... Although he really wanted to rush forward to participate in the name of a Blue Wind profound practitioner to fight alongside with him, with his profound strength, even if a hundred of him went, he would still be of absolutely no help.

Hua Minghai's words were exactly the thoughts in Feng Hengkong's heart. Although it was too unimaginable, the kind of vague suppression of realm he felt from Yun Che's Phoenix flames and the excessive strength of his Phoenix profound energy led him to faintly begin to feel that... perhaps Yun Che's bloodline was really not from their Divine Phoenix Sect!

He had defeated the generation's strongest, Feng Xiluo, prevailing through everything. Perhaps a large portion of Phoenix disciples, along with others, had already begun to suspect that Yun Che's bloodline was perhaps not leaked from the Divine Phoenix Sect. If not, how was it that based purely on a competition of phoenix flames, he was more powerful than the strongest Divine Phoenix Prince... On top of that, from long ago, their sect's phoenix spirit had clearly mentioned that in the Profound Sky Continent, there did

indeed exist another Phoenix legacy!!

Feng Hengkong had fully confirmed that Yun Che's participation in the ranking tournament was to enlist its power of influence in front of everybody; under the eyes of the tens of thousands of audience, he wanted to prove that his bloodline did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect. If they didn't eliminate him quickly and allowed him to present indisputable evidence, then Divine Phoenix Sect would not have any reason to do anything or control him; at least not openly. But secretly... based on the world shaking impact he brought about today, it would still be extremely difficult!

Based on the grievances that he and the Divine Phoenix Sect had, they were bound to be unable to become friends, only enemies. Based on his terrifying talent, if he were an enemy in the future, who would not suspect that he would become an enormous threat to Divine Phoenix Sect... Aside from this point, his Divine Phoenix Sect dominated over the seven nations for five thousand years. Being the sole owner of a god's bloodline and a god's profound arts was their pride, how would they allow another phoenix sect to appear!!

Therefore, no matter where exactly Yun Che's bloodline came from, he had to die today... no matter what! To kill him in the ranking tournament, even if everyone, including people from the Sacred Grounds, knew that they had intentionally killed Yun Che, they could not say anything... Because it was completely according to the ranking tournament rules that the arena was yelling for before.

Each and every one of the nine Phoenix disciples had faces full of anger. They were naturally insulted by Feng Xiluo's crushing defeat. And these nine people were definitely not ordinary Phoenix disciples, they were nine geniuses only second to Feng Xiluo in Divine Phoenix Sect's younger generation. Their individual abilities could not be compared to Feng Xiluo, but with eight level six Thrones and a level five Throne, their combined strength would undoubtedly exceed a single Feng Xiluo by miles!

Yun Che had barely defeated Feng Xiluo, consuming a large portion

of his profound energy. He had completely no chance of defeating the combined power of Divine Phoenix Sect's nine prodigies.

"Yun Che, you've only defeated our Fourteenth Prince. If you're thinking about defeating our Divine Phoenix Sect, you're daydreaming." The foremost Phoenix disciple in front of Yun Che who held onto a flaming sword said loudly.

"Ten against one, yet you still have the cheek to say in such a self-confident and righteous manner." Yun Che picked up his sword, his face full of ridicule.

"What a joke!" The Phoenix disciple on his right gritted his teeth and sneered: "You still really believe that since you have defeated our prince, your Blue Wind Nation will be able to defeat my Divine Phoenix Sect? You're just an aberrant... an aberrant hard to find even in ten thousand years! Yet, in my Divine Phoenix Sect, there are strong experts everywhere who are able to crush your entire nation!"

"Rightly said!" A Phoenix disciple continued from behind: "No wonder Blue Wind Nation has only sent you to participate in the ranking tournament. Because in the entire Blue Wind Nation, apart from you, even if the entire nation was searched, a second person capable of standing on this stage could not be found. Ah, an uninhabited Blue Wind Nation, even thinking about is funny. If it's just like this, don't even think about winning against my Divine Phoenix Empire!"

Just at this moment, an abnormal striking sound suddenly came from outside, followed by an alarmed cry from a Phoenix disciple: "Who's there, you dare to trespass... Ah!!"

"Get lost!!"

Boom!!

A rash, ear-splitting sound came from outside. This sound made the frowning Yun Che fiercely do a double take. The sound of a profound explosion and the scream of a Phoenix disciple followed. When

everyone subconsciously turned to look at where the sound came from, the high end of a wall in the arena suddenly exploded. A large figure flew out from the rubble, his thunder-like voice resounding through the entire arena:

“Who said that Blue Wind has nobody!!”

“Blue Wind profound practitioner, Xia Yuanba... has come to participate!!”

Tidying up Yun Che's current attributes a little :

Physique: Evil God's Profound Veins (Matchless Profound Veins), Dragon God's Bloodline (Powerful physique), Dragon God Marrow (Immense recovery abilities, thicken dragon's blood), Phoenix Bloodline (able to burn phoenix flames and cultivate World Ode of the Phoenix), Evil God's Fire Seed (Fire invulnerability + complete understanding of fire laws), Evil God's Water Seed (Water invulnerability + complete understanding of water laws)

Profound arts: (s>a>b>c>d>e>f, O= none.)

1: Evil God Arts: Type: Growth. Characteristics: Berserk profound energy. Stage: Third stage, with difficulty.

Profound Skills: 【Falling Moon Sinking Star (Evil Soul) – Power: a, Range: f, Energy Consumption: Medium】, 【Sealing Cloud Locking Sun (Burning Heart) – Power: O, Range: f, Energy Consumption: Medium】, 【Destroying Sky Decimating Earth (Purgatory) – Power: s+, Range: a, Energy Consumption: Immense】, 【Moon Star Restoration (Rumbling Heaven) – Power: O, Range: O, Energy Consumption: Small】.

2: Great Way of the Buddha: Type: Sacred Body. Characteristics: Primordial body. Stage: Third stage.

3: World Ode of the Phoenix: Type: Flame. Characteristics: World burning flames. Stage: Sixth stage.

Profound Skills:【Phoenix Flaming Lotus:Power:d+, Range:e, Energy Consumption:Very Small】,【Phoenix Arrow:Power:c+, Range:d, Energy Consumption:Small】,【Burning Field:Power:b, Range:c, Energy Consumption:Medium】,【Phoenix Flames Sears the Heavens:Power:a-, Range:b, Energy Consumption:Medium】,【Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing (Complete):Power:s, Range:c, Energy Consumption:Enormously huge】,【Star Scorching Demon Lotus (Complete):Power:s, Range:d——s, Energy Consumption:Medium – Immense】.

4:Prison God Sirius' Tome:Type:Dominating art. Characteristics: Strongest heavy sword. Stage:First stage.

Profound Skills:【Sky Wolf Slash:Power:s, Range:d, Energy Consumption:Enormously Huge】

5:Frozen End Divine Arts:Type:Freezing. Characteristics:Absolute zero. Stage:Fourth stage.

6 (Hidden):Star God Arts:Type:Exterminate. Characteristics: Compression of profound strength, Stage:○.

Profound Skills:【One Route Heaven:Power: s, Range:f, Energy Consumption:Small】,【Star God's Brilliant Annihilating Slash:Power:ss+, Range:d, Energy Consumption:Medium】

Others:【Overlord's Fury:Power:c, Range:e, Energy:Small】,【Phoenix Break:Power:a, Range:d, Energy Consumption:Medium】,【Dragon Soul Domain:Power:ss, Range: e——c, Energy Consumption: Immense】

=====

Chapter 444 – The Awakened Overlord

“Who are you!?”

There was actually a person who dared to forcefully step onto the arena of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, Divine Phoenix Empire’s Phoenix Realm.

Feng Hengkong lightly raised his head, and glanced at that intruder in midair... However, in the next instant, the calm on his face disappeared without a trace, and shock flashed past his eyes.

Being the closest to him, Feng Feiyan’s brows sank. Just as he was about to act, when his profound energy had only been circulated halfway, the channeling was forcefully stopped. His face revealed a shocked expression similar to Feng Hengkong’s, and he simply watched with widened eyes as that big and bulky figure fiercely descend with a matchless ferocious aura, landing heavily next to Yun Che.

Bang!!!

The ground beneath his feet directly shattered, and a line of cracks instantly spread under his feet. In but a mere second, the crack stretched out to more than a kilometer, directly slicing a country’s audience seats into half, and had even more so, caused the faces of the profound practitioners in the seats to pale in fright.

At the very instant he landed, the nine genius Phoenix disciples who were surrounding Yun Che, all felt a tsunami-like air wave pressing towards them. All of them grunted at the same time, and were pushed tens of meters away by this wave of air. Shock and fear were displayed on every one of their faces... Just merely the force of his descent had pushed all nine of them back! This person’s strength... Just how terrifying could it be!?

“Oh?” Spiritual Master Gu Cang thoughtfully looked at the figure who descended, and recalled his loud roar earlier, which resounded

through the entire stadium.

The person who descended from the sky had an incomparably huge figure. His entire body was as robust as a monster, every muscle on his body was bulging high up, and glistened with a luster which only metals could have. Just by merely looking at them, it could be imagined just how frightening of a strength was being hidden in each of them.

Looking at this person, all of the experts in the Divine Phoenix Sect carried faces of shock... Because the profound aura being emitted from this person's body... was clearly of the Tyrant Profound Realm!!

And if it was merely an Overlord, it wouldn't be enough to shock them to such an extent. They could clearly see a form of immaturity on the face of this person, whose figure was astonishingly large and bulky. Strong profound energy could slow down the aging process, and conceal one's age, however, it was impossible to maintain that form of immaturity which could only belong to a youth. In other words, this person's age, even at the very most... would not surpass twenty!!

An Overlord who was not even twenty years old!!

And this aura, was clearly that of a mid-stage Overlord... which could suppress seventy percent of the Elder-class experts in Divine Phoenix Sect!

When Feng Feiyan and Feng Hengkong, who were among the peak-class peerless experts of Profound Sky, realized this truth, even they had fallen into a trance for a moment. Even with Feng Feiyan's violent personality, when facing this intruder who broke through the walls to enter this area, he didn't dare to act rashly.

A mid-stage Overlord not even twenty years of age... This was too frightening of a concept.

Those nine Phoenix disciples who were forcefully blown away merely

by his aura alone, looked at him with extremely terrified eyes. For a moment, they basically did not dare to even take a step forward.

However, Yun Che, who was the closest to his landing point, was not pushed even a single inch by the air wave. Evidently, he had purposefully, and forcefully weakened the air wave that was heading into Yun Che's direction with his will. Yun Che slowly turned around, and looked dumbfoundedly at the back figure in his line of sight. It was incomparably familiar, yet, the aura was completely foreign, to the point where he was basically in complete disbelief...

"Yuan... Yuanba?"

Yun Che's call suddenly shook the large figure. Slowly, he began to turn around... His turn was incomparably slow, and during the entire process, his body was shivering like a sieve. It was unknown if it was due to his extreme excitement, or the fear that the person he was going to see after turning around, was not that person he really hoped to see.

Finally, his body had completely turned around, revealing a face which had distorted due to excitement.

Xia Yuanba!!

After being apart for more than two years, Xia Yuanba's figure, which was already astonishing in the first place, had once again grown another fifteen centimeters. In front of Yun Che, he was an absolute giant. His looks had become a little mature. His eyes and the place between his brows no longer possessed that silliness and frailness he once had before. Instead, there was now firmness, decisiveness, and an oppressive feeling capable of shaking one's heart, which had never appeared from him in the past. The overbearingness of his aura, compared to his former frailness, was basically worlds apart.

However, Yun Che had grown up with him. No matter how big the change the two of them had, even if they had not met for more than ten years, with merely a glance, they would still be able to recognize

each other.

"Brother... in-law..."

When Xia Yuanba uttered these three words, tears instantly poured down, and his voice turned incomparably incomprehensible due to his choking tears. "Brother-in-law... Brother-in-law!!"

Xia Yuanba shouted out with a trembling voice, and then, he suddenly stepped forward, his gigantic figure instantly glomping Yun Che. Two bulky arms tightly hugged onto him, and just like that, in front of several millions of people, he began to wail loudly. A man whose figure was as humongous as that, was actually crying so heartbreakingly. Every corner of the stadium, was filled with his wails and cries.

"Yuanba, it really is you." Yun Che pressed his hand onto Xia Yuanba's arm, and lightly smiled. The shock and disbelief in his heart had quickly dissipated, and what replaced them, was warmth and comfort.

Xia Yuanba had changed. His strength had flipped upside down. His eyes, demeanor, aura, all of them had completely changed. However, the voice he used to call him, the sensation from the hug, and the tears which would only fall in front of him... did not change at all. He was still that Xia Yuanba he was familiar and close with since childhood.

"Brother-in-law... It really is you..." Xia Yuanba said the same exact words as Yun Che. His shoulders lifted, and no matter what he did, his tears could not stop flowing. No matter how one could change, the most treasured, and most precious emotion in one's soul would never, ever change. Furthermore, all of the changes he underwent in these past two years, were all because of Yun Che.

Although he had already found out the news that Yun Che did not actually die two years ago from his father, when he saw the live and well Yun Che with his very own eyes, he was still agitated to the point

where he was completely unable to control his own emotions.

"Ehh... Aaaaah!!!" Ling Jie looked at the giant who was hugging Yun Che, and after staring blankly for a long while, he suddenly let out a weird cry.

"What happened? Who is that person? Do you know him?" Hua Minghai hurriedly asked.

"I... I do. Bu... But... But..." Ling Jie took in a deep breath. He was so shocked that he was even unable to voice out his words properly. He had naturally seen Xia Yuanba before, because back then, he had went with Yun Che to the Heavenly Sword Villa to participate in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament. His two biggest traits were: One, his humongous figure, and two, his trashy weak profound strength. It was impossible to not leave a deep impression on Ling Jie. Then, he was also the reason why Yun Che was sealed in the Sword Management Terrace.

However, clearly, Xia Yuanba's profound strength back then was merely at the Elementary Profound Realm. It could be said that Xia Yuanba was the person with the worst aptitude he had ever seen in his entire life.

However, the moment he descended, his aura was basically capable of shattering the earth, and the nine genius Thrones of Divine Phoenix Sect, were even blasted tens of meters away purely from his aura alone...

This contrast, was basically too huge... to the extent that he was basically unable to believe his eyes.

What's wrong with this world...? Boss defeated Feng Xiluo. This conclusion was already astonishing enough!! But this trash among trash back then, is actually... actually...

"This person..." Extreme astonishment was revealed from Ling Kun's expression, and this astonishment was several times more compared

to when Yun Che defeated Feng Xiluo. Because he had once met Xia Yuanba as well. Back then, he was under his watch when Yun Che used his own life to save Xia Yuanba. If not for the words he spoke to Yun Che, and that uncontrollable emotions of his, even if his appearance was similar, he definitely wouldn't have believed that they were the exact same person.

"An Overlord!?" Ye Xinghan, who had a loose demeanor the entire time, at this very moment, fiercely frowned as well. Evidently, it was impossible for this Overlord whose age had yet to pass twenty, to not have him pay attention.

"Young Hall Master." Ling Kun spoke. "If I were to say that two years ago, this person's profound strength was merely at the Elementary Profound Realm, would you believe it?"

"I see that Elder Ling Kun knows how to make such tasteless jokes as well." Ye Xinghan smirked.

"Hoho." Ling Kun chuckled, and no longer said another word.

"Who the hell are you! You actually dare to barge into our Phoenix Realm!!" Feng Feiyan arrived in the air above Xia Yuanba, and said with a low voice. However, he still did not dare to act rashly. Because for an Overlord at such a young age, the only birthplace he could think of, was the Sacred Grounds!

Spiritual Master Gu Cang stood up from his seat. Holding his horsetail whisk in his hands, he calmly smiled. "This child is this Gu's last closed-door disciple. My dear disciple has a reckless personality, and because he had suddenly saw a relative of his, he lost control of his emotions, startling everyone. I hope that your esteemed sect is not offended."

When Spiritual Master Gu Cang himself stood up to speak, Feng Hengkong hurriedly stood up as well. With an astonished expression, he said. "So he's actually the disciple of Spiritual Master Gu, it's no wonder he has such astonishing profound strength at such a young

age... I wonder what the age of your esteemed disciple is this year?"

Spiritual Master Gu Cang lightly smiled. "My dear disciple is already eighteen years old this year."

When the three words "eighteen years old" were uttered, those whose cultivation was not yet an Overlord's and were unable to inspect Xia Yuanba's degree of profound strength, did not really feel anything. However, the faces of Feng Hengkong, Feng Feiyan, and the various Great Elders of Divine Phoenix Sect paled from shock. Even Ye Xinghan's brows had fiercely twitched for a moment.

Feng Hengkong said with an astonished voice. "As expected of the closed-door disciple Spiritual Master Gu Cang had personally taken in. At the mere age of eighteen, he's actually already at the realm of an Overlord! His achievements in the future are limitless! Congratulations to Spiritual Master Gu Cang for having such a talented disciple."

Feng Hengkong did not purposefully reduced his own volume, and with his dense profound energy, his voice naturally spread across the entire stadium easily. When the few words "eighteen years old", and "Overlord" were uttered out from his mouth, not one of the practitioners in the stadium were not dumbfounded.

Pfft...

The breath of air which Ling Jie had been taking into his stomach, instantly gushed out. "Ov... Ov... Overlord!?"

"The hell... In other places, it's rare to see an Overlord even once in a hundred years, when did one become so invaluable today... Eighteen years old... Overlord... Are you freaking sure you're not kidding me?" Hua Minghai took in a cold breath. Then, his expression instantly calmed down, as he said with a soft voice. "But, seeing how close he is with Boss Yun, and that he's the closed-door disciple of this Grand Elder of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary... Boss Yun seems to have instantly gotten out of danger all of a sudden!!"

"Hoho." Spiritual Master Gu Cang chuckled at Feng Hengkong. Then, his eyes turned towards Xia Yuanba, as he said with a light voice. "Yuanba, as a disciple of the Sanctuary, even if you're unable to help it, it is still inappropriate to cry in such a manner. Calm your emotions, and come over to greet the Phoenix Sect Master."

Xia Yuanba's emotions, at this moment, had finally stabilized as well. He turned around, yet, he did not face Spiritual Master Gu Cang. Instead, his gaze fiercely swept across the several Phoenix disciples in the air. "Earlier, were you the ones who said that there's no one else in Blue Wind!? And even wanted to attack my brother-in-law with all nine of you together!? Then come forward and face this daddy here... Come!!"

Earlier, when Xia Yuanba was wailing loudly like a little child, the nine Phoenix disciples had even felt it was funny. However, the moment Xia Yuanba's gaze swept towards them, the might displayed from his eyes, was actually capable of causing their hearts to suddenly spasm. With his roaring voice, every single word was thunder in the distant sky, shaking them to the extent where the energy and blood in their bodies boiled, making them feel like they were about to spurt out blood on-site.

Yun Che once again sized Xia Yuanba up, and his heart was filled with shock. The Xia Yuanba he was familiar with, was silly and frail. Yet, the current Xia Yuanba, on the territory of this Divine Phoenix Sect, while facing the big heads and disciples of Divine Phoenix Sect, his aura, eyes, and voice, were actually this tyrannical and overbearing. That kind of feeling... was as though he was an unparalleled emperor who was arrogantly watching over the world, overlooking over the countless lives; that everything in his eyes were but insignificant beings!

"His Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, actually awakened." Jasmine's voice was also filled with astonishment. Although she had long ago told Yun Che that Xia Yuanba's profound veins were the extremely rare Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, she had also said that given

his personality, it was completely impossible for the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins to awaken. Instead, it would become an extremely large burden for his profound practitioner path, causing his profound strength to, at the very most, stop at the Elementary Profound Realm.

However, reality was in front of their eyes. Xia Yuanba's Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, had genuinely awakened!

=====

Chapter 445 – Divine Phoenix’s Murderous Intent

Jasmine had said before, that once the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins awakened, one’s profound strength would explosively soar towards the Emperor Profound Realm overnight, even towards the Tyrant Profound Realm. At that time, Yun Che’s only felt that it was too exaggerated and false, exaggerated to the extent that even if it was from Jasmine’s own mouth, he wouldn’t dare to believe it..

However, standing right in front of him was Xia Yuanba, who was only at the Elementary Profound Realm two years ago, but now a true Overlord who could intensely move even the Phoenix Sect Master! How could he not believe.

In this world, there was surprisingly such an unimaginable type of profound veins... Furthermore it was right in front of him, on Xia Yuanba, who had grown up with him!

“The awakening of the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins requires the most intense tyrannical feelings.” Jasmine said unhurriedly: “It requires a reckless, almost insane thirst for strength, only then will the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins awaken. His character was especially weak previously, and the veins would originally never have awakened. However, it seems that in these two years, his personality has gone through major changes. If my guess is not wrong, it should be due to him watching on helplessly as you sacrificed yourself to save him, which thus had a huge impact on his nature due to extreme pain and self-blame, making him unwilling to continue being just a burdensome trash.”

“...” Yun Che was moved. He had found out from Cang Yue, that after he was initially sealed under the Sword Management Terrace, Xia Yuanba had left alone. He, who always had a mild temperament, had cut off all ties with incomparable stubbornness... Black Moon Merchant Guild’s Senior Zi told him that Xia Yuanba had appeared in Divine Phoenix City before, challenging every large sect as if he was mad. Even if his whole body was riddled with wounds, at his last

gasp, he was unwilling to stop...

Looking at Xia Yuanba again, he had grown... the extent to which he had grown, exceeded his imagination by miles. From someone who required his protection, someone who did not dare to retaliate after being humiliated, and someone who did everything cautiously, he had transformed to the person standing in front of him who he needed to gaze upwards to see. He had become an emperor class figure in the Profound Sky Continent..

Facing Xia Yuanba's incomparably imposing strength, the nine Phoenix disciples trembled with fear. Not to mention advancing, there was not even a person who dared to open his mouth. Spiritual Master Gu Cang shook his head and said: "Yuanba, this is the ranking tournament, your relative is also participating in the tournament, so he is not being surrounded unfairly on purpose, come back your master's side first."

"I know!" Xia Yuanba's stone cold face showed no change, his character now was incomparably firm. Though Spiritual Master Gu Cang was his master, he actually did not comply: "And I've just said it as well, I am representing Blue Wind Nation, I will fight with my Brother-in-law. What's inappropriate about that?!"

Feng Feiyan suddenly lost his cool and said, frowning: "The Seven Nation Ranking Tournament is between profound practitioners of the seven nations, Blue Wind Nation can only be represented by Blue Wind practitioners and not anyone who wishes to, can represent Blue Wind Nation! If not, how can it be called the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament!"

"This rule, how could I not know!" Facing Feng Feiyan's suppressing manner, Xia Yuanba nevertheless instantly replied in a stern voice: "Sorry to disappoint you! Because I am originally a Blue Wind Nation citizen! Why can't I represent Blue Wind Nation in battle?!"

Xia Yuanba's determined expression made Spiritual Master Gu Cang let out a laugh, and say somewhat helplessly: "My humble disciple is

indeed from Blue Wind Nation.”

Feng Feiyan and the others all had a change in complexion, the jaws of all the profound practitioners in the arena dropped... This Yun Che, who defeated Feng Xiluo, was from Blue Wind Nation, and this eighteen year old Overlord, was unexpectedly from Blue Wind Nation too!!

The smallest in Profound Sky Continent, the weakest, always being looked down upon by the other six nations, this generation... could it be that they were being looked out for by a god?!

“Wrong!” Feng Feiyan shook his head: “The Four Sacred Grounds is an existence outside of the Seven Nations, it does not belong to any nation. Since he has entered Absolute Monarch Sanctuary and was accepted by Spiritual Master Gu Cang, he is now a member of the Sanctuary, and thus does not belong to any nation. He does not have any rights to represent Blue Wind Nation in battle.”

The moment Feng Feiyan finished his sentence, Xia Yuanba immediately turned, kneeled down facing Spiritual Master Gu Cang: “Master, disciple is unfilial, I wish to cut our master-disciple ties and leave Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, please grant me this wish.”

Xia Yuanba’s actions, tone, and manner were incomparably determined, there was not a hint of hesitation. This caused everyone’s jaws to drop, their hearts were violently shaken.

At this point, even an idiot would be able to know just how much this person named Xia Yuanba felt for Yun Che. In the face of the almighty Divine Phoenix Sect, his words and mannerisms were tyrannical to the extreme, yet in front of Yun Che, he was like a child crying. In order to fight together with Yun Che, he even wanted to break all ties with Absolute Monarch Sanctuary without hesitation... this was a place where Profound Sky practitioners would not even dare dream of.

The usually indifferent Spiritual Master Gu Cang could not help but

stare in amazement. He shook his head, looking slightly disconcerted: "Yuanba, you... why?"

Xia Yuanba's gaze was clear, there was not a hint of hesitation or struggle as he enunciated every word: "Master, disciple is unfilial and has definitely made you sad. However, to disciple, Brother-in-law is a relative whom I can never turn my back on. This life of disciple's, was given by his parents, the second life, was exchanged with Brother-in-law's own life! In disciple's heart, Brother-in-law is a relative as important as his parents. Disciple would rather lose himself, lose Master, lose the Sanctuary, lose the Heavens, than to lose his loved ones!"

Spiritual Master Gu Cang's expression hardened, suddenly not knowing what to say. After seeing Yun Che, Xia Yuanba lost control of his emotions and started to wail, shocking him... because the Xia Yuanba he knew, had a heart of steel. He had never thought that Xia Yuanba would go so far for Yun Che. It only showed that the bond between the two of them was not as simple as just relatives.

Now, Spiritual Master Gu Cang could not regret more about bringing Xia Yuanba along. Xia Yuanba's quick growth had shook the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary immensely. His profound veins were not like that of an ordinary person's, it contained power that even the Heavenly Monarch could not see through. Many people in the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary believed that with Xia Yuanba's unbelievable growth, his future achievements could even exceed the Heavenly Monarch!!

If Xia Yuanba really did leave the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, it would be extremely detrimental to the entire Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.

Absolute Monarch Sanctuary was a sacred dreamland all profound practitioners would dream of but not reach. Even in the face of an exceptionally gifted genius, it was still, after all, a Sacred Ground he would thirst for and would never be willing to let go.

At this point, a hand suddenly appeared on Xia Yuanba's shoulder. Yun Che patted him and said: "Yuanba, get up. Absolute Monarch Sanctuary is the pinnacle of the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Being able to enter the top ranking Sacred Ground in the Profound Sky Continent is every profound practitioner's dream, you do not need to do this for me. I know you are afraid that I'll be bullied, but to deal with these people, I alone am enough."

"But..." Xia Yuanba turned around. He could tell Yun Che's condition, it was apparent that he had just gone through a tough battle, his profound strength was down by more than half. Yet nine people surrounded him, and each of their conditions were well above Yun Che's... This was simply bullying! If this fight really went down, losing was secondary, if Yun Che made any mistakes, there would be a possibility of him losing his life.

Now, when he finally had the ability to protect Yun Che, how would he allow others to hurt Yun Che even by a little! Even if it meant turning his back on his teacher, he would be Yun Che's shield and cause the nine Divine Phoenix Sect disciples to be routed.

Yun Che shook his head: "Since you have already taken Spiritual Master Gu Cang as your Master, and are already an inner disciple, if you just leave like this, it would be a little outrageous. It would also cause your Master to lose face in front of so many people. I understand what you are worried about, but you can relax, I am really enough... I am after all your brother-in-law, when have I ever let you down."

Xia Yuanba's eyes showed his inner turmoil, he remembered about the endless admiration he had for him in the beginning, how he had countlessly made the impossible possible... At that time, in his eyes, Yun Che could do anything. No matter how strong the enemy, even if they were myth-level beings to himself, they all fell to Yun Che's hands in the end.

No matter when, he had never lost.

Even now, when he had become an Overlord, this kind of almost blindly worshipping still existed.

“Okay.” Even though he was still anxious at heart, the deep rooted trust Xia Yuanba had allowed him to have little hesitation. He nodded fiercely, and chose to obey: “Then I’ll be below, waiting to watch brother-in-law give them a good smacking... Brother-in-law, you must be careful.”

“Relax, my life is stubborn, even if I wanted to, I can’t die.” Yun Che laughed.

Xia Yuanba walked down at once, over to the side of Spiritual Master Gu Cang. Even with Spiritual Master Gu Cang’s personality, which was as calm as water, he couldn’t help but to feel inwardly envious. As Yuanba’s Master, when he wanted him to come down, not only did Yuanba refuse, he even went to the extent of saying that he wanted to leave Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. But the moment Yun Che opened his mouth, within a few words, he obediently went down.

Haaah... What kind of situation is this.

At the same time, surprise welled in his heart, why did Yun Che let Xia Yuanba leave? With his current condition, he simply could not defeat the nine Divine Phoenix Sect genius disciples. Could it just be that he purely did not want Xia Yuanba to leave Absolute Monarch Sanctuary?

The initially sullen looking Divine Phoenix Profound practitioners all quietly let out a breath... that was an Overlord! An eighteen year old Overlord! If he really represented Blue Wind Nation to battle, then why the hell would Divine Phoenix Sect fight for naught?!! In front of a real Overlord, don’t even mention nine Thrones, even if there were ninety, they would still be beaten like dogs.

Feng Hengkong’s and Feng Feiyan’s faces however, become somber.

Yun Che was supposed to die!

However, a talented, scary relative from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had now appeared! Furthermore, it was a person who was willing to lose everything to protect him! He had the indirect equivalent of a protective umbrella from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary!

Then, all the more reason for him to die!

If they did not take advantage of today, during the ranking tournament to “uprightly” kill him, killing him after today would be incomparably difficult! If he completely matured, he would be a huge unprecedented trouble in the future.

Yun Che straightened his body and grabbed Dragon Fault again. The entire arena quietened down as all eyes amassed onto him... Nobody believed that he could defeat the combination of nine mid-stage Thrones, especially after spending a large portion of his profound power in a fierce battle with Feng Xiluo. Then what exactly was he going to do? Was he going to admit defeat?

Without Xia Yuanba’s intimidating pressure, the Phoenix disciples finally calmed down, pressing onto Yun Che again.... just at this moment, simultaneously in their ears, Feng Hengkong personally delivered a sound-transmitted message:

“Immediately activate Phoenix Domain with full power! Burn him with the power of nine domains! Do not give him any chance to surrender, or for any other people to rescue him! Right... now!!”

=====

Chapter 446 – True·Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing

Feng Hengkong's voice violently rushed towards the nine Divine Phoenix disciples' souls. In that instant, they understood Feng Hengkong's intentions. In that split second, nine ominous glints flashed through their eyes, and at the same time, glaring scarlet flames radiated from their bodies.

Phoenix Domain!!

The nine of them shared the same phoenix bloodline, cultivated the same World Ode of the Phoenix. They could clearly feel the changes in one another's aura and profound arts. Thus, they were completely capable of releasing their domains at the exact same moment, perfectly overlapping each other!

The first four levels of the World Ode of the Phoenix did not contain a Domain, the "Phoenix Domain" was developed by the Divine Phoenix Sect over five thousand years with their Phoenix bloodline and World Ode of the Phoenix. It was developed to perfection as a fiery, decimating domain. When the domain activated, the Phoenix blood would ignite. The surroundings would instantly transform into a terrifying blazing purgatory. Though the Phoenix Domain would require a far more enormous amount of energy compared to domains of the same level, its power was unrivaled.

A single Phoenix Domain's power was already terrifyingly mighty. When nine Phoenix Domains activated at the same time and then overlapped one another... this kind of scene had never been witnessed by anyone, not even a Phoenix disciple.

Boom!!!!!!

Before anyone had time to react, a huge expanse of fire as red as blood crazily filled the center of the stadium, instantly transforming into a sea of fire... In that instant, it seemed as though a burning sun had appeared and violently exploded.

All eyes in the arena shined with the color of blood; in that instant, it was as if the entire world completely turned red... Waves of flame blazed violently, bringing terror, completely shadowing the sea of fire which had been brought about in Yun Che's and Feng Xiluo's showdown.

And right in the middle of this terrifying sea of hellfire was Yun Che, completely being submerged.

"AHHHHH!!!"

After a period of deathly silence, the entire arena shouted in alarm. The scene which they had just witnessed was nothing like the quiet from a moment ago. In the next second, it was as if a volcano had erupted. A number of profound practitioners in the stadium could instantly recognize that the scene before them was exactly Divine Phoenix Sect's domineering Phoenix Domain! The Phoenix Domain was originally far more powerful than the common domain, and when nine Phoenix Domains were released at the same time, overlapping, no one would doubt that even a true Overlord, when caught off guard, would definitely be severely burnt!

This act from Divine Phoenix Sect... was evidently meant to instantly kill Yun Che! To not give anybody the chance to react!

Feng Hengkong's lips twitched. Feng Feiyan's face revealed a cold smile... They had clearly witness Yun Che drown under nine layers of Phoenix Domain. It was too sudden, a method so frightening that nobody could foresee, a method which did not give anyone the chance to react. Even more so, it did not allow Yun Che any opportunity to surrender. Under nine layers of Divine Phoenix Domains, not even mentioning that Yun Che had spent most of his profound strength, even if he was in perfect condition, it was more than enough the burn him to ashes.

In their eyes, Yun Che had unquestionably died, there was no chance of a fluke. Even if Spiritual Master Gu Cang lent a hand, it would still be too late.

"Brother-in-law!!"

And at this moment, Xia Yuanba had just arrived next to Spiritual Master Gu Cang. He didn't even have the chance to speak a word when the sea of flames exploded to fill the skies. The blistering heat had caused his body, which was even harder than profound iron to burn dully. He suddenly lost his cool and let out a roar. Just when he wanted to rush forward...

"Wait!!" Spiritual Master Gu Cang raised his hand and hauled him over, looking back to the sea of phoenix fire before him as his eyes flashed in astonishment.

Scree~~~~

Suddenly, from within the blazing stadium, came a resonant cry of a Phoenix. All of a sudden, in the middle of the cry, the fiery domain from the combined power of nine layers of Phoenix Domains overlapping was unexpectedly torn apart to reveal a giant gap. From within the gap, the shadow of a Phoenix soared into the sky, rushing towards the horizon.

It was a complete phoenix silhouette. Its head was held high; with a full scarlet body, its fiery phoenix wings was over 30 meters wide, and at the heart of the phoenix silhouette... was actually Yun Che's figure!!

"Wh... What!!" Feng Hengkong stood up fiercely and involuntarily cried out in astonishment.

Along with Yun Che's ear-splitting roar, the phoenix silhouette soared several hundred meters high as it broke into the sky. At this point in time, a voice echoed out: "People of the Divine Phoenix Sect... open up your eyes for me... take a look at what the real... World Ode of the Phoenix is!!!"

"AHHHH..."

The phoenix flames on Yun Che's body burned frantically. With his

low roar, the phoenix silhouette on his body grew larger and thickened, as though a real phoenix was soaring across the horizon; its fiery wings extended fully, covering dozens of meters in the air. Thereafter, the cry of the phoenix tore through the firmament. The gigantic phoenix silhouette brought along flames which burned across the skies and an incomparable aura, as if a meteor were suddenly landing...

Everyone's eyes bulged... because they had seen a phoenix! Although it was just a powerful illusion, it was still a fully formed, realistic looking illusion!! Even Phoenix disciples had never seen a fully formed phoenix silhouette!!

Space was thoroughly distorted. Following the descent of the phoenix silhouette, space would fiercely crack from the center of the arena. Everywhere the wings of the phoenix soared past, the land would be burned by an expanse of unextinguishable flame. Tremendous amounts of force continued to rush to the ground beneath, causing even the faces of Overlords to turn slightly bad.

At the same time, an indescribable fearsome pressure ruthlessly suppressed the souls of all Divine Phoenix Sect members, causing their souls, and even their Phoenix bloodline, to tremble...

This was not simply the pressure of a realm! It was even pressure on their bloodline.

"Empyrean Dance... of the Phoenix Wing!" Feng Xue'er cried out in surprise beside Feng Hengkong.

"What!?" Feng Xue'er's voice caused Feng Hengkong to tremble and his pupils to constrict. Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing... It was mentioned by the Phoenix God, stage five of the World Ode of the Phoenix which had vanished in Blue Wind!!

Right! Yun Che had indeed released the phoenix flame technique which came along with the fifth stage of the World Ode of the Phoenix — Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing. However, this

Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing and the ones that he had exhibited before were different. This was because before genuinely cultivating World Ode of the Phoenix, the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing he had displayed before was from forcefully comprehending the Phoenix flame laws with the help and interference of the Evil God's fire seed. It had form but not the spirit. And how could a formidable profound skill belonging to the Phoenix God only have that amount of power?

This time, Yun Che was using the genuine Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!! When used by the Phoenix God, it was a powerful profound skill which could completely obliterate an entire planet in a split second!

"Quick, dodge it!!" The immense pressure descending from the sky caused Feng Feiyan to be alarmed, as he shouted towards the nine Phoenix disciples below.

And the nine who thought that using the power of nine layers of Phoenix Domain would burn Yun Che to death were totally pale, trembling from head to toe... They had heard Feng Feiyan's voice, but not a single person moved. This was because the aura descending upon them was just like a towering mountain which weighed upon their bodies, making them feel as though their bodies would be pressed into minced meat anytime.

Not just their bodies, their willpower, and even consciousness had been totally suppressed. Their spirits were filled with endless terror and despair...

BOOM!!!!!!!!!!

The phoenix silhouette rushed down, and the entire phoenix world trembled for a moment. The world-shaking rumble had practically spread across the entire Divine Phoenix City.

The Phoenix Domain exploded, causing Phoenix flames to spread across the sky. Incomparably intense blood-curdling screams could

be heard as the nine Phoenix disciples were drenched in blood. They were smacked flying like nine broken blood bags, and at the area in which the Phoenix Stage was originally located, the ground had completely disappeared, replaced by an unfathomably deep and dark pit!

The berserk power of the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing was concentrated and did not disperse its power over a wide area. Thus, apart from the heart of the the attack, no other areas seemed to be affected. Looking at the nine Phoenix disciples who were sent flying, several elders from the Divine Phoenix Sect frantically rushed over to them, with the intent to catch them in midair.

And at this point, from the bottomless pit, a ball of flame overreaching the heavens exploded. Incomparably hot Phoenix flames in the shape of enchanting and gorgeous petals furiously bloomed into a giant flaming lotus, instantly covering several hundred meters, swallowing up the nine Phoenix disciples who were sent flying.

“Scorching... This is the Star Scorching Demon Lotus!” Feng Xue’er cried out in alarm again.

Feng Hengkong: “!!!!”

An incomparably gorgeous three hundred meter wide flaming lotus, had just bloomed in the center of the stadium. Its beauty would cause one to hold their breath, but each petal exhibited a destructive aura, terrifying enough to make one suffocate. Everyone just stared at it with blank faces, as if they had lost their souls.

The elders who had rushed forward to save the nine genius Phoenix disciples stopped right in their tracks, eyes bulging, firmly staring at the giant flaming lotus, none of them actually willing to continue forward. These elders were undoubtedly Overlords. Though the Phoenix Flame Lotus in front of them had a strong destructive aura, it was still not enough to harm Overlords like them. However, facing the Phoenix Flame Lotus, their hearts wavered profusely. Not to

mention reaching out a hand to touch, they would not even dare to near it... It was a kind of formless fear, down to the level of their bloodline. It caused them to feel like a commoner meeting a legendary emperor out of the blue.

Star Scorching Demon Lotus, and it was a complete Star Scorching Demon Lotus.

The Star Scorching Demon Lotuses from before had a maximum of thirty six petals.

Yet now, this flower had a whole one hundred and eight petals, and each petal was far deeper than the previous ones.

Everyone stared blankly; the entire stadium, the entire tens of thousands of people, and apart from the sounds of burning flames, there was not a trace of sound to be heard... Even the sound of breathing could not be heard. Those from the Four Sacred Grounds stood up. Xia Yuanba's jaws dropped, his chin almost touching the floor.

Feng Feiyan, closest to the heart of the stadium, had his eyes bulged out of their sockets as both his hands trembled. The corner of Feng Hengkong's lips could not stop twitching... To outsiders of the Divine Phoenix Sect, the reason why they were stunned was due to the destructive aura and beauty. But to them, it was as if the sky and earth had flipped, an attack on their psyche.

Because Yun Che had just demonstrated two phoenix flame skills whose characteristics completely matched the descriptions of two major phoenix flame techniques from legends! And even if they just had similar characteristics, they could leave it be, but the power they exhibited was indescribably immense, outrageously exceeding the fourth phoenix stage's Phoenix Flame Sears the Heavens! It thoroughly exceeded the power of the fourth stage of the World Ode of the Phoenix!

Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing, Star Scorching Demon Lotus...

They should only belong in myths and the mouth of the Phoenix God... The power of the long lost skills of the fifth and sixth World Ode of the Phoenix should have been extinct five thousand years ago!

=====

Chapter 447 – Little Mingming, You Need Some Sense of Shame

The Phoenix Demon Lotus was still at full bloom, not withering for a long time. It was as illusionary and enchanting as a sacred heavenly flower, yet the destructive aura released was like lava from hell.

In the middle of the Demon Lotus, a blazing pistil supported a human silhouette that rose unhurriedly. Yun Che's entire body was in flames as he held onto his heavy sword, appearing in everyone's line of sight. He appeared to look weak, his whole body trembling slightly, panting, as if he had difficulty standing, but the look in his eyes was still as powerful, striking fear to those who looked into them. People just stared blankly at him... at this moment, it was like they were witnessing a blazing sovereign who ruled the lands!

"These are precisely... the fifth and sixth stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix! These are the stages that your Divine Phoenix Sect... have never managed to reach! For an entire five thousand years, the highest stage your Divine Phoenix Sect's World Ode of the Phoenix has ever reached is only the fourth stage!" Yun Che panted with anger. Nevertheless, every word of his was as loud as thunder: "Now, do you guys still want to say... that my Phoenix bloodline, is from your Divine Phoenix Sect!!"

Yun Che's presence in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was to solve the grievances he had with Divine Phoenix Sect... but, this "solution", was not to clear the grievances he had with Divine Phoenix Sect at all. It was fated that there was no way to clear it. The conclusion he wanted, was for the Divine Phoenix Sect to go from taking the initiative, to being passive in front of everyone!

He possessed the Phoenix bloodline, thus, the Divine Phoenix Sect wanted to "tidy up sectorial issues", in the eyes of the people; it was just and proper. However, he only needed to prove that his bloodline did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect, and their attempts to kill would then be without justification.

And the best opportunity, would be under the gazes of all the heroes of the world, in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament with the Four Great Sacred Grounds present!

If not, if he directly confronted Divine Phoenix Sect, even if he could prove that his bloodline truly did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect... that would instead be courting death.

Moreover, after rising to prominence in the ranking tournament, not to mention publicly killing, even if they wanted to assassinate him, they would have to hold back.

Before coming to Divine Phoenix City, Yun Che's best method to prove himself was to defeat the strongest practitioner from the younger generation of Divine Phoenix Sect, making them speechless, forcing them to admit it! If Divine Phoenix Sect still censured him, then, it was possible that the Four Great Sacred Grounds who espoused righteousness and benevolence would step in. It was possible that the profound practitioners of the six nations present would step in too, based on the glory that he brought to the six nations, placing pressure on the Divine Phoenix Emperor... however, the probability for success was only fifty-fifty. But when Jasmine told him that the Phoenix Spirit was already gone, the probability for success rose to seventy to eighty percent.

From then on, he could exhibit the fifth and sixth stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix without any restraint! And this was his bloodline's most substantial, most irrefutable, ironclad proof!

As for Xia Yuanba's arrival, it gave him an indirect layer of protection from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, which was totally unanticipated.

The Phoenix Demon Lotus started to wilt slowly, after ten breaths, it totally disappeared under everyone's gaze, but the shock and visual impact was deeply engraved in everyone's souls.

Indeed, doing so would undoubtedly increase Divine Phoenix Sect's desire for him to die... Because they would never allow another

Phoenix branch in the Profound Sky Continent to appear and expand. Furthermore, a branch with Phoenix Profound Arts two entire stages above theirs! They would even strongly lust for his World Ode of the Phoenix as well.

However, Yun Che would rather Divine Phoenix Sect increase their murderous intent by more than a hundred, even thousand times, than to allow them to chase and kill him as if it was proper and inevitable! He would even more not allow himself to be chased and killed in front of everyone as if it was proper and inevitable!

That was his pride and arrogance!

After the Star Scorching Demon Lotus disappeared, the bodies of the nine Phoenix disciples appeared in the area previously covered by the fire lotus. Having received heavy injuries, their entire bodies were dyed in blood, yet none were dead. Though they had drowned within the fire lotus, none of them were fatally harmed... this was evidently the face and leeway Yun Che had left Divine Phoenix Sect, it was even a favor... Because if the nine most gifted disciples of the young generation were buried, it would be an immense loss which Divine Phoenix Sect would not even be able to evaluate.

As to whether or not they felt grateful, and whether or not they wanted face, would be up to Divine Phoenix Sect themselves. For the usually petty Yun Che to give way to such an extent, it was already extremely benevolent.

From within the silence, a sharp voice came from the seats, completely breaking the silence.

“Wah! Did you guys hear that, the fifth and sixth stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix! Didn't the Divine Phoenix Sect's World Ode of the Phoenix only have four stages? What's going on!!”

The person who spoke was shockingly Ling Jie, he used his profound strength to shout his loudest, afraid that people would not be able to hear him.

"Doesn't this clear things up!" Hua Minghai immediately continued, even louder than Ling Jie by several folds: "This proves that Yun Che's Phoenix bloodline and World Ode of the Phoenix, simply doesn't originate from Divine Phoenix Sect."

"Eh? But aren't the Divine Phoenix Sect the only ones in Profound Sky Continent who possess the Phoenix bloodline and World Ode of the Phoenix?!"

"Are you a fool?! Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix bloodline originates from the legacy of the remnant Phoenix Spirit, but who told you that there is only one Phoenix legacy in the Profound Sky Continent! For the past five thousand years, only Divine Phoenix Sect possessed the Phoenix bloodline. This only proves that the Phoenix legacy was not discovered, but now, it has been discovered by Yun Che. Didn't Yun Che clearly explain before that his Phoenix bloodline did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect, but from another Phoenix legacy?"

"Before, I would definitely not believe it. However, Feng Xiluo, Divine Phoenix Sect's most gifted, the one who possesses the strongest Phoenix bloodline was defeated by Yun Che, and now that he revealed the power of the fifth and sixth stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix... These two points are both ironclad proofs! If you don't even believe this, your head is probably full of dog shit!!"

"Rightly said! Yun Che's Phoenix bloodline is definitely not from Divine Phoenix Sect, the World Ode of the Phoenix is even more impossible... Whoaa! Our Profound Sky Continent actually has another Phoenix legacy. My heart is starting to surge! After the ranking tournament, I will definitely risk my life to search for it... don't restrain me!"

Ling Jie and Hua Minghai spoke hand in hand, every sentence affecting everyone's thinking. The arena gradually became flooded by the sounds of discussion. If, Yun Che claimed that his Phoenix bloodline did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect at the beginning of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, not a single person in the

entire arena would have believed him. But he had defeated Feng Xiluo, and displayed an even higher level; in fact, two whole levels of the World Ode of the Phoenix... everybody could not help but to believe it!

The sounds of discussion in the arena was becoming increasingly loud, almost every voice was saying "Yun Che's bloodline definitely did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect". The faces of the Divine Phoenix Sect Master, Grand Elder and Crown Prince were as downcast as water; they had never thought that the situation would have such a development.

Divine Phoenix Sect originally only handled the situation of Yun Che simply as a matter of the leakage of bloodline. Characters the level of Feng Hengkong and Feng Feiyan would only ask about it occasionally, not putting the matter to heart at all... because no matter who the person involved was, it was impossible to escape the fate of the tidying up of sectorial matters. So much so that they felt that it was beneath them to interfere during the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament for Yun Che. Thus, during the tournament, they didn't take the initiative to bring up the matter of his Phoenix bloodline.

No one would have expected that under Yun Che's guidance and performance, the situation would develop into one which they could not even dream about.

Now, even they themselves believed that Yun Che's bloodline did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect, the World Ode of the Phoenix even more so... However, they could never admit this fact. The moment they admitted in front of everyone, they would lose all rights to conduct the "protection of bloodline" and "tidying up sectorial matters". And after today, Yun Che's name was bound to shake the world, and at that point, they would not be able to do anything to him in the open. Even doing things under wraps would be difficult to the extreme... Divine Phoenix Sect would probably be the first suspects, even if others wished harm upon Yun Che.

If they acknowledged Yun Che's bloodline and allowed him to leave

safely, then, in the Profound Sky Continent, their Divine Phoenix Sect would no longer be the only sect of a god! How could they allow this kind of matter to occur!

Feng Ximing glanced at Feng Hengkong and noticed his unsightly expression. He took a deep breath, stood up, and shouted loudly: "A bunch of nonsense! Completely a bunch of nonsense! All of you, don't be deceived by his nonsensical suggestions! In the Profound Sky Continent, ever since ancient times there has only been one Phoenix God, and only one Phoenix Legacy Sect! Our Divine Phoenix Sect's only Phoenix God has said not only once, that he is the only remnant Phoenix Spirit in Profound Sky Continent! If there existed another remnant Phoenix Spirit, then how would his Lordship, our Phoenix God, not be able to notice! If any other Phoenix legacy existed, then how would it not have been found by anyone in a whole five thousand years!!"

"This Yun Che... no matter how he quibbles and conceals, it is impossible for his Phoenix bloodline to originate from other Phoenix legacies. Originating from our Divine Phoenix Sect is the one and only possibility!"

Feng Ximing's every word sounded like clangs, spoken with righteousness. But no matter who heard it, would feel that he was clearly trying to shove arguments into other's' throats. Xia Yuanba suddenly turned his head and roared: "What utter rubbish! Your Divine Phoenix Sect's top ten disciples have been beaten worse than dogs by my brother-in-law! You still have the audacity to say that my brother-in-law's bloodline originates from your Divine Phoenix Sect? Ptooeey!! This is simply humiliating my brother-in-law!"

The words spoken by Xia Yuanba were tyrannical to the extreme, and more so offensive. Its nastiness was simply not inferior to splashing a bucket of shit on the Divine Phoenix Crown Prince's face in front of everybody. Feng Ximing's face instantly became the color of a pig's liver, Yun Che also immediately opened his eyes wide... Holy cow! These words were actually from Xia Yuanba!?

"Yuanba, don't be rude!" Spiritual Master Gu Cang laughed inwardly, obligingly berating him, then said: "However, based on what this Gu has seen, Yun Che's bloodline indeed does not originate from your sect. His World Ode of the Phoenix is enough to prove everything."

Although Spiritual Master Gu Cang's words were mild, based on his strength, background, prestige and status, he was undoubtedly the one whose words had the most credibility in the entire arena. The moment he said those words, he was undoubtedly supporting Yun Che... what a joke! His last closed-door disciple would give his life for Yun Che, he could not keep quiet even if he wanted to. Moreover, he felt surprise, and an appreciation towards Yun Che's talents. Even if he was not related to Xia Yuanba, he would have spoken up for Yun Che too.

Once Spiritual Master Gu Cang opened his mouth, it caused Feng Hengkong and the others to look even worse. Feng Ximing took a deep breath, saluted towards Spiritual Master Gu Cang and spoke forcefully: "Senior Gu's words are naturally of enormous weight. However... this matter concerns my Divine Phoenix Sect's bloodline taboo, which cannot be compromised whatsoever. Him defeating my fourteenth royal brother, only proves that he is extremely gifted, it has nothing to do with the purity of bloodline. His two moves from before... they were merely named by him as the fifth and sixth stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix! In this world, who has actually seen even higher stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix? My venerable Phoenix God is not even proficient in higher stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix, so how can he be?! That just proves that he was using other fire profound skills to cover it up!"

The moment Feng Ximing's words were spoken, Spiritual Master Gu Cang lightly scrunched his eyebrows. The hairs on Xia Yuanba's skull immediately stood up. Just when he wanted to scold out fiercely, a sweet and cute voice was suddenly heard:

"Aiyo aiyo aiyo... after listening to Little Mingming, you really don't have a sense of shame. this one has listened until it's too unbearable

already... Little Mingming, it's not that this one is criticizing you... but you're the little Crown Prince of Divine Phoenix, your father is Little Kongkong, how can you be so shameless... As a person, you should have a sense of shame. Even if you are shameless, Divine Phoenix Sect isn't. Even if the Divine Phoenix Sect is shameless, Divine Phoenix Empire isn't... Little Mingming, be obedient. Quickly stop being so shameless, this one hates shameless people the most."

=====

Chapter 448 – Divine Phoenix Sect's Trump Card

The moment this voice was heard, the hairs on Xia Yuanba's head which had stood up, suddenly softened. He turned his gaze to Ji Qianrou, alarm flashing in his eyes.

Ji Qianrou's half closed eyes, twiddling fingers and peach blossom eyes that quivered like ripples in water could almost make one's bones melt. His words were even more so soft and gentle, as though a young lady was pouring her heart out. However, the contents of his speech was full of incomparably deep ridicule and contempt, not less than Xia Yuanba's verbal abuse.

Pfft...

In the arena, half the people present were stupefied and the other half spat on the spot.

Yun Che glanced at Ji Qianrou in astonishment. Spiritual Master Gu Cang speaking up for him did not surprise him, however, he had not expected that Ji Qianrou from Supreme Ocean Palace, who had an evil and demonic manner and a feminine gaze which did not attach importance to anyone would actually take the initiative to speak up for him... No, no! How was this just speaking up for him, it was simply the same as following after Xia Yuanba, to smash another basin of shit on Feng Ximing's skull without restraint with a smile, entirely unafraid of thoroughly offending this Divine Phoenix Empire Crown Prince, and even the entire Divine Phoenix Sect.

In front of Feng Hengkong, Ye Xinghan, Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master was domineering to the extreme, arrogant and rude, yet in front of Ji Qianrou, he was full of worry and fear... How could this kind of character even find a mere Divine Phoenix Crown Prince to be important? Or perhaps... in the entire Profound Sky Continent, no one deserved any respect from him.

The expressions of Feng Hengkong, Feng Feiyan and the others

changed again. Feng Ximing's face twitched, his entire face turning purple as if he had swallowed a pile of piping hot shit; he was oppressed to the point he almost vomited blood. However, even if he dared to retort against Spiritual Master Gu Cang, he would never have the guts to retort against Ji Qianrou... the one and only person in this world who could cause Feng Hengkong's expression to change immediately, a frightening character whom one would run away in fear from. People could only witness his wickedness, but he had heard from Feng Hengkong about his frightfulness and ruthlessness not just once.

Ling Jie and Hua Minghai listened till their entire bodies were relaxed and refreshed; they regretted that they were unable to laugh heartily. This was not simply ridicule from any ordinary person, but from a person belonging to a Sacred Ground. They suddenly started to feel that this terrifying devil was actually rather cute; their surroundings were even filled with the sounds of sniggering.

Feng Ximing's words were indeed extremely funny and full of holes. Those two world-shocking flame skills were clearly blazing with Phoenix flames, released Phoenix pressure, and also far above the World Ode of the Phoenix. How could it be compared to some other random fire profound skill! Taking countless of steps back, even if there really was a fire profound skill which could surpass the World Ode of the Phoenix in this world... what enveloped Yun Che's body earlier, was clearly a Phoenix silhouette which caused everyone's heart to palpitate; only a blind person would not be able to see it clearly!

As a result, even though Feng Hengkong, Feng Feiyan and the others did not want to admit it, they still did not say anything, because in front of ironclad evidence, if they opened their mouths to deny, it would just be a joke to be looked down upon on... Feng Ximing had no choice but to brace himself to become cannon fodder, but in the end, he was clearly... miserably splashed with dog shit on his face by Xia Yuanba and Ji Qianrou.

Feng Ximing could not say another word. Nobody in the entire Divine Phoenix Sect could say a word for a period of time, the atmosphere declined into a deadlock where they were incomparably oppressed, and after Spiritual Master Gu Cang and Ji Qianrou had expressed their stands, it was fated that this deadlock would not be reversed. As a result, today, and the days after, they would not be able to openly chase and kill, or control Yun Che. Their legend of being undefeated would be thoroughly smashed, all their prodigies were defeated by a single person, causing the entire Divine Phoenix Sect to lose face. Even their sect's five thousand year old pride, the Phoenix bloodline, would no longer be unique to them!

Now, not even mentioning winning Yun Che over, even tidying up the current situation, and defending Divine Phoenix Sect's last bit of honor and prestige would be extremely difficult.

Within the cold atmosphere, after Feng Hengkong's expression fluctuated violently again, he finally opened his mouth and said with an extremely calm voice: "Yun Che, do you really believe... that within the young generation of my Divine Phoenix Sect, there is no one who can defeat you! In our Divine Phoenix Sect's current young generation, there is one person, regardless of innate talent, strength, or even bloodline strength, completely surpasses you, a thousandfold!"

The moment Feng Hengkong opened his mouth, everybody was immediately stunned. Ling Kun looked pensive, smiled silently, then said: "Oh? Within Divine Phoenix Sect, there actually exists another genius? Could it be that Divine Phoenix Sect Master disdained letting this genius to participate in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament? Or perhaps, the ten who battled are just considered ordinary disciples in Divine Phoenix Sect?"

The truth was naturally not as Ling Kun had stated. In Divine Phoenix Sect's younger generation, Feng Xiluo was indeed the best of the best whether in terms of talent or strength. But above Feng Xiluo, there was another trump card which surpassed him by miles. It was just

that this trump card was simply too important to Divine Phoenix Sect. Before today, Feng Hengkong had never thought about revealing it.

The moment Feng Hengkong spoke, the expressions of several core members of Divine Phoenix Sect immediately flickered. They were very clear about who Feng Hengkong was speaking of, but after their expressions flickered, no one expressed any objection.

That was because today's matter looked as if it was just about the issue of Yun Che's bloodline. However behind the scenes, it concerned Divine Phoenix Sect's face, prestige and honor. It could even affect their influence, even threaten Divine Phoenix Sect's future... Now that the situation had come to this point, it was by no means an exaggeration to say that this was Divine Phoenix Sect's largest peril in five thousand years...

Therefore, even if it was fated that there was no way to thoroughly reverse today's situation, even if they had to reveal their trump card, they had to retrieve some face!! At least, they could let the whole world know that even if another Phoenix legacy appeared in this world, it would absolutely not be stronger than their Divine Phoenix Sect! This was the last trump card of the five thousand year old Divine Phoenix Sect which would absolutely not be easy to trample upon!!

Feng Hengkong's eyebrows sunk as he turned around. His gaze landed on the body of Feng Xue'er beside him. As he looked at his only daughter, his originally overcast expression unconsciously turned gentle, even his frame of mind immediately became gentler. He sighed inwardly and softly said: "Xue'er, royal father knows that you hate being in conflict with others. But the conclusion of today's matter is simply too important to our sect, it concerns our Divine Phoenix Sect's entire five thousand years of glory and pride, that's why... please help your royal father this one time, okay?"

Feng Hengkong's voice was a little abstruse, even more so unwilling and guilty. Perhaps in this whole world, only Feng Xue'er could affect

him in this manner.

It was not only because Feng Xue'er was his most precious daughter, she was the entire Divine Phoenix Sect's, and even the entire Divine Phoenix Empire's soul.

"..." Feng Xue'er did not say anything. After a momentary silence, she quietly stood up. Yet with this simple movement, the entire arena's gaze and attention was instantly attracted, everyone stared blankly at her silhouette... After pausing their gazes on her, everyone uncontrollably went from an expression of shock to infatuation, as though their souls were absorbed onto her body, following every one of her slightest actions, swaying and trembling.

"Yes, royal father." Feng Xue'er gently replied, every word from her lips were sweet sounding and agile, as if sounds from a celestial from the heavens.

The faces of Spiritual Master Gu Cang, Ling Kun, and Ji Qianrou flashed with surprise, Ye Xinghan's firmly stared at Feng Xue'er's body while releasing the aura of a hungry wolf. Everyone stared wide eyed, staring dumbly at Feng Xue'er move lightly and unhurriedly, quietly walking from the seats like a fairy that gracefully moved her snow lotus-like feet, stepping dreamlike misty clouds.

The person Feng Hengkong referred to... the one who was above Feng Xiluo... could it be... her... Princess Snow!?

How... how could that be? As beautiful as a fantasy, like a fairy, the dreamlike Feng Xue'er, how could the world "powerful" be associated to her? Although Feng Xiluo was defeated by Yun Che, his strength was there for all to see, enough to let the top profound practitioners of the five nations feel thoroughly inferior. Princess Snow, who was as soft and white as snow, how was it possible for her strength to surpass Feng Xiluo...

She was a girl, moreover, she was only sixteen years old!

There was not a bit of profound strength aura on Feng Xue'er's body. In the entire arena, from the weakest six nations visitor to the strongest, Spiritual Master Gu Cang, none of them could feel the slightest bit of profound energy on her body; she was completely a delicate young girl.

In the midst of astonishment and distraction, Feng Xue'er had already stood in front of Yun Che, facing him directly. Only, she was able to clearly see Yun Che's face, yet Yun Che was unable to look at her brilliance which was able to make the world lose it's color.

Yun Che never thought that he would meet Feng Xue'er again under these kinds of circumstances. He looked at Feng Xue'er in bafflement, his lips trembling for quite some time before he was able call out with difficulty: "Xue'er..."

Facing the incomparably powerful Divine Phoenix Sect, he could approach without fear and face them domineeringly. Yet in front of Feng Xue'er, all of his overbearingness had completely disappeared. His expression, the look in his eyes and his heart was deep shame with a little terror... A terror that Xue'er would be hurt, or even cry because of his deceit.

She had saved his life, allowed him to heal in the safest place, granted him the purest, most unadulterated of trust, and taught him the World Ode of the Phoenix... yet what he had granted her was endless deceit. A false identity, a false name, and a false aim... He used the life which she saved, the World Ode of the Phoenix which she taught, to deal with her royal father and the Divine Phoenix Sect which she grew up in...

Yun Che breathed in silently, looked at the beautiful figure in front of him, and used a gentler voice: "Xue'er... I'm sorry..."

Feng Xue'er still did not reply, but suddenly, she reached out with her jade-like little hand, palm facing Yun Che's chest.

Yun Che did not move... even if Feng Xue'er suddenly made a fatal

attack, perhaps he would resist, but he would definitely not retaliate.

Whoosh!!

A gentle wind breezed past. Scarlet Phoenix flames slowly ignited on her body, the flames were not berserk or blazing, yet they were incomparably deep. Deeper than any other Phoenix flames that Yun Che had ever seen by many times.

The Phoenix flames slowly ascended, gradually spreading across Feng Xue'er's body. At this point, golden rays radiated on the area between her brows. A silky golden radiance permeated through phoenix jade glass, shining into Yun Che's eyes, causing his mind to tremble violently. At the same time, the aura that Feng Xue'er had always been concealing was completely released.

In that instant, the those from the Four Great Sacred Grounds all had faces of astonishment.

"Wh... what!!" Ling Kun stood up instantly.

"Oh?" Ji Qianrou willow-like eyes instantly slanted.

"This..." even Spiritual Master Gu Cang's face was clearly shocked.

Ye Xinghan's eyes opened wide, then opened even wider. Revealed within his eyes was a blazing flame-like violent light. He gripped the armrests of his seat firmly, and involuntarily growled: "This mythical bloodline... this perfect body!! This is simply the most perfect incubator in the world!!"

=====

Chapter 449 – Xue'er's Heart

Feng Xue'er's profound aura was soft and gentle, not in the least aggressive and oppressive, but everyone present felt a kind of gentle, yet completely irresistible feeling of suffocation.

Yun Che was the closest to Feng Xue'er, and felt it the most clearly. He looked at Feng Xue'er, his heart flooded with deep shock and disbelief, and also an indescribably illusory feeling.

Previously, when Xia Yuanba arrived, the tyrant aura from his body caused Yun Che to feel an extreme sensation of shock. However, although Feng Xue'er's aura didn't contain the slightest degree of Xia Yuanba's tyrannical overbearingness, the feeling it brought Yun Che was far more boundless and ethereal than what Xia Yuanba had...

It was like the difference between a tranquil ocean and a monstrous tidal wave!

Xia Yuanba's sudden frightening change in strength was both shocking and unbelievable to Yun Che, but it didn't go as far as to cause him to turn pale with astonishment. He was certain that if he had enough time, he would also be able to reach that kind of realm. But Feng Xue'er's aura... the feeling it brought Yun Che was actually... an enormous power that simply shouldn't belong to this world! It was realm that he was simply incapable of touching or pursuing with his current level.

She had saved him, and taught him the World Ode of the Phoenix... The Xue'er that was as beautiful as an angel and as flawless as a fairy. The Xue'er that was fond of pure snow and had the most simple and beautiful smiling countenance. The Xue'er that had the most ethereal fairy voice, calling him "Big Brother Yun" and making pinky promises. The Xue'er that had snuggled against him intimately, and danced for him within the snow...

She was actually... situated someplace he couldn't even look up to... a

mythical, dream-like realm...

He was certain these feelings weren't misperceptions, because his line of sight was directly facing the Four Great Sacred Grounds' seats... With unparalleled clarity, he saw the incomparably violent change in expression on all the faces of those from the Four Sacred Grounds... A change in expression that was many times greater than when they had seen the eighteen year old Overlord Xia Yuanba.

He was also finally starting to understand why Princess Snow's standing in the Divine Phoenix Sect was so revered and extraordinary... On the seats, she was actually sitting on equal footing with Feng Hengkong; even the princes had to sit in the secondary seats. He also understood why Feng Hengkong's protectiveness towards Feng Xue'er had reached such a peak...

"Master, her strength... what level is it at?"

From Feng Xue'er's body, Xia Yuanba felt the same indescribable oppressive sensation. With his current profound realm, after Feng Xue'er released her profound aura, he was actually still incapable of detecting her level. Seeing Spiritual Master Gu Cang's expression of shock, Xia Yuanba couldn't resist but ask.

Spiritual Master Gu Cang restrained his expression and took a deep breath before his mental state was able to calm down. He said: "She is the Divine Phoenix Empire's Princess Snow I told you about on the way here... Feng Xue'er. She is only sixteen years old this year, and her profound strength... is actually... half-step... from the Sovereign Profound!"

"!!!!" Xia Yuanba's entire body froze for an instant, incapable of speaking for quite a while. The current him was already not the Xia Yuanba of old, who was unclear about the concept of levels. He was incomparably clear that a sixteen year old half step into the Sovereign Profound was an extremely frightening concept!

"It looks like that rumor is true..." Spiritual Master Gu Cang said with

an extremely low voice, thinking aloud about something Xia Yuanba didn't understand.

"It looks like that rumor is true." At nearly the same time, Ling Kun's gaze slanted towards Ye Xinghan while saying the exact same statement.

"Of course it's true!" Ye Xinghan was so moved and excited that his entire body trembled. His gaze released an unprecedented glow: "This news was told to me by 'that person'; how could it be false. Moreover, 'that person' will immediately help me obtain this most perfect woman... this most perfect incubator! If I can obtain her and the 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body' Elder Ling has spoken of simultaneously, I would cast away all other women without the slightest hesitation!!"

Ye Xinghan appeared so excited that he looked to be bordering on madness. When he spoke of "that person", a crimson silhouette instantaneously swept through his gaze.

"Ahhhhh, this Ling Kun's vision is never incorrect. I believe that not long from now, Young Hall Master can become Profound Sky's number one expert, a monarch that no one will be able to stand side-by-side with... I congratulate Young Hall Master in advance." Ling Kun said as he smiled with squinting eyes.

Other than Gu Cang, who was a Monarch, the three people from the Sacred Grounds that made frequent contact with Monarchs, and those from the Divine Phoenix Sect that were aware of Feng Xue'er's secret, there was not a single person in the stadium that was capable of detecting the level of Feng Xue'er's profound energy, yet it was sufficient for them to feel how terrifying it was; it was just like a heavenly plane. In comparison to the Yun Che that stood across from her, his aura was simply so small and weak it was as if it didn't exist at all.

Princess Snow was renowned throughout the world because she was Divine Phoenix Sect's only princess, but even more so because of her

"Profound Sky's number one beauty" peerless complexion. No one would have thought her profound strength was actually frightening to this extent. And even though they were personally witnessing and feeling it, they still froze for a very long time, unable to snap back into reality, and were even more incapable of believing everything.

And at this time, the Phoenix flame on Feng Xue'er's body suddenly died out, and the wisps of golden light between her eyebrows also faded away.

Yun Che stared at her blankly... He really wanted to gaze at her eyes. He wanted to know whether her view of him was still that tender, trusting, and intimate... or if it was filled with anger, disappointment, and grief...

At this time, Feng Xue'er suddenly turned around gracefully, and asked Feng Hengkong: "Royal father, Xue'er has a question; may I request royal father to provide an explanation?"

Feng Hengkong blanked for a moment, then nodded slowly: "Xue'er, speak."

Feng Xue'er nodded, then said lightly: "Royal father once mentioned the rules of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament to Xue'er. If Xue'er hasn't remembered incorrectly, in the Ranking Tournament, one nation should only send out a maximum of ten people. Our Divine Phoenix Nation's ten participants... Fourteenth Brother, and Senior Brother Feibai and the others, were already defeated under Yun... Che's hand, which also signifies that our Divine Phoenix Nation has already lost to Blue Wind Empire. In that case, why don't you declare Blue Wind Nation as the victor right away? Also, why did royal father still want Xue'er to come here?"

The entire stadium became completely quiet. Everyone was well aware of Feng Hengkong's goal. This was already unrelated to the ranking tournament; he wanted Feng Xue'er to enter the stadium because even though they had suffered a crushing defeat in terms of bloodline, after their defeat in the ranking tournament, they would

be able to retrieve the dignity of the Divine Phoenix Empire's strength, prestige, and bloodline through Feng Xue'er revealing her astonishing strength.

Otherwise, after today, the entire Profound Sky Continent would know that Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix bloodline was defeated by a Phoenix bloodline which had come into being elsewhere. At that time, not only the six nations, even the citizens of Divine Phoenix Empire would gradually have more and more questions.

And Feng Xue'er did just that. She had revealed her profound aura for a short span of a few breaths' time, and even the people from the Sacred Grounds were thoroughly shocked, let alone those from the seven nations.

Thus, although Feng Xue'er appeared to have asked a very foolish question, this question was unexpectedly difficult to answer. Because fundamentally, Divine Phoenix Sect was just not resigned to their loss, and they wanted to make use of Princess Snow to fish up some face... so much that they didn't hesitate to use, or should it be said that they had no other choice but to reveal their trump card they had protected and kept hidden for many years, to the world.

Feng Hengkong didn't speak for a while. Feng Ximing stood up hurriedly, and voiced: "Xue'er, the reason is actually very simple. What you need to do right now is raise your hand lightly and knock Yun Che down. As for the reason, royal father will tell you later. Even though the ranking tournament has already ended, and the result is that we did indeed lose to Yun Che, we must prove to everyone that we lost merely because we didn't send out our strongest expert. Regardless of whether it is strength or bloodline, our Divine Phoenix Sect is insurmountable."

Feng Xue'er shook her head slowly, then said lightly: "If... it's like this... Xue'er is willing to concede directly."

Feng Xue'er's words caused Yun Che to feel moved, and caused the faces of everyone in the Divine Phoenix Sect to fill with surprise.

Feng Feiyan said immediately: "Xue'er, this matter isn't as simple as you think it is. This matter concerns the honor and dignity of our entire Divine Phoenix Empire."

Feng Xue'er replied with a light voice: "In Xue'er's world, Xue'er is completely unable to understand why this kind of matter concerns the honor and dignity of the Divine Phoenix Nation in anyway. Is it that honor must mean victory in victory and defeat? And dignity must mean strength in strength and weakness?"

"Yun Che clearly defeated Fourteenth Brother in a fair one versus one fight. Fourteenth Brother was defeated, yet the nine senior brothers whom we had originally agreed not to send out joined hands onstage. Furthermore, once they came up, their attacks were sufficient to be deadly... Yun Che also clearly defeated Senior Brother Feibai and the others, why wouldn't you be willing to announce his victory? Rather, you want me... someone who obviously shouldn't participate in the ranking tournament, to go on stage..."

"The Phoenix bloodline on his body obviously doesn't come from our bloodline, yet why must you deny it so persistently?"

No one would have thought the ordinarily sweet-tempered Feng Xue'er, would actually speak these words suddenly... It was like she was questioning, like she was puzzled, yet it was also like an inquisition.

Feng Ximing opened his mouth, and said with some difficulty: "Xue'er, royal brother knows you have a very kind-hearted temperament, and might think that we are being a bit excessive. But, but... some things really aren't as simple as you think... Moreover, we can't completely ascertain his bloodline doesn't come from our Divine Phoenix Sect; there's still a sliver of chance that it is..."

"No, royal brother is incorrect." Feng Xue'er shook her head lightly: "Xue'er can prove that his bloodline indeed does not come from our sect."

The entire stadium suddenly became a field of bewilderment. Feng Xue'er turned around, extended her hand, her palm facing Yun Che's forehead. A wisp of flame flickered along her palm, and in the area between Yun Che's eyebrows, a spot of golden light glimmered, then rapidly formed a golden flame shape.

Yun Che: "..."

"Go... Golden Phoenix Imprint!" Feng Hengkong and company startled, and looked at the golden colored phoenix mark between Yun Che's eyebrows with faces full of shock.

"On Xue'er's body is Phoenix blood and power directly bestowed by the Phoenix God, so, Xue'er can instantly distinguish whether the Phoenix bloodline in his body came from the lineage of the Phoenix God." Feng Xue'er said slowly: "The Phoenix God also said before, that the golden colored phoenix imprint will only appear on the body of the person who carries the purest Phoenix blood. His Phoenix imprint is golden, which proves the Phoenix bloodline within his body was bestowed upon him the most directly, and not a bloodline passed on from previous generations."

Feng Ximing was transfixed to the golden imprint on Yun Che's forehead, and stared fixedly for quite a while: "Xue'er, this... this..."

Feng Xue'er faced Divine Phoenix Sect's seats, her voice like a leisurely cloud: "Xue'er knows Xue'er disobeyed your wishes, and must have made you all disappointed and angry. However, there are many things that Xue'er truly doesn't understand... Our Divine Phoenix Nation was defeated, and another person possessing the Phoenix inheritance has appeared from within the Profound Sky. Royal father, royal brother... is this not something worth being happy about? Why would you deny all this regardless of everything? You clearly want to protect Divine Phoenix Nation's honor and dignity, yet why are you trying so hard to destroy them?"

Feng Hengkong's mouth opened, unable to utter even half a word for a while. This was because, in her entire life, this was the first time

Feng Xue'er had spoken so much at one time, with those kinds of words... As the father who believed he understood her the best, he was directly frozen stupid in this instant.

"Xue'er is fond of everything she has, and is proud that she was born and raised in Divine Phoenix Nation. Since a very young age, Xue'er has known that the Divine Phoenix Nation is the largest empire in the Profound Sky Continent, and is also the most powerful nation in terms of strength... however, why does Xue'er feel that her homeland is so tiny all of a sudden... really so tiny..."

"The Seven Nation Ranking Tournament has already existed for many years, and Divine Phoenix Nation has won every single year in the past. This time, our Divine Phoenix Nation was defeated by Blue Wind Nation, and Blue Wind Nation used its own strength to defeat Divine Phoenix... Although Divine Phoenix lost, it doesn't mean that Divine Phoenix has become weak. Rather, it means that someone from the six nations that can defeat the Divine Phoenix has finally appeared. Not only is this a breakthrough for Blue Wind Nation, it is also a breakthrough for the profound practicing world of our entire seven nations. Could it be that this isn't something all profound practitioners should be happy about? Being forthcoming and declaring our defeat while proclaiming the victor to everyone, isn't this something a large nation must do, the most ordinary of conduct?"

"Senior Brother Feibai and the others attacked Yun Che as nine, and from the get-go they attacked with sufficient lethality. When Yun Che defeated them, he clearly could've easily killed them all, yet he didn't do so. However, not one person from our Divine Phoenix expressed any gratitude; rather, we've continued to make things difficult for him... In terms of bearing and moral character, Divine Phoenix has thoroughly lost to Blue Wind. Even in terms of dignity, we've thrown it all away ourselves."

The mouths of the people from the Divine Phoenix Sect gaped wide; not a single person could speak. Yun Che stared at Feng Xue'er

blankly, also speechless for a long time.

“Our Divine Phoenix Sect’s strength comes from the Phoenix God’s inheritance. Without the Phoenix God’s bestowal, there wouldn’t be today’s Divine Phoenix Sect. Every one of us Divine Phoenix disciples should harbor the most devout gratitude... Yun Che’s bloodline is also from the Phoenix, and he is even the direct inheritor from the Phoenix God’s spirit. But, why is it that you all think of denying it by fair means or foul, and only think of using the cruelest methods to erase it rather than seeing him as someone connected, as a clansman through bloodline, mutually assisting each other and developing the Phoenix Spirit’s bloodline and power together... From this kind of selfishness, Xue’er cannot see any honor or dignity; it only makes Xue’er feel foreign and afraid...”

=====

Chapter 450 – Conclusion

“Royal father, Great Elder, royal brother... Perhaps, it's Xue'er who is too childish and cannot understand your world. Because in Xue'er's world, it is indeed you guys that are wrong. Divine Phoenix Nation is the leader of the seven nations. From Xue'er's understanding, a leader is supposed to be respected by people, not merely feared. Xue'er also does not understand the honor and dignity that you guys speak about. From Xue'er's understanding, honor and dignity is not strength that is admired by people, but instead is having the magnanimity to accept all things in the world, being loved by all, and possessing the kindness and forgiveness to forgive all that erred.”

“Therefore, if royal father wants Xue'er to defeat Yun Che...” Feng Xue'er looked at Yun Che and gently said: “Xue'er... surrenders.”

Everyone in Divine Phoenix Sect was stunned as they looked at one another. If these words came from any other disciple, including Feng Xiluo, it would have been treated as outrageous, and even Feng Hengkong would explode on the spot. However, these words came from Princess Snow. No one dared showed the slightest signs of anger or even rebut her.

However, even if her words were questioning Divine Phoenix Sect, it was still her way of protecting Divine Phoenix Sect's dignity that had been utterly destroyed by Yun Che today. Her previous moments of releasing her profound strength was just showing the world the ultimate strength of a youth at the pinnacle of Divine Phoenix Sect's young generation. Her questioning was similarly made with the position of a Divine Phoenix Princess, trying to maintain the fairness and bearing of a leading nation, trying to reduce the laughter and insults from the Profound Sky toward Divine Phoenix Sect after this ranking tournament.

The whole arena was silent. Then, bits of applause rang, which spread quickly like wildfire, and soon after, every corner of the arena was clapping and cheering. The applause was deafening — The

passion of the applause exceeded whatever had happened before.

Among the applause included nearly everyone from Divine Phoenix Sect. Although they were citizens of Divine Phoenix Nation and Princess Snow's actions defied the wishes of the emperor, she used her soft voice to question the actions of Divine Phoenix Empire, and in front of everyone, surrendered against Blue Wind's Yun Che... However, no one felt anger or shame, instead, they were thoroughly impressed, and even prideful!

Everyone present got to know the legendary Princess Snow today. They were not lucky enough to see her real looks, but managed to witness her unrivalled talent and her pure and innocent heart.

"It's impossible to not be impressed." Gu Cang sighed: "In the entire Profound Sky, she is the only one to possess a divine body, yet she also has a heart that is as clear as ice crystals. I'm not sure whether she's fortunate... Or unfortunate."

The loud cheers did not subside for quite some time and the sound waves seemed to have nearly passed into the firmament. Yun Che and Feng Xue'er looked at each other for some time and eventually, Yun Che spoke: "Xue'er, I'm sorry... I lied to you so many times. You should be... very disappointed with me."

Gently, Feng Xue'er shook her head: "How could I blame Big Brother Yun... Actually, there was one thing that I lied to Big Brother Yun about too."

"You... lied to me?" Yun Che was startled.

"Mn..." Feng Xue'er gently tapped her head: "Actually, I realized quite early that Big Brother Yun was not from Divine Phoenix Sect, which also meant that Big Brother Yun's name was fake.

For a while, Yun Che's eyes showed his inner turmoil: "Wh... When was it."

"When I taught Big Brother Yun the fundamental formula." Feng

Xue'er replied: "At that time, when you were cultivating the fundamental formula, a golden phoenix imprint appeared in the middle of your eyebrows. I knew it since then. The golden phoenix imprint only appears on one that possesses the purest Phoenix blood. Furthermore, even my royal father doesn't know this, but for the golden phoenix imprint to appear, pure Phoenix blood is only one of the requirements. The other requirement is that one has to be awarded with phoenix origin energy and a phoenix soul."

Yun Che: "..."

"Therefore, at that time, I already knew that Big Brother Yun was not someone from Divine Phoenix Sect, but a successor of another Phoenix God. Furthermore, you possess the Phoenix soul and energy that a Phoenix God's spirit can only give once in its life... Just like what I possess. Perhaps, the attraction between the Phoenix soul and energy was one of the reasons why I was willing to trust and approach Big Brother Yun."

"Then, why were you willing to allow me to stay and treat my injuries, and even... Continue teaching me the World Ode of the Phoenix?" Yun Che was extremely confused. He felt very guilty about lying to Feng Xue'er, but he never expected that she had already known all of this, yet still didn't expose him.

"Because I know that Big Brother Yun was not intentionally hiding it and lying to me. I also felt that you were really treating me very nicely. If you were able to be the sole successor of a Phoenix God, it must mean that Big Brother Yun is not a bad person. Therefore, since you wanted to learn the World Ode of the Phoenix, I was naturally willing and happy to teach you. Big Brother Yun is a Phoenix bloodline inheritor, so the World Ode of the Phoenix is naturally something you should know.

"Since Big Brother Yun lied to me and I also hid things from you... Between us, we can consider it even, right?"

The phoenix jade glass shook gently, and although Yun Che could

not see her smile, he felt that she was smiling gently.

Just as the cheers in the arena started to subside, Feng Xue'er used her pure eyes to stare right at Yun Che's, then gently but firmly said: "I will forever remember how nicely Big Brother Yun treated me. I will also forever remember Big Bro Yun's promise and even more so, the words that you said to me... I, Feng Xue'er will never ever do something that will harm Big Brother Yun."

As the cheers completely subsided, Feng Xue'er turned around, and under the gaze of Yun Che and everyone else, returned to Feng Hengkong's side.

"Royal father, I'm sorry. Xue'er has disappointed you." Feng Xue'er stood beside Feng Hengkong and said gently.

Feng Hengkong shook his head and let out a deep sigh, his expression was not one bit of blame, but instead a face of heartache: "How would you? Many things happened today and it is indeed royal father's fault. It should be royal father who has let Xue'er down instead... Xue'er's words has allowed royal father to wake up..."

Feng Hengkong scanned around before looking at Yun Che who was on stage. His chest rose gently as he frowned before declaring: "Yun Che, in this ranking tournament's final match, our Divine Phoenix Empire has lost to your Blue Wind, and we are convinced of the result! The matter concerning the Phoenix bloodline was also a mistake on our part. We, as emperor of Divine Phoenix Empire, promise you that from today onward, we will not pick on you because of this. Since we are of the same Phoenix bloodline, if you are willing to join our Divine Phoenix Sect, we would also be extremely welcoming!"

"Now, let me declare that the victor of the thirty-ninth Seven Nation Ranking Tournament is... Blue Wind Nation! Based on the agreement, this year's first ranking Blue Wind Nation and third ranking Black Fiend Nation can choose three people to accompany our Divine Phoenix Sect to explore the Primordial Profound Ark!"

Applause——

The entire arena instantly cheered. The cheers not only came from Blue Wind Nation, but also the other of the six nations.

Because of the incident with the Primordial Profound Ark, this year's ranking tournament had been reduced to an unprecedented one day. Furthermore, the ups and downs, turning points, shock and results were also all unprecedented! The weakest Blue Wind defeated the strongest Divine Phoenix, and it was with one person defeating ten opponents!

The appearance of another Phoenix inheritor... The legend of an Earth Profound fighting against an Emperor Profound... The appearance of an eighteen year old Overlord... A sixteen year old half step to the Sovereign Profound... All things concerning this year's Ranking Tournament would no doubt shake the world and be recorded into history books.

Especially the name Yun Che, which was destined to become the leading role of Profound Sky Continent's future. After today, his name would spread throughout the world.

After Feng Hengkong personally announced the results, this year's ranking tournament had officially ended. Xia Yuanba quickly rushed forward and pulled Yun Che beside Spiritual Master Gu Cang, then spoke gibberish in an excited manner. Among the spectators, all the profound practitioners from the other nations also left under the guide of the Phoenix disciples.

Ling Jie's chest still rose and fell intensely, as he couldn't calm down. He clenched his hands together as his face turned red, and excited said: "My decision is undoubtedly tooooooooooo wise! Ahhhhhhhhhh... My big bro not coming with me would definitely be the biggest regret of his life!"

"Mn, I definitely agree with that." Hua Minghai nodded. Just as he was about to exit the arena, he suddenly turned around and looked

at another direction... onto Ye Xinghan. At that moment, an intense hatred flashed across his eyes.

"Revenge for my parents, hatred for the demise of my clan... Even if my bones were to shatter... One day, eventually... I will make your Sun Moon Divine Hall pay with blood."

Hua Minghai gritted his teeth as he recited it in his heart, having made a blood oath in his soul.

Before this, his wife Ru Xiaoya had contracted the cold poison of Sun Moon Divine Hall; all his attention had been on giving his all to help Ru Xiaoya lengthen her life. Now that Ru Xiaoya's poison had been cured, and her body was recovering quickly... Today, after seeing those from Sun Moon Divine Hall, his hatred which had been constantly suppressed, exploded just like a volcano that had been dormant for a long time.

Ye Xinghan was stretching his body lazily as he stood up when he suddenly felt that abnormal icy cold feeling come from behind. He immediately turned around as his icy gaze scanned behind him but did not find anything. He collected his gaze as he squinted, and looked towards the seats of Divine Phoenix Sect. As his gaze met another person's shortly, both their faces revealed a meaningful smile.

=====

Chapter 451 – Tranquil Prelude

Blue Wind Nation, Monarch Palace.

At the moment, Cang Wanhe's face was flushed. With an absent-minded look in his eyes, his hands shivered violently... violently to the point where the entire table was faintly trembling too.

Just in a short quarter of an hour before, he had received sound transmitted and written profound messages from more than fifty thousand kilometers away, from Grand Asura Nation, Divine Incense Nation, Black Fiend Nation, Sunflower Dew Nation and Navy Tide Nation, one after another. And these sound transmissions which required enormous amounts of resources to accomplish were actually personally transmitted by the five nations' respective rulers! Within the sound transmissions, the five nations' emperors used enthusiastic and fervent tones, almost even a bootlicking tone to greet him. They then expressed that they would strongly long to personally head to Blue Wind Nation to visit the Blue Wind Imperial Family, carefully inquiring if he had the time to in the near future.

All five nations were so.

Yet in the past, not to even mention visiting, even if the Blue Wind Nation invited these five nations' emperors with extreme hospitality, they would simply feel disdain to even bother, at most sending an official without much status to deal with it. During the rare occasions that the six nation's emperors meet, the other five nations would even feel disdain to care about Blue Wind Nation's emperor.

But now, the emperors of the five nations were competing to outdo one another in personally contacting him, even afraid of being too late, unsparingly using fifty thousand kilometer sound transmissions.

Until Navy Tide Nation informed him that Blue Wind Nation's Yun Che had won the unprecedented first place in the Seven Nation

Ranking Tournament.

Not second place, but first place!! Defeating the Divine Phoenix Empire to obtain first place!

For the first time in history, Blue Wind Nation's name would above Divine Phoenix Empire's!

Cang Wanhe sat blankly for a long time, distinctly feeling... that he was dreaming. The near bootlicking reactions of the emperors of the five nations were proof of this dreamlike fact, but he still did not dare to believe, because it was simply too dreamlike and too unreal... Even more imaginary than sheer fantasy.

Yun Che was indeed extremely strong, but he was only able to severely injure Ling Tianni.

However this was Divine Phoenix Empire, Divine Phoenix Sect!!

Even more so, he was clearer than anyone else that Yun Che had participated alone! But the message he had received in the morning, clearly stated that the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament had been shortened, making all the fights group battles!

If the news which arrived had stated that Yun Che represented the Blue Wind Nation to obtain the second place, he would still be able to believe, but beating the Divine Phoenix Empire to obtain the first place... it would only cause him to think that he was still dreaming.

The sounds of hurried footsteps could be heard. Very quickly, his personal eunuch practically rushed in rolling and crawling, while striding over the doorstep. He fell flat on his face violently, yet when he stood up, he immediately fell over on the spot, hoarsely howling: "Your Majesty! A heavenly blessing... a heavenly blessing! A message has been transmitted from Divine Phoenix Empire... this Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, our Blue Wind Nation's Prince Consort has single-handedly defeated the number one of Divine Phoenix Sect's younger generation, then defeated the combined strength of

nine mid-stage Thrones, wresting away first place... This piece of news, your servant has already gone through tens of times of verification. It is absolutely true... absolutely true!!"

Cang Wanhe stood up, his complexion flushed blood red as his lips trembled. He was excited to the point where he could not even utter a single word. In the beginning, when Yun Che represented the Blue Wind Imperial Family to obtain the first place in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, he was extremely excited, but the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament and the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament were like black and white; one was heaven and the other was earth. The accomplishment of winning the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament helped the Blue Wind Imperial Family reclaim their dignity in Blue Wind Nation, yet if the news received today was true, then it was simply placing the Blue Wind Nation at the very peak of the entire Profound Sky Continent! It was Blue Wind Nation's unreachable fantasy of a thousand years.

Xiao Lie, who was sitting to the side, was much calmer than Cang Wanhe. He opened his mouth to ask: "Did Yun Che suffer any difficulties due to his Phoenix bloodline over there?"

The eunuch immediately answered excitedly: "In the arena, Prince Consort indeed had a huge confrontation with Divine Phoenix Sect due to the Phoenix bloodline. However, Divine Phoenix Imperial Family's Princess Snow personally proved that Prince Consort's bloodline actually did not originate from Divine Phoenix Sect, but another Phoenix legacy. The Divine Phoenix Emperor had also promised that henceforth, they would not target him for his bloodline. That's why... it's a heavenly blessing!"

"Good... good!" Cang Wanhe slowly nodded his head, he was excited to the point of tearing. He strode over to Xiao Lie, excited to the point where he completely dropped his kingly bearing: "Senior Xiao, you have truly nurtured the pride of heavens... My Blue Wind Nation having Yun Che, is definitely a blessing!"

"Immediately announce this to the entire nation at the fastest speed!

In addition, deliver another order, from today, there will be a nation-wide amnesty, all citizens will be exempted from taxes for three years!"

"Quickly issue a decree to Palace Chief Qin, let him immediately start to plan for the construction of even more Profound Palace branches."

"Prepare for next month's gifts to the five nations to be cancelled!"

"Immediately prepare a feast, I will enjoy a good drink today. Hahahaha..."

"Junior Yun Che greets Senior Gu Cang, and thanks Senior Gu Cang for speaking up for this junior." Yun Che saluted ceremonially as a junior would towards Spiritual Master Gu Cang.

Spiritual Master Gu Cang had absolutely no aura, and looked like just an ordinary, good-natured white-haired old man. If a profound practitioner were to brush past him, he would not be able to imagine that in front of him was a Monarch from the legends, peak of the entire Profound Sky Continent. He not only had absolutely no profound energy aura, his bearing had absolutely neither arrogance nor pressure, but an aura which seemed easy to subdue.

Spiritual Master Gu Cang closely sized up Yun Che, smiled slightly, and nodded: "Very good. Not only is your innate talent and strength astonishing, your bearing and spirit are comparable to your contemporaries. Who knew that in this generation, two astonishing freaks would emerge from the previously small and weak Blue Wind Nation.

"I thank Spiritual Master Gu Cang for the praise." Yun Che smiled.

After listening to Spiritual Master Gu Cang praise Yun Che, Xia Yuanba was simply more excited than if he himself was praised, he said hurriedly: "My brother-in-law really is incredible! In the future, he will become the most, most impressive person in the world."

"Haha." Spiritual Master Gu Cang laughed gently. Yun Che had shocked him, and he could clearly see his relationship with Xia Yuanba. A person's nature should originally be hard to change, yet when Xia Yuanba was in front of Yun Che, he was totally different from the Xia Yuanba that he knew; he was simply like two different people.

Yun Che, do you have any interest in tomorrow's Primordial Profound Ark?" Gu Cang asked.

Yun Che nodded his head: "Truth to be told, this junior really wants to go up to take a look... even though the journey may be dangerous."

"Mm." Spiritual Master Gu Cang nodded his head slowly, he naturally understood what kind of "dangers" Yun Che was speaking about. Although Feng Hengkong had promised in front of everyone that Yun Che would no longer be targeted for the issue about his Phoenix bloodline, no one would probably believe that Divine Phoenix Sect would really just put down the entire matter. Spiritual Master Gu Cang took the initiative to say: "Since it's like this, why don't you stay in the same courtyard as us tonight?"

Xia Yuanba's eyes shined and said hurriedly: "Yes, yes! Divine Phoenix Sect had arranged a courtyard for us beforehand. Brother-in-law should stay in the same courtyard as us, I have lots of things to tell brother-in-law."

Yun Che didn't hesitate, and immediately nodded. He too had many questions to ask Xia Yuanba; in fact, he didn't have to worry about dealing with Divine Phoenix Sect's hidden attacks during the night if he stayed in the same courtyard as Spiritual Master Gu Cang: "Then this junior will accept your invitation."

"That's great!" Xia Yuanba was happy that he started dancing: "Then let's return now, brother-in-law, I have just too many questions to ask you, like how did you escape from the Heavenly Sword Villa, how's big sis, how did you become so strong, and and..."

Just when Yun Che wanted to answer, within his line of sight, he caught Ling Jie's figure in the crowd, along with the person he was talking to...

"Senior, junior will be taking his leave first."

Yun Che turned his body immediately and quickly walked over.

"Little Jie!" Yun Che shouted after walking closer.

Ling Jie turned over with a "whoosh. His eyes flashed as he rushed over estatically, his eyes sparkling: "Boss! Wa, waaah! You were simply too cool today, explosively cool... eh, say, Boss, why are you here?"

"I should be asking you this question, why did you come running here?" Yun Che retorted.

"Hehe," Ling Jie scratched his forehead: "Actually, two days after Boss left the imperial palace, the Blue Wind Emperor announced your participation in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, representing the Blue Wind Nation. The moment I received the news, I decided to come... I really did not come in vain! Boss, do you know?! You're not just a legend in the Blue Wind Nation now, but a legend in the entire Profound Sky Continent!"

For him, Ling Jie did not hesitate to travel fifty thousand kilometers here alone. In the arena, he braved the dangers of being targeted by Divine Phoenix Sect to shout and support Yun Che with all his might, and even questioned Divine Phoenix Sect; these had all moved Yun Che's heart. He reached out to pat Ling Jie on his shoulder, then looked at Hua Minghai with an odd expression on his face.

What he was curious about was not why he was disguised so unremarkably, but... why were these two hanging out with each other!?

"Hehe," Hua Minghai propped his chin in his hand and earnestly said: "Boss Yun, the reason I admired you before was because you

were able to catch me, and even saved my wife, but now... I, Yan Xiaohua practically worship you like..."

"You guys have to be careful." Yun Che directly cut off Hua Minghai and said cautiously: "You two kept on shouting for me earlier, there's a chance that Divine Phoenix Sect might target you. Just in case, if Divine Phoenix Sect causes trouble for you guys, remember to immediately send me a sound transmission immediately."

"Tch, why would I be scared of a mere Divine Phoenix Sect?" Hua Minghai's face was full of disdain. In his eyes, the Divine Phoenix Sect was only fit to eat the dust off his butt.

Ling Jie patted his chest and said without a care: "Boss, you can relax, my maternal grandfather is an official elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. I just need to reveal my identity and they would not dare to do anything."

"What? Your grandfather is from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, and even an elder?" Hua Minghai stared wide-eyed, then revealed an expression of indignation: "You're such a rash youngster, as weak as dregs, yet you have such an incredible backing! This world is not fair at all!"

"Your grandfather?" Yun Che revealed a face of astonishment.

Ling Jie nodded and said: "Back in the day, mother chose father over grandfather, causing grandfather to be furious. A few days back, father and mother brought big brother and I to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region to meet grandfather. Mother and grandfather finally resolved their differences. Eh... grandfather even seemed to like me a lot, and even said that he would personally teach me the complete Heaven's Might Absolute Sword, hehe."

The look in Yun Che's eyes suddenly seemed complicated. He nodded, then faintly smiled towards Ling Jie: "Since it's like this, I am a bit relieved. I have to prepare for the ascension to the Profound Ark tomorrow, I won't accompany you guys any longer. Little Jie, you

can stay in Divine Phoenix City for a few more days. After exploring the Primordial Profound Ark, I will head back to Blue Wind Nation with you."

"Okay!!" Ling Jie answered excitedly.

"If it's possible, help me take care of Little Jie during these few days." Yun Che told Hua Minghai.

"No problem! Taking care of this weak and delicate little brother will be effortless." Hua Minghai vowed solemnly. The moment he said that, Ling Jie retorted with disdain.

Yun Che laughed and turned to head towards Spiritual Master Gu Cang's side, leaving with Xia Yuanba towards their guest courtyard in Divine Phoenix City.

Hua Minghai turned around, all expression on his face instantly vanishing, becoming heavy...

Looks like he seems to have some kind of conflicting view about Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... Wrong! It should be enmity. In fact, it was the kind of enmity in which revenge has to be taken!

Thinking back to when Yun Che's gaze had changed instantly when Ling Jie mentioned the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, Hua Minghai muttered to himself for a long time.

=====

Chapter 452 – The Awakened Yuanba

To Divine Phoenix Sect, the Four Great Sacred Grounds were naturally their supreme guests. Thus, the residences prepared for them were luxurious to the extreme, causing Yun Che, Blue Wind Nation's Prince Consort, who had lived in a palace for a few months to be secretly speechless.

After settling down, Xia Yuanba casually found a reason to force Spiritual Master Gu Cang away. Before, under the eyes of everyone, Xia Yuanba was unable to fully express all of his excitement. Now that there were finally no outsiders, he once again lost control of his emotions: "Brother-in-law, in these two years, I had always thought that you were dead. I was lifeless in the past two years, every time I thought of how I had caused brother-in-law to die, I... I wished I could kill myself... but Brother-in-law had exchanged his life for mine, if I died, I would have let brother-in-law down even more. That's why I lived to the fullest... Just this morning, I met father. He told me that you were still alive. I didn't dare to believe, I didn't think that... didn't think that..."

Xia Yuanba spoke while choking on his emotions, his tiger-like eyes full of prestige, filled with hot tears.

Yun Che could imagine how Xia Yuanba had passed the past those two years. He sighed inwardly and said: "You've met Uncle Xia already?"

"Mn, mn." Xia Yuanba hurriedly nodded: "When Master and I arrived at Divine Phoenix City, the first place we visited was not Phoenix City, but Black Moon Merchant Guild. There were a few of Master's old friends at Black Moon Merchant Guild and I also wanted to take a look. In the end, I actually met father at the first level of the Black Moon Merchant Guild. He was the one who told me that brother-in-law had not died back in the Heavenly Sword Villa, but came out alive after eight months, and it seems like... hehe, you got married to Princess Cang Yue. Whew... if I had known, I wouldn't have gone to

Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. If I didn't, I wouldn't have had to wait until today to find out that brother-in-law was still alive."

"..." When Spiritual Master Gu Cang had arrived, he had told those from Divine Phoenix Sect that his disciple had encountered an old friend, and thus did not come. At that time, he naturally did not imagine that the disciple that Spiritual Master Gu Cang spoke about was Xia Yuanba, and the person that he had met, was Xia Yuanba's father who was also his father-in-law... Xia Hongyi.

Fate, was sometimes really the most fascinating thing in this world.

Surely enough, Xia Hongyi was aware of the matter of his marriage to Cang Yue five months ago, this somewhat meant that... ahem.

Xia Yuanba had mentioned something which Yun Che had deeply paid attention to... Spiritual Master Gu Cang went to Black Moon Merchant Guild to visit an old friend. And to be able to be called an "old friend" by Spiritual Master Gu Cang, basically meant that he was close to him, and was a character of the same level!

The Black Moon Merchant Guild's background was indeed incomparably scary!

"I also heard that Uncle Xia was in Black Moon Merchant Guild when I first arrived in Divine Phoenix City. Only, I felt too ashamed to meet uncle Xia, so I didn't pay him a visit... After tomorrow's journey to the Primordial Profound Ark, let's take a trip to Black Moon Merchant Guild together." Yun Che said.

"Great!" Xia Yuanba nodded forcefully: "My father has been very concerned for you over these past few years. Even after reaching the Divine Phoenix City, he has always been inquiring for your information from Black Moon Merchant Guild. My conversation with father today had been about you... Father said that after your miraculous departure from Heavenly Sword Villa, your strength had grown explosively. You destroyed Fen Juecheng's marriage procession, saved the half dead Blue Wind Emperor, and then..."

destroyed the entire Burning Heaven Clan single-handedly! After that, you even defeated Heavenly Sword Villa's Grand Villa Master Ling Tianni... becoming Blue Wind's number one, spurring the entire Blue Wind Imperial Family's dignity and status to reach the peak in history where none would dare disobey..."

While speaking, Xia Yuanba's eyes shined. Adoration filled his face, but he didn't notice at all that with his current strength, destroying a Burning Heaven Clan would simply be like playing around.

However, from Xia Yuanba's description, Yun Che knew that Xia Hongyi had indeed been paying attention to his every movement these past few years. After all, he was his daughter's husband. Since he was young, apart from his grandfather and little aunt, within his elders, Xia Hongyi was the one who cared about him the most, never once looking down on him because of his handicapped profound veins, even more so, never reneging the marriage to his daughter.

"Brother-in-law, how exactly did you escape from the seal under the Heavenly Sword Villa? Father said that it was because the demon who was sealed had died, which was why the seal was released, but that demon had been alive after being sealed for more than a hundred years. When we saw him that day, he still looked so scary, not at all like a person who was going to die... Father said that it was because the demon felt that brother-in-law was not a threat, thus, he did not kill brother-in-law but left you to accompany him. Then brother-in-law trained diligently, and in the end, found out how to kill him... was it like that..."

Just when Xia Yuanba finished speaking, he noticed that Yun Che suddenly look sad. He immediately stopped talking, then said carefully: "Eh... Brother-in-law, did I say something wrong?"

Yun Che shook his head, forcing out a laugh: "Let me tell you about this matter after I've completed a task in a few years time."

Xia Yuanba nodded distractedly. Looking at Yun Che's expression, he instinctively knew that the matter was not as it seemed, so he

stopped asking.

"Yuanba, what happened to your profound strength? In just two years, how did it increase so explosively!" Yun Che fixed his attention on Xia Yuanba and asked. Although Jasmine had already told him a long time ago that Xia Yuanba possessed the "Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins", he still naturally wanted to hear the reason from Xia Yuanba directly.

"This..." Xia Yuanba scratched his head and said embarrassedly: "Actually, I too don't really understand the cause."

"Two years ago, when I thought that brother-in-law had died, I especially blamed myself. After I cried for a long time, I was determined to stop being a piece of trash, or else this life of mine which was exchanged for with brother-in-law's would only continue to be a burden for others, thus, I wanted to train alone... I heard that people from Divine Phoenix Empire were incredible, so as I trained, I headed towards Divine Phoenix Empire."

"How did you reach Divine Phoenix Empire alone?" Yun Che asked in astonishment. From Blue Wind to Divine Phoenix, not only was the journey long, it was also filled with countless dangers and wild beasts. Xia Yuanba was only in the Elementary Profound Realm then, to reach the Divine Phoenix City alive alone... in theory, that was basically impossible!

Xia Yuanba said: "On the road there, I encountered many vicious profound beasts, and even bandit groups... Occasionally I wouldn't be able to find food in the wilderness and would almost faint from hunger. When I encountered profound beasts, they would tear at me... but for some reason, everytime when I was at my last breath, just when I thought that I was about to die, my body would explode with an unfamiliar kind of strength. I would beat down the profound beast and what not, then faint... When I woke up, I would feel that my profound strength had risen by a large amount..."

Yun Che: "..."

"After I realized that, when I reached Divine Phoenix City, I would risk my life to challenge famous sects. Every time I was beaten half to death, a good number of times I was obviously really going to die, yet I would recover quickly along with my profound strength rising by a lot..." Xia Yuanba scratched his head: "I also don't really know what's going on. At that time, I felt that I had turned into some kind of freak... later, I was again beaten half to death and thrown into the ruins outside of the city, unconscious for a seemingly long time. When I opened my eyes, an old man... Eh, precisely my current master was standing beside me... he told me that I had profound veins called the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, and wanted to accept me as his disciple... Then he brought me back to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. After that, I had been cultivating with all my might. You already know what happened after."

"Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins? Absolute Monarch Sanctuary also knew about the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins?" Yun Che said in astoundment.

"That's right... eh, brother-in-law, you know about the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins too?" Xia Yuanba opened his eyes wide: "Master said that in Profound Sky Continent's history, the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins only appeared on two people. I'm the third, only the Four Great Sacred Grounds know about it, and said that I must never talk about this matter. So it turns out that brother-in-law actually knows about it too!"

Yun Che was silent for a moment, then asked: "Did your master tell you what the highest realm you can reach in the future is?"

"Master did not talk about that. However, he did mention that this is just the preliminary awakening of my Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins. When it has fully awakened, it could be invincible. There's even a possibility of breaking through this world's boundaries... Hehehe, although Master wouldn't lie, it seems quite unbelievable." Xia Yuanba said with a bashful expression.

Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins... Invincible... Breaking through

this world's boundaries!?

Yun Che's eyebrows jumped violently.

Xia Qingyue's Nine Profound Exquisite Body and Heart of Snow
Glazed Glass... Xia Yuanba's Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins...

This pair of siblings' physique and talent... what on earth was going on!!

An outrageous thought flashed in Yun Che's mind... Xia Yuanba and Xia Qingyue, they seemed as if they did not belong to this world.

"That's right, Brother-in-law, how's big sis? Why did she not come with brother-in-law this time?"

"Your sister is great, she's already Frozen Cloud Asgard's Young Mistress, and the top ranking of the Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies. I initially thought that she would come with me, but in the end, the Frozen Cloud Asgard's Grand Mistress did not allow it."

"Oh! When you and Princess Cang Yue got married, did big sis get angry... hehe."

"...Maybe a little." Yun Che pressed his nose.

.....

Yun Che did not know that in the two years that he and Xia Yuanba had been apart, Xia Yuanba had not smiled even once. Even joining the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary that he did not even dare to dream about did not even bring him a trace of happiness. Apart from trying to become stronger with all his might, he was just like a zombie. What existed in his body and soul was only resentment towards himself and an insane thirst for strength.

And in a single evening, he let out all the laughter that he had been keeping for two whole years.

The two of them talked until night fell. Then, they walked out of the courtyard together, preparing to stroll in Phoenix City. Not long after heading out, they noticed a figure which was impossible to miss under a Phoenix tree filled with blooming Phoenix flowers.

If a man's body was sufficiently attractive, he would be described as "elegant", "incomparably handsome", or even "as charming as jade", yet this man's body could be described as... beautiful!

And even alluring!!

He was standing beneath the Phoenix tree. His fingers, even more tender than a female's, were pinching Phoenix flames as beautiful as fire. His snow-like white shirt was spotted with petals of Phoenix flowers, he was simply enchanting.

【These few chapters are transitions! Transitions! Transitions! The important word was repeated thrice!】

=====

Chapter 453 – Extreme Mirage Lightning Actively Dropping In

“That person seems to be... the Supreme Ocean Palace’s Se... Se... Senior Ji.”

Xia Yuanba forcefully swallowed a mouthful of saliva, tugged at Yun Che, and prepared to make a detour, but he saw that after pausing for a little while, Yun Che unexpectedly walked over on his own accord.

“Ahhh... Brother-in-law...” Xia Yuanba didn’t hold on tightly enough. He stared blankly as Yun Che walked towards Ji Qianrou who, in his eyes, was even scarier than ferocious Primordial Beasts.

“The smell in this Phoenix City is really hateful, this dry and rough burning feeling is my flawless skin’s biggest enemy. The only one that is fit to be called beautiful, is this enchanting Phoenix flower. A pity, no matter how beautiful, a flower must wilt, just like like my appearance which is even more beautiful than this Phoenix flower. I will grow old one day, this is the rule of the world, and it will forever be so cruel... Don’t you agree, Little Cheche.”

Two petals floated gently from his fingers, as the figure beneath the Phoenix tree turned, revealing a beautiful alluring face and rippling eyes that looked at Yun Che.

Such a face with such an expression was no doubt a massive killer weapon, yet Yun Che was not the least affected by it. He moved forward with an unwavering expression: “Junior Yun Che, greets Senior Ji, I thank senior for speaking up for this junior.”

“Senior Ji?” Ji Qianrou’s snow white sleeve floated, as he whipped his long hair with incomparable charm: “I hate people calling me senior the most, look at this one’s youthful good looks. I’m also older than you by just six hundred years, how am I your senior? If you call me senior again, this one will get angry already, you know.”

“...Then, how should this junior address you.”

Ji Qianrou narrowed his coquettish eyes and said beamingly: "You can call me Qianrou, or you can call me Little Qianqian, Little Rourou... Little Jiji is fine too, you know."

"..." Even though Yun Che tried his best to maintain his calm, his throat was already twitching. He was silent a long time, staring as he did not know how to reply.

"You don't need to thank me, this one spoke up for you only because this one feels that you are... still not too bad, you know." Ji Qianrou gazed from top to bottom, slowly sweeping across Yun Che's entire body, his gaze as flirtatious as water, immediately causing Yun Che to get goose bumps. He initially wanted to speak longer with Ji Qianrou, but he had totally changed his mind now, wishing that he could just run off.

Yun Che quickly said: "In any case, this junior cannot thank Senior Ji enough for taking a stand in that matter. Forgive junior for asking, in these few years, has Senior Ji, due to a kind of special toad poison... Junior is familiar with medicine, therefore, I can vaguely see some clues. I'm not sure if I'm right."

"Oh? Ji Qianrou squinted and stared into Yun Che's eyes, then said in a velvety voice: "Two hundred years ago, I accidentally encountered an ugly toad. This one hates these kinds of ugly things the most, thus, I casually destroyed it. I didn't expect that I would accidentally get into contact with its vicious venom." Ji Qianrou extended his fingers and looked at an indistinct black line on his fingertips: "That's why, not only should you not look at ugly things, you should not even touch them."

Yun Che said: "The venom which Senior Ji has mentioned is a kind of Soul Coiling Toad's Poison, it attaches itself onto the mind, and lives off blood. Thus, regular methods are absolutely unable to force it out. Of course, based on Senior Ji's powerful profound strength, this kind of toad poison will not have any severe consequences, but it isn't just a small frustration too..."

"Junior has some qualifications in detoxification, this detoxification pellet may be of some help to Senior Ji." Yun Che said while taking out a pellet which he had prepared beforehand by injecting the purifying power of the Sky Poison Pearl into the pellet. He initially wanted to put it into Qian Jirou's hand, but after looking at his palm and thinking for a while, he chose to toss it over.

Ji Qianrou waved his fingers and gripped it between his fingers.

"This junior shall take his leave." Yun Che cupped his hands, then left as if he was fleeing.

The pellet in his hand was as green as jade. Just by holding it, the entire body would feel a bone-piercing aura of freshness. Ji Qianrou glanced at Yun Che's back view with slanted eyes, sniffed at the pellet, then opened his lips lightly, and placed it in his mouth.

Together with Xia Yuanba, he strolled around Phoenix City. Yun Che listened to him talk about things like Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. Upon returning to the courtyard, darkness had completely enveloped their surroundings, Spiritual Master Gu Cang's room was completely dark, he appeared to be resting.

Yun Che returned to his room. Upon closing the door, his eyebrows twitched, and he felt a vague feeling that something was wrong.

Somebody had been in the room!

Back in Azure Cloud Continent, he was hunted day and night, he had long developed an incomparably abnormal anti-hunting ability. He could tell with a glance if anywhere he had been was touched after he left... In the end, he didn't even need to spot the difference, but his instincts could detect any disturbances his naked eyes could not.

Yun Che became vigilant. This was Phoenix City's guest area, outsiders could not simply enter, even a Phoenix disciple would not be able to. Only himself, Xia Yuanba, and Spiritual Master Gu Cang stayed here. He had left together with Xia Yuanba and Spiritual

Master Gu Cang had no reason to walk through this area... just who exactly had come in?

Yun Che's eyebrows sank. His gaze swept across every nook and cranny of the room thoroughly, but he did not discover any traces which aroused his attention. After contemplating for a while, he walked to the bedside. Just when he wanted to lie down, his gaze suddenly fell onto the pillow.

He reached out, and rapidly moved the pillow away... beneath the pillow was shockingly a bundle of green jade strips.

This...

Yun Che was a hundred percent sure that the jade strips were not there before. Because after picking the rooms with Xia Yuanba, he had cautiously inspected the bed on purpose.

Yun Che scrunched his eyebrows, directly reaching to grab the jade strips, then carefully opened them.

Following the opening of the first piece of jade strip, three incomparably distinct words shined into Yun Che's eyes:

Extreme Mirage Lightning!

"Extreme Mirage Lightning!?" Yun Che cried out softly.

This was actually Extreme Mirage Lightning, Hua Minghai's family heirloom which had the reputation of Profound Sky's number one profound movement skill!!!

The person who had been here was Hua Minghai? How did he know which room to find me in? And why did he put these jade strips with the Extreme Mirage Lightning imprinted here?

Hua Minghai's profound strength was only at the later stages of the Sky Profound Realm, but with this "Extreme Mirage Lightning", he became Profound Sky Continent's mightily renowned "Ghost Mirage

Bandit Saint". He could even safely go through Divine Phoenix Sect, and even several Overlords acting together could not touch the corners of his shirt. It could even be said that "Extreme Mirage Lightning" made Yun Che's mouth water. However, when he had saved Ru Xiaoya and expressed his interest to Hua Minghai, he was rejected.

It was because the skill was his Hua family's sacred skill, it could never be passed on to outsiders. Hua Minghai even said that apart from that request, he would give in to any other request.

But now, these jade strips which the "Extreme Mirage Lightning" was imprinted on, had appeared in this place!

"It seems like this person named Hua Minghai wants you to owe him a huge favour." Jasmine said unenthusiastically.

Yun Che had witnessed the power of "Extreme Mirage Lightning" with his own two eyes, and it was just before him now. Yet, after flipping over the first jade strip, Yun Che did not continue to look through it any further. After saving Ru Xiaoya, Hua Minghai was ashamed, yet determined in rejecting Yun Che's request to practice Extreme Mirage Lightning. Only several days had passed, and he took the initiative to hand it over. Not only did he not deliver it in person, it was sent without a message.

What Jasmine had said was not wrong, if he really learned Extreme Mirage Lightning just like that, then, he would owe Hua Minghai a huge favor. And Hua Minghai's intention of taking the initiative to send Extreme Mirage Lightning over, was exactly to make Yun Che owe him a favor.

"It seems like after seeing my performance in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, he wants to borrow my strength to help him accomplish some kind of objective." Yun Che muttered to himself.

"Then why did he not give it to you personally?" Jasmine said.

Yun Che said unhurriedly: "Firstly, my current strength is not sufficient. What he has his eyes on, is my potential, he believes that I will have sufficient strength in the future. Secondly, he feels that I will definitely refuse if he speaks to me in person, thus, he chose this method, to directly send a huge bait without even requesting anything. If I can't resist the bait and cultivate Extreme Mirage Lightning, then I would owe him this huge favor. When the time comes, I would not be able to reject him. Another way of looking at it is that if I use this Extreme Mirage Lightning, others would think that I am from the Hua family."

"If that's the case, you seem to know his motive already."

"More or less." Yun Che said: "Hua Minghai's family was destroyed by Sun Moon Divine Hall. Based on Hua Minghai's abilities, for him to keep his life is not an issue, but taking revenge is impossible. Thus, he wants to borrow my strength after I become strong enough. However, everyone fears Sun Moon Divine Hall. They are a paramount Sacred Ground. Not only that, I have no enmity with them, Hua Minghai would not be so naive as to think that just a "Extreme Mirage Lightning" would make me take action... What does he want to achieve? Or should I say, where does his certainty come from?"

"Then do you want to cultivate it? This Extreme Mirage Lightning would not affect your fighting abilities much, but in regards to travel or escape, it would be extremely strong. In this continent, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to call it the strongest profound movement skill."

Yun Che contemplated for awhile, but closed the jade strips in the end, and stored it in the Sky Poison Pearl: "Although it is very enticing, before the next time I meet Hua Minghai, I had better not cultivate it. Let's not care about this issue yet, I have to ascend that mysterious Primordial Profound Ark early tomorrow morning... but I keep feeling that this journey will come with a lot of risk. The Primordial Profound Ark is the best place for the Divine Phoenix Sect to attack me."

"If you retreat the moment you feel risk, then don't ever think about having any breakthroughs. You wouldn't be as strong as you are now either." Jasmine said coldly: "The Primordial Profound Ark is the only thing in the continent which perks my interest. You have to bring me up! Based on my spirit strength, I could possibly be aware of its secrets in an instant."

"Got it." Yun Che crooked his lips: "To increase the possibility of surviving, I need to revitalize by... sleeping!"

Divine Phoenix Sect.

"Sect Master."

Feng Feiyan drifted through the night and landed behind Feng Hengkong.

Feng Hengkong turned around, his face calm, with an indistinct darkness. He faced Feng Feiyan. Using an extremely low voice, he said: "Tomorrow's ascension to the Primordial Profound Ark is the best chance to kill Yun Che, do you understand our intentions?"

Feng Feiyan's eyebrows twitched, then nodded slowly: "I even thought that Sect Master was going to spare Yun Che. This Yun Che definitely cannot be spared, especially when his future will bring who knows what kind of dangers. Sect Master, you can relax. I will arrange for people to take action during tomorrow's ascension to the Primordial Profound Ark. Based on the Primordial Profound Ark's special laws of space, there will be no traces left after killing Yun Che... Or, I can do it myself!"

"Mn." Feng Hengkong nodded.

Sect Master, will Xue'er be ascending the Primordial Profound Ark tomorrow too?" Feng Feiyan asked.

"That's right, the Primordial Profound Ark appears once every three

hundred years, to miss this opportunity would mean waiting another three hundred years. I will definitely bring Xue'er for this experience. Xue'er herself has some interest in the Primordial Profound Ark too. Although the Primordial Profound Ark is mysterious and strange, it still is not too dangerous. Besides, all the elders would be present too." Feng Hengkong added.

Feng Feiyan nodded: "Hope that there will be rewards for the journey to the Profound Ark tomorrow. If Sect Master has nothing else, I will be taking my leave."

As Feng Feiyan's voice fell, his silhouette slowly disappeared into the night as well.

=====

Chapter 454 – Entering the Primordial Profound Ark

Today was the first day after the end of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament. The day had barely dawned, but Divine Phoenix City was already a field of clamorous noise. Countless profound practitioners raised their heads and looked upwards, watching the colossal black silhouette above the firmament... Today was the last day the Primordial Profound Ark would stop at Divine Phoenix City, and was also the only day the ark would open.

Yun Che meditated for an entire night. In the morning, when he walked out of his room at the scheduled time, Gu Cang and Xia Yuanba were already waiting. When they heard Yun Che walk out, they turned around at the same time. Xia Yuanba quickly walked over: "Brother-in-law, I was just about to go and call for you. The Primordial Profound Ark will open in around fifteen minutes; the people from Divine Phoenix Sect have already gone up."

"It's about time. Let's go up." Spiritual Master Gu Cang said slowly. He swung the horsetail whisk in his hand, and instantly, five-foot-wide profound energy cyclones simultaneously appeared underneath Yun Che and Xia Yuanba's feet.

Before Yun Che could speak, the cyclone already began to revolve, carrying Yun Che's body as it flew up rapidly in a straight line. By the time he had reacted to it, his body was already three hundred meters into the air.

What kind of concept was sixty thousand meters? The altitude of an ordinary cloud was only around one or two thousand meters. Yun Che's body rose upwards in a straight line, quickly passing through layer after layer of clouds as the wind beside his ears whistled like rumbling thunder. Yun Che wanted to speak, but the moment he opened his mouth, berserk streams of air violently poured into his mouth, making him unable to do anything but obediently close his mouth.

Although both the Sky Profound Realm and Emperor Profound Realm were capable of utilizing the Profound Floating Technique, an altitude of sixty thousand meters was something they absolutely could not reach. In order to reach this altitude, one must at least be at Overlord-level profound strength. And to an incomparably powerful Monarch, it was actually nothing much. It wouldn't be in the least problematic to bring several thousand people up, let alone bringing Yun Che and Xia Yuanba.

Finally, after passing through countless layers of clouds, the sound of the wind beside his ears began to die down. Yun Che raised his head. The distance between him and the incomparably enormous Primordial Profound Ark was less than three hundred meters. As far as the eye could see, the Profound Ark was so enormous one simply couldn't even see its borders. Its color also wasn't the dull gray color which could be seen from below, but clearly a kind of deep red color.

At this time, only a short span of one hundred breaths' time had elapsed... Traveling sixty thousand meters in a hundred breaths, this was much faster than Yun Che's speed on land!

The place Spiritual Master Gu Cang had brought them was one of the sides of the Primordial Profound Ark. When the three arrived, only twenty to thirty people had stopped at this place. Among these people, Ji Qianrou and Ling Kun were present, as well as the three people from Black Fiend Nation. Included among these people were a Tyrant, a half-step to Tyrant, and a young profound practitioner. The three from Black Fiend Nation were all peak figures amongst their generation, but the people around them were all from Divine Phoenix Sect and the Sacred Grounds, so their expressions were especially reserved; they didn't even dare to breathe heavily.

Apart from these people, everyone else was from Divine Phoenix Sect. Yun Che saw Feng Hengkong, Feng Feiyan, Feng Ximing... and beside Feng Hengkong, still stood the Phoenix jade glass-covered Feng Xue'er. Those who had the qualifications to come explore the Primordial Profound Ark were naturally existences with extremely

high standings and power in Divine Phoenix Sect. Of these twenty-odd people, other than the aura-less Feng Xue'er, every single person released a Tyrant-realm aura.

Several tens of Tyrant powerhouses floated in the air together. The oppressive feeling that arose as a result was incomparably frightful; even the air had completely stopped circulating.

Spiritual Master Gu Cang had arrived, so the Feng Hengkong and company walked over and paid their respects, but to Yun Che, they merely glanced at him for a moment.

Xia Yuanba's gaze swept the area as he spoke next to Yun Che's ear: "Master has entered the Primordial Profound Ark before. From what I've heard Master say, the maximum number of people that can enter the Primordial Profound Ark is thirty six. Every time, beside the Four Great Sacred Grounds, those that enter are basically all core members of Divine Phoenix Sect. Including us, thirty five people have already arrived... there should be one more person."

"It's Ye Xinghan." Yun Che said directly.

Yun Che raised his head, and looked at the incomparably enormous Profound Ark in front of his eyes. With his current eyesight, he was simply incapable of seeing the periphery to the top, bottom, left, or right of the Profound Ark. An indistinct colorless and formless aura field floated above the surface of the Profound Ark. After Yun Che's spiritual sense touched this aura field, it would thoroughly disconnect, making him unable to sense even the least bit of activity within the Profound Ark.

And right in front of his line of sight, a "door" existed impressively on the surface of the Profound Ark. This door was fifteen meters wide, and a profound light imprint flashed on the surface of the door, flickering on and off. The flickering of this profound energy seal seemed to indicate that it was about to disappear.

Everyone's gazes were also focused on this flashing profound

imprint. At this time, the sound of a whistling cyclone came through distantly from below.

"Hmph, arriving just now, how arrogant." Feng Ximing snorted coldly as an expression of disgust flashed on his face.

A blast of air soared upwards, and a man's silhouette subsequently floated downwards; it was precisely Ye Xinghan. However, he didn't arrive alone. He was accompanied by the two seductive women beside him, one clinging to the left and the other clinging to the right of his bosom. Both women's attires were different from the day before; dressed in fiery-red up to the middle of their chest with the bottom part barely covering her buttocks, and the slightest movement showing everything. Although everyone present were exceptional Overlord-level experts, their expressions still became unnatural.

"Heheh, it looks like everyone is here. This young master was quite lusty last night and unconsciously lost track of time. I hope everyone won't take offense." Ye Xinghan embraced the two women, stepped off the cyclone, and sauntered over. His gaze passed through everyone as he looked at the Profound Ark's door: "Seems like this profound ark door is about to open."

If it was any other person who dared to be this arrogant, rude, and condescending, Divine Phoenix Sect would have exploded long ago. But this person was Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master. Even if Divine Phoenix Sect hated him in their hearts, none of them would dare reprimand him. Feng Hengkong nodded: "Young Hall Master Ye is just in time. In just a few more breaths, the Profound Ark's door would... Oh?"

Before Feng Hengkong finished speaking, the profound seal on the ark's door suddenly stopped flickering, and then slowly disappeared. The Profound Ark's door which had always been shut slowly opened at this time with an extremely ear-piercing creaking noise.

"It opened!" Xia Yuanba called out. Those who were visiting the

Primordial Profound Ark for the first time all held their breaths, and their eyes stared wide.

The door to the Primordial Profound Ark opened extremely slowly, and several dozen breaths' worth of time passed before the door opened completely. An incomparably pitch-black vortex lay behind the door, revolving rapidly like an ocean whirlpool.

"That's the spacial whirlpool to enter the Profound Ark. After entering, you'll be sent to a fixed location within the Profound Ark. Only, the Primordial Profound Ark is too large, and its interior is extremely tangled and complicated. After all of these years, we are still unable to determine where the location we are sent to actually is within the Profound Ark." Spiritual Master Gu Cang explained to Xia Yuanba and Yun Che.

"Since it has opened, let's go in." Ye Xinghan laughed heartily. Disinclined to pay attention to everyone else, he drew himself closer to the two women and strode over to the entrance of the Profound Ark. Watching his attitude, the expressions of the people from Divine Phoenix Sect changed immediately. Feng Ximing frowned, and said: "Young Hall Master Ye, halt."

Ye Xinghan's footsteps paused. He leaned his head around, and said with a slack expression: "Does Divine Phoenix Prince have something to command?"

"I don't dare to command." Feng Ximing clenched his teeth, and said: "I just wanted to confirm, does Young Hall Master plan on bringing these two women in as well?"

"Of course." Ye Xinghan narrowed his eyes: "But they aren't 'two women'; they're my concubines — Yueji and Meiji, did—you—get—that?"

Ye Xinghan's last few words carried an obvious air of annoyance. Feng Ximing violently furrowed his brow; just as he was about to speak again, he heard Feng Feiyan snort lightly and say: "Young Hall

Master Ye must know that only a total of thirty six people can enter the Primordial Profound Ark! The people that may enter have already been decided, this isn't someplace you can enter just because you want to! Young Hall Master Ye is included within these thirty six people, but these two young ladies that Young Hall Master Ye have brought are not included within our Divine Phoenix Sect's invitations!"

The idea expressed in Feng Feiyan's words was incomparably clear, but how could a madman like Ye Xinghan be someone who followed the rules? His eyes slanted as he said with a squinting smile: "What if this young master must bring them in?"

Once Ye Xinghan's rude and unreasonable words filled with menace came out, Feng Feiyan's complexion suddenly stood stiff, unsure of how to reply for quite a while. At this time, a soft and velvety laugh sounded: "Oh my, Little Hanhan wants to bring these two women in, yet the other side doesn't want Little Hanhan to bring these two women in... this problem couldn't be simpler. Kill both of these women, wouldn't that settle this issue completely? Hahahaha..."

This delicate laugh that was even more charming than that of a woman actually caused everyone to shiver unconsciously. Ye Xinghan's expression became fiercely overcast: "Ji Qianrou, you dare!"

"Hoh," Ji Qianrou's finger stuck upwards, and the corner of his eyebrows bent: "Little Hanhan's meaning is that other people won't dare to do so?"

Ye Xinghan was incomparably haughty, and Ji Qianrou was even more so someone that didn't even put emperors in his eyes. If these two people actually got into a conflict, Divine Phoenix Sect would still be the most hapless in the end, to say nothing of the fact that this was the most crucial moment of the Profound Ark's opening. Feng Hengkong let out a heavy sigh, then said: "Our two esteemed Sacred Ground guests, the entrance to the Profound Ark has already opened; this is absolutely not the time to argue and waste time.

Chiran, Yanmu, you two stay outside."

The Feng Chiran and Feng Yanmu Feng Hengkong spoke of walked out of the Divine Phoenix Sect crowd. Although their expressions were dim and they had no other choice, regarding Ye Xinghan, they dared to be angry, but didn't dare to voice it out.

"Hahahaha! Divine Phoenix Sect Master is truly broad-minded, fair, and reasonable. This junior cannot thank Sect Master enough. Yueji, Meiji, quickly thank Divine Phoenix Sect Master."

"That's not necessary." Feng Hengkong raised his hand, suppressing the disgust in his heart with great effort: "The ark door has already opened, everyone should enter."

"It's only natural that Divine Phoenix Sect Leader enters first." Ye Xinghan assumed an apologetic posture.

Feng Hengkong didn't say anything else, and entered the Profound Ark with Feng Xue'er. The instant their two bodies touched the spacial whirlpool, they disappeared into it completely.

Ye Xinghan, Yueji, and Meiji followed closely behind them, and the rest of the people from Divine Phoenix Sect filed in afterwards.

Ji Qianrou walked past Yun Che. Suddenly, his footsteps stopped, and he extended his pure white fingers towards Yun Che as he said silkily: "Little Cheche, I owe you a favor."

After he spoke, he smiled bewitchingly and stepped into the spacial whirlpool.

"Owe you a favor?" Xia Yuanba looked at Yun Che with wide eyes: "Brother-in-law, what does he mean?"

"It's just a trivial matter, let's go in."

"Aye!"

Yun Che and Xia Yuanba were the last two people to enter. The instant they touched the spacial whirlpool, an enormous attractive force greeted them head-on. Subsequently, their minds spun giddily from the frightening space-tearing force. Just as Yun Che was about to use his profound energy to resist the space-tearing force, a field of light suddenly flashed in front of his eyes.

=====

Chapter 455 – Mysterious Space

This was the inside of the Primordial Profound Ark, but not only was it not dark, it was actually particularly bright. Yun Che looked up and was speechless, because in front of his eyes was astonishingly an endless dark green grassland, as far as he could see! The end of the grassland merged with the dusky sky.

“Wow! It’s exactly the same as master said!” This was Xia Yuanba’s first time here and his face was full of shock. He exclaimed uncontrollably: “Master had said that there were special spatial laws within the Primordial Profound Ark; that it is a world unto itself. Looking at it from here, no one would think that this is actually the interior of a profound ark.”

“A world unto itself?” Yun Che’s face revealed shock. At the same time, Jasmine’s voice appeared in his mind: “As expected, the spatial laws in the interior are totally different from the outside world! It seems like the actual amount of space in the interior is actually much, much larger than seen from the outside! Or... it could be even larger than the entire Profound Sky Continent by several times... even tens of millions of times is possible!”

Yun Che: “...”

The entire grassland was incomparably flat; its edges could not be seen. The only eye catching feature was a three meter wide profound formation which was flashing with a red radiance not far away. Feng Hengkong and many other Divine Phoenix Sect elders surrounded the profound formation, seeming especially cautious.

“The spatial laws in this place really are strange, in the Profound Sky Continent, if left untouched, this kind of spatial profound formation’s profound strength would only be cut down by about half in ten thousand years. Yet this spatial profound formation which was left by our royal father’s generation has already weakened by about eighty percent in just three hundred years.” Feng Hengkong wrinkled

his eyebrows as he spoke.

"However, the remaining strength is still sufficient to transport us to the area where the last exploration stopped." Feng Feiyan pulled his hand back from the profound formation's radiance and said collectedly. The Primordial Profound Ark was too humongous, a brief twenty four hours was simply not enough to explore completely. Thus, after every exploration, Divine Phoenix Sect would leave behind a spatial profound formation. When the Primordial Profound Ark opened again, they could directly use the profound formation to transport themselves to where they had left off.

"Strengthen the initial profound formation first, then we can begin." Feng Hengkong said firmly.

"Yes!"

The twenty plus Overlords of Divine Phoenix Sect all took action at the same time, channeling profound energy into the profound formation. Very quickly, the dim radiance of the profound formation intensified.

After the profound formation was strengthened, Feng Hengkong turned around and said: "Guests from the Sacred Grounds and Six Nations, do you wish to proceed forward to explore the Primordial Profound Ark's interior together? The previous generations' exploration had reached about fifteen thousand kilometers deep. Although there were no gains in the end, who is to say that there will not be a breakthrough this time, for us to discover mystical primordial items. The deeper one gets, the more dangerous it is. Fifteen thousand kilometers in, there will be Tyrant Profound Beasts rampaging, it would be full of dangers, and the strength of a single person may not be able to overcome some obstacles; teamwork will be required. Those who want to proceed together, please enter this profound formation, those who wish to proceed freely, please feel free to do so... but," Feng Hengkong's voice paused for a moment before he said faintly: "Those who are not even Overlords can forget it, entering this profound formation is the same as courting death."

Amongst the thirty six people present, there were only five with profound strengths below that of Overlords; Yun Che was one, two were profound practitioners from the Black Fiend Nation, and the other two were Yue Ji and Mei Ji that Ye Xinghan had brought along.

The Primordial Profound Ark appeared only once every three hundred years. Since they had already entered, of course they would choose to cooperate to explore even further. Spiritual Master Gu Cang turned over and asked: "Yuanba, do you want to come along with Master?"

Xia Yuanba however shook his head: "No need, Master. the reason disciple followed Master up the profound ark this time was just for an eye-opener and not any ambitious reasons. Thus, I won't be following you. Brother-in-law and I will just go ahead to have fun."

With Yun Che around, Gu Cang already knew that Xia Yuanba would give such an answer. He slowly nodded: "That's fine too. However, although the profound beasts in the surrounding area aren't a threat and the environment isn't too dangerous, this world is still extraordinary. No one can predict where dangers will be hiding, so you still have to be careful."

"Also, you have to remember what Master had repeatedly said before... once the Primordial Profound Ark's door opens, it marks the twenty-fourth hour before the profound ark disappears. When it nears the twenty-fourth hour, the entire space within the profound ark will start to tremble. When you feel the space trembling, you have to be in an area as spacious as possible. That way, at the twenty-fourth hour, you will be forcefully pushed out of the profound ark's world. However, if you are in a sealed area like a cave, canyon, house, tower or any such areas, you will not be discharged from the profound ark and will disappear with the ark... which means you will die! Since the appearance of the Primordial Profound Ark, there have been more than ten from the previous generations who have met with such an ill fate, their souls extinguished entirely! Bear this in mind!"

"I've got it, Master." Xia Yuanba nodded, then asked: "It's just that this disciple doesn't understand, why will one not get discharged from the profound ark in a sealed location?"

"Because in this area, every piece of land, every piece of stone is incomparably hard. Furthermore, they contain extremely frightening earth attribute laws." Spiritual Master Gu Cang extended his hand, sucking a stone about the size of a fist and placed it into Xia Yuanba's hand: "Yuanba, try to destroy it."

"Oh..." Based on Xia Yuanba's current strength as a mid-stage Overlord, not to even mention a piece of stone, he was able to easily pinch a piece of profound iron into powder. The weight of the stone in his hand felt no different from an ordinary stone. He lifted the stone and forcefully grasped it... following that, his face exposed his shock, because the stone in his hand, not to even mention break into pieces, there was not even a trace of deformation.

Xia Yuanba placed the stone in his left hand. He opened his palm, then breathed in, made a fist with his right hand, and smashed down fiercely.

Plop...

Half of Xia Yuanba's face contorted, grimacing in pain. The stone in his hand had dropped... not damaged in the slightest.

"Wh-wh-wh... what kind of stone is this! How is it so hard!" Xia Yuanba flicked his wrist and said with a face full of shock.

Yun Che stood beside Xia Yuanba, listening to the conversation of the master-disciple pair. Looking at Xia Yuanba's actions, he too revealed a face of shock.

"In many hypotheses, this Primordial Profound Ark is very possibly a profound ark from the time of the Primordial True Gods, and is thus an item from the era of the True Gods. So even if it is just a small little stone, it absolutely isn't simple. Anything from this place is

more durable than you can imagine. Even if you used all your strength, you basically will not be able to destroy even the most ordinary piece of stone, let alone a stone wall or such." Spiritual Master Gu Cang said unhurriedly: "Since objects in this area are able to deflect such huge amounts of force, it will naturally be able to deflect huge gusts of wind. If you are still in such a sealed area after twenty four hours, then the gust of wind which will expel us out of the profound ark will be isolated from you too. There would be no way of getting out, and you will be buried here forever, together with the disappearance of the Primordial Profound Ark."

"Oh, oh. I understand." Xia Yuanba glanced at the stone beneath his foot with lingering fear, then nodded seriously.

"Just to be safe, Yuanba, take this." Spiritual Master Gu Cang took out a jade pendant, then hung it around Xia Yuanba's neck.

"Eh, master, what is this?" Xia Yuanba asked curiously.

"This is a profound formation jade made based on the Primordial Profound Ark's spatial laws. In the profound ark, if met with fatal danger, or if in a sealed location after the twenty four hours with no way of escape, just break the jade into pieces. The special spatial profound formation within will directly transport you to the Phoenix City directly beneath the profound ark. Although the profound formation within the jade is small, it abides to the Primordial Profound Ark's spatial laws, so making them is incomparably difficult, and requires the strength of several Monarchs."

"Back in the day, the Saint Emperor's personal disciple got lost in an ancient hall here, could not escape, and thus disappeared along with the Primordial Profound Ark. In his anger and sorrow, the Saint Emperor specially made these jade which specially countered the Primordial Profound Ark's spatial laws. In the entire Profound Sky Continent, only our Absolute Monarch Sanctuary possesses them."

"Oh! So it's like that." Xia Yuanba nodded, then said without even thinking: "Master, do you have another of this kind of jade? Give my

brother-in-law one!"

"This..." Spiritual Master Gu Cang revealed a face full of distress. Just when he wanted to shake his head, he had a thought. If he did not give out another, Xia Yuanba would probably give his to Yun Che. He could only sigh inwardly and take off the one he was wearing: "Forget it, take master's. These two pieces of jade are rarer than you think, apart from life threatening danger, do not use it casually."

"Thank you master!" Xia Yuanba immediately passed the jade in his hand over to Yun Che, then casually paid respects Spiritual Master Gu Cang: "Brother-in-law, let's go."

"Even though there are profound beasts here, Master said that within a few hundred kilometers in the surroundings, the strongest are only Sky Profound Beasts. There won't be much danger."

Seeing Yun Che and Xia Yuanba walk off eastward, Spiritual Master Gu Cang gave a bitter laugh inwardly. In the entire Profound Sky Continent, how many people dreamed to be his disciple, yet could not. But facing Xia Yuanba, most of the time, he had to try to please him, afraid that he would lose this disciple of his... Afterall, Xia Yuanba possessed the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins from legends, which was fated to be a generation's overlord!

What made him worry was... in the last two years, Xia Yuanba's personality could be said to be silent and mighty, fit to be called an emperor's disposition. But after meeting Yun Che, the previous disposition which was getting even more tyrannical and domineering was practically hidden without a trace. Also, the reason for coming to the Primordial Profound Ark in Divine Phoenix was to experience danger. The riskier the conditions, the more he would want to experience. Then, from the crises and dangers he faced, he would break through his limits, stage by stage. However, he now chose to roam in the completely safe surroundings...

Spiritual Master Gu Cang had already started to feel that Yun Che's appearance would be detrimental to Xia Yuanba's pursuit of strength

and the awakening of the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins.

Those from Divine Phoenix Sect entered the profound formation one after another. Spiritual Master Gu Cang and Ling Kun stood the the side of the profound formation. Ling Kun took a glance and stopped midair, the said to Ye Xinghan who had no intention of going over: "Young Master Ye, aren't you coming with us?"

"Hmph! Forget it." Ye Xinghan smiled insincerely and said: "If I brought my Yue Ji and Mei Ji in, those old things would give this young master dirty looks. Instead of finding the so-called Primordial Divine Items, this young master is more interested in having a good time aboard this Primordial Profound Ark."

Finishing his speech, Ye Xinghan had a good laugh and lifted the two women, leaving into the distance.

"This one is here to admire the scenery. Things like fighting and killing would be better done by smelly men like you, this would not want it." Ji Qianrou flipped his long hair, pursed his lips and turned his body proudly, leaving independently as well.

Regarding Ye Xinghan and Ji Qianrou's solo departure, Feng Hengkong had absolutely no intention of retaining them. On the contrary, he heaved a sigh of relief. Without those two thorns in their sides, it would be much more peaceful: "Xue'er, let's leave. After that, follow royal father closely, you must by all means not wander off."

After Feng Hengkong was done speaking, Feng Xue'er, however, did not move a step, but said suddenly: "Royal father, Xue'er wishes to walk around by herself, not with royal father, may I?"

=====

Chapter 456 – Conspiracy Within the Profound Ark

"You want to venture alone? No! Definitely not!" Feng Hengkong unhesitantly shook his head. "The world within this profound ark is strange and unclear, and even royal father has to be extremely careful in this place. In case we encounter some sort of danger, you have to stay by royal father's side at every given moment, otherwise, royal father definitely won't be able to feel at ease."

"But, royal father had said before that this place can be considered the absolute safest place in the entire Primordial Profound Ark, while the place royal father is currently heading to, is instead more dangerous. If Xue'er is only going to play around in the surroundings, isn't that much safer?" Feng Xue'er said with a soft voice.

"This..." Feng Hengkong blanked, but still shook his head afterwards. "Xue'er, ever since you were young, you have never left Divine Phoenix City, nor have you ever gone to a dangerous place alone. Hence, royal father isn't able to feel at ease at all if we leave you alone."

"Mn. Xue'er knows. Xue'er has grown up in the protection of royal father and the various elders since childhood. But, Xue'er has to grow up someday, and can't be under royal father's protection for everything she's going to do in her life. This year, Xue'er is already sixteen years old, and she has long been at the age where she should be able to make her own decisions, and train herself. Incidentally, isn't this place a very good start? Could it be that royal father wishes for Xue'er to grow up under protection forever, and not find her own world forever?"

Feng Xue'er's voice carried a deep hopeful feeling within, and even a small hint of desire.

Feng Hengkong's heart stirred greatly. However, he was still unable to feel at ease having Feng Xue'er truly move on her own in this dangerous place. After all, for so many years, he had already gotten

used to providing Feng Xue'er with the most extreme level of protection. Just as he was about to speak up, Feng Feiyan came forward, and spoke by his ears. "Sect Master, what Xue'er has said isn't wrong either. She's already sixteen years old this year... Though providing her protection with all our might isn't wrong, we can't protect her like this forever. Otherwise, she would never be able to act on her own accord, and instead waste her bloodline and strength. Furthermore, the Ranking Tournament yesterday had already exposed Xue'er's strength. There's no need to... conceal it any longer."

"And with Xue'er's strength, within a radius of ten thousand kilometers, there's basically nothing that could possibly threaten her. If we were to speak of the rest who are venturing alone... Even if Ye Xinghan and Ji Qianrou were to combine their strengths, it wouldn't be possible for them to be Xue'er's match either. If Sect Master is still worried..." Feng Feiyan cast an odd glance at Feng Hengkong. "Then I will stay behind, and protect Xue'er from the shadows. And at the same time..."

What Feng Feiyan had said was right. With Feng Xue'er's strength, it's impossible for her to be in danger within a radius of ten thousand kilometers. If she were to be protected by Feng Feiyan from the shadows as well, then it would be more than just foolproof... At the same time, having Feng Feiyan kill Yun Che, would be a foolproof plan as well!

Feng Hengkong dropped his doubts, and slowly nodded towards Feng Xue'er. "Alright then. What Xue'er said is right. You have already grown up, and it is indeed time for you to make your own decisions and train yourself. But you must remember what royal father has told you before. Be careful at all times."

"Wah... Thank you, royal father! Then Xue'er will be going off on her own now. Royal father, you must remember to be careful as well." Feng Xue'er responded with incomparable joy, then waved her hands at Feng Hengkong. Lightly ascending into the air, she flew towards

the east... which was also the direction which Yun Che and Xia Yuanba had left towards earlier.

"Haah, this child..." Feng Hengkong smiled as he shook his head.

"Sect Master, be at ease. There's nothing here that can possibly threaten Xue'er. Furthermore, I'm protecting her from the shadows as well. So, Sect Master, please leave with a peace of mind." Feng Feiyan said with a chuckle.

Not long after, Feng Feiyan ascended into the air as well, and leisurely flew towards the direction Feng Xue'er had gone.

"...Master had said before, that this place is a high-level world. But I don't understand what a 'high-level world' means in the slightest. Though... In this place, Transmission Jades, and all message transmitting items are unusable. Even using one's profound energy to transmit his or her own voice is not possible either. The range one can sense with his or her profound energy will be small as well."

Because Yun Che had yet to possess the ability to fly, Xia Yuanba walked on foot with him. The two of them had leisurely walked for a few kilometers, yet what they could only see was still a patch of grassland, with no end in sight. After hearing what Xia Yuanba had said at the end, Yun Che tried to release his perception... As expected, his perception was only capable of reaching a distance of no more than sixty meters, and he was unable to stretch any further than that.

"It really is very strange." Yun Che said. Two years ago, the Heaven Basin Secret Realm he entered was an independent small world as well. However, the feeling of this Primordial Profound Ark world was greatly different from the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. As for which parts were different, he wasn't able to tell.

The two of them spoke as they progressed forward, gradually

increasing their speed. Though, on this grassland area, they did not encounter any profound beasts, nor did they see even the smallest stalk of an abnormal or precious herb. It was barren to the point where they were becoming muddleheaded. After more than two hours, they finally stepped out of the grassland area and in front of them, was shockingly a wasteland with no end in sight.

After entering the wasteland, the wind became gentle and desolate. The surrounding air had also undergone a subtle change. This extremely small change had also caused Yun Che's alertness to unconsciously rise. As expected, after walking but a few steps forward, a giant black shadow suddenly sprang out from behind a gigantic boulder, pouncing straight towards Yun Che and Xia Yuanba... It was shockingly, a giant scorpion! Its long scorpion tail glowed radiantly with the color of deadly poison.

Yun Che's wrist moved, and with a flash of his body, he instantly appeared right below the giant scorpion. With lightning speed, Dragon Fault was smashed out, striking ruthlessly at the giant scorpion's abdomen.

Bang!!

The giant scorpion was smashed tumbling in the sky, before it heavily landed onto the ground. At the very moment it landed, Xia Yuanba quickly charged, and with a growl, he smashed his fist at the giant scorpion's body. An instant later, the giant scorpion's body was instantly blasted apart with an explosive sound, scattering into countless shattered pieces as they flew far away. Streams of black blood spilled out and the places where they had poured onto had dyed the entire ground in complete black. Among them, two drops fell onto Xian Yuanba's arm.

Yun Che hurriedly stepped forward, and used the Sky Poison Pearl to purify the poison on Xia Yuanba's body. At the same time, he was secretly shocked. The body of this poisonous giant scorpion was incomparably tough. The heavy horizontal strike from his Dragon Fault was only able to send it flying, yet its body had not been

wounded. Yet Xia Yuanba, without borrowing the strength of a weapon and just by casually swinging a fist, was able to smash it into smithereens...

The strength that Xia Yuanba currently possessed had actually reached such terrifying heights.

"Profound beasts are starting to appear. Brother-in-law, you have to be more careful." Xia Yuanba kicked away the chunk of its corpse next to his feet, and then, as he waved about his arms again, he said. "But Brother-in-law, there's no need to be too worried. There won't be any profound beasts that are too strong in this vicinity. With brother-in-law's strength and mine, there's nothing that can threaten us."

"If your sister were to find out about your current strength, she would definitely be in for a huge shock." Yun Che looked at Xia Yuanba, and said very seriously.

"Big Brother Yun!"

At this moment, a clear and spirited voice, as though it was heavenly music to the ears, could be heard behind them. Yun Che paused his steps, and hurriedly turned his head around... This voice, was clearly Feng Xue'er's voice!

The moment he turned around, he saw the figure of a teenage girl with peerless and illusory-like beauty in the sky. She slowly floated down from the sky, and the beauty of her posture was like a firefly demonstrating an elegant dance. Although she was still wearing the phoenix jade-glazed coronet, Yun Che was still able to sense her joyful feelings. "Xue'er!? Why are you here? Where's your royal father and the rest of them?"

Feng Xue'er landed next to Yun Che, and said happily. "Royal father and the rest have went to investigate the inner areas of the profound ark, and allowed me to freely move on my own."

"Why would your royal father allow you to be alone? In the past, he wouldn't even permit you to leave Divine Phoenix City." Yun Che said in shock.

"Hehe." Feng Xue'er smiled sweetly. "I told father the words that big brother Yun had told me back then. I told royal father that I have already grown up, that I have reached the age where I should be independent, and make my own decisions, so royal father agreed to it."

"Is that so..." Yun Che slightly nodded. Even though he still had doubts that Feng Hengkong would really feel at ease in allowing Feng Xue'er to freely move on her own in this world where unknown dangers could still exist, Feng Xue'er was currently standing right in front of him, so he had no choice but to believe it.

Seeing Feng Xue'er, who was now beside him, Yun Che's mood naturally lifted. Initially, he had thought that it would be a long time before he could face her at such a close proximity once again; he never expected that he would gain the opportunity to interact with her so soon. With a smile, he said. "Then... Xue'er, do you want to venture with us?"

"Mn!" Feng Xue'er nodded very strongly. If her phoenix jade-glazed crown was removed at this moment, it would be possible to see a pair of eyes which had already curved into bright new moons. She cheerfully said. "Then, big brother Yun, you have to protect Xue'er, alright? ...Oh, and bulky big brother, you have to protect Xue'er as well."

"Bulky big brother" had been staring straight at the two of them. Only when Feng Xue'er spoke to him did he regain his senses, and asked with widened eyes. "Brother-in-law, you two... know each other?"

"Mn." Yun Che nodded. "Xue'er had once saved my life."

When Yun Che uttered these words, the eyes Xia Yuanba had been

looking at Feng Xue'er with instantly underwent a severe change... She had once saved Yun Che. Just by this point alone, forget about her being the Princess Snow of Divine Phoenix Sect, even if she was an extremely vile old demonic grandma, he would still respect her, and be thankful to her all the same. With a pat to his chest, he said. "You have saved my brother-in-law's life, then that's the same as having saved my life. Don't worry, if anyone dares to bully you, no matter if it's a man or a profound beast, I definitely won't let any of them off... Eh, wait a minute!"

Xia Yuanba suddenly recalled the evaluation Spiritual Master Gu Cang had given Feng Xue'er yesterday. His voice came to a sudden halt, and then, he began to stutter a little. "Little miss... Oh, no, no. Princess Snow, is your profound strength... really... half-step from the Sovereign Profound?"

"That's right!" Feng Xue'er nodded very casually, as though in her opinion, it wasn't really a matter that's worth to be proud or mindful of. "When I'm twenty years old, my profound strength should be able to reach the actual Sovereign Profound Realm. Am I really incredible?"

"Incredible... Incredible..." Xia Yuanba strongly swallowed down a mouthful of saliva, and nodded with a stiff expression. He stayed in Absolute Monarch Sanctuary for nearly two years, and had seen countless numbers of experts who he thought only existed in legends. His outlook of the world had long changed from what it was before... However, even in Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, there had never been an appearance of a Monarch below the age of twenty! Forget about Xia Yuanba, even Spiritual Master Gu Cang was stunned on-site when he found out about Feng Xue'er's strength.

"You... You're... You're really only sixteen years old? How exactly do you cultivate?!" Xian Yuanba couldn't help but ask.

"That's a secret, so I can't tell you that, alright?" Feng Xue'er cheerfully replied, and then came to Yun Che's side. "Big brother Yun, where should we head to play? In the next twenty-two hours, I'm able to

once again pass my time with big brother Yun. I'm so happy."

"Xue'er, where do you wish to go?"

"Hm... Actually, anywhere is fine! Let me tell big brother Yun a secret, the reason why I left royal father and moved on my own, was in order to find big brother Yun. But this place is really spacious, and my perception range has been terribly reduced as well. Earlier, I had even gotten lost. And here I thought I wouldn't be able to find you..."

Xia Yuanba, who was left hanging by the side, looked blankly at the two people who were standing affectionately together, and he silently stretched out his hand to scratch his head... Their relationship seemed to look really good. But strange, didn't Master say that Princess Snow of Divine Phoenix Sect had never permitted anyone to make contact with her...

At the same time, in another place.

"Divine Phoenix Great Elder? Why are you here?"

Ye Xinghan turned around, and with narrowed eyes, he looked towards Feng Feiyan who had come to look for him. Yue Ji and Mei Ji beside him had slowly scattered aside as well, revealing a dagger in each of their hands; their expressions had turned icy cold as well. This world within the Primordial Profound Ark was the best place for a murder to take place, because no one else in the vicinity would be able to see or sense if a person was killed here. After the Primordial Profound Ark disappeared, all traces would completely disappear, allowing the murderer to return scot-free. Feng Feiyan was the Great Elder of Divine Phoenix Sect, and even more so, a high-level Overlord who was at the eighth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm. Naturally, Ye Xinghan wasn't his match.

"There's no need to be worried. This Divine Phoenix Great Elder is the smartest person in entire Divine Phoenix Sect. The reason he has

come to find this young master, can only be for a good matter, and not a bad one." Ye Xinghan stretched his hand, and took the initiative to walk towards Feng Feiyan. "You didn't go to investigate with Feng Hengkong and the rest? Could it be that you're assigned for something else?"

"Hoho." Feng Feiyan gave a meaningful smile. "I'm of course here to bring Young Hall Master good news... I'm preparing to send Young Hall Master that huge gift. There's no longer a need to wait for tomorrow or the day after, as it can be done today. And, it can also be done absolutely flawlessly."

"Oh?" Ye Xinghan's face tilted upwards.

"Feng Xue'er, whom Young Hall Master wishes to have, did not accompany Feng Hengkong to investigate the deep areas. Instead, she's moving on her own... and the reason why I didn't follow them into the depths, was to comply with Feng Hengkong's intentions. Protect Feng Xue'er from the shadows, and at the same time, kill Yun Che, that rat who overestimated himself!"

Feng Feiyan's words caused Ye Xinghan's eyes to release an odd light. Right after, he stretched out both of his arms, raised his head skywards, and began to laugh maniacally...

=====

Chapter 457 – Sudden Crisis

Inside of the Primordial Profound Ark, a vast wasteland.

After proceeding onward for yet another two hours more, the world before them was still a stretch of wasteland. If one could only use one word to express Yun Che's feelings, it would be...

Bored!!

In addition, there was not the least bit of excitement, nervousness, or mysterious feeling in exploring a different world. As far as the eye could see, it was all wasteland, there were barely any larger than usual rocks. One or two profound beasts would scuttle about, but they were all beaten to a pulp by one of Xia Yuanba's punches, he simply did not need to do anything... During his last adventure inside the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, there was a sky filled with flying snow, there was danger, there were great encounters... In comparison, this place was simply dull to the extreme. There was not much to see, no encounters, and no risks at all.

Fortunately, the delightful Feng Xue'er was by his side.

"Jasmine, did you sense anything?" Yun Che asked casually.

"...This is an independent world's wasteland." Jasmine said indifferently: "The first place you guys landed in was basically this world's only green area. All other places are wastelands, and the deeper you go, the more desolate it becomes."

"What does this mean?" Yun Che asked.

"It means that this world is dying!" Jasmine answered: "Even though this world still has profound beasts, you should also realize that not only are the profound beasts here few in number, they all have hard outer armor. They're all profound beasts that are extremely resistant to extremely poor environments! After a few more millennia, these extremely durable profound beasts will also gradually go extinct. By

that time, this world will completely become a dead world."

"...Why would this world die?"

"This is an independent world, not a natural world born from the large universe. Since it is a self-made independent world, its existence relies on the support of certain forces. Once the power that supports this world disappears, this world will also slowly and naturally become desolate and die.

Yun Che: "..."

"Big brother Yun, I heard yesterday that you're Blue Wind's Prince Consort. Your wife is also a princess... so Big brother Yun's wife must be really pretty, right?" Feng Xue'er tilted her head to look at Yun Che as she asked with curiosity.

Before Yun Che could answer, Xia Yuanba had already moved closer and said replied seriously: "Senior Sister Xueruo is indeed beautiful, but she's not as beautiful as my big sister... oh, oh, and, my big sister is Brother-in-law's big wife. Even though Senior Sister Xueruo is a princess, she's only a little wife."

As the younger brother of Xia Qingyue, Xia Yuanba had an small instinctive hostility toward Yun Che's latter wife, Cang Yue, but due to Cang Yue's noble identity as a princess and her sweet-tempered disposition, he couldn't help but feel a sense of crisis for his elder sister. So when Feng Xue'er mentioned Yun Che's wife, and even directly mentioned Princess Cang Yue, he quickly stepped in and upheld his sister's first wife position.

"..." If not for the fact that he couldn't beat Xia Yuanba, Yun Che really wanted to kick him flying.

"Ah?" As expected, Feng Xue'er's cherry lips gaped open in amazement: "Big brother Yun, you actually have... two wives?"

"Cough cough... this... this... you also know that your big brother Yun has great charm. Some things cannot be opposed with one's will."

Yun Che explained incoherently.

But he never expected for Feng Xue'er to nod, and answer seriously: "Mn, right. Big brother Yun is so nice, so there must be many girls who like him. Big brother Yun having two wives at the age of nineteen... doesn't seem to be much! Royal father has more than four hundred sixty wives, way more than Big brother Yun, you know!"

M... more... than four hundred sixty?!

Yun Che sucked in a breath of cold air... as expected, being an emperor was so comfortable that it made one envy!

Wait... More than four hundred sixty wives, yet only had fourteen sons and one daughter?

Doesn't seem too special!!

After thinking about the latter, Yun Che's mind immediately calmed. He nodded, and said earnestly: "Mn! I will learn from Xue'er's royal father and work hard in that aspect... Xue'er, I have a few questions to ask you. If you can answer them, answer them, if you don't feel comfortable answering them, you don't have to."

"Mn, Big brother Yun, go ahead." Feng Xue'er replied cheerfully.

Yun Che arranged his thoughts, and asked: "Xue'er, before you turned sixteen, was most of your time spent beside your sect's 'Phoenix God'?"

The two words "Phoenix God" caused a slight pause to appear in Feng Xue'er's footsteps. After a moment of silence, she nodded lightly: "Yes, Lord Phoenix God suddenly appeared on the day I was born and brought me to its side, all the way until I turned eight, which was when I first saw my royal father. Then, most of my time was still spent by Lord Phoenix God's side, until the year I turned thirteen..."

Feng Xue'er's voice cracked, then didn't continue any further.

Yun Che was able to guess that the "Lord Phoenix God" had died in the year Feng Xue'er turned thirteen, which was three years ago. Of course, he wasn't going to ask Feng Xue'er to confirm this fact, because even in Divine Phoenix Sect, there was probably not many in the sect who knew that the phoenix spirit was already dead. It was an humongous secret that could not be spread out. He pondered, then asked: "Then had your Lord Phoenix God ever talked to you about... another phoenix god?"

Feng Xue'er lifted her head. Her beautiful eyes silently looked at Yun Che for a while, then... she lightly nodded.

"Lord Phoenix God is one of the two remnant spirits that the Divine Phoenix Beast left behind in the Profound Sky Continent a long long time ago, a guide to test those who are worthy of the Phoenix power and pass on its legacy. One of them is our Divine Phoenix Empire's Lord Phoenix God. The other, is in Blue Wind Nation... Lord Phoenix God told me this a long time ago." Feng Xue'er said slowly. She looked at Yun Che: "You asked me yesterday why I taught you the World Ode of the Phoenix even though I knew you were the other Phoenix God's inheritor... In fact, I only half-answered it yesterday. The other half of the reason... was that it was Lord Phoenix God's wish."

"Phoenix God's wish?" Yun Che's brows twitched violently.

"Lord Phoenix God was originally a pure Phoenix Spirit, but due to it staying in Profound Sky Continent for a long time, its pure spirit was polluted by the mortal world's filth, making it give birth to feelings it shouldn't have, making it desire to be the only phoenix spirit in the Profound Sky Continent, and claim the entire Profound Sky Continent as its own. As it result, it broke away from its bindings and left the trial grounds for Blue Wind Nation in order to find the other phoenix spirit. After a fierce battle, it annihilated the other spirit, but it also suffered heavy injuries. Not only had its power weakened by several times, its lifespan of more than several ten thousand years had been reduced to a few thousand years. Even World Ode of the Phoenix

had been damaged by the fierce battle, fragmented..."

"..." What Feng Xue'er had said and what Yun Che had heard from the phoenix spirit's own mouth back then in the trial grounds was exactly the same. Only, the phoenix spirit didn't actually die that year and its World Ode of the Phoenix had broken to the point where only the fifth and sixth stages remained.

"Then, as Lord Phoenix God's lifespan gradually approached its end, it saw through many things, so its filth slowly diluted. In regards to that year, it felt evil and regretted destroying the other phoenix spirit. However, three years ago, when Lord Phoenix God was about to... Lord Phoenix God suddenly felt the existence of the other phoenix spirit and another Phoenix bloodline inheritor. It told me that if I ever met the other Phoenix successor, I should be peaceful and teach him the World Ode of the Phoenix... because Lord Phoenix God had lost the fifth and sixth stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix during the battle back then, and it had completely destroyed the other phoenix spirit's World Ode of the Phoenix. Even if the successor obtained the Phoenix bloodline, he would never be able to cultivate Phoenix Profound Arts."

Yun Che listened in earnest, baffled.

Even though Feng Xue'er was trying to cover it up as much as she could, most of her words all indicated that the phoenix spirit had already died. What surprised him was that the "Phoenix God", which the phoenix spirit had warned him to be careful of, the one he was the most afraid of before coming to Divine Phoenix Sect, had already regretted and confessed its crime and betrayal. The world was truly full of unpredictable happenings.

"I never expected that Big brother Yun would actually be the other Lord Phoenix God's inheritor, and even obtained its original power and soul... Oh, right. Big brother Yun, how does the other Lord Phoenix God look like? Is it... still well?" Feng Xue'er asked excitedly.

"Looks like..." Yun Che pondered, then said somewhat helplessly:

"Actually, I never clearly saw what it looked like, every time I saw it, I only saw two dazzling gold eyes. Right now it's somewhere in Blue Wind Nation. It had also told me about a few of the grievances between it and your Lord Phoenix God that year. Once I return back to Blue Wind, it seems that I have to talk to it about this. It ought to feel quite a bit relieved by it."

"Mn!" Feng Xue'er nodded. Then, her expression became misty: "Actually, when Lord Phoenix God found out that the other phoenix spirit had not died, it really was happy. Like... its greatest worry had been unknotted. So when I found out that Big brother Yun was the other phoenix spirit's successor, I was also very happy."

Just as Yun Che was about to say something, an ear-piercing voice suddenly sounded from behind:

"Oh? Isn't this my incomparably beautiful little sister Xue'er? Meeting you in such a vast mysterious world is truly this young master's fortune."

Yun Che, Feng Xue'er, and Xia Yuanba turned around at the same time. No less than three hundred meters away from them was a black attired Ye Xinghan who held onto his two seductive women. His face full of smiles did not cover up the slightest bit of his insolence and excessive lewdness as he casually walked their way.

"Ye Xinghan?" Yun Che muttered as his brows instantly furrowed. Ye Xinghan's dangerous smile and expression immediately unsettled him greatly. He quietly uttered: "Yuanba, careful."

"Oh..." Yun Che's words made Xia Yuanba stiffen. He slightly nodded as every vein on his thick arms all bulged outwards.

Xia yuanba was a mid-stage Overlord, and Feng Xue'er was a half-step Monarch. Ye Xinghan's was also a mid-stage Overlord, so if he wanted to fight, he was definitely not a match for both Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er... But it was exactly because of this that Yun Che was even more unsettled, because there was an expression of having

something up his sleeve, which clearly indicated that his prey was in his hands... in Ye Xinghan's eyes!

"Young Hall Master Ye." Feng Xue'er greeted.

"Oh~~" Ye Xinghan's long, thin eyes narrowed as he stared fixedly at Feng Xue'er's beautiful goddess-like figure, not seeing Yun Che or Xia Yuanba at all: "Little sister Xue'er, you're being too formal, calling me Young Hall Master Ye is too dull and distant. I want little sister Xue'er to call me... Big brother Ye."

=====

Chapter 458 – Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation

The frivolity in Ye Xinghan's voice was extremely heavy, and his eyes were even more so, filled with naked lust. During the Ranking Tournament yesterday, although he was arrogant, it was definitely not to such extent. Under his gaze, Feng Xue'er instantly felt uncomfortable throughout her entire body, as she replied. "Due to Young Hall Master Ye's esteemed position, Xue'er does not dare to refer to you in such a casual manner... If Young Hall Master Ye does not have any other matters, then Xue'er will continue to sight-see."

After saying that, just as Feng Xue'er was about to turn around and no longer pay Ye Xinghan another mind, Ye Xinghan, however, said smilingly. "Little Sister Xue'er, don't be in such a rush to leave. This young master has a very important matter to talk about... Three years ago, this young master has heard of Little Sister Xue'er's reigning beauty, incomparable by anyone else in the world, hence, I have always wished to personally witness Little Sister Xue'er's fairy-like appearance. Above the stage yesterday, under the watchful eyes of the masses, even though this young master holds this strong wish, I could not bear to have Little Sister's fairy-like appearance be tainted by the eyes of a bunch of mortals."

"Then I wonder if, little Xue'er is able to fulfill this young master's wish today?"

"Please forgive Xue'er for refusing. Xue'er's looks are crude, and difficult to enter Young Hall Master's eyes." Feng Xue'er used a calm tone, and rejected him with the exact same words as yesterday. This person in front of her, called Ye Xinghan, caused her to feel a very intense disgust for the first time in her life.

However, Ye Xinghan was not angry in the slightest. Instead, he began to laugh out loud. "Hahahaha, that's fine as well. Though today is different from yesterday; there are still two ridiculous and unpleasant brats. This young master isn't really in a hurry either. In any case, before long, little sister Xue'er will only belong to me, Ye

Xinghan. When that time comes, in this world, Little Sister Xue'er's appearance can only be seen by me alone. Facing each other under the moonlight, while enjoying your appearance all to myself. Now that's the real beauty in this world. Hahahaha."

Yun Che: "..."

"You..." Feng Xue'er turned sullen. "You're the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, how can spout such nonsense!?"

"Nonsense? Heh..." Ye Xinghan smiled immorally. "This young master has never spoken any nonsense, especially when it's matters regarding Little Sister Xue'er. The reason this young master has come to Divine Phoenix Empire this time, was not entirely because of the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament nor the Primordial Profound Ark. Rather, it's because of you... My little sister Xue'er. After this trip in the profound ark, I will immediately ask your royal father, in other words, my future father-in-law, for your hand in marriage, and have him betroth you to me. At that moment, we will be husband and wife, and when that time comes, I will have you become someone who completely belongs to me. No other man should ever hope of making contact with your beauty."

Feng Xue'er's voice became hurried, and under the phoenix jade-glazed coronet, her snow-like face had already turned pink from anger. "You... You're spouting nonsense! Like I will ever... become your wife! And it's definitely impossible for my royal father to accept your proposal either! If you speak nonsense again, then I will really get angry!"

"Even when my Little Sister Xue'er become angry, your voice is still so pleasant to the ears." Ye Xinghan laughed out sinisterly. His demeanor was full of self-arrogance, as though everything had already fallen into the palm of his hands. "But, when it comes to something that I, Ye Xinghan, wishes for, I have never failed to obtain it. When it's a matter that I, Ye Xinghan, has decided on... Heh, even if it's your royal father Feng Hengkong, when the time comes, he would have no choice but to accept it either!"

"Shut your mouth!"

A rumbling thunder-like voice suddenly descended from the sky, and following after, a human figure flashed, appearing right in the front of Feng Xue'er with lightning speed, as he furiously stared at Ye Xinghan. "Young Hall Master Ye, our Divine Phoenix Empire has always respected the Sacred Grounds, and even more so respect you, a guest who had travelled far to come here. I never expected that you would actually spout such arrogant remarks, and even dare to offend Xue'er and my Sect Master with your words! What are your motives!?"

"Great Elder." Seeing the figure who had suddenly appeared, Feng Xue'er cried out softly. "How are you here? Aren't you supposed to be royal father and the rest..."

Feng Feiyan turned his head around, and lightly smiled. "Sect Master was worried about you being alone, so he had me protect you from the shadows. But, I never expected that... Hmph, that there would actually be someone who dares to offend you when we're not around. Xue'er, don't worry. Even if he's the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, since he dared to offend you, I will definitely not let him off either."

"Thank you, Great Elder." Feng Xue'er gently said. With the Great Elder here, her anxious and angry emotions had softened a great deal as well.

"Brother-in-law, what is this situation... Wu, it seems like we don't have any part in this, right?" Xia Yuanba softly said.

Yun Che didn't reply, his gaze turning even more solemn... However, at this moment, his gaze was not falling on Ye Xinghan, but rather, on Feng Feiyan. Because from his figure, he suddenly sensed that something was wrong. He was unable to say what was wrong concretely, and it was just his gut feeling.

"Oh! Isn't this the Divine Phoenix Great Elder? You did not head over

to investigate that so-called Primordial Treasure, but instead ran all the way here. Now that sure is unexpected." Ye Xinghan said with a chuckle. "This young master has completely no intention to offend your Divine Phoenix Sect. I merely wish to marry my little sister Xue'er."

"Give up." Feng Feiyan said with a solemn face. "Not only is Xue'er the princess of Divine Phoenix Sect, she's even the person personally chosen by our Sect's Phoenix God. She's the direct successor of the Phoenix God! In this world, there's no one who is worthy of her. And Sect Master will definitely not agree to it either."

"He will not agree to it? Hahahaha..." Ye Xinghan burst out in a disdainful, maniacal laughter. "And how are you people going to go about refusing it? Do you really think the Divine Phoenix Sect now, is still the same Divine Phoenix Sect of the past!?"

Feng Feiyan's expression slightly changed. "Ye Xinghan, what do you mean by that!?"

"What do I mean? Great Elder, you should be more clear of the situation that this young master." Ye Xinghan coldly smiled. "The growth speed of your Divine Phoenix Sect is indeed astonishing. In just a short five thousand years, you people have already begun to gradually approach the level of our Sacred Grounds. And with the existence of your 'Phoenix God', the Four Great Sacred Grounds didn't dare to apply pressure, and simply allowed you to grow. After all, in this Profound Sky Continent your Phoenix God is the one and only Divine Spirit which had truly touched the Divine Profound Realm. Under the Phoenix God's protection, if given another five thousand years, there might be a possibility that you people can really surpass the level of our Sacred Grounds."

"But, unfortunately, your strongest protector has already disappeared. Do you people really think that we do not know that the Phoenix God had long been dead since three years ago!? Without the existence of the Phoenix God, what qualifications do you people have to challenge our Sacred Grounds!?"

"Ah!" Ye Xinghan's words caused Feng Xue'er to exclaim out, while Feng Feiyan's expression had even more so, changed drastically, as he said with a sharp tone. "What a bunch of nonsense! Lord Phoenix God of our Divine Phoenix Sect is a divine spirit of the Phoenix, which possesses an endless lifespan, and can never ever die! You... You actually spout such offensive remarks!!"

"Hahahaha, Phoenix Great Elder, in regards to the life and death of the Phoenix God, you're more clear of it in your heart than this young master. With such a huge sect, you people actually play out such deceitful acts. Don't you find it laughable and shameless!? Heh... Do you actually think that without the existence of the Phoenix God, the Four Great Sacred Grounds will allow your Divine Phoenix Sect to continue growing any further!?"

"You..." Feng Feiyan's expression turned extremely ugly.

"This young master has currently set his sights on little sister Xue'er, and that's a huge gift that I'm bestowing to your Divine Phoenix Sect!" Ye Xinghan stretched out his palms, pushing them up to the sky. That arrogant posture of his was as though he was a peerless emperor who was in control of the world. "Sun Moon Divine Hall will one day come into my hands. With the marriage intertwining my Sun Moon Divine Hall and Divine Phoenix Sect, if the other three Sacred Grounds wish to suppress the Divine Phoenix Sect, then they will have to still give face to my Sun Moon Divine Hall! If the marriage cannot be established..."

Ye Xinghan's palms slowly lowered as his face revealed an extremely insidious light smile. "Then the other methods this young master has in his disposal, might not be as gentle. As for your Divine Phoenix Sect, let alone suppression, in regards to whether it still exists a thousand years later is still an uncertainty... Phoenix Great Elder, you must have heard of the Eternal Night Royal Family of a thousand years ago... Heh heh. Such a huge Eternal Night Royal Family was exterminated just like that. In a mere thousand years, every trace of it had disappeared, and even its name, had completely been

forgotten... This is so unfortunate and pitiful."

In Ye Xinghan's speech, seemingly every single one of his words was piercing right into Feng Feiyan's achilles heel, causing his body to tremble. Feng Xue'er's expression was becoming paler as well... Although she had never inquired about the sect's matters, and knew very little regarding the structure of the profound world, she knew that the death of the Phoenix God was a heavenly secret which definitely could not be leaked out of Divine Phoenix Sect. In the entire sect, only but a few people knew about it as well...

Why did this Ye Xinghan know about it!?

"This is really... a bunch of nonsense!" Feng Feiyan clenched his fists, and Phoenix flames exploded above them, while extremely intense profound aura stirred around his entire body. "Ye Xinghan! Just by those words you spoke earlier, forget about the fact that you're the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, if you're the heavenly king himself, I will still kill you!!"

"Oh? Did your humiliation turn into anger, and you now wish to kill me? Hahahaha..." Ye Xinghan laughed maniacally with his head raised. "Then come. Allow me to witness just what the so-called Phoenix Great Elder is capable of!"

"You're courting death!" Feng Feiyan loudly roared, and the flames in his hands once again surged as the profound energy from his entire body stirred crazily... Evidently, he had already completely brought out his entire profound energy out of anger.

The strength of an aura brought about a high-stage Overlord completely stopped Yun Che from breathing. However, the uneasiness in his heart, had grown to its limit at this moment as well. Looking at Feng Feiyan's actions, his pupils suddenly shrank, as he roared out explosively. "Yuanba, watch out!!"

"Ah?" Xia Yuanba blanked... However, seemingly at that moment when Yun Che's words fell, Feng Feiyan whose entire body was

suffused with energy, fiercely turned around, and suddenly blasted his fists out... But, what Yun Che had completely never expected was, the person he attacked was not Xia Yuanba, it was instead... Feng Xue'er!!

At that moment, Yun Che's pupils had instantly shrunk to the size of a needle. He had long sensed an anomaly, yet, never would he have guessed that the person Feng Feiyan would suddenly attack, was not himself, nor Xia Yuanba, but actually Feng Xue'er!!

When a high-stage Overlord suddenly attacked with his full strength, forget about Yun Che, even if it was Xia Yuanba, it would be impossible for him to react to it. Even if he was able to react, it would be impossible for him to block it either. And that went even more so for Feng Xue'er who was behind Feng Feiyan. She would have definitely never expected that Feng Feiyan, Feng Hengkong's most trusted person whom had always cared about her, would actually attack her... Furthermore, her distance from Feng Feiyan, was merely less than five steps away!

Her pupils merely quivered for a moment. Before she had time to react, she had already been struck ruthlessly in the chest by Feng Feiyan's palm... In an instant, a blood-red colored jade, which Feng Feiyan had been quietly grasping in his hands, completely shattered. With his energy, he released a crimson red profound formation, which firmly printed onto Feng Xue'er's body.

Like a willow catkin being carried away by the light breeze, Feng Xue'er's body flew up, and the phoenix coronet on her head slipped off far away.

"Xue'er!!"

The sound of the profound energy blast did not resound through his ears like it should have. Just as Yun Che's face paled from shock, he charged out with lightning speed, and firmly caught onto Feng Xue'er. Then, stomping his feet with Star God's Broken Shadow, he instantly flashed sixty meters away, and at the same time, roared out

loudly. "Yuanba, block him!!"

At this moment, Xia Yuanba reacted as well. Glaring with his eyes, he threw a fist towards Feng Feiyan, and with an explosive bang, the two of them separated a good distance away. Xia Yuanba turned around in midair, landing in front of Yun Che and Feng Xue'er, with his two fists faintly trembling. On the other end, Feng Feiyan slowly floated over to Ye Xinghan's side, his face carrying a light smile with a hint of treachery and willfulness within.

"Xue'er... Xue'er, are you alright...? Xue'er!" Yun Che carried Feng Xue'er's soft body, as he shouted out anxiously. However, he immediately realized that there wasn't a single trace of harm on Feng Xue'er's body, but, the presence of energy in her body had completely disappeared instead. He couldn't sense the existence of even a single hint of profound energy!

"Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation..." Without the concealment from the phoenix coronet, Yun Che once again saw Feng Xue'er's flawless appearance. Her face was completely pale, and her pair of beautiful eyes were quivering intensely. They were completely filled with fear, mist, and utter disbelief. In Yun Che's embrace, she gently turned her head, and looked towards Feng Feiyan who was standing together with Ye Xinghan. Leaking out an uncertain voice, as though she was talking in her sleep, she asked. "Great Elder... why... must you... do this..."

=====

Chapter 459 – Harboring Malicious Intentions

Feng Xue'er was indeed uninjured, but she was unable to use any bit of her profound strength. She was so weak that she couldn't even stand; it was as though all her strength had been sealed. Yun Che was slightly relieved. He turned his head around ferociously, angrily staring at Feng Feiyan: "Feng Feiyan... Have you gone crazy?!"

"Heheheh, Xue'er, I'm only doing this for your own good." Feng Feiyan laughed with a harmless looking expression: "Young Hall Master Ye will be the future master of a sacred ground. If you are to marry him, it would be the world's most perfect pairing. However, I know that your royal father will definitely not agree in this. Therefore, I have no choice but to use a little trick. After you completely become Young Hall Master Ye's woman in this Primordial Ark and the both of you have enjoyed the body of the Divine Phoenix, even if your royal father doesn't agree, he wouldn't have any choice."

Yun Che fiercely gritted his teeth, as both his fists clenched in secret. No one would have expected that the great elder of Divine Phoenix Sect, a core member of the sect whose position and reputation among his generation was only second to Feng Hengkong, the person Feng Hengkong and Feng Xue'er trusted the most, would actually harbor such malicious intentions.

Ye Xinghan wanted to possess Feng Xue'er, which meant that Yun Che and Xia Yuanba would most likely be killed to keep the secret!

Feng Xue'er's expression was sorrowful. Her eyes were clouded as though she was in a dream: "The matter about Lord Phoenix God having already passed on, only me... royal father... grandfather... great grandfather... and you knew. It was you... you..."

"That's right. I was the one that told Young Hall Master Ye." Feng Feiyan directly admitted: "However it's not just Sun Moon Divine Hall. The other three Sacred Grounds have probably already received this news as well. After the Phoenix God passed on, your useless royal

father only knew how to try to indefinitely hide this matter. He never thought of finding a solution for Divine Phoenix Sect now that we no longer have the protection of the Phoenix God. Paper can never ever wrap fire. Only with the assistance of the future Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall can we ensure the prosperity of our Divine Phoenix Sect. This is the best way for Divine Phoenix Sect to proceed!"

Yun Che laughed coldly: "A solution for Divine Phoenix Sect? You're obviously finding an escape for yourself! You even chose to betray the entire Divine Phoenix Sect! Simply too despicable!"

Even after being scolded by Yun Che, Feng Feiyan was not angry, but instead laughed loudly: "Hahahaha, every man for his own and the devil takes the hindmost. Without the Phoenix God, Divine Phoenix Sect's powers will deteriorate quickly, and might even become a subject of the Four Sacred Divine Grounds, never able to return to its former glory. As long as I am loyal towards Young Hall Master Ye. Heh, I believe that when he feels my loyalty, he would definitely treat me kindly."

"That is natural. I personally am fond of smart men like Great Elder." When Ye Xinghan was speaking, his eyes were firmly on Feng Xue'er's fairy-like appearance. He has had numerous women but only until today did he realize that a woman could be beautiful to such an extent. He even felt that all the numerous women he had conquered up till today could not compare to a bit of her fairy-like appearance, even if their beauty were all added together.

He stretched his hands out, his fingers gripped continuously as he could not longer wait. He wanted to immediately conquer this girl who should not even belong to the human world.

Feng Xue'er's chest rose intensely. She rarely interacted with the outside world and grew up under the most extreme form of protection and never knew of the world's dangers at all. She closed her eyes as she uttered sadly: "Why is it like this... This isn't real... Big brother Yun ... This isn't real..."

"That brat... You seem to be called... Yun Che?" Ye Xinghan stared at Yun Che who was currently carrying Feng Xue'er with a massive killing intent: "Immediately let go of this young master's Xue'er and scram. Perhaps I can still consider leaving you with a full corpse. Garbage such as you are not fit to touch my Xue'er's jade body!"

Yun Che carried Feng Xue'er and stood up, his gaze similarly emitted an icy cold killing intent. This matter was originally of no concern for Yun Che and Xia Yuanba, but now that he was present, he would definitely not be able to escape this situation! When Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan conversed, they didn't hide anything from him and Xia Yuanba. Clearly, they had already been treated as dead!

"Big brother Yun..." Feng Xue'er who was in his arms, softly said: "I have been sealed by the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation... This is a forbidden formation used to seal off the profound strength of disciples who have committed heinous acts... Though I have the protection of the Phoenix God's powers, for the next twenty-four hours, I won't be able to exert any strength... I don't want... by that evil man... so... Big brother Yun... please... can you... kill me...?"

Yun Che felt his heart tighten as he saw Feng Xue'er's beautiful eyes turn dull, losing all its former glory. All that was left was now despair and sadness. He breathed out heavily and hugged Feng Xue'er even more tightly, gently saying: "Xue'er, don't be scared. Unless I'm dead... I won't let anyone harm you!"

Some vibrance returned to Feng Xue'er's eyes. She looked tenderly at Yun Che's eyes, meekly saying: "Big brother Yun..."

"Die!" Seeing that Yun Che wasn't letting go of Feng Xue'er, but instead hugging her more tightly, Ye Xinghan was instantly enraged... He had not even managed to touch a piece of clothing on Feng Xue'er, the one who gave him the greatest hunger of his life, yet this garbage was hugging her in front of him! He swung his hand, and soon, a cold glinting jade fan appeared in his right hand.

This jade fan was an item that was always kept with Ye Xinghan. It

was not just a simple fan. When the fan appeared in the hands of Ye Xinghan, even Feng Feiyan who was beside him shuddered... The name of the fan was "Sun Moon Calamity", created with Heavenly Brahma Jade which had undergone more than ten thousand years of shine under the sun and moon. It was one of only ten Tyrant Profound Artifacts within the entire Profound Sky Continent. Simply relying on the "Sun Moon Calamity", Ye Xinghan's powers would be raised by at least three levels. He would even be able to fight against Feng Feiyan, who was in the eighth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm!

Sun Moon Calamity shone slightly following the wrist movements of Ye Xinghan which produced a crescent profound beam that shot straight towards Yun Che's throat. Wherever the profound beam went, space was violently cut apart accompanied by a ear-piercing tearing sound.

Xia Yuanba's huge body instantly moved, blocking Yun Che's front. His rock-like fist punched out angrily... With a loud explosion, the frightening crescent profound beam exploded midair. A one inch long bloody wound appeared on the back of Xia Yuanba's hand. Xia Yuanba face turned somber as he gritted his teeth and uttered: "Brother-in-law, quickly leave... leave!!!"

"Yuanba..."

"LEAVE!!!!"

Xia Yuanba howled so loudly that it even caused Yun Che's entire body to shudder as he clutched his hands tightly. Xia Yuanba was already clear about the situation at hand, and Yun Che too, knew it clearly... Looking at Xia Yuanba's back and the determination coming off from him, he no longer acted hypocritical anymore. He gritted his teeth and turned around with difficulty: "Yuanba, don't die... Remember the transportation jade on you... Definitely don't die!"

With Yun Che's current strength, it was simply insufficient in front of Feng Feiyan and Ye Xinghan. There would be no use even if he

stayed; the result would still be death. However, leaving Xia Yuanba behind and escaping with Feng Xue'er meant that there would be a slim glimmer of hope for him and Feng Xue'er... But that also meant Xia Yuanba would be left in mortal danger.

As Yun Che finished speaking, he bit his tongue and turned from Xia Yuanba to the road in front and sprinted towards the east together with Feng Xue'er. He didn't turned back, but streaks of blood overflowed between his fingers.

"Want to run?" Feng Feiyan laughed coldly, and just as his was about to give chase, he was stopped by Ye Xinghan who said beamingly: "Isn't it better that they left?"

Feng Feiyan was stunned: "Young Hall Master means?"

"Do you think that that garbage Yun Che would be able to escape from me?" Ye Xinghan laughed in disdain: "Now that he has escaped with my Xue'er, we can peacefully send this disciple of Gu Cang to his death. He is still a mid-stage Overlord. Killing him would still cause quite a stir. Now that my Xue'er's profound strength has been sealed, she does not have any way of protecting herself. If she were to come to harm in an accident during our battle, even if it were a hair of hers, I would still feel heartbroken."

Feng Feiyan nodded slowly: "No wonder. Young Hall Master has thought it through completely... However, this Xia Yuanba is Gu Cang's disciple. Won't there be any problems?"

"This Primordial Profound Ark is the perfect killing ground. No matter who dies here, there wouldn't be any troubles. The only people who knows about this is only you, me, Xue'er and Yun Che who's about to die. My perfect Xue'er will also soon become my woman. And if she's my woman, she will be implanted with a profound seal that will never disappear. All her actions, speech, will would be in my control, and she will never be able to say this to anyone... Great Elder, are there any more worries?"

"Of course not." Feng Feiyan laughed ominously: "Then I would trouble Young Hall Master to team up with me. For me to defeat him is but simple, but killing him would be challenging. If he were to accidentally escape, it would be troublesome."

Hearing the conversation between Feng Feiyan and Ye Xinghan, Xia Yuanba didn't speak nor move. All the muscles in his body bulged as all the profound energy inside and on the surface of his body surged. Hearing that they didn't intend to split up and chase Yun Che, but instead chose to team up and ensure his death made him secretly happy... This way, he could at least drag it out, giving Yun Che slightly more time and chances to escape.

Cra-cra-cra-crack...

The joints in Xia Yuanba's body produced a cracking sound; his blood vessels became obvious, nearly bursting. His eyes were calm and composed as he stared at Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan who already treated him as dead...

Brother-in-law, I finally have the chance and ability to protect you. This time, I'm betting my life. No matter what... I won't let you come to harm!

"Let's send him on his way." Ye Xinghan swung his jade fan and numerous crescent profound beam shot straight towards Xia Yuanba's vitals.

"Die!" Feng Feiyan wildly shouted. Flames leapt up from his body, and soon the sky was instantly shrouded in fire as well. He struck down from above, instantly engulfing Xia Yuanba's figure...

=====

Chapter 460 – Yue Ji and Mei Ji

Yun Che sprinted onwards with all his strength while carrying Feng Xue'er. The strength in his entire body was concentrated onto speed as the wind whistled past his ears. Occasionally, profound beasts would spring out, but before they could even harbor the intent to attack him, he had already zipped past them.

Behind him, Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan did not come chasing after them. Yun Che heaved a small sigh of relief, but right after, his heart once again clenched... The fact that they didn't come chasing after them, clearly meant that they first wanted to work together in defeating Xia Yuanba, to put him to death!

When he thought of this, Yun Che's speed instantly slowed down. However, immediately after, he gnashed his teeth, and once again increased his speed, while restraining himself from turning around with all his might... Even if he were to return, he basically was unable to help Xia Yuanba in any way. He could only hope that in the time of crisis, Xia Yuanba would be able to use the teleportation jade that Spiritual Master Gu Cang had handed him in time. Otherwise, with Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan working together, he would undoubtedly die.

Boom...

The great earth shook, flames spread, and shockwaves came rushing over from several kilometers away, causing the madly sprinting Yun Che to stagger. The destructive power caused by a battle between Overlord-class practitioners was extremely terrifying. Even Yun Che, whose name now shook the entire world, definitely did not have the qualifications to be a part of it.

Even though his speed had already reached its limit, Yun Che still thought that it was not fast enough as he desperately circulated all of the energy in his body. He was very aware that although the distance he had fled seemed far, to an Overlord, catching up to him

would essentially be a simple feat. Right now, he was absolutely regretting that he didn't put down his reluctance to comprehend "Extreme Mirage Lightning" last night. With his comprehensive ability, even with merely a single night, it would be enough for him to have small gains, which might even bestow him with an extremely huge support in a time like this.

"Jasmine, just when will your strength recover!?" Yun Che roared out in his consciousness. Back then in the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, after Jasmine aided him in killing Mu Tianbei, in order to prevent him from being dependent on her strength, and in order for her to drive out the poison in her body with a peace of mind as well, she forcefully sealed her own strength... Back then, she said that this self-seal would last for at least a year.

However, it had already been more two years since then!

"Since it's a self-seal, then naturally, even I am unable to control it. Hence, even I myself do not know when the seal will automatically release." Jasmine lightly said. "Back then, the minimum time limit I set for this seal was a year, while the maximum is five years. Now that two years have already passed, it might be released in the next second, or even three years later."

"..." Yun Che had the sudden urge to pull Jasmine out and give her a fierce spanking.

"Are you worried about Xia Yuanba?" Jasmine said with incomparable calm. "Even if you're worried, there's nothing you can do. Right now, you basically do not have the qualifications to participate in a Overlord-level battle. In regards to Xia Yuanba, I don't know if he will die, but... between Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan, one of them will definitely die."

Yun Che blanked. "One of the two will die? Why?"

In terms of profound strength, Xia Yuanba would basically be on par with Ye Xinghan. However, Ye Xinghan possessed a Tyrant Profound

Weapon, which was enough to completely suppress Xia Yuanba. While Feng Feiyan was even stronger than Xia Yuanba by a small part of a realm. When facing either only one of them, Xia Yuanba held no possibility of victory, let alone when the two of them were working together... How could one of them die?

"Because his profound veins are the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins which have already awakened at the preliminary stage!" Jasmine's voice, was filled with an odd sense of pity. "Your Evil God's Divine Veins come from the Evil God's Indestructible Blood, while the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, have similarly originated from blood left in this world by a true Primordial God... That god, was the 'War God' who was born for wars. Though the War God's overall strength isn't comparable to the Evil God's, a War God in explosive rage, is comparable to a berserk Evil God. If mere mortals were to dare stir up a god's anger... The consequences, would only be death!!"

Yun Che: "..."

Speed, in the very end, was not Yun Che's specialty. After all, his profound strength was merely at the Earth Profound Realm. The reason why he was able to face Emperor Profound foes with his current profound strength, was because of possessed the Evil God's Profound Veins which brought about an expansion to his profound energy and its berserk elements, the strong physique bestowed by the Dragon God's blood and Dragon God's marrow, the perverse physical strength and defense bestowed by the Great Way of the Buddha... However, other than the expansion of profound energy bestowed by the Evil God's Profound Veins, the rest were unable to bestow any increment to his speed. Still, the main reason why he was able to reach his current speed, was because he had usually carried an extremely heavy sword, and whenever he kept his heavy sword, his body would feel as light as a feather. However, his speed at its utmost limit, would merely be comparable to the speed of a half-step Emperor Profound practitioner.

The sounds of profound energy explosions behind him grew further and further away, however, he did not rest or stop for even the slightest moment. Beads of sweat fell off from Yun Che's forehead, lightly hitting onto Feng Xue'er's snow-white, jade-colored neck. Feng Xue'er opened her eyes, and stared at Yun Che, whose body was completely drenched in sweat tightly gnashing his teeth, as she lightly called out. "Big brother Yun... Big brother Yun..."

"Xue'er, don't be afraid. We have already fled very far away!" Yun Che looked towards the unknown distance, and consoled her while gritting his teeth with all his might. However, in his heart, he was incomparably aware that with his current speed, even if he were to wildly sprint for several hours more, it would basically be impossible to escape from danger.

"Big brother Yun... Put... Put me down... Alright...?" Feng Xue'er lightly said. "Their target... is me... By putting me down... Big brother Yun can go to much a further place... I..."

"You're not allowed to say such words!" Yun Che said. "In this world, there are merely a few people who are worth protecting with my life... And among these people, Xue'er is definitely one of them! It's not merely because Xue'er has saved my life once before, the bigger reason is... let alone me, even the heavens themselves cannot not bear to see Xue'er suffer any harm!"

"But... I..."

"You're not allowed to say the same words again!" Yun Che growled. "Otherwise, I will get angry."

"Big brother Yun..." Feng Xue'er clinged onto Yun Che's chest as her entire body was tightly hugged. She was currently in a dangerous situation she had never been in her entire life; her body was weak and powerless, unable to even circulate the tiniest bit of profound energy needed to summon the Snow Phoenix Beast. However, what filled her heart the most, was instead an indescribable calm. This calm feeling, was quietly dispersing all her fear and powerlessness...

She stared with her beautiful star-like eyes, and looked unblinkingly at Yun Che's face which was a sweat-filled crimson red. As she looked, she gradually turned silly, and she unconsciously muttered out with a soft voice. "Big brother Yun... To be able to meet you... Xue'er is really blissful... I'm so happy..."

The voice which was gentle as fluttering snow, had seemingly melted the tension in Yun Che's heart in an instant. In his mind, images which could not be forgotten in his entire life, could not help but surface... That dream-like view before he fell off the Absolute Phoenix Cliff... Feng Xue'er, who was dancing in the snow... Feng Xue'er, who was playing happily with the Snow Phoenix... Feng Xue'er who was quietly drooling... The serious Feng Xue'er when she was teaching him the World Ode of the Phoenix... Feng Xue'er, who was listening to his stories... Feng Xue'er, who was looking at him with worshipping eyes... Feng Xue'er, who could not bear to see him go... And Feng Xue'er, who questioned her own royal father during the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament for his sake...

If he were to talk about bliss, then, for him to receive the opportunity to meet Feng Xue'er, and spend so many days with her where they had gotten closer every single day... That was true bliss.

Even though, he was involved in extreme danger because of Feng Xue'er today and was in such a dangerous situation that he might lose his life, he definitely did not regret his meeting with Feng Xue'er. If he was given the choice to choose once more... Even without Feng Chihuo, he would still choose to fall off Absolute Phoenix Cliff on his own accord.

"Watch your back."

Yun Che had concentrated all of his profound energy on his speed, and currently, he was a little out of sorts as well. With Jasmine's low and cold warning voice, he then suddenly realized that two ice-piercing murderous auras were currently approaching him from the rear.

Yun Che hurriedly turned his head around, and suddenly saw two explicitly-dressed women with bewitching figures, currently flying slightly above ground, chasing after him with extreme speed, closing the distance between them.

With just a single glance, Yun Che was able to recognize that they were the two women who were by Ye Xinghan's side... Yue Ji and Mei Ji! At the moment he turned his head around, the two of them had already closed the distance to about three hundred meters.

"What are the levels of strength of these two people?" Yun Che hurriedly asked.

"They are both level eight Thrones." Jasmine said with a heavy voice. "You can barely fight off with just one, but if it's two of them... You have to pay a certain price, and furthermore, you're carrying a burden as well!"

Even if Yun Che's speed was raised to its limit, it would definitely still be unable to compare to two late-stage Thrones. After a short moment of contemplation, Yun Che made a quick decision, and quickly stopped in his tracks. Turning around, his brows tightened as he stood in place, coldly looking at the two approaching women.

Hiss!!

In two short seconds, Yue Ji and Mei Ji had already charged over. Their speed had caused the surrounding air to screech, as though it had been coarsely sliced by a bayonet. The two of them descended from the sky, and stood at Yun Che's left and right sides. When they stopped, their gigantic and silky breasts, which a large half of them were seemingly exposed, intensely shook up and down, bringing about an enchanting wave which could cause a person's blood to surge.

If there were merely these two enemies, Yun Che might have calmed his breath, and enjoy the view smilingly for a moment. However, right now, with a crisis behind him, there was only killing intent in

his eyes... He had to get rid of these two obstacles who were obstructing him and Feng Xue'er from escaping with the quickest speed possible.

"Big brother Yun..." The ice-cold killing intent emitted by the two women caused Feng Xue'er, who completely did not possess the strength to protect herself, to shudder.

"Xue'er, don't be afraid. They're only here to seek their deaths!" Yun Che consoled her with a low voice and then carried Feng Xue'er in his embrace with a single hand while grabbing onto Dragon Fault with his right hand... At that moment, the image of the Dragon God's Trial Grounds flashed past his mind. Back then, just like now, he had carried Chu Yuechan with a single hand, and a heavy sword with another as well...

But... Little Fairy... Where exactly are you...

The ice-cold killing intents locked tightly onto Yun Che, and Yun Che's aura had similarly locked onto the two of them as well... These two bewitching women were wearing an extremely small amount of clothes, their gazes were cold, and they didn't seem to have any weapons. However, a chilling light was flashing between their fingers. Clearly, they had poisonous short daggers tucked within, and adding the astonishing speed they had displayed earlier, their strengths should mostly lie in assassinations and instant kills! When facing opponents like them, he definitely couldn't allow them to approach his body!

Huu...

A slight breeze blew past, causing the auras of the three people to slightly sway. In an instant, Yue Ji and Mei Ji leapt at the same time, forming into two brilliant red silhouettes. Two spots of chilling light, as though they were shooting stars in the dark night, shot towards Yun Che. One of them struck straight at Yun Che's throat, while the other pierced straight towards Yun Che's ankle.

Screech!!

The poisonous daggers of the two people brushed past Yun Che's body with lightning speed, completely tearing apart his silhouette. While around them, four figures of Yun Che which possessed the completely same aura suddenly appeared in four different directions. This strange change stunned the two women for a short moment, and in the next instant, flames surged from all over Yun Che's true body. Phoenix wings were spread, and violent energy belonging to the Phoenix's flames poured out like a tsunami...

The moment Yun Che attacked, he used the extremely powerful, and extremely consuming, complete Divine Phoenix Skill —— "Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing"!!

As though an underground volcano had suddenly erupted, flames that filled the air surged upwards into the sky with an incomparably violent charge, instantly illuminating the sky into a crimson red.

=====

Chapter 461 – Explode! The Tyrannical Emperor Awakens (1)

Not only was the strength of the complete Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing immensely strong, it also brought along an impact which immensely overshadowed the past. Although Yueji and Meiji had extremely quick reactions and strong defenses, they were still flung away by this formidable profound skill originating from the True Phoenix God, causing them to lose their balance when they fell and their entire bodies to be engulfed in incomparably hot Phoenix flames.

Yun Che's silhouette flashed, instantly appearing next to Yue Ji with Feng Xue'er in his arms while smashing his sword down.

BANG!!

The profound defense that Yue Ji conjured in a hurry was dearly smashed she borrowed the momentum to roll over, evading into the distance; and at the same time, a bone-chilling murderous aura drifted from Yun Che's rear. He rapidly swung his sword backwards... A chain of explosions could be heard as the three of them were separated far apart. The surrounding atmosphere was extremely chaotic, flooded with a scorching and violent aura.

Yun Che quietly exhaled. If he held his sword with both hands earlier, he was fully confident that he would have been able to severely injure Yue Ji with a single strike in the surprise attack just now. However, not only would handling a heavy sword with only a single hand lead to a massive decrease in its power, the speed of attacking and counterattacking would also take a huge hit. At the same time, it would be extremely taxing on physical strength and time.

Under the impact from the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing and the burning from Phoenix flames before, the short shirts and skirts of Yue Ji and Mei Ji were utterly damaged, and were not even able to cover their bodies. Apart from the killing intent, prudence

and vigilance could now be seen from their eyes. They had originally thought that their combined efforts would be enough to completely suppress Yun Che with ease; they never expected that the moment they started to fight, just an explosion here and a flash there from Yun Che would cost them so much.

They glanced at each other, then did the exact same action.

Riiiiip!!

The utterly ripped clothes of Yue Ji and Mei Ji were torn off as two sets of full-bodied, alluring snow-white bodies with not a single thread presented themselves in front of Yun Che. The iciness and murderous intent in their eyes faded away quickly, replaced with a seductive look which could cause any regular man to be ensnared immediately.

Their actions caused Yun Che to pause for a moment. Feng Xue'er, who was looking at Yue Ji and Mei Ji with vigilance and worry suddenly let out an "Ah" sound and subconsciously said: "Big Brother Yun... you can't look... can't look..."

"They don't even look as good as Xue'er, I can't be bothered to look!" Yun Che answered immediately, but his eyes were firmly staring at their bodies, especially the two pairs of snow peaks which were continuously undulating... Damn it! It was a waste to not look! However, only after saying that did he realize... what he said actually had several meanings.

"Big brother Yun has never even seen how I look without clothes, how would you know... oh... Big brother Yun... You're actually so bad!" Feng Xue'er's cheeks suddenly turned red.

"I... I didn't mean it like that..."

"Uuu..."

The naked Yue Ji and Mei Ji slowly walked towards Yun Che, their originally icy expressions now replaced with a bewitching smile, as if

hinting to Yun Che that he could enjoy their bodies anytime. At this point, Yun Che's expression shook slightly, a sense of vertigo appeared in his mind, even the speed of blood flow in his body increased considerably.

Yun Che concentrated his consciousness, immediately becoming vigilant...

Seductive arts!?

Moreover they actually didn't hesitate to rip off their own clothes to seduce him; these two women were really giving it their all.

A pity... it was used on the wrong person!

Yun Che maintained his position as the look in his eyes became more and more cloudy. Within the cloudiness was infatuation which was growing deeper, allowing Yue Ji and Mei Ji to inch closer, until they were within ten steps. Yun Che suddenly said with a low voice: "Xue'er, close your eyes..."

A strange, deep blue light suddenly blossomed within Yun Che's eyes. Behind him, an azure blue dragon's silhouette appeared, followed by a tyrannical and mighty dragon's roar coming from the heavens that shook the earth. A pair of azure blue eyes as deep as the skies and as luminous as the stars appeared about a meter above Yun Che's head.

Yue Ji and Mei Ji trembled violently. Their bewitching expressions and enchanting smiles suddenly became stiff, thereupon turning into incomparably intense fear; their pupils shuddered rapidly as their entire bodies trembled violently like sieves.

Based on the powerful profound strength of Yue Ji and Mei Ji, they originally wouldn't be in this state under the effects of the Dragon Soul Domain. Even if they were scared out of their wits by seventy percent, they would still have about thirty percent of clarity. However, they were attempting to use seductive arts on Yun Che...

Seductive arts were a kind of mental attack, and Dragon Soul Domain was also a mental attack domain, but how could a mere seductive arts compare to the Dragon Soul Domain? In front of it's immense might, their seductive arts rebounded on them, causing their mental barriers to collapse completely, thereby falling entirely to the suppression of the Dragon God. Their hearts filled with fear, having no mind to resist at all.

Yun Che suddenly rushed forward. Dragon Fault pierced ruthlessly toward Yue Ji's throat; the coarse edge of the sword easily pierced into Yue Ji's body whose profound strength defenses had been decreased by about ninety percent, completely piercing her throat. Then removing and swinging the sword again as Phoenix flames whizzed out, he brought along a scorching heatwave which rushed towards Mei Ji's chest, piercing out through her back... creating a see-through hole about the size of a brain in her chest.

Dragon Soul Domain barely persisted for two breaths, and was quickly retracted by Yun Che... because every breath for which Dragon Soul Domain was activated taxed his mental strength immensely. Yet these two breaths were entirely sufficient for Yun Che. In the instant when the Dragon Soul Domain was extinguished, Yue Ji's and Mei Ji's bodies subsequently fell; a pool of fresh blood quickly accumulated beneath their bodies.

If there was a small chance for some leeway before, then, after killing these two women of Ye Xinghan's... and even the two that he rather doted on, he and Ye Xinghan would become mortal enemies. And Ye Xinghan's current identity was Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master, even the publicly accepted future ruler of a Sacred Ground, so he could be considered a complete mortal enemy of Sun Moon Divine Hall.

He had only just gotten the public's favor in his enmity with Divine Phoenix Sect, but now he had offended Sun Moon Divine Hall!!

What a bitter life!!

In regards to his enmity with Divine Phoenix Sect, he could resist with incomparable toughness; even if the other party took the initiative to chase and kill him surreptitiously, he had absolutely no fear. Moreover, he already had thought of many plans to deal with and counterattack them... however, to provoke Sun Moon Divine Hall...

That was not something to be trifled with!

Furthermore, Ye Xinghan's personality was poisonous and crafty; his entire body emitted a kind of extremely dangerous aura... he was absolutely a dreadful and unscrupulous person!

Yun Che placed Feng Xue'er's coronet onto his chest, not allowing her to see the bloody scene, yet from the sound of the surroundings, she could already sense that Yue Ji and Mei Ji had already died. She opened her eyes, placing her cheeks onto his chest. Feeling that his heartbeat was a little chaotic, she softly said: "Big brother Yun... I... dragged you down..."

"I've said this before, it's not your fault." Yun Che slowed his breathing and said: "Since things have progressed to this point, we should live on with all our might... You don't have to worry about me. If worst comes to worst, after leaving this place, I'll head to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary!"

With his connection to Xia Yuanba, it wouldn't be too difficult if he wanted to enter Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. Being the head of the Four Sacred Grounds, Sun Moon Divine Hall would definitely not dare to provoke Absolute Monarch Sanctuary; he would definitely be safe there.

But the condition was that Xia Yuanba had to remain alive.

With that, Yun Che sighed heavily. However, when he summoned his profound strength, he felt a sense of vertigo in his mind, and almost face-planted into the ground... Although he had only activated Dragon Soul Domain for a short span of two breaths, it had taxed his

consciousness by a considerable amount. He shook his head forcefully; only then could he barely get rid of the dizziness, escaping into the distance.

Bang!!!

A ball of Phoenix flames exploded onto Xia Yuanba's chest. His body flew far away, smashing heavily onto the ground. He groaned and stood back up yet again; however, just as he stood up, he violently knelt on one knee, incapable of standing up for a long time. Blood flowed from his forehead, hands and stray areas all over his body.

"This kid's physique is really not simple, after resisting for so long, he still has not died yet. He's still able to barely stand." Feng Feiyan said as he clicked his tongue.

"But what a pity, to have only practiced Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's core profound art to about thirty percent." Ye Xinghan waved his jade fan, looked towards Xia Yuanba and spoke as if talking about a dead person: "To be able to defend against that last strike was his limit already. It's time to send him on his way, this young master would never have thought that with the two of us cooperating, we would still waste so much time. This young master is already itching to pamper my little Xue'er."

"Heh... die already!"

Feng Feiyan laughed coldly, then growled, violently punching Xia Yuanba's brain with a fist of Phoenix flames.

Xia Yuanba gasped for breath. The look in his eyes slackened, his entire body soaked with sweat and blood; nearly a third of his exterior was a mixture of flesh and blood. Under the combined strength of Feng Feiyan and Ye Xinghan, he forcefully resisted for a quarter of an hour, which could be said to be an unbelievable miracle.

As death encroached, Xia Yuanba lifted his head and Feng Feiyan's fist of Phoenix flames appeared in his pupils. His gaze suddenly became incomparably vicious; roaring loudly, a tyrannical surge of strength surfaced within his scarred and bruised body as he threw a fist towards Feng Feiyan.

Boom!!

The flames exploded, the flow of air cracked, and Xia Yuanba spat out an arrow of blood as his body flew like a kite whose string was cut... Ye Xinghan's face revealed a poisonous and cold smile. Waving the Sun Moon Calamity in his hands, a profound beam of about five feet flew out, cutting Xia Yuanba's neck.

Xia Yuanba flew into the air injured, his consciousness drifting away just as the deadly profound beam approached. His willpower moved his body, doing his best to displace himself midair.

Riiip!!

The profound beam from Sun Moon Calamity pierced through his body... causing his entire left arm to be cleanly cut from his body.

Bang!

Xia Yuanba landed heavily onto the ground. His left arm however, landed tens of feet away. As blood spouted like a fountain from the cut in Xia Yuanba's arm, his entire face twisted; his body twitched and spasmed from the intense pain, yet he did not scream a single bit.

"Tsk tsk tsk, you really are tenacious, tenacious to the point of being pitiful." Ye Xinghan beamed as he saw Xia Yuanba's suffering: "Too bad. In this young master's eyes, your tenaciousness is just laughably stupid. Apart from letting this young master have more fun and letting yourself suffer even more, there really isn't a point."

After losing an arm, the Xia Yuanba who was heavily injured and near death lay paralyzed on the ground with no means to stand up.

Under the immense damage he had taken, his pupils had slackened; he couldn't even see the silhouettes of Feng Feiyan and Ye Xinghan, yet the viciousness and resentment did not lessen by a single bit. As Ye Xinghan spoke, he slowly raised his right hand, then did an action that Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan could not comprehend.

Pssh!!

He heavily chopped himself with his right arm on the left side of his chest that had the longest wound, then fiercely sliced... the wound was ruthlessly torn... to the point where his breastbone clearly be seen, along with his quick beating heart underneath the bone, as well as the heart's profound veins.

"Hm?" Feng Feiyan sneered : "Is he trying to commit suicide?"

"I... will... never... let... you... hurt... Brother-in-law!!"

The immense pain made Xia Yuanba speak every word with immense difficulty and weakness, yet every word was spoken with full conviction and fierceness. When the last word came out, his right hand accumulated what little strength he had left, and he raised his fist, using all of his strength to fiercely smash his own profound veins!

Bang!!

This fist was particularly heavy. To the half-dead Xia Yuanba, it was enough to end his life! When the fist landed at the position of his heart, his whole body shuddered. A lump of fresh blood spurted out from his mouth and beneath his fist, his eyes lost whatever focus they had.

Yet at this point, a golden brilliance radiated from beneath Xia Yuanba's fist. Following his lost of consciousness, Xia Yuanba's fist powerlessly moved away. The wound that he had torn revealed a profound vein which had turned completely golden in color!

=====

Chapter 462 – Explode! The Tyrannical Emperor Awakens (2)

“What’s that?” Feng Feiyan, who was just about to step forward to deal a fatal blow to Xia Yuanba, stopped his feet, and questioned.

Suddenly, the golden light radiating from Xia Yuanba’s chest slightly startled Ye Xinghan. Following after, his expression suddenly changed greatly. Even his eyes which had been narrowed lazily all this while, had completely widened in an instant, and they were even filled immediately with deep fear. “Tyrannical... Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins!!”

“Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins? What does that mean?” Feng Feiyan turned to face Ye Xinghan, and asked skeptically. The legends surrounding the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins only existed in the records kept in the Sacred Grounds. Although Feng Feiyan was the Great Elder of Divine Phoenix Sect, he had never heard of it either.

When he turned to face Ye Xinghan, he had naturally seen the severe change in his expression as well. His heart suddenly skipped a beat, before he hurriedly turned to once again face Xia Yuanba... And at that moment his line of sight landed on Xia Yuanba once again, his pupils fiercely shrank.

Xia Yuanba, who was initially gasping for his final breath and looked as though he was about to lose his life, suddenly stood up slowly at this moment. The golden radiance quickly spread out from his chest, gradually enveloping his entire body, which caused his chest, limbs, and even his hair, to become a blinding golden color! And at the moment this golden color spread to where his left arm was, the radiance suddenly grew intense, and right after, it suddenly stretched... In an instant, the left arm and even the hand which he had initially lost, actually grew out in but a single moment!! It recovered nicely and completely.

“Wh... Wh... What!?” Feng Feiyan’s pair of eyeballs had almost burst

from shock. This was definitely the most shocking, and most unbelievable scene he had ever seen in his entire life.

Not just his severed arm, following the spread of the golden radiance, the injuries on Xia Yuanba's entire body were recovering extremely quickly. In but a few seconds, the hundreds of large and small wounds on his entire body, had all disappeared. He straightened his body, and stared widely with his eyes... His pair of pupils, were shockingly a blinding golden color as well! From his muscles, to his blood, to his hair, and to his pupils... Not a single part of his body wasn't golden!

This abnormal change which he had never seen, nor had he ever heard of before, frightened Feng Feiyan to the extent where it was as though he had seen the descent of the legendary demon god. He fiercely swallowed down a mouthful of saliva, and said with a trembling voice. "Yuh... Young Hall Master? What is going on here? Could this be some sort of unique profound art... from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary?"

However, after he said that, he did not receive a reply from Ye Xinghan. The moment he turned his head, in his shock, he realized that Ye Xinghan who was just by his side a moment earlier, was already several hundreds of meters away. And, he was currently fleeing with astonishing speed... That speed, seemed to have already surpassed the limit a mid-stage Overlord could have! And earlier, while he was shocked by Xia Yuanba's unbelievable change, he actually didn't notice that Ye Xinghan had already fled with all his might.

And the direction he was fleeing to, was definitely not the direction Yun Che and Feng Xue'er had left towards earlier. Rather, he was distancing himself from Xia Yuanba in the complete opposite direction!

Feng Feiyan completely did not understand what had happened to Xia Yuanba's body, nor did he understand the concept of the "Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins" which Ye Xinghan had shouted

out earlier. But even if he was an idiot, he should still understand how terrifying of an existence this person was to actually frighten Ye Xinghan to such an extent. He took a step back, fiercely raised his energy, and was just about to flee with all his might... But following after, his body shuddered, and his feet did not move a single inch.

Because at that moment, he could feel his body suddenly being tightly locked onto by an indescribable large aura. A boundless, overbearing, and extremely heavy pressure, as though tens of thousands of mountains all mashed together, was ruthlessly pressing down onto his body, restraining a mighty level eight Overlord like him to the point where he couldn't even move... He sensed that this colossal power had even completely sealed the surrounding space, sky and earth.

What... is this power!?

Impossible... Impossible! He was clearly at the brink of death! He's clearly a burnt-out candle, a mid-stage Overlord who was beaten till he was half-dead! How could he possess such a powerful aura... How could such a thing happen!?

Endless shock and fear filled Feng Feiyan's soul. No matter how much he crazily circulated the profound energy in his entire body, he was unable to move even the slightest inch... That feeling, was as though he was nailed to a metal frame, a convict who could die at any moment! He could only continue to widen his horrified eyes as he looked Xia Yuanba, whose entire body was golden in color. His pupils would occasionally expand, and occasionally shrink.

The painful expression on Xia Yuanba's face had completely disappeared, and what replaced it was complete calm, to the extent where not a single emotion existed. His pair of eyes were completely golden in color, so pure where the existence of the pupils could not even be seen. Slowly, he raised his right fist...

Hiss!!

Space was brutally torn by a ray of golden light, and Xia Yuanba's golden body, had appeared right before Feng Feiyan... Feng Feiyan's eyes were deadly widened, and countless strands of blood, like cracks, hurriedly filled his pair of eyeballs. Slowly, he hanged his head down, and his sight which had begun to blur, clearly saw a pair of robust golden arms that had completely sunk into his body... His body, which was several times stronger than stainless steel, when faced with his golden arms, was penetrated like beancurd.

"Just... what... kind of... a... monster... are... you..."

These were Feng Feiyan's final words in his life. Xia Yuanba's face was completely indifferent. Before his lips even moved, a low voice had actually spilled out from his throat. "A lowly creature such as you, actually dares to infuriate me... Die!!"

A violent energy exploded from within Feng Feiyan's body, completely wrecking his organs and profound veins in an instant. Right after, with a "boom", Feng Feiyan's entire body directly exploded, scattering flesh and blood which filled the sky; the furthest was blown several hundreds of meters away... Forget a completely intact corpse, not even a complete finger was left behind.

When the blood stained onto Xia Yuanba's golden body, it instantly disappeared, and not even a single trace of blood could be seen on his right arm. He slowly lowered his arms, and his cold gaze looked towards the direction Ye Xinghan fled to. However, he didn't chase after him, and his humongous body fell forward in an upright manner, just like that...

Plop... Xia Yuanba heavily collapsed onto the ground, and the golden radiance on his body had completely disappeared as well. That pressure which even the heavens would have to hold their breaths for, had completely disappeared at the moment he fell as well.

Xia Yuanba's collapsed body did not move an inch, and even the strength to twitch had been completely lost. Only after a long while, did his fingers finally slightly move. His arm moved upwards bit by

bit... This action which could even be said to be extremely easy for a baby, had actually caused him to use several seconds to complete. Finally, his palm had caught onto that piece of jade which was hanging on his neck, then, he used all of his might to shatter it.

Ziing!!

The shattered jade radiated a light glow, and then, a small-scaled profound formation appeared above Xia Yuanba's body. Following after the spiraling of the profound formation, Xia Yuanba's body, along with the profound formation, disappeared from the place in an instant.

The vicinity had quietened down, however, the heavy scent of blood which suffused into the air did not disperse for a long while. In the high skies, a few kilometers above ground, a snow-white figure retracted his gaze, and murmured. "Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins? That sure is incredible... Oh?"

In the next moment after Xia Yuanba disappeared, Ye Xinghan who had flown far away earlier, was returning with extreme speed. Evidently, after the sudden explosive aura Xia Yuanba had, disappeared, he no longer had the need to continue fleeing as well.

Ye Xinghan's speed was as fast as a shooting star, and in a blink of an eye, he had already returned to his former place. His expression looked as though he was still a little shocked and unstable. With a cold gaze, he swept through the surroundings, and what he could see were merely the traces of blood and tattered, torn flesh which filled the ground. And these pieces of flesh still carried a weak presence of the Phoenix's bloodline, proving that Feng Feiyan had already died... He had even died utterly, completely, and absolutely miserably. However, he couldn't determine if Xia Yuanba was among these torn pieces of corpses. Recalling that Xia Yuanba did not hesitate to cause self-infliction to force out the power of the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins earlier, and seeing that his figure could not be seen as well, there was an eighty to ninety percent chance that he had already died. Because forcefully awakening the

Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins' power was suicidal. There was an extremely huge possibility that he would die from self-explosion, and even if he didn't die, it would be impossible for him to possess the strength to flee.

"The Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins stated in legends... actually appeared!" Ye Xinghan's face twitched from fear. If he had not heard of the rumors surrounding the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, and had fled with all his might, then the person dying miserably here might not have been Fei Fengyan, but him.

"And it was no wonder that old man Gu Cang would value this person so greatly... If he didn't die, once he grows up, the position of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary will solidify even more! It's great that he's already dead... If father and the rest knew that I had inadvertently killed Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's hidden trump card, they will definitely reward me extremely well!"

Ye Xinghan muttered to himself. After confirming that Xia Yuanba only carried the possibility of death, he was finally able to completely put his heart at ease. In regards to Feng Feiyan... Although it was a little unfortunate, his value had already been pretty much squeezed out. And, Feng Feiyan had already helped him accomplish his goal, so it no longer mattered if he died!

Ye Xinghan's gaze turned towards the direction Yun Che and Feng Xue'er had fled towards earlier. As though his entire body was a shooting star, he charged over. His speed was at the least five or six times faster than Yun Che as he brought about a violent windstorm behind him.

Phoenix City.

Feng Xichen occasionally raised his head to look at the activated Primordial Profound Ark in the sky, and occasionally walked back and forth. He was completely anxious and filled with worries. Right after

the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was the exploration of the Primordial Profound Ark so Feng Hengkong would have the time to care about his matters. However, he was very clear that after the completion of the exploration of the Primordial Profound Ark, Feng Hengkong would definitely not easily forgive him. And from last night to the afternoon today, he could also sense that the eyes of the other princes and even the regular Phoenix disciples, were all carrying various anomalies.

At this moment, just right in front of him, a profound light suddenly flashed. A small-scaled profound formation appeared in thin air, and within the profound formation, a figure that was especially robust appeared.

"Who goes there!?"

The frustrated Feng Xichen was stunned as he shouted with a sharp voice. However, immediately after, he realized that the eyes of this person who suddenly appeared had his eyes tightly shut. There wasn't even a single movement; his face was extremely pale, and his presence was even more so, incomparably weak. He was basically no different from an actual dead person. He took two steps forward, and was able to recognize the person with a single glance. This was clearly that disciple whom Spiritual Master Gu Cang of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had brought along!

Feng Xichen's earlier shout had caused the two guardians that were protecting outside to charge inside with swift steps. Seeing Xia Yuanba, they could not help but exclaim out. "Is... isn't that the disciple of Spiritual Master Gu Cang? In the morning, he had clearly headed towards the Primordial Profound Ark, so how can he be here? And he seems to have suffered heavy injuries."

Xia Yuanba's aura was frighteningly weak, and he could die at any moment. If Spiritual Master Gu Cang's disciple were to die in Phoenix City, then that matter would definitely be huge. Cold sweat dripped down Feng Xichen's forehead as he anxiously called out. "Hurry! Hurry and carry him to the Medicine Room! Instruct Elder Feng Yu to

definitely save his life, no matter how huge the price is! He is after all, Spiritual Master Gu Cang's closed-door disciple. If he were to die here, when Absolute Monarch Sanctuary comes seeking for blame, you two had best prepare to take on the blame and bury yourselves!!"

"Y... Yes!" The bodies of those two guardians stiffened, before they hurriedly agreed. Cautiously lifting Xia Yuanba, they charged straight towards the Medicine Room.

=====

Chapter 463 – Three-headed Giant Python

Yun Che dashed madly throughout entire journey. Apart from being obstructed for a moment by Yue Ji and Mei Ji, he did not stop at all for two hours. His forehead was drenched with sweat; in his ordinary state, he would not feel exhausted from sprinting for such a short while, but in the past two hours, he had been running madly at full speed. Along with expending a huge amount of profound and physical energy, the utilization of the Dragon Soul Domain from before had caused his consciousness to be exhausted too.

This world was incomparably spacious. The sky was entirely murky, only an endless wasteland was visible without any significant changes in the height of the land, even more so without any forestation to hide in; even slightly taller rocks were rarely seen. Therefore, fleeing forward was Yun Che's only choice.

The consolation was that for the past two hours, there was no one chasing them.

"Be careful, there's a big dangerous fellow up ahead." Jasmine suddenly cautioned.

Yun Che momentarily raised his vigilance. They had met a number of profound beasts throughout the journey, but were all easily gotten rid by him. However, since Jasmine had specially warned him, the profound beast this time around would definitely not be an ordinary one.

Very quickly, a huge black lump appeared within Yun Che's line of sight. It was quietly curled up ahead, seeming like a giant profound beast sleeping soundly, and when Yun Che saw it, it had also detected the presence of life. The originally coiled up body started to unfurl, revealing three gigantic pitch-black heads which were triangular and twice the size of Yun Che's body. Spitting pitch-black venom from its mouth, its tiny eyes emitted a terrifying radiance.

It was actually a Three-headed Giant Python!!

“Ah!!” Just when Yun Che wanted to warn Feng Xue’er to shut her eyes, the startled voice of a young lady came from his arms. With regards to creatures like snakes, even the strongest women would be instinctively afraid, let alone such a huge Three-headed Giant Python.

The aura the Three-headed Giant Python emitted was dark and terrifying, it was as powerful as a high level Emperor profound beast! It’s six pairs of eyes locked onto Yun Che; with a hiss, the middle head rushed over like black colored lightning. Opening its giant abyss-like pitch-black mouth, it’s poisonous teeth like poisonous blades from hell would cause one to feel terrified.

Yun Che quickly protected Feng Xue’er with his chest, not allowing her to see the horrifying scene. With a flash, he instantly appeared thirty meters ahead as if stepping across space, causing the giant python’s attack to miss completely. Throughout the journey, he would simply use all his might to avoid and shake off any profound beasts he encountered, never fighting face to face. This was because it would cost him and Feng Xue’er precious time to flee; this giant python was no different.

Just as Yun Che dodged the giant python’s attack and was about to use his full power to shake it off, a hissing sound came from his side... the second head of the giant python also attacked at this point, its speed twice as fast as the first head. Yun Che had just activated the Star God’s Broken Shadow and would not be able to move for an extremely short amount of time. Based on his current speed, even if he reached his limits, it would still be impossible for him to dodge the giant python’s attack. His face fell as he rapidly turned his body and grabbed Dragon Fault, ruthlessly smashing the giant python on its terrifying mouth.

A strange and extremely awful sound could be heard. The giant python’s second head was smashed, its entire body was stirring chaotically, yet this Three-headed Giant Python’s strength was more

than what Yun Che had expected. Under a huge amount of force, he was flung far away. Ferociously slamming into the ground, his legs slid across the ground for more than sixty meters before stopping.

"Xue'er, are you alright..."

Just as Yun Che wanted to check on whether Feng Xue'er was hurt, a dangerous aura approached yet again. The second head had just been smashed, yet the first and third heads immediately came biting and tearing, not giving Yun Che any time to breathe at all.

Having just witnessed this giant python's terrifying speed and strength, Yun Che retreated rapidly. It was basically impossible for him to single-handedly defend against attacks from two python heads at the same time. He immediately made a decision; pushing his palm upwards, he tossed Feng Xue'er high into the sky in a breath. Grabbing Dragon Fault with both hands, he activated Burning Heart and an Overlord's Fury met the two python heads.

Bang!!!

Under the bombardment of Yun Che's full strength, the two python heads let out painful hisses at the same time, and were smashed far away. Yun Che turned his body, then leaped into the air, gently encircling the falling Feng Xue'er back into his embrace... It was just that since he was conscious and vigilant about the Three-headed Giant Python at all times, the position of his hand shift slightly when receiving Feng Xue'er; his palm was covered by a towering and silky soft ball.

The feeling in his hand was a soft and somewhat tender, yet still developing plumpness. It just so happened that it could be completely grabbed by Yun Che's palm. Though there was a layer of Phoenix clothes, the inconceivably soft feeling permeated through his entire palm, causing his entire body to go numb for a little while.

"Nnn..." The young lady in his embrace let out a whimper. All of a sudden, Yun Che also realized what his hand had touched. Just as he

wanted to hurriedly move away his hand, a huge black shadow bringing along a violent storm swept across from behind... it was astonishingly the tail of the Three-headed Giant Python!

Three python heads and a tail could take action independently. Facing these three headed giant python, Yun Che completely felt as if he was facing four different enemies. Moreover, it was four enemies whose speed completely surpassed his; he simply had no opportunity to catch a breath. Yun Che's eyes focused; without caring about anything else, he suddenly gripped Feng Xue'er tightly. His palm also subconsciously grabbed harder too... Immediately, the five fingers of his right hand had sunk into a ball of soft and tender silkiness.

"Ah..."

Falling Moon Sinking Star!!

The young lady's startled cry and the violent crash both sounded out at the same time, the giant python tail was smashed away by Dragon Fault. Yun Che was also swept away, staggering for more than ten steps after landing, almost falling face first on the ground.

"Big brother Yun... your... hand..." Feng Xue'er's whimpering was as soft as a mosquito. Her powerless body struggled slightly. Yun Che hurriedly put his arm down and grabbed her waist: "Xue'er, I didn't do it on purpose..."

The Three-headed Giant Python did not give Yun Che any time whatsoever. The giant python who was continuously attacked was now deeply enraged. Its gigantic body was now fully extended. Spanning over more than thirty meters, the three giant python heads' demonic fangs simultaneously descended from the sky, biting at Yun Che.

Yun Che activated Star God's Broken Shadow, and abruptly dodging backwards. Then, repeating the moves from before, he threw Feng Xue'er's lovely body up into the air again, and grabbed Dragon Fault

with both hands as the look in his eyes became extremely dark.

This giant python was a huge problem. If it was not thoroughly repelled, it would be virtually impossible to get rid of!

“Purgatory!!”

Yun Che’s eyes instantly glowed red, the aura from his entire body suddenly became as violent as lava.

“Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!!”

Yun Che’s entire body ignited in flames. He suddenly rushed upwards and pierced the three python heads in an instant, ruthlessly ramming it in its body.

Boom!!

Following the explosion from the wave of flames, the Three-headed Python let out an incomparably tragic screech. As if he had been knocked flying by a hurricane, Yun Che was flipped back to his original spot by the sound waves. A blue light flashed behind him as the silhouette of the Sky Wolf roared toward the sky.

Sky Wolf Slash!!

Following Dragon Fault’s violent brandishing, the silhouette of a Sky Wolf shot out, ripping across the air, viciously charging at the body of the Three-headed Python, causing its giant body to rotate rapidly in the air like a gyroscope, as pitch-black snake blood sprinkled the sky.

After expending energy on the immensely taxing Purgatory and using two huge moves consecutively, Yun Che’s body similarly experienced a large amount of stress. After utilizing the Sky Wolf Slash, he staggered backwards from the recoil, deviating from the position which he predicted to land. At this point, Feng Xue’er fell from the sky. He clumsily balanced himself, leaped upwards to catch her mid fall and embraced her firmly. Then, he carried her, protecting her perfectly.

"Big brother Yun... your hand..."

Feng Xue'er's voice was soft and delicate. In addition, there was a vague sobbing sound, Yun Che grabbed her delicate waist firmly with one hand, the other hand was grabbing onto a ball of silkiness... He looked down and his pupils jumped violently, because that hand of his had slipped into Feng Xue'er's Phoenix clothing, and was gripped tightly by her snowy legs, and his palm, was plastered onto her forbidden area.

"~ ! # ¥ %..." Yun Che removed his hand like lightning. No matter how quick-witted he was, he couldn't help but to be at a loss as said in a flurry: "I'm sorry... Xue'er, I didn't do that on purpose... definitely not on purpose..."

Previously, he had firmly grabbed onto her chest. Now... even Yun Che himself could not really believe that none of that was not on purpose.

"I know..." Feng Xue'er buried her entire snowy face into Yun Che's chest. A cloud of red had already spread from her ears to her neck: "But Big brother Yun... is really bad..."

"..." After hearing that Feng Xue'er was not angry, Yun Che inwardly sighed a breath of relief. As he carried Feng Xue'er again, the exceptional feeling was still lingering on his palm, unwilling to scatter, causing his heart to ripple unceasingly.

In the distance, the giant python which was smashed away by Yun Che had finally calmed down and did not continue attacking Yun Che. Its six sinister looking eyes glanced at Yun Che but its humongous body retreated. Fleeing with astonishing speed, it quickly disappeared from Yun Che's line of sight.

"You're in trouble."

As the giant python escaped, Yun Che was just starting to relax when an overcast voice sounded out in Yun Che's mind. He paused for a

moment. Just when he wanted to question Jasmine, he suddenly became somewhat aware and rapidly turned around.

He had a vague feeling that an incomparably strong and dangerous aura was heading towards their direction with extremely quick speed. Gradually, within his line of sight... a blurry white dot appeared. Furthermore, it became bigger and bigger with incomparably astonishing speed, coming closer and closer.

"Ye Xinghan!!"

The look on Yun Che's face changed abruptly as he bit his teeth together... he had still caught up in the end! He clenched his fists. Then, with his maximum speed, he fled forward quickly.

"You can't outrun him." Jasmine said faintly: "You noticed him, which means that he has certainly noticed you. This area is just a piece of empty land. Based on your speed, it would be impossible to outrun him... Your best choice now would be to use the jade stone that Xia Yuanba gave you to leave this place immediately, or else, you will inevitably die!"

"Have you ever seen me abandon a lady to escape!" Yun Che clenched his teeth and said.

"..."

"This is not even mentioning that Xue'er had saved my life before... even if she didn't save me before, I won't allow her to be harmed by anyone!"

"Hmph." Jasmine's voice was full of disdain: "There should be a limit even if you want to play hero. Ye Xinghan is a mid-stage Overlord. Do you think that even if you put your life on the line, you'll be able to save her? You are clearly sending yourself to die!"

"I still have to try!"

"..."

=====

Chapter 464 – Song of the Flower Burial

Yun Che's speed was fast. However, compared to Ye Xinghan's speed, he was still lacking simply far too much. The distance between them was quickly closing. In a few tens of breaths, it had already closed to three hundred meters. Yun Che tightened his grip on Feng Xue'er as he gritted his teeth. Thoughts spiraled anxiously in his mind as he racked his brains for a way to escape. And at this moment, he suddenly sensed that presence, which had locked onto him, had been severed in an instant, and even the sense of danger had also dissipated by half.

Yun Che hurriedly turned his head around, only to shockingly find a snow-white floating figure slowly descending from the sky, blocking Ye Xinghan's front. A powerful aura had also forcefully sealed his presence and the path in front of him.

That's... Ji Qianrou!?

Yun Che's heart instantly felt much calmer than before. He took a huge breath, and once again accelerated, as he charged straight forward.

"Yo, Little Hanhan. Where are you going in such a rush? Incidentally, I'm bored and have nothing to do. Do you want my help?" Ji Qianrou twirled his finger, blinked his blossom eyes, and looked at Ye Xinghan smilingly. The formless aura released from his body, however, had completely sealed Ye Xinghan's path, and he was no longer able to take even a single step forward.

The moment he saw Ji Qianrou appear, Ye Xinghan sensed trouble. Given Ji Qianrou's personality, it was definitely impossible for him to not harbor any motives. Adding that he had appeared at such a coincidental timing, it was very possible that he might have peeped on everything that had happened from the shadows. Ye Xinghan said with a sunken face. "Ji Qianrou, move away this instant. Do not ruin my happy moment."

"Aiyo, Little Hanhan is so fierce." Ji Qianrou posed a wronged and frightened look, however, immediately after, his peach blossom face once again bloomed all so brilliantly. "But, Little Hanhan's angry look sure is really cute, and I can't help but want to stroke it... Little Hanhan, reach out your face over here, and let me have a good stroke."

"You..." Ye Xinghan's body trembled, and he couldn't help but take a step back. Right after, gnashing his teeth, he said. "Ji Qianrou. I had long sensed that someone had been watching from somewhere. As expected, it was you. We are both people from the Sacred Grounds, so there's no need for nonsense! You should know who the person I was chasing after, so hurry up and move. I, Ye Xinghan, shall owe you one! Otherwise... Hmph! You and Divine Phoenix Sect do not have any form of relations either. It's not worthwhile for you to become my mortal enemy for a sect that's soon to collapse!"

"Divine Phoenix Sect?" Ji Qianrou's eyes turned, and then, he laughed out femininely. "You're referring to that little girl from Divine Phoenix Sect? That little girl is really adorable, but in regards to her life and death, it's not related to me in the slightest. I simply felt that it was fun to see you and Little Cheche playing cat and mice, so I couldn't help but hop in, and slightly increase the difficulty of this game of cat and mice. It will be much more fun, you know~!"

"Yun Che?" Ye Xinghan frowned, and was filled with doubts. The reason why this Ji Qianrou in front of him had forcefully stopped him all of a sudden, was not because of Feng Xue'er, but Yun Che.

Although Ye Xinghan possessed an Tyrant Profound weapon, he was still definitely not Ji Qianrou's match. If Ji Qianrou wanted to trap him, it would be impossible for even him to escape from his grasp. He said with a solemn voice. "What benefits did that Yun Che give you? The mighty Jade-faced Demon Monarch is actually working for a Blue Wind brat who's less than twenty years old! This sure is laughable."

"Working for? Little Hanhan, you're wrong about this-o." Ji Qianrou

twirled his finger about. "I have already said that I simply wished to participate in this game between Little Hanhan and Little Cheche. There's still twenty hours till this realm closes. If the game ends so quickly, then we won't be able to play in the next few hours. That's so uninteresting, you know. Huu—"

Ji Qianrou raised his right hand, and unknowingly since when, a glamorous red petal was clipped between his snow-white fingers. With a slight movement of his fingers, suddenly, as though that petal was raised by a light breeze, it gently floated towards Ye Xinghan. When its distance was no more than three meters away from Ye Xinghan, its speed suddenly increased, and in an instant, it flew like a bullet, drawing a red line in the air which did not dissipate for a long time.

Ye Xinghan slightly moved his head, and that petal seemed to have flown right past his throat. That cold intent which lasted a single moment, had even caused his heart to suddenly stop. With all his might, he maintained the calm on his face, and said with a dark voice. "You wish to kill me?"

"Aiya, Little Hanhan's words are scary. How could I bear to kill Little Hanhan?" With an anxious face, Ji Qianrou shook his head to deny it... He definitely possessed the strength to kill Ye Xinghan, and in this realm, he could even kill without leaving a single trace. However, Ji Qianrou knew very clearly that Ye Xinghan's body definitely carried the soul imprint personally left by Ye Meixie, Heavenly Monarch of Sun Moon Divine Hall. The moment Ye Xinghan dies, the memories and the scenes he had seen during a short period of time before his death, would be instantly sent to Ye Meixie's soul, allowing him to know who had killed Ye Xinghan.

Although Ji Qianrou was arrogant, he was not that wild to the extent of incurring the Heavenly Monarch's killing intent. And Ye Xinghan's death, would not result merely to a personal feud, but rather, a feud between the entire Sun Moon Divine Hall and Supreme Ocean Palace.

"But, if Little Hanhan isn't obedient, as a senior, teaching you a small lesson is something I should do. Don't you think so too, Little Hanhan~?" Ji Qianrou said smilingly.

Ye Xinghan tightened his fists, and his lungs were seemingly about to explode from anger. His prey was just right in front of him earlier; he could've immediately obtained Feng Xue'er's body and bloodline... Feng Xue'er's bloodline especially, was an immensely huge support that could aid him in becoming the future ruler of the continent, it was something that he had to obtain no matter what. Yet, this Ji Qianrou... just had to pop out at this moment!

"Ji Qianrou, I usually respect you as a senior, so I have always been polite with you. I gave you face... So you best give me yours!" After confirming it was impossible for Ji Qianrou to kill him, he Xinghan's tone had instantly become incomparably firm under his anxiousness, as he wanted to use his identity and might as one of the young masters of the Sacred Grounds to suppress him.

"Aiyoyo..." Though Ji Qianrou still carried that smiling look, how could he possibly be frightened by it? "You know, this perfect face that I have is the most important thing in my life, so it's something I must have. But, as for Little Hanhan's stinky face... I don't want it at all."

"You..."

Ye Xinghan had only managed to utter that one word, when suddenly, in a blink of an eye, he acted. Two profound lights shone, attacking straight towards Ji Qianrou.

"Sun Moon Cage!!"

The moment Ye Xinghan acted, he had used Sun Moon Divine Hall's strongest sealing profound art. Naturally, he wanted to take the opportunity of when Ji Qianrou had yet to put up any defenses to forcefully seal his movements.

Facing Ye Xinghan's sudden attack, Ji Qianrou's expression did not

change. Even that elegant curve of his lips did not have the slightest of movement. Only his two fingers had gently twirled, and two red petals gently floated towards the left and right.

Ping! Ping!

When the Sun Moon profound light which carried an immensely huge sealing force made contact with the two petals, they immediately popped like soap bubbles, and were scattered to the two sides while bringing out incomparably strong surging tornados. At the center of the two tornadoes however, not even Ji Qianrou's hair or the corners of his clothes fluttered. He stretched his five fingers, and on every finger, different-colored glows flashed, which looked especially beautiful. His peach blossom eyes closed, and he said with a tender smile. "As I thought, Little Hanhan isn't obedient. Then I have no choice to teach you a small lesson, you know~"

"Ji Qianrou, don't think I'm afraid of you! I really want to see what you can do to me today!"

Ye Xinghan's eyes were dark and ruthless. Sun Moon Calamity was spread open in his hands, and the profound aura surrounding his body burst out, as incomparably strong profound energy poured out like a tsunami.

"Yin Yang Evanescence! ...Die!!"

Two profound lights, one black and one white, were released from Sun Moon Calamity. They intersected in midair, and the space where they passed through distorted slightly as they struck towards Ji Qianrou.

Facing this terrifying killing move, Ji Qianrou still carried a calm demeanor. He gently twisted his wrist, and his five fingers twirled. The colorful glows on the fingertips intersected one another, creating a spectacle with varied colors. "Little Hanhan, you have to greatly enjoy this Song—of the—Flower Burial... alright?"

Following after the last word falling from his lips, the colorful glows above all five of Ji Qianrou's fingers radiated at the same time. In an instant, yellow, red, pink, green, blue, white, brown... petals of various colors fluttered out, as though an incomparably beautiful rain of rainbow-colored flowers had suddenly begun to fall.

The Yin Yang energy which exploded forth charged into the rain of petals that filled the sky, and then, it actually became smaller and smaller... When it was still several meters away from Ji Qianrou, it had already disappeared completely.

It disappeared completely without a trace, without a single sound.

"Wh... What!?"

Ye Xinghan had heard many tales of how terrifying Ji Qianrou was. However, he had never exchanged blows with him, so he had definitely never expected that his petals would be terrifying to such a degree! And at this moment, the wind which was suffused with the dense aroma of flowers, flew towards Ye Xinghan whilst carrying a huge amount of flower petals. Ye Xinghan's pupils shrank, and he instinctively retreated his steps. However, when he had only taken a single step back, an intense tearing force was released from his front...To be more exact, it was coming from every single petal! The power behind these tearing forces, had actually caused him to feel basically powerless. He simply stared with widened eyes as one petal after another made contact with his own body.

The first flower petal landed on his shoulder... That was clearly a flower petal, yet, at that very moment, he basically felt a mountain pressing down on his shoulder, causing his body which was flying in the air to sink. And immediately after, the second, third, fourth, fifth... More and more flower petals descended onto his body. With each additional petal, Ye Xinghan's body would be pressed down even more. After a few dozen petals, he couldn't even float in the air any longer as he fiercely fell from the sky.

And even after landing on the ground, that immense suppressive

force still did not allow him to stand straight, as it forcefully pushed him into his knees... In the end, his entire upper body was tightly pressed onto the cold, hard ground, and he could no longer even raise his head.

"Ji... Qian... Rou!! Ye Xinghan's head was fixed to the ground. With a hoarse voice, he roared out. "I will definitely not forgive you. If there comes a day you land in my hands, I..."

A flower petal immediately stuck onto Ye Xinghan's lips, preventing him from making another sound. Ji Qianrou shook his head, and said compassionately. "Youths, after all, become rash too easily. In times like this, you actually still dare to quarrel with me. Aren't you afraid that once I get angry, I might accidentally slice off your head... When a head is sliced off, the throat will gush out blood enough to fill the sky... Oh... Now that's the most beautiful, the most intoxicating scene in the human realm."

The flower petals continued to fall, gradually piling up the ground. At the center of it, was a stack of petals which was not exactly too tall. Within the stack of petals, was Ye Xinghan, who was completely buried within, where not even a single corner of his clothes was exposed out.

Ji Qianrou's body gently rose to the sky, as he lightly muttered to himself. "It always feels the worst to owe someone a favor. But now I have finally managed to return it. I don't know how long Little Hanhan will be buried either... Huu. If Little Cheche still ends up being captured by Little Hanhan, then I can no longer be blamed for it, hmph. Hehehehe..."

=====

Chapter 465 – Sky Reaching Ancient Fortress

Ji Qianrou appeared and intentionally stopped Ye Xinghan. To Yun Che, this was an unexpected surprise.

Ji Qianrou's speech and actions all exuded a demonic aura, but his conceit was not only just written on his face, it was imprinted within his bones — This was the impression Ji Qianrou left for Yun Che.

The day before, Yun Che had went to look for Ji Qianrou to strike a conversation and helped him cure the toad poison that has been bothering him for years. Partly, it was in order to thank him for speaking on his behalf at the arena, but even more so, it was so that he would owe him a favor... Because to such a self conceited and arrogant person, when he owed a favor, it had be repaid no matter what.

He didn't expect that, he would receive Ji Qianrou's repayment so soon.

However, he knew that Ji Qianrou would not kill Ye Xinghan, and how long he was able to block him was also an uncertainty. Therefore, Yun Che didn't relax one bit as he carried Feng Xue'er and sprinted with all his might, leaving behind a trail of sweat.

Time flowed past quickly. In this barren, empty, yet mysterious and abnormal world, even the flow of time would cause one's senses to be fuzzy. Yun Che started to feel exhausted; he could no longer tell how long he had been running. It could have been seven to eight hours, or maybe fifteen to sixteen hours. His speed started to slow down before he finally collapsed to a stop and sat on the floor, breathing deeply.

During his previous life in the Azure Cloud Continent, frequently having to escape was already a norm. However, this was the first time in his two lives that he had felt such immense pressure and danger. Because this place was simply too barren. All skills related to

hiding, disguising and even anti-tracking abilities were all useless. Otherwise, if this place had been mountainous or was a forested area, even if he were carrying Feng Xue'er, it would not take too much effort for him to shake off Ye Xinghan. Last time, Burning Heaven Clan sent eight elders whose strength and speed largely outclassed him, but he had still tricked them in circles.

"Big brother Yun... You're sweating a lot..." Feng Xue'er said with her dimly lit eyes.

Yun Che wiped his forehead with his hand and laughed: "To a man, sweating this much is nothing at all. I can only blame myself for not being strong enough and running out of strength so quickly."

"That's not true... Big brother Yun is awesome... More awesome than anyone else..." Feng Xue'er gently said: "Are we... safe now?"

"No idea, but we're probably safe." Yun Che consoled.

"Look in front!" Jasmine suddenly said.

Yun Che's concentrated at once and rapidly looked up before becoming stunned.

In front of him, the barren empty land had disappeared and a dark blue wall stood tall there. It was so tall that it blocked the view of the sky and so wide that the ends could not be seen. With Yun Che eyesight, he couldn't see its boundaries, whether horizontally or vertically.

Directly in front of Yun Che, the bluish black wall had an opened stone door. The stone door was three hundred meters tall and three hundred meters wide. Everywhere else was filled with many stone windows that were tens of meters tall and wide. Between the windows was just a stretch of grey, it was impossible to tell what was inside.

This is...

Yun Che looked up and his mind went into a trance for some time. In regards to such a massive structure where the borders could not be seen, he should have clearly seen it from hundred of miles away. Furthermore, this place was so barren that even if the infrastructure was a hundred times smaller, it would no doubt be exceptionally out of place and spotted immediately.

However, he had never seen it at all when he was sprinting over. From his vision, this was undoubtedly a barren land previously.

It seemed as though this massive structure had appeared out of thin air!

"From the looks of it, it probably is an ancient massive fortress!" Jasmine carefully said: "Its aura is extremely old and it should be a building of the Primordial Era. It might be something that existed along with the Primordial Profound Ark and not something built in later."

"Why didn't I see it previously?" Yun Che asked in surprise: "Jasmine, when did you know it was there?"

"Just now." Jasmine replied.

"Just now?" Yun Che was in shock.

"You don't need to be shocked," Jasmine calmly said: "Even though this fortress is extremely old, the strength of the profound formation on its surface has not completely disappeared. The entire fortress is being covered by a massive primordial protective profound formation. Not only can the primordial protective profound formation protect the fortress from being damaged by nature, it also possesses immense hiding abilities! Though the fortress is massive, unless one comes within three hundred meters of it, one would not be able to detect its existence. Furthermore..."

Jasmine hesitated for a while before continuing: "This primordial profound formation also seem to possess the spatial powers. If my

guess is correct, this fortress is likely able to move on its own!"

A fortress that could move on its own?

This already sounded too fantastical.

"Xue'er, according to the records of the Primordial Profound Ark by your sect, were there any mention of this fortress?" Yun Che asked Feng Xue'er, who was beside him.

Feng Xue'er shook her head gently: "I have never heard my father mentioning it, so probably not."

The whole fortress was bluish black and the design was simple but old. Also, it seemed to give off a mysterious and heavy atmosphere. Yun Che looked at it for sometime and his strength had only seemed to recover a little as he asked: "Jasmine, how big is this fortress?"

"It's best you don't try to go around it." Jasmine replied calmly: "Its massiveness is something beyond your imagination. Even I cannot detect where its boundaries are. If you want to go around it before this world closes, it is simply impossible."

"That big?!!" Yun Che said in shock.

"You don't want to go in and look around?" Jasmine calmly said: "This is an structure within the Primordial Profound Ark; even I'm interested in it. All these years, the treasures those people wanted to find from the Primordial Era might be in here."

Yun Che stood up, and after confirming there was no unusual aura from behind, he lifted his head halfway and walked forward slowly.

Soon, he arrived in front of the fortress doors. At this time, Yun Che was only a few steps from the door and the massive door was completely opened. However, he could still only see a greyish patch, unable to clearly see the inside. He stopped as he held his breath and tried to scout what was beyond the door for a moment before finally stepping in.

It was like he had stepped from one world into another. The light, ambiance, aura, space, even his sight and hearing sensitivity all underwent massive changes. In front of him, was a massive and empty hall. Numerous extremely tall stone pillars stood within the hall. The stone tiles on its base, the walls surrounding it, the top and the enumerated stone pillars were all the same bluish black color, and also emitted an antique smell and aura.

Yun Che turned around. His eyes landed onto the entrance which he had just passed through. It was now a greyish patch like before and he could not see the outside anymore. He thought for a while, before hastily retreating.

The surrounding world changed drastically yet again and Yun Che once again returned to the barren land in which the fortress previously stood. Below his feet was the obvious footprint that he intentionally left behind earlier, proof that this was where he stood earlier.

After confirming that he could exit without obstacle upon entering, Yun Che was relieved and once again entered the fortress.

The hall was massive; even bigger than the ranking tournament's stadium Yun Che was in the previous day. Yun Che's eyes swept across the surroundings as he slowly proceeded. The sounds of his footsteps and his intentionally suppressed breathing was exceptionally clear within this massive empty hall.

What exactly is this place?

Yun Che walked for a very long time before he finally saw the end of the hall. On the walls surrounding it, there was a stone door every sixty meters. Some of the doors were open and some closed. Behind the open doors were paths that lead to unknown destinations. At the end of the hall was a huge, round stone stage. The stage was thirty meters tall and three hundred meters wide.

On the right of the stage were very tall stone stairs that led to the

second level of the fortress.

"Jasmine, did you discover anything?" Yun Che stopped and asked.

"Actually, I don't know anything either, but I can confirm that there is no aura from any living things here, nor is there any aura left behind from anyone, other than you, who had just come in. This, is most likely a long forgotten primordial ground! You should take a look around. You might find some unusual discoveries. If you are able to obtain an artifact from the Primordial Era, even if it is the lowest grade, it would undoubtedly be a huge treasure."

Yun Che nodded. After hesitating for a while, he walked towards the big stone stairs and went up. He didn't know how many levels were there; even Jasmine was unable to detect just how many levels there were to this fortress, hence, he didn't even need to try to guess. Even if he found out that there were thousands or tens of thousands of levels, Yun Che would not be shocked.

On the stone stairs, Yun Che slowly ascended and looked downwards at the same time. From the top, he observed the massive hall on the first level. Just as he looked on top of the round stage, he concentrated and stopped ascending.

Because at the time, he seemed to feel a red glow flash past his eyes.

It was exceptionally quiet and was still a field of bluish black. Therefore, even though the red glow was extremely weak, it seemed striking and out of the ordinary. Yun Che didn't even think as he hugged Feng Xue'er and jumped down from the stone stairs, steadily landing above the stage as he fixated on the position where the red glow was at.

"What did you find?"

"...I'm still not sure."

Yun Che walked forward as he slowly reached the end of the stage.

Then, the weak red glow seemed to flash pass his eyes again, which caused him to hastily stop moving. His eyes firmly fixated on the crack between two bluish black rocks that were on the stone stage.

Yun Che knelt that as he looked closely and indeed, when he focused between the two bluish black rocks, at the narrow crack that was difficult to make out with the human eye, a faintly blinking red glow shot out.

There's something below here!

Jasmine had said that this was the place left behind from the Primordial Era and was definitely extremely old. But the thing below was still emitting a light. This must be from an unusual artifact that had been left behind.

If it really was some extraordinary treasure, the Sky Poison Pearl should have detected it. Why did the Sky Poison Pearl have absolutely no reaction?

Yun Che stretched out his hand and intensely smashed this crack. A "bang" instantly sounded as his hand bounced back. He felt pain from his skin and bones, yet the two bluish black rocks were perfectly fine, not even damaged in the slightest.

"You want to break it? With your strength, this is definitely not possible! Xia Yuanba is a mid-stage Overlord and he's still not able to break an ordinary rock from the outside. The rocks within this fortress are much stronger than the rocks outside. Even if you were to attack it at full strength for tens of years, it would not be damaged in the slightest." Jasmine said ruthlessly.

=====

Chapter 466 – Mysterious Voice

There was definitely something special hidden under this stage, or, it might contain another space. However, just as Jasmine had said, with his strength, breaking this stage apart was basically an impossible task.

Yun Che searched the vicinity, and did not find anything similar to a mechanism switch either. Hence, he could only give up, and once again, walk up the stone stairs.

The stone stairs were long, and even after Yun Che had walked for a very long time, he had only walked half of it.

“Who... are... you...”

Yun Che’s steps suddenly stopped, and he hurriedly turned his head to look at his surroundings. “Who is it? Who’s speaking!?”

“Ah... Big Brother Yun, what’s wrong?” Feng Xue’er, who had been quietly nestling in his embrace was given a huge fright, and she asked a little anxiously.

Yun Che’s gaze swept his surroundings as he poured his concentration into his ears. He softly asked. “Xue’er, did you hear a voice just now?”

“Just now?” Feng Xue’er shook her head, confused.

Just now, Yun Che had clearly heard an incomparably soft and faint voice. That voice was very weak, and seemed to a woman’s voice. Yet, it was especially ethereal as well, causing him to be unable to clearly distinguish where the voice had come from. Or could it be... his imagination?

“Jasmine, that voice just now. Did you hear it?” Yun Che asked with a frown.

"I didn't hear anything at all." Jasmine replied. "What did you hear?"

"..." Even Jasmine did not hear it. Yun Che couldn't help but suspect that what he heard earlier was just an illusory voice. He focused his mind, quietly stood at his current spot, and his eyes swept around the vicinity for a long time, yet, he could no longer hear any voice.

Yun Che continued to raise his feet, and walk up the stairs. After a long time, he finally arrived at the second floor of the fortress.

Bluish black walls, bluish black floors and bluish black ceilings. Everything was no different from the first floor. Yun Che did not continue to head up, and instead, walked straight towards an open stone door.

Behind the stone door, was unexpectedly a simple and neat place which looked similar to a courtyard. Inside, there were stone tables, stone stools, and similar-looking bluish black earthen jars, where most of them were already broken. Behind the courtyard, there were seven to eight rooms that were regularly distributed. Yun Che walked into the courtyard, stood at a stone door of one of the rooms, and tried to push it with his hands.

Suddenly, on the right side of the stone door, a small-scaled profound formation the size of a palm appeared with a flash. Right after, the profound formation turned, and the stone door slowly opened on its own.

"All the doors here should have been set with profound formations such as this one, which can be conveniently opened and locked. But, the profound energy within these small-scaled profound formations are already very weak, and even you will be able to easily destroy them. However, it's already extremely rare for them to be able to exist since the Primordial Era. The strength of those who set these profound formations are definitely beyond ordinary." Jasmine said sternly.

"From the looks of it, this place seems to be for residential use." Yun

Che walked into the stone room. Inside, there was a stone table, two stone stools, a cabinet-like stone frame, and a stone bed that was adequately spacious and large. The arrangements of the other rooms should be more or less the same as well. With how huge this fortress was, if it was arranged for residential use, most probably, it would be possible for the entire population of the Blue Wind Empire to live in.

Yun Che turned around, and realized that there was a small-scaled profound formation that occasionally flashed gently at the back of the stone door. Its position, was in exactly the same position as the profound formation that appeared when Yun Che pushed open the door. It should be the same profound formation. However, it could only be seen from the inside, and could only be seen on the outside when the stone door was touched.

"Try using your profound energy to touch this profound formation." Jasmine suddenly said.

Following her instructions, Yun Che reached out his hand, and struck towards the profound formation with profound energy that was neither strong nor weak. In an instant, with a bang, the door which was initially opened, suddenly closed extremely quickly.

"As I thought." Jasmine said. "By touching this profound formation from the inside, it's able to completely lock the stone door, which can only be opened from the inside, and it's impossible to open from the outside. It is really suitable for self-protection. During the Primordial Era, various devils and demonic beasts crossed these lands, and these basic self-protection measures should be really common. However, if the profound formation is destroyed from the outside by others, the people inside would be completely sealed instead."

"Xue'er, let's rest here for a while."

Yun Che walked to the side of that stone bed, and then sat down while leaning against the wall. The moment he relaxed his mind, the sense of fatigue assaulted over like a flood of water. He didn't

release Feng Xue'er; instead, he changed his posture while still holding her in his embrace... He was completely able to pull out a blanket from the Sky Poison Pearl and set it on the stone bed, and then have Feng Xue'er lay on it. However, evidently, he couldn't bear to do it. Because the sensation of embracing Princess Snow like this was enough to have any man to indulge himself to the point where he was unwilling to let go.

"Who... are... you..."

Yun Che, who had only just sat down, slightly shook as he instantly lifted his head. If there was a possibility that the first time was just his imagination or an illusory voice, then this time, Yun Che definitely would not believe that it was his imagination! He had heard that voice, with absolute clarity... It was the same and exact voice as earlier.

"Who are you? Who's talking to me?" Yun Che heightened his concentration, and shouted out loud. In this towering fortress, which suddenly appeared within the Primordial Profound Ark, a relic left from the Primordial Era in which Jasmine was absolutely sure that there wasn't a single existing living being left, how could there be a woman's voice?

"You heard a voice again?" Jasmine asked in surprise.

Since Jasmine had asked in such a manner, it naturally meant that she still did not hear the voice this time. Which also meant... that only Yun Che was able to hear that voice. That voice, was also only being sent to Yun Che alone.

Yun Che once again kept quiet for a long while. however, he no longer heard that voice again. With sunken brows, he said. "There's definitely someone in this ancient fortress! She should be really far away from me, but she knows of my existence."

"If it's not your imagination, then it can only be a residual soul." Jasmine said slowly.

"Residual soul?"

Jasmine's voice was very calm, as though she was long used to things like "residual souls". "And it should be an extremely weak residual soul, otherwise, she wouldn't be having such difficulties sending out her soul voice consecutively. There's no need for you to look for her. Since she didn't hesitate to consume her weakened soul energy to converse with you, it means that she seems to be interested in you, and she will once again take the initiative to converse with you. The reason why you're unable to receive a reply, should be due to her soul energy, which has been weakened to the point where she's only able to voice out her next words after a long while."

"Big Brother Yun, is there... someone else around?" Feng Xue'er raised her head from Yun Che's embrace, and gently asked.

Yun Che shook his head. "No, I seemed to have heard some voices, that's all. Xue'er, you should be very tired. Have a good rest then. In the place where we are now, no one else is able to find us."

Feng Xue'er gently shook her head. "I'm not tired... Big Brother Yun is the one who's really tired."

"I only have to take a short break and then I'll recover." Yun Che said with a smile. With the Dragon God's physique, and the power of the Great Way of the Buddha, the recovery speed of his profound energy and stamina were much faster than a regular person's.

The two people quietened down. After several hours of escaping, where they didn't dare to stop for a single moment, their hearts finally found peace and calm. And Yun Che was finally able to truly feel the warmth and fragrance in his embrace. Lightly hugging Princess Snow like this was most probably a dream-like scene which every man would not even dare to dream of. And Princess Snow was like a compliant little kitten nestling in his embrace. She didn't struggle nor reject it, and was simply resting peacefully.

Xue'er, the Phoenix God in your Divine Phoenix Sect, has it really

died?" Yun Che asked with a light voice. However, Jasmine had told him the answer to this question before, and Ye Xinghan's and Feng Feiyan's words, had even more so proved it.

Feng Xue'er was silent for a short while, before she gently nodded. "Lord Phoenix God had already departed three years ago. Sixteen years ago, the reason why Lord Phoenix God had chosen me after my birth, was because it knew that its lifespan was about to end, and it required a successor with sufficient potential. I was under the guidance of Lord Phoenix God for thirteen years, and I received all of Lord Phoenix God's inheritance... His energy source, soul energy, all of its Phoenix blood, and all of its memories."

Feng Xue'er's words shook Yun Che... It was no wonder that at the mere age of sixteen, she possessed the strength of a half-step Monarch. It was also no wonder she was able to easily distinguish his bloodline, and knew so clearly of the feud between the two Phoenix Spirits back then. Although the Phoenix God of Divine Phoenix Empire was dead, it had passed down its own energy source, soul energy, and even its memories, to Feng Xue'er! This allowed Feng Xue'er's starting point to be frighteningly high. Her growth speed, and the heights she could achieve in the future, would undoubtedly shock the whole world as well.

It was thus no wonder Feng Xue'er had such a high position in the Divine Phoenix Sect. Since she had inherited everything from the Phoenix God, once Feng Xue'er was to completely mature, she would clearly become the second Phoenix of the Divine Phoenix Sect! In regards to their future Phoenix God, Divine Phoenix Sect would naturally have to protect her with their utmost best! The possibility of a single obstruction was definitely not allowed while she had yet to fully mature.

"In regards to Lord Phoenix God's departure, only royal father, Great Elder, Big Brother Crown Prince, grandfather, great grandfather, and me... only six people know about it. Royal father said that this is the biggest secret of our sect. It definitely can't be leaked out, and it can't

even be told to the people of our sect. But, on the second year, the Four Great Sacred Grounds had been constantly sending voice transmissions to probe about the situation regarding Lord Phoenix God, as though they knew that Lord Phoenix God was no longer here. Royal father was really furious and perplexed as well. Royal father had always guessed that the Sacred Grounds were probably unable to sense Lord Phoenix God's presence, and thus came to probe about it... Never did we expect that it would actually be..."

Feng Xue'er's voice was really saddened, as she was still unable to recover from the Great Elder's betrayal. At the same time, she couldn't help but worry for Divine Phoenix Empire's future. Without the might of the Phoenix God, Divine Phoenix Sect would definitely struggle while being suppressed by the Four Great Sacred Grounds without end. For five thousand years, the sole reason why the Divine Phoenix Sect was able to develop so quickly under the watch of the Four Great Sacred Grounds and was faintly reaching the brink of the Sacred Grounds' level, was due to the Phoenix God's existence.

Yun Che sighed in his heart, yet he didn't find it to be too shocking. With every influential power, the ones that are most prone to betrayal, were usually the people at the very top of the spectrum. These people were limited to but a few figures. Because these types of people knew the most, their position from the summit was the closest, and they were absolutely clear of every advantage and disadvantage the entire force possessed. Thus, at certain appropriate timings, they were the most susceptible to harboring intents of betrayal. If the Divine Phoenix Sect were to continue going strong like this, Feng Feiyan's intent of betrayal might not have awoken even till his death. However, with their Phoenix God's departure, at the same time he feared for the future of the Divine Phoenix Sect, he was even more fearful of his own future. So after weighing his options, he decided to defect to Sun Moon Divine Hall at the very earliest moment.

If Yun Che and Xia Yuanba were not present, he would have already helped Ye Xinghan achieve his objective, and let Feng Xue'er, who

carried Divine Phoenix Empire's biggest hope, land in Ye Xinghan's hands. The consequences were unimaginable.

"It's alright, it's fine this way as well. Not only were they unable to achieve what they wanted, they have completely exposed themselves instead. Otherwise, the later they are exposed, it would become even more dangerous." Yun Che consoled her.

"Mn..." Feng Xue'er lightly responded. "It's all because of Big Brother Yun. If not for Big Brother Yun, I would have... would have... If royal father knew, he will definitely be really thankful to Big Brother Yun as well."

"It's good enough if your father stops trying to kill me." Yun Che laughed. He definitely couldn't believe that protecting Feng Xue'er was the only reason why Feng Hengkong allowed Feng Feiyan to act on his own. Killing him, was definitely one of their goals as well. However, he then once again thought in another way... Once Feng Hengkong found out about today, he would definitely be under increased pressure, and there might even be a possibility for him to breach decorum with Sun Moon Divine Hall. When that time comes, he probably wouldn't even have the time to think of killing him.

"The Four Great Sacred Grounds are already aware of the Phoenix God's death so they should be aware that you have inherited the Phoenix God's physique as well. Ye Xinghan harbors motives towards you, so the other three Sacred Grounds will most probably keep their eyes on you from now as well." Yun Che closed his eyes, and he was a little pained and worried. "But, in the end, my strength is still too weak. I basically do not have the power to protect you, otherwise... I would instantly take you away from your royal father's hands, and hide you from both your sect and those from the Sacred Grounds."

"Heh..." Feng Xue'er revealed a smile. "Big Brother Yun wants to protect me to such an extent, I'm so happy... If Big Brother Yun wants to take me away, I might not resist, you know."

"Xue'er, you said those words yourself!" Yun Che smiled as well. "If

there comes a day I really want to take Xue'er away, Xue'er must definitely not..."

"Sky... Poison... Pearl..."

Yun Che's words came to a grinding halt, as the mysterious and ethereal woman's voice resounded for the third time. And this time, what she said was no longer "who are you", but clearly...

Sky Poison Pearl?!

=====

Chapter 467 – The Ghost Who Won't Go Away

"Who are you? Where are you?" Yun Che yelled with his head raised. Since the other party knew of his existence and even sound transmitted to him, then she obviously would be able to hear his voice.

But it was the same as the last two times; after the voice sounded, it fell silent, without any other sounds of speech. The third voice was also weak, and he could barely hear it, but Yun Che actually had a vague feeling... that the source of the voice was not that far from him.

"Big Brother Yun, did you hear that weird voice again?" Feng Xue'er asked.

"Mn." Yun Che nodded, then consoled her: "Don't be scared Xue'er, it could just be my misconception due to me being too nervous. This place is so ancient and quiet, there shouldn't be anyone here."

"With Big Brother Yun by my side, I'm not scared at all." Feng Xue'er said while beaming. Thinking about what she said previously, her expression dimmed once again as she asked faintly: "Big Brother Yun, is the other Lord Phoenix God still well?"

"Should be still well." Yun Che pondered, then replied: "The phoenix spirit I had encountered had told me before that it was weaker than your Divine Phoenix Sect's phoenix spirit. Your phoenix god had suffered heavy injuries back then, and has already passed away. As for the one I encountered, even though it isn't dead yet, its vitality ought to be greatly injured. But it was still well three years ago." He paused, then continued: "If Xue'er wants to, I can bring Xue'er to visit that phoenix spirit."

"Okay, okay." Feng Xue'er happily agreed: "This is also Lord Phoenix God's remaining wish. Oh right, Big Brother Yun, how did you meet that Lord Phoenix God? Can you tell me?"

Yun Che lifted his head as he fondly thought back to the past. To him, that was a secret that he had never told anyone before. But in front of Feng Xue'er's clear eyes, he couldn't raise a single trace of rejection. Wearing a light smile, his voice gently slowed: "That was three years ago... At that time, my profound strength was only at the Nascent Profound Realm. I was being chased by a branch sect member of a sect named Xiao Sect. It was my current princess wife who had saved me soon after... But at that time, she wasn't my wife yet. I only had just met her at that time... We fled together. Then, the aerial profound beast we were riding on had completely exhausted its strength, and because of the injuries it received from our pursuer, we fell straight down from a high altitude..."

As Yun Che recalled the memories of that time, he slowly narrated it to Feng Xue'er. When he first started talking, his voice was flat, but his voice couldn't help but gradually begin to fill with emotion. After all, it was an unforgettable experience for both him and Cang Yue. It was within those tribulations that his emotions were deepened. At the same time, it was also a major turning point in his life. If not for what happened then, the later unstable events wouldn't have happened; the grievances brought along by the Phoenix flames wouldn't have happened, and the present him wouldn't have existed today.

Yun Che talked for a very long time, narrating the events from entering the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range all the way to leaving the Phoenix trial grounds. When he finally finished, he looked down and actually saw Feng Xue'er's soft lips lightly pursed. Her breathing was as gentle as an orchid; she had already fallen asleep.

In addition to her completely powerless body, the heavy blows she received and the long hours of fleeing and terror, even though Feng Xue'er had always been carried in Yun Che's arms, no matter if it was her mental state or body, they had long since been utterly exhausted.

Amidst Yun Che's voice, her mind had finally relaxed slightly, and an uncontrollable tiredness caused her to unwittingly fall asleep. Yun Che let out a light sigh of relief as he silently looked at the image of Feng Xue'er's sleeping, then immediately stared into a daze. Exhaustion gradually attacked him as he leaned his head against the ice-cold wall and also unwittingly fell asleep.

"Please... find... her..."

"Only... you... can... save... her..."

"Please... find... her..."

"Ah..." Yun Che trembled, and immediately woke up with that voice still resounding in his ears. And this time, he was unable to tell if it was a real voice or a voice in his dreams.

"Big Brother Yun..." It was unknown whether Yun Che's sudden movement had shocked her awake or if she had already been awake. Feng Xue'er's beautiful eyes flashed slightly as she stared at him unblinkingly.

"It's nothing," Yun Che shook his head: "It's just that it seems like I heard that weird voice again."

Once he finished talking, Yun Che suddenly thought of something. He knitted his brows as he asked his in his consciousness: "Jasmine, how long have I been asleep? From entering the Primordial Profound Ark to now, how many hours have passed?"

"You didn't sleep that long, as for how long you've been in the Primordial Profound Ark... twenty two hours have passed... or even a little more."

"Twenty two hours?" Yun Che's eyebrows slightly hopped. In other words, he only had not even two hours before the Primordial Profound Ark closes. Just earlier, he had suddenly remembered what

Spiritual Master Gu Cang said to Xia Yuanba... Before the Primordial Profound Ark closes, he must not be in a confined area. This even included ravines and caverns! Otherwise, the twenty fourth hour force would not be able to reach him, and he wouldn't be able to get out of the Primordial Profound Ark!

He would also disappear along with the Primordial Profound Ark, and die within the Primordial Profound Ark!

And the place where he and Feng Xue'er were in, was precisely a truly isolated environment.

The short sleep from before had restored about fifty to sixty percent of Yun Che's physical and profound strength. He carried Feng Xue'er and said: "Xue'er, we should leave this place. There's not even two hours until the Primordial Profound Ark closes, and we can leave now. When that time comes, you'll truly be safe."

"Mn." Feng Xue'er lightly responded as she subconsciously leaned closer to Yun Che.

"Let's go."

Yun Che raised his hand and struck a stream of profound energy into the profound formation on the right of the stone door. Instantly, the profound formation flashed, and the tightly closed stone door speedily opened after a short rumbling. Carrying Feng Xue'er, Yun Che walked out. Then, with a single glance, he spotted the descending stone stairs. Earlier, he chose to enter the stone door next to the stone stairs, and suppressed his curiosity to head any deeper, as he was afraid of losing his way. After all, this place was simply too huge. The structure, and the colors of the place were especially uniform as well. With just a slight mistake, he would be completely lost.

As he walked down the stone stairs, Yun Che's heart had slightly calmed down as well. The Primordial Profound Ark was quickly about to close. After reaching outside, with Divine Phoenix Sect and

Spiritual Master Gu Cang, Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan shouldn't have the thought of succeeding in their motives, and this crisis would have been considered to be narrowly averted as well. Xia Yuanba was the only one he was currently worried about. He was in possession of a transportation jade, so theoretically speaking, he could totally save his own life. However, Yun Che couldn't help but worry that he had gamble his own life in order to fight for more time for his own escape.

Very quickly, he had already descended half of the flight of stairs, and the gigantic hall on the first floor was nearly at the end of his sight. At this moment, Jasmine suddenly let out a solemn voice. "Truly a ghost who won't go away."

"Ghost who won't go away? What do you mean?" Yun Che blanked, and his footsteps had slowed down as well. Just as he said that, his body suddenly felt a chill... It felt as though he was clearly tightly locked onto by a presence!

Yun Che suddenly turned his head, and looked below him, in the direction he first came up from... Borrowing the slightly dusky light, he saw a blurry figure currently charging over with extreme speed.

Ye Xinghan!!

When Yun Che discovered him, Ye Xinghan had long spotted Yun Che and Feng Xue'er who was in his embrace. His initial pair of darkened eyes instantly shone with an odd light, and his face revealed a surprised joy, to the extent where he let out a nearly crazed laughter. "Haha... Hahahaha! Initially, I had already given up. I never expected that, the heavens will still be generous to me! Hahahaha..."

Yun Che never expected that when there were merely two hours left before the Primordial Profound Ark closes, in this mysterious and dead-silent fortress, he would actually once again encounter Ye Xinghan. His eyes instantly grew overcast; without even thinking any further, he quickly turned about, and charged up with his quickest

speed.

"This time, I want to see where you two can run off to!!"

Ye Xinghan's speed was as quick as lightning. In his eyes, since Yun Che had already landed in his own line of sight, then there would no longer be any possibility of escape. Seeing Yun Che sprinting straight towards the second floor, he smiled sinisterly. Swinging his arm, Sun Moon Calamity instantly shot out an eye-piercing white profound light, slicing towards Yun Che's legs... Evidently, he was afraid of harming Feng Xue'er by mistake.

Yun Che's figure shook as he instantly dodged away with Star God's Broken Shadow. The profound light struck the handrail of the stone stairs, letting out an extremely ear-piercing ring. The surrounding airflow trembled greatly, yet, the place where the profound light had struck was completely unscathed, not even a single hint of damage and scar could be seen.

The bricks of this place were terrifyingly tough as expected. Not just Yun Che, even with Ye Xinghan's impressive strength, he was unable to damage it in the slightest.

"Hurry and hide inside the stone room! With your speed, it's impossible to escape him!" Jasmine said solemnly.

Even without Jasmine's reminder, Yun Che would do the same as well. Because in a situation like this, that was his only option. With his quickest speed, he charged towards the second floor, and then sprinted towards the courtyard he had stopped at before. When he approached the stone door, Ye Xinghan had already charged to the second floor as well. His distance from Yun Che's back was only left with less than sixty meters. He laughed coldly, and said with disdain. "Still thinking about running?"

Ye Xinghan fiercely pushed out his palm, and an extremely violent force of profound energy charged straight towards Yun Che's back.

A heavy sense of danger came from behind him. Yun Che had no time to turn around, as he quickly embraced Feng Xue'er tightly, and crazily surged the profound energy in his entire body...

"Sealing Cloud Locking Sun!!"

Bang!!!

Chaotic sounds of explosions rang out, and the barrier Yun Che had set up around his body had only lasted for a mere second before shattering completely. It had blocked against most of the attack, but the part of the energy Yun Che wasn't able to block was still unbearable for him, and he puked out a huge mouthful of blood. Borrowing the force of the attack, his body flew past the center of the courtyard. Like a meteor, he shot into one of the stone rooms, and his body heavily struck onto the wall inside... However, right before he fell onto the ground, with extremely strong willpower, he maintained his consciousness, and quickly stretched out his arm. With profound energy gathered in his hand, he pushed towards the profound formation at the side of the stone door.

Rmmm...

The stone door instantly closed tightly shut, isolating themselves from Ye Xinghan outside.

Yun Che laid his back onto the ground, and panted with huge breaths as he retracted his stretched-out arm with a little difficulty as well. His back was blasted by Ye Xinghan's energy, and right after, he heavily struck against the stone wall. Hence, his blood flow was currently in a mess, and his organs had shifted greatly from their original positions as well, as fresh blood constantly trickled down from the corner of his lips. However, for someone who possessed the abilities of a late-stage Emperor Profound Realm to actually be capable of staying alive after blocking an attack that consisted of a third of a middle-stage Overlord's strength, in this world, only Yun Che could achieve it.

And in the entire process, Feng Xue'er had been protected by him with all his might, and did not suffer any form of injury. However, she was still worried and frightened to the point where she was about to cry. "Big Brother Yun, you're fine... You're fine, right... Big Brother Yun.."

"I'm... I'm fine..." Yun Che panted with huge breaths. Then, he sat up with great difficulty. He raised up Feng Xue'er up by his side as well, and had her lean against his own shoulder as they leaned against the slightly cold stone wall together. "I'm fine, it's only a small wound."

Bang! Boom! Ding! Clang! Boom...

Various banging sounds came from the direction of the stone door, which was merely less than ten steps away from them. However, no matter the stone door or the stone wall, under the incomparably intense attacks, neither of them budged a single bit. Yun Che held onto Feng Xue'er's hand, and consoled her. "Xue'er, don't worry. He won't be able to enter."

"Mn..." Feng Xue'er leaned against Yun Che's shoulder, and she tightly hugged onto his arm with both her hands.

=====

Chapter 468 – Desperate Straits

Ye Xinghan used all of his strength and had only managed to tiringly escape from the Song of the Flower Burial after being pressed down for exactly twelve hours. After venting his anger on the place, he still did not give up, and chased after them with all his might. Then, just like Yun Che, out of curiosity, he entered this ancient fortress which appeared out of nowhere... At this moment, he had basically given up hope on finding Feng Xue'er. He didn't expect that a large surprise would suddenly descend from the heavens just like that.

However, currently, a stone door was completely blocking him from obtaining the prey which was supposedly right at his fingertips, even with an attack which he unleashed with his full strength that had even caused his own arm to be in severe pain; forget about being destroyed, not even a single hint of a scar could be seen on the stone door in front of his eyes, nor was there a slight deviation in its position either.

He struck the stone door with all his strength, yet, what he received, was a feeling as though he was an ant trying to shake a tree.

Ye Xinghan became utterly agitated. This feeling as though a cooked duck had suddenly flown off, had undoubtedly made him feel extremely unbearable. He stared at the stone door, and walked back and forth. He tried to locate the opening mechanism, and his solemn voice carried a deep threat. "Yun Che, if you don't wish to die without a proper burial, open the door for me now!"

Yun Che did not respond. He closed his eyes, regulated his breathing, and slowly stabilized the injuries in his body. Although he had prepared himself when he took Ye Xinghan's attack, the injuries he received were definitely not light. From his side, Feng Xue'er reached out her little snow-white hand, and carefully rubbed away the bloodstain from the corner of his lips. Her beautiful eyes were filled with pain... He had received such heavy injuries, yet, he was able to make sure that not even the corner of her clothes were

damaged, while she was powerless to defend herself. This alone was touching enough to last in her memory for a lifetime.

Ye Xinghan circled around the vicinity for several times, yet he was unable to find anything that looked similar to a mechanism. He could only give up, and stand in front of the stone door. After his expression quickly changed, his voice suddenly calmed down. "Yun Che, not only have you spoilt my great plans, you have even killed my two beloved women. Whatever you have done, is enough for me to torture you to the point you would wish for death to come! Let's take a couple steps back; even if you're capable of escaping today, and you manage to leave the Primordial Profound Ark... Hmph! I will still unhesitantly move all the forces of Sun Moon Divine Hall to endlessly hunt you down. When that time comes, not only will there not be a single person who would have the guts to protect you, there will even be countless of people willing to kill you just to curry favors with my Sun Moon Divine Hall. Like a dog with a deceased owner, you will endlessly pray to see the light of day, until your corpse is shredded into countless pieces!"

Yun Che knew very well in his heart that although Ye Xinghan's words were threats, they were facts as well. Incurring the hatred of Divine Phoenix Sect and incurring the hatred of Sun Moon Divine Hall were completely two different concepts.

"If you don't come out, you will be sealed to death in this Primordial Profound Ark. Even if you manage to escape, only death awaits you as well!" Ye Xinghan said solemnly. "But, right now, I can give you a chance! As long as you open this door, and hand me my little sister Xue'er, then, everything that happened, including the matter about you killing my women, I can let them be bygones! Not only will I let you leave and I'll even allow you to safely leave the Primordial Profound Ark. From today onwards, I will not hunt you down, and I can even provide you with some benefits."

In such desperate straits, these words undoubtedly carry huge temptation. Yun Che closed his eyes, his demeanor was still the

same, and he did not make a sound. Feng Xue'er looked at him worriedly, and said with a soft voice. "Big Brother Yun..."

"Let's not care about him." Yun Che held onto Feng Xue'er's shoulder, and said with a similarly soft voice.

"This young master is the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, so I keep my promises. This is your only chance to live, and also a big gift for you. You'd best not be an idiot, and destroy your own life and future!" Ye Xinghan said with a solemn voice. However, in actual fact, he was especially anxious in his heart. Because, counting the time, there were only less than two hours before the Primordial Profound Ark would close. When that time comes, not only would he have to give up on Feng Xue'er, his greed and despicable acts could very possibly be exposed. In the future, it would be hard to obtain another opportunity.

He had said a bunch of words, yet still he did not receive even a single response, and not even a single bit of voice could be heard from inside. Ye Xinghan's expression became even darker and stern. "Yun Che! Since you're not coming out, could it be that you're thinking of dying in this Primordial Profound Ark? Hmph, with a lowly life such as yours, it's fine for you to die, but you don't have the qualifications to drag Feng Xue'er to die alongside you! Her life is more precious than yours. If you really wish to protect her, then you'd best honestly hand her over to me. This is your only chance!"

With the harshest voice she could muster, Feng Xue'er said. "Ye Xinghan! I, Feng Xue'er, am willing to die here with Big Brother Yun, than to land in your hands!"

"Oh, my little sister Xue'er." Hearing Feng Xue'er's voice, Ye Xinghan's tone instantly underwent a huge change. "Why do you want to reject your Big Brother Ye to such an extent? Although my methods are a little dishonorable, it's because I like you too much, and that I'm too anxious to obtain you."

"Go away!" Feng Xue'er furiously shouted. "I really... really hate you!"

"Little Sister Xue'er, you will learn to not hate me." Ye Xinghan said with a carefree voice. "I, Ye Xinghan, am the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall. Given less than three hundred years, I will become the true Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, becoming the highest and most supreme figure in the entire Profound Sky Continent. And only I, am worthy of Little Sister Xue'er, and only Little Sister Xue'er, is worthy of me."

"I can make a guarantee to Little Sister Xue'er right now, that after our marriage, I will use everything I have to protect you, and have you become the most respected, and the most perfect woman in this world. For you, I can even give up on all other women."

"I will never... never like you! My Big Brother Yun, is a thousand times, ten thousand times better than you!" Feng Xue'er angrily said.

"Your Big Brother Yun?" Ye Xinghan's eyes narrowed, and began to coldly laugh in disdain. "You actually compare me to a lowly mortal? In my eyes, he's even less than an ant by the roadside. If I want to crush him, it's actually even much easier than crushing an ant. My Little Sister Xue'er, given how pure and smart you are, how can your heart be so easily blinded? Only by following me, will you find where you perfectly belong. Even if you don't think for your own future, you should also think of the future of Divine Phoenix Sect. Could it be that you really wish for the future of Divine Phoenix Sect to be destroyed by your own selfish and mistaken decision?"

Ye Xinghan's final words, had undoubtedly struck a huge blow in Feng Xue'er's heart. Yun Che opened his eyes, gently grasped onto Feng Xue'er's slightly cold hand, and shook his head. "Don't believe any words from a downright despicable person such as him. No matter what he says, we don't have to listen to him."

"Mn." Feng Xue'er lightly nodded.

Yun Che once again closed his eyes, and healed his own injuries with all his strength. Before the Primordial Profound Ark closes, Ye Xinghan would definitely leave this ancient fortress. When that time

comes, that would be the only hope for him and Feng Xue'er to escape from this place. In order to completely secure his own life, Ye Xinghan would definitely not stay too close from the ancient fortress after leaving it either. Although it carried a very huge risk, as long as he were to plan out the time well, the chances of success definitely wouldn't be low.

The more his injuries heal, the possibility of success would raise correspondingly as well.

Yun Che and Feng Xue'er were in the stone room, while Ye Xinghan was outside the stone room. The situation had instantly landed in a stalemate where neither parties could advance or retreat. Even after using all of his strength, Ye Xinghan was unable to break the stone door. Hence, he could only constantly use enticing, deluding, and threatening words. At the end, under extreme agitation, he had even broken out into curses, however, neither Yun Che nor Feng Xue'er responded to him with another word.

Rumble...

The floor beneath their feet, the wall behind them, and even the entire space, had suddenly trembled slightly, as though an earthquake had happened.

This trembling caused Yun Che to focus his senses, and outside, Ye Xinghan's expression changed greatly.

"Ah..." Feng Xue'er was suddenly conscious of something, and cried out. "Big Brother Yun, this is bad. I heard from my royal father, that when the space within the Primordial Profound Ark begins to shake, it means that there's only less than half an hour left before the Primordial Profound Ark closes."

"Half an hour..." Yun Che raised his eyes and stared at the stone door, his expression beginning to turn grim.

Ye Xinghan's voice had clearly become anxious as well. "Yun Che! In

half an hour, the Primordial Profound Ark will close. If you don't come out now, the two of you will not be expelled by the Primordial Profound Ark's force. The two of you will die inside, and even your corpses will disappear along with the Primordial Profound Ark!"

"Come out, and you two can live! Otherwise, both of you will die!"

"It's best that you worry more about yourself." Yun Che coldly said.

"You're still inside the ancient fortress yourself. Even if we're not forced out when the time comes, you will accompany us in our deathbeds as well."

"Accompany you in your deathbed? Ha, those words are so terrible to hear. You clearly only have to obediently open the door. As long as you do this simple action, you can live on nicely, and my little sister Xue'er will be able to live as well. Yet, you still wish to not come to your senses. It's fine to be stupid on your own, but you even wish to drag down my perfect little sister Xue'er as well. This is the first time I have ever seen such a fool in my entire life!"

"If I really believe in your words, then I will truly be an idiot." Yun Che coldly laughed.

Rumble...

Space once again shook, and according to the past experience and records, the nearer to the Primordial Profound Ark's close, the frequency of the shaking space would increase. At the very end, it would even continue to shake violently, similar to a space which was at the verge of collapse. Ye Xinghan's expression became even darker. He turned around to look out of the courtyard, hurriedly calculated the time he needed to escape the ancient fortress from his current position, and said while gnashing his teeth. "Yun Che. I shall give you one last chance. Either you open this door, or... both of you will die together!"

Seconds flowed by, and with every passing second, it was as though the footsteps of the god of death were approaching closer. Yun Che's

expression was calm; however, his forehead was already filled with cold sweat. Because the final amount of time he would have, would decide the life and death of both him and Feng Xue'er. If he were to head out now, he would die. If he was unable to leave before the Primordial Profound Ark closes, he would similarly die.

Another fifteen minutes had past, and the frequency of the shaking space had clearly increased as well. Ye Xinghan's expression had already turned even more anxious, as he constantly turned his head around, confirming time and time again the route and amount of time he needed to escape the ancient fortress. Then, he took a deep breath, and once again roared. "Yun Che, I shall give you one final chance! If you wish to live... open the door now!!"

In the stone room, Yun Che tightly furrowed his brows, tightly gritted his teeth, and did not say a single word. Feng Xue'er strongly grabbed onto Yun Che's hand, her expression was a field of confusion.

Rumble...

Space severely shook, causing Ye Xinghan's body to greatly shake for a moment. And right now, out of the total of twenty four hours, they were only left with the final fifteen minutes.

At this moment, even if Yun Che opened the door now, and handed Feng Xue'er to him, removing the time needed to escape, he basically wouldn't have the time to succeed either. His expression darkened, and his entire body trembled, as he said resentfully and hideously. "Very good. Then I will fulfill your wishes! Since I'm unable to obtain her, then destroying the two of you personally isn't a terrible idea either!!"

Ye Xinghan's words, caused Yun Che to suddenly realize what he was planning to do. He fiercely stood up and roared out. "Stop!"

Before his words fell, Ye Xinghan's palm had already heavily struck onto the right of the stone door. The point of contact, was exactly the

small-scaled profound formation controlling the opening mechanism of the stone door.

A violent force struck onto the profound formation. The profound formation momentarily shone, before it completely shattered, and the dispersed profound light gently dissipated in the air.

With the profound formation destroyed, the stone door was completely locked tight as well. No matter was it from the outside or inside, it could no longer be opened.

“Haha... Hahahaha! Die here for me... Forever!!”

The destroyed profound formation had severed Yun Che’s and Feng Xue’er’s hope of escaping, and it had severed Ye Xinghan’s hope of obtaining Feng Xue’er as well. Ye Xinghan let out a huge furious laugh, as he flew into the air with a face filled with hatred. With his fastest speed, he charged outwards. Very quickly, he descended down the stone stairs, and charged out of the exit of the ancient fortress.

=====

Chapter 469 – Xue'er... Wait for me...

"This... bastard!!"

What Yun Che was the most worried about had happened. With Ye Xinghan's abilities, he had expectedly seen through the profound formation. Ye Xinghan had already escaped with his fastest speed, yet Yun Che's heart had dropped. He rapidly rose, whipped out Dragon Fault and attacked the stone door with his full strength.

Clang!!!

The piercing sound of the strike could almost tear ear drums; the immense recoil caused both of Yun Che's arms to hurt immensely as the internal injuries which he had recuperated with much difficulty had completely ruptured. He staggered backwards, then fell heavily onto the ground.

"Big brother Yun!" Feng Xue'er shifted her body and held onto Yun Che's shoulder: "Are you alright, are you hurt?"

Yun Che's gaze fell on the stone door where Dragon Fault had landed... forget about a crack, there was not even a nick which the naked eye could see on that area. He took a deep breath and drooped his shoulders.

"Big brother Yun... " Seeing Yun Che this way, and thinking of their situation, Feng Xue'er hugged him tightly... "Big brother Yun."

To her, these three words were all the emotional support she could give.

"I'm sorry Xue'er, in the end, we were still forced to such a point." Yun Che laughed bitterly as he said powerlessly.

Feng Xue'er forcefully shook her head: "No... I was the one who let Big brother Yun down. It's all because of me. If not for Big brother Yun protecting me, nothing would have happened at all..."

Tears from the phoenix girl dripped, landing lightly on Yun Che's arm. He turned over, looked in Feng Xue'er's eyes, and said lightly after some time: "Xue'er, are you afraid?"

Yun Che's face was completely pale, yet the look in his eyes was one that she was familiar with; one with warmth which caused her to unknowingly become infatuated. She shook her head slowly: "If I was alone, I would be afraid, but with Big brother Yun, I'm not afraid at all."

"But, I'm really afraid." Yun Che shut his eyes: "I'm afraid that I won't be able to see my close ones and wives again... afraid that no one will protect them... afraid that I will not be able to complete the final wish that grandfather entrusted me... I'm afraid that I will not be able to see Little Fairy again within this lifetime, and our child... I'm afraid... of many things..."

"Yet now... right in front of me, what I'm most afraid of, is that I will really see you lose your life here."

Rumble... Rumble...

The surroundings shuddered more and more violently, the booming not stop for a long time.

Dragon Fault had been tossed aside by Yun Che. His hands held onto Feng Xue'er's little hands, as he gazed upwards and said with disappointment: "Xue'er, did you know that I've always been someone who cherished my own life and is even more so, an incomparably selfish person. I used to poison many people to death just to let myself live, so many to the point that you can't even imagine, and within those, there were many innocents..."

Feng Xue'er shook her head: "I only know that big brother Yun is the nicest person in the world, and he's also the one who treats me the best. No matter who tells me that big brother Yun is a bad person, I will not believe it."

"Yun Che laughed out loud: "Xue'er, your heart is just like a crystal, even though I had cheated you in such a manner originally, not only did you not expose me, you instead taught me the World Ode of the Phoenix on your own accord, and yesterday, you helped me with such perseverance... In front of you, I am ashamed and tainted by filth and the guilt of countless crimes... your appearance was just as if a pearl had been inserted into my soul, one so precious that I don't even have the courage to touch it.

"Big brother Yun..." Feng Xue'er didn't understand why Yun Che was saying such strange things. Every word from him was praise and admiration, causing her heart to feel satisfied and warm, yet at the same time, there was a kind of unexplainable unease.

"That's why, no matter what, I will not watch helplessly as you die... at least for now, I would rather die."

"...Big brother Yun, I will forever remember your words today. Even if I die, and go to another world, I will never forget." Feng Xue'er murmured softly. Being trapped in such a situation and unable to escape, with another fifteen minutes before the death god came knocking and facing imminent death, she ought to have felt fear along with a multitude of concerns, yet at that moment, her heart instead became extremely peaceful, without a trace of fear. She knew the reason... it was because of the person beside her.

A trace of determination flashed in Yun Che's eyes. He reached out his palm as an imprint of a golden flame flashed between his eyebrows. He looked at Feng Xue'er and said: "Xue'er, close your eyes."

Feng Xue'er closed her eyes like before. Yun Che reached out with two fingers and lightly tapped on the area between Feng Xue'er's eyebrows. Instantly, the Phoenix imprint flashed between Feng Xue'er's eyebrows... a golden imprint just like Yun Che's .

"Ah... this is?" Feng Xue'er opened her eyes and gasped in amazement.

"These are the profound formulas of the World Ode of the Phoenix's fifth and sixth stage ." Yun Che said: "Quickly, engrave them into your memory."

The fifth and sixth stages of the World Ode of the Phoenix was something that the Divine Phoenix Sect had been yearning for the past five thousand years, and now, somebody had finally attained it. Though the timing wasn't quite suitable, Feng Xue'er still obediently complied. Shutting her eyes, she calmed her mind, deeply engraving the profound imprints within her mind into her soul.

After less than an eighth of an hour, Feng Xue'er opened her eyes. Yun Che smiled slightly and said: "Xue'er really is indeed much more clever than I thought. If it's like this, Xue'er will be able to master them in just a few months time."

The surroundings began to rumble continuously. Moreover, the degree of rumbling became more and more intense, as if there was going to be a cave-in any moment. Yet Yun Che had on a particularly peaceful expression. He noticed that Feng Xue'er's eyes were a little misty, and then said earnestly: "Xue'er, you must listen very carefully to my following words, alright?"

"Mn." Feng Xue'er nodded: "I will listen as long as it's big brother Yun's words."

Yun Che laughed slightly and said: "The Four Great Sacred Grounds are evidently already aware of the passing of the Phoenix God; you revealing your strength at the ranking tournament yesterday also allowed them to confirm this point. In the near future, your Divine Phoenix Sect would most probably face unprecedented pressure and danger. I'm not certain how your royal father will handle this matter, and nobody knows what will happen in the future, but, Xue'er, after leaving this place, you have to properly cultivate this sixth stage of the World Ode of the Phoenix, and attain an even greater strength to protect yourself."

"Apart from your royal father and grandfather, do not easily trust

anyone else, including your royal brothers, because due to pressure and concern to improve their fate, there might be a chance that someone close to you may give in to the Four Great Sacred Grounds... No matter what, you have to give your life and safety the top priority, because to your royal father and the people of your sect... and to me, your life is more important than the entire Divine Phoenix Sect. If one day your sect really encounters a disaster which cannot be withstood, Xue'er, I hope that you will not risk your life in protecting your sect, and instead use all your might to flee, to allow yourself to live on... Xue'er, please promise me these."

"Ah..." Xue'er opened her tender lips slightly, feeling somewhat lost: "After... leaving this place? We still are able to leave this place?"

"No matter, promise me that first." Yun Che said firmly: "You said it yourself just now, that if it were my words, you would listen."

"Mn..." Feng Xue'er nodded lightly: "Then... I promise."

Yun Che started laughing. He extended his pinky towards Feng Xue'er: "Then let's do it like the last time... pinky swear!"

Feng Xue'er extended her own delicate pinky and buckled together with Yun Che's pinky. As they quietly gripped tighter and tighter while looking into each other's eyes, they both thought about the first time when they made a pinky swear at the same time, and started to laugh lightly. Yun Che said with a smile: "Since we have made a pinky swear, this means that Xue'er has promised me and can't go against it."

"Mm!" Feng Xue'er agreed crisply: "I will definitely do what I've promised big brother Yun. Big brother Yun, you too can't renege the promise about bringing me to see snow."

Yun Che's eyes wavered slightly. He didn't answer immediately, but instead reached out to remove the transportation jade that Xia Yuanba had given him from his neck, then gently hung it around Feng Xue'er's neck.

"This is..." Feng Xue'er held the jade in her hand and asked curiously. The jade was originally sparkling and transparent, yet under the glow of Feng Xue'er's snowy jade-like neck, it had lost its splendor.

Yun Che placed his palm onto Feng Xue'er's hands, then quietly grasped the stone. He looked at her beautiful complexion with reluctance, his voice like a gentle breeze: "What I've promised Xue'er, I will definitely do... After three years, I will bring Xue'er to see the endless snow in Blue Wind Nation's Snow Region of Extreme Ice. After three years, Xue'er, will you wait there for me?"

Rumble... Rumble... Rumble...

The surroundings seemed to be boiling; Yun Che and Feng Xue'er were being flung around under the intense rumbling. The Primordial Profound Ark had finally reached the final countdown of its closing. Feng Xue'er stared at Yun Che in a daze, her heart becoming more and more misty, with an unspeakable uneasiness: "Wait for you? Big brother Yun, why do I need to... wait for you?"

Riip!!

An astonishing crack appeared in the air, appearing not more than three feet behind Yun Che. Yun Che's expression remained as calm as ever, as if at this moment, there was nothing in this world which could impinge his state of mind. He lightly tightened his grip. With a light "ping" sound, the transportation jade shattered, and a profound light instantly radiated as a delicate profound formation appeared on Feng Xue'er's body. The appearance of the profound formation along with its mysterious profound aura caused Feng Xue'er to suddenly have a premonition about something: "Big brother Yun, you..."

"Xue'er... wait for me..."

Those four words of Yun Che's were unhurried and peaceful, yet when they drifted into Feng Xue'er's ears, it was as though profound lightning had struck her, causing her mind to be thoroughly thrown

into chaos... to the point that it was on the verge of collapse. She widened her eyes in fear; endless fear and heartache spread to every part of her body. She stretched out her palm, wanting to catch Yun Che, but realized that her body was already starting to blur, and that they were getting further and further... further and further...

“Big brother Yun... big brother Yun! Nooo!!!!”

Following her blood curdling scream, all the sound and light seemed to become distant as Yun Che’s silhouette became completely blurry in the endless space...

Rumble... Crack... Sss... Boom...

Space was completely thrown into disorder; the entire world seemed to be on the verge of destruction. Yun Che put down his arm, grabbed Dragon Fault and hugged it, closing his eyes...

Boom...

The entire space of the Primordial Profound Ark seemed to instantly shatter. Countless cracks in space filled every corner of the profound ark, and countless bloody scars instantly exploded on Yun Che’s body. His entire body instantly becoming a bloody mess, as though his entire body was shattered and minced by the space in that instant...

At that moment, it was early morning in Divine Phoenix City, The heart of Divine Phoenix City suddenly seemed to become a lot brighter; people subconsciously looked upwards and realized that in the distant blue skies, the Primordial Profound Ark which had stopped there for half a year, had disappeared without a trace.

=====

Chapter 470 – Re-emergence of the Divine Phoenix

Gu Cang, Feng Hengkong and the rest, had been expelled by the Primordial Profound Ark at basically the same time. Then, they appeared on the ground directly beneath the Primordial Profound Ark... which was exactly within Phoenix City. A crowd of elders and princes had long been waiting there, and when they saw the appearance of Feng Hengkong and the rest, they hurriedly went to greet them, and ask of their well-being.

The people of Divine Phoenix Sect that went in together, had appeared at the same time. Feng Hengkong swiftly swept his gaze around the vicinity, however, he realized that two people were missing... And they were even the two most important people. He said with a frown. "Where's Feng Xue'er and Great Elder? Why aren't they out yet?"

Spiritual Master Gu Cang raised his head to glance at the Primordial Profound Ark which had yet to disappear, and calmly said. "My disciple has yet to appear either. Their positions in the Primordial Profound Ark are different from ours, so there might be a deviation in the time they appear."

Feng Hengkong slowly nodded, as he seemed to have agreed to this idea... Because Xia Yuanba, Feng Feiyan, and Feng Xue'er had all stayed back to freely roam around the initial areas, and did not join the investigation teams.

Ye Xinghan and Ji Qianrou had appeared at the same time with Feng Hengkong and the rest as well. Ye Xinghan's expression was a little gloomy. Ji Qianrou's eyes swept past him, and shifted away the next instant, while he carried a carefree expression, as though a huge matter that occurred did not concern him in the slightest.

The moment he heard these words, Feng Xichen hurriedly stepped forward, and said. "Spiritual Master Gu Cang, your esteemed disciple came out not even four hours after the Primordial Profound Ark

opened. He is currently in the Pellet Hall."

"What did you say?" Spiritual Master Gu Cang's expression slightly changed, while Feng Hengkong's brows furrowed as well. "Chen'er, are you certain that you did not make a mistake? We had personally seen Xia Yuanba enter the profound ark, so how is it possible for him to exit halfway through?"

Spiritual Master Gu Cang, however, said with a stern expression. "Did he suffer some form of serious injury? How are his wounds currently?"

Feng Xichen hurriedly said. "He doesn't seem to have suffered any injuries, however, he's unconscious with no signs of waking up. And, from his entire body, the presence of profound energy cannot be sensed at all... It's as though... he has been crippled."

Spiritual Master Gu Cang's expression once again changed. No injuries, and no presence of profound energy from his entire body. Could it be...

After having stayed depressed and silent the entire time, Ye Xinghan's eyebrows twitched, and in his heart, he instantly sensed that the situation was bad. Feng Feiyan had died, and it was impossible for Yun Che and Feng Xue'er to appear once again. The only person who knew of this entire incident was Ji Qianrou. As long as he could keep Ji Qianrou in check, no one would know of the matters that happened in the Primordial Profound Ark. However, he completely did not expect that Xia Yuanba actually wasn't dead... The reason for his disappearance, was actually because he had left the Primordial Profound Ark prematurely!

And he suddenly recalled that he seemed to have indeed heard not too long ago, Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had a transportation jade which could meddle with the Primordial Profound Ark's space. However, the quantity was extremely small, and it was incomparably precious. He never expected that Xia Yuanba actually possessed one... However, when he thought of his Tyrannical Emperor's

Profound Veins, Ye Xinghan suddenly felt that it was a rather logical matter.

Feng Hengkong pondered for a moment, and just as he was about to speak up, a profound light suddenly flashed in front of him. A small profound formation slowly appeared, and after seeing this profound formation, Spiritual Master Gu Cang revealed a suspicious look... Because this profound formation, was clearly the unique transportation profound formation that was contained in the transportation jade.

Within the profound formation, Feng Xue'er's figure appeared. Her appearance, caused Ye Xinghan's expression to instantly change. The emotion he displayed was not fear, but astonishment carried with extreme joy.

A familiar place, a familiar air, familiar people within her line of sight, and familiar sounds by her earside... However, it was as though Feng Xue'er was unable to sense all of them at all. She quietly stood there, and looked at the blue sky with her head raised... She was clearly at home, yet it felt incomparably lonely.

The Primordial Profound Ark which was above the blue skies, had completely disappeared at this moment as well.

Feng Xue'er's eyes completely blurred at this instant. Two clear streams of tears gently slid down her cheeks. In front of her, all she could see was Yun Che's blurred face at that very last moment. His voice, which was as gentle as the wind, resounded in her ears, over and over again...

Xue'er... Wait for me...

"Big Brother Yun... Big Brother Yun..."

With a soft sob, every word was filled with sadness, that was seemingly about to tear everyone's heart apart. She closed her eyes, and like an elf that had lost its soul, she directly fell backwards.

"Xue'er!"

When Feng Xue'er appeared, Feng Hengkong heavily sighed in relief, and shouted for her twice. However, he did not receive any response from Feng Xue'er. Just as he was thinking that it was strange, he saw that she was actually falling straight down towards the ground. He was instantly thrown into a shock, and hurriedly charged over to hold her. The moment he touched her body, his expression changed instantly. "This is... the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation!"

"What!?" The moment they heard these four words, every member of Divine Phoenix Sect was shocked. They gathered around one after another, and sensed the blurry aura on Feng Xue'er's body. Every one of their faces instantly paled.

"How could this be!?" Feng Ximing gritted his teeth. "The Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation is used on our sect's disciples who have committed heinous crimes. How could it appear on Xue'er... And with Xue'er's strength, only a few people in the entire sect is capable of casting the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation on her!" When he spoke of this, he suddenly thought of something, and his face was instantly filled with fear. "Only the people of our sect are able to cast the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation. Great Elder was the only person with Xue'er... But... this... why would Great Elder..."

Feng Hengkong swiftly swept his gaze around the vicinity, and realized that Feng Feiyan had still not exited. His expression was frighteningly dark... Because ever since Feng Xue'er was young, forget about being harmed by anyone, she had never even been loudly lectured upon. Yet, currently, someone actually cast the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation on her. His expression had turned ashen, and was already furious to the point where he was basically unable to say a word. Taking a deep breath, flames began to burn on both of his hands, as he unhesitantly inserted the source of his flaming energy into Feng Xue'er's body... Not long later, the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation in Feng Xue'er's body

disintegrated soundlessly.

Feng Xue'er who had fainted, slowly woke up at this moment as well.

"Xue'er!" Feng Hengkong retracted his Phoenix flames, and held Feng Xue'er up. Forcefully suppressing his rage, he said anxiously. "What happened to you in the Primordial Profound Ark? Who... Who injured you?"

Although Feng Xue'er had opened her eyes, her expression was still pale. Her pair of beautiful eyes were dull, and even though Feng Hengkong had repeatedly called out to her, she was completely unresponsive, as though her soul had gone missing. Until... her line of sight suddenly made contact with Ye Xinghan's figure.

"It's you... It's you who killed Big Brother Yun... It's you who killed Big Brother Yun!!"

The voice that Feng Xue'er let out was seemingly heartbreaking. Her gaze, was actually filled with hatred and killing intent which Feng Hengkong was incomparably foreign to... As the father of Feng Xue'er, in his entire life, this was still the first time he had sensed hatred and killing intent emitting from her body. And when Ye Xinghan was the person she was pointing to, his heart fiercely stirred as well. He hurriedly held onto Feng Xue'er's shoulder, and said with a solemn voice. "Xue'er, calm down. Tell your royal father just what actually happened!"

Gu Cang swept his gaze at the surroundings, yet, he was unable to see Yun Che's figure. Xia Yuanba's abnormal state and Feng Xue'er's emotional outburst had allowed him to faintly guess what had gone on. He glanced at Ye Xinghan indifferently, and said with a calm voice. "Princess Snow, calm your emotions."

Although these few words from Spiritual Master Gu Cang were simple and plain, they carried peerless profound energy within them, as they brushed across Feng Xue'er's soul like a light breeze, allowing her emotions to slowly return to normal. She no longer lost

control of her emotions, however, her soul was still in pain, preventing her from breathing. She bit her lips, and a strand of fresh blood slowly fell from her lips, flowing straight onto her creamy snow-white neck.

She had escaped from desperate straits. She had left the Primordial Profound Ark. She had returned to the sides of her loved ones. She had escaped from all dangers...

However, everything, was in exchange for Yun Che's life.

Clearly, he could have safely escaped danger on his own... He could have done it right from the beginning. Yet, he desperately fled while bringing her along. For her sake, he completely offended Ye Xinghan without the slightest hesitation, and in the end... he even exchanged his own life, for hers...

Big Brother Yun... Big Brother Yun...

The tears on her cheeks were slowly dried by the wind, yet, the tears in her heart, had accumulated into an ocean... For the very first time, she realized that this was actually how sadness truly felt, and how painful and torturous sadness was... Closing her eyes, the corner of her eyelids filled with tears. Though her voice was calm, every single word was filled with sorrow. "Great Elder has betrayed us. He had long pledged loyalty to Sun Moon Divine Hall... Ye Xinghan wanted to possess me. Great Elder appeared, however, he suddenly made a move against me, and struck the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation on me... Big Brother Yun and bulky Big Brother were the ones who saved me... Big Brother Yun carried me, and fled to an ancient fortress... Ye Xinghan wanted to force Big Brother Yun and me to death, so Big Brother Yun handed me something that could escape from the place. Big Brother Yun... He..."

Feng Xue'er's description was in bits and pieces, and her voice constantly fluctuated, however, they still clearly understood what had happened. After speaking her last few words, in front of Feng Xue'er eyes, the image of Yun Che's figure instantly heading far, far

away had once again surfaced. Her soul felt as though it was pierced by ten thousand arrows, and her eyes instantly blurred. She then... fainted once more.

"Xue'er!" Feng Hengkong held Feng Xue'er up, and his entire body was already trembling with fury and hatred. When he sensed the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation in Feng Xue'er's body, he had already thought of Feng Feiyan... Because Feng Feiyan was the only person who did not head into the inner areas of the profound ark, who was tasked to protect Feng Xue'er from the shadows. He didn't expect that this terrifying guess had actually turned into reality, and it was countless times more terrifying than he had thought it was!

The elder brother whom had grown up with him, whom he had respected, trusted, and even relied upon the most among his age-group, had actually...

All the signs, which showed that the Four Great Sacred Grounds seemed to have found out the news of the Divine Phoenix's passing... was actually not his imagination! It was actually Feng Feiyan who had informed Sun Moon Divine Hall of this matter! He had completely betrayed the Divine Phoenix Sect.

If he was barely able to accept the fact that Feng Feiyan had betrayed them, then, the fact that Feng Xue'er had almost fell into dangerous hands, and had even almost lost her life in the Primordial Profound Ark forever... had already completely touched the reverse scale that definitely shouldn't have been touched. It had completely crossed his final line. The endless rage had caused Feng Hengkong's chest to look as though it was about to explode. He looked at Ye Xinghan angrily, and his voice carried a slight tremble. "Ye Xinghan... You had best... give us... an... explanation!!"

All of the gazes from those of the Divine Phoenix Sect gathered onto Ye Xinghan. Every single one of their gazes were filled with deep anger and hatred. If not for Ye Xinghan's identity as the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, they would have already pounced at

him one after another, and tear him into shreds on-site. Not only was Feng Xue'er's Feng Hengkong's reverse scale, she was even more so, the reverse scale of the entire Divine Phoenix Sect.

Although Spiritual Master's expression looked rather calm, rage was already faintly being carried in his eyes. Ji Qianrou turned aside, and was leisurely enjoying the view of the Phoenix flowers not far away. Ling Kun's eyes were shifting from Divine Phoenix Sect and Ye Xinghan back and forth, and his brows had begun to furrow deeply as well.

Facing Feng Hengkong who could explode with flaming rage at any moment, Ye Xinghan, however, did not look even the least bit anxious. His eyes narrowed into long slits, as he slowly said casually. "Phoenix Sect Master, please calm your anger. Although this young master's methods have indeed been excessive, it's simply because I love Little Sister Xue'er too much, which led to this moment of impulse. Phoenix Sect Master has been young once, so I believe you will definitely understand."

"Understand?" Feng Hengkong laughed out loud furiously, and his eyes had already turned crimson-red. Two balls of Phoenix flames intensely swayed in his pupils. Clearly, he had already entered a state of extreme rage. "Then if we want to kill you, I believe your Sun Moon Divine Hall will definitely understand as well!"

"Kill me? Hahahaha!" Ye Xinghan laughed out loud without a hint of fear on his expression. Instead, his face was filled with disdain and ridicule. "Alright! Then Phoenix Sect Master, why don't you try it out. Tsk tsk, I wonder just how long Divine Phoenix Sect is able to survive under the wrathful flames of our Sun Moon Divine Hall without the existence of the Divine Phoenix? Is it a year, and a month?"

Feng Hengkong's and Feng Ximing's expressions instantly changed.

"Shut up!" A Phoenix elder said sharply. "Clearly, you were the one who first dealt your deadly hands on Princess Snow, yet you actually desecrate our Lord Phoenix God with your words! Our Lord Phoenix

God is the only divine spirit in the Profound Sky Continent, and possesses an endless lifespan. It has protected our Divine Phoenix clan throughout every generation, and will exist forever! Do you really think our Divine Phoenix Sect is really afraid of your Sun Moon Divine Hall!?"

"Hahahaha... Hahahahaha..." Ye Xinghan once again burst out into an incomparably ear-piercing crazed laughter. "You people from the Divine Phoenix Sect sure are a sorry bunch, being completely fooled by your Sect Master and all. Your Phoenix God is already dead for several years. Yet, you people actually don't know about this, and still bring up your ancestor which had already died a long time ago. My front teeth is about to fall from all this laughter, hahahaha... If you don't believe me, you can try asking your Sect Master."

"You... You're basically speaking utter nonsense, a pack of rubbish!" The crowd of Phoenix elders were all trembling from the anger, however, Ye Xinghan's arrogant demeanor and relaxed tone, were unable to cast away the doubts in their hearts. And, when their eyes turned towards Feng Hengkong, they realized that his expression was ashen, yet, he still did not refute a single word, causing their hearts to tremble even more.

Could it be... The Lord Phoenix God has really...

"The news of your Phoenix God's death, was personally told to me by your own Great Elder Feng Feiyan." Ye Xinghan said sinisterly. "The people of our Four Great Sacred Grounds had received this piece of news since two years ago, it's laughable that the people of your own sect are unaware of it, and are still living in a sorrowful false image. Why don't all of you think about this carefully? If your so-called Phoenix God isn't dead, then why did your Great Elder want to defect to our Sun Moon Divine Hall?"

"When your Phoenix God isn't dead, we will still give a certain degree of respect. In regards to a Divine Phoenix Sect without its Phoenix God, heheh..." Ye Xinghan curled his lips. "It's time for the word 'Divine' to be removed. Forget about resisting against our Sun Moon

Divine Hall, you people basically hold no qualifications for us to even look at you. In a situation such as this, seeing that I have my eyes on your Princess Snow, it's considered a blessing to your entire sect! Not only are you people not showing your appreciation, you actually want to kill me? Phoenix Sect Master, why don't you actually try killing me then!!"

Ye Xinghan's speech was like a poisonous blade, which ruthlessly pierced into every single Divine Phoenix Sect member's soul, causing deep fear to reveal on their faces. With trembling voices, they looked towards Feng Hengkong. "Sect Master, is what he said... true? Has the Lord Phoenix God already... already..."

The Divine Phoenix, was the ancestor of Divine Phoenix Sect, and was even more so, the backing, faith, and pillar of spiritual support of the entire sect. If this pillar were to collapse, a large half of Divine Phoenix Sect would collapse as well. Not only would their deterrent power steeply fall, the hearts of the entire sect would be in a huge mess as well. However, at this moment, this matter could no longer be concealed. Feng Hengkong raised his head, after a deep sigh, he said. "In regards to the matters of the Lord Phoenix Sect..."

"Which lowly junior dares to slander about this god's death!?"

A mighty and calm voice which faintly carried a hint of anger, suddenly sounded from the distant blue skies. It was clearly sent into every one of their ears, and then, carrying a penetrative force which could not be resisted against, it resounded in their souls, blood, and bones... through every single corner of their bodies.

This voice shook all of the bodies of the people present. At the same time, a boundless, heaven-toppling aura descended, as though it had enveloped the entire sky and earth. Under this majestic aura, the bodies of everyone stiffened and their hearts tightened. Even someone as strong as Gu Cang, was feeling as though he was as small as a grain of sand at the base of a mountain.

Feng Hengkong raised his head. After a moment of shock, his body

shivered from the excitement. "This... This voice and strength is... is..."

At this moment, two long and narrow golden streaks of light suddenly appeared in the distant blue skies. Soon after, like a pair of slightly closed eyes, these two long golden streaks of light slowly opened... Two incomparably huge golden eyes, which looked as though they were embedded onto the sky, opened.

Phoenix eyes!!

=====

Chapter 471 – Change in the Sky (1)

“Lord...”

“Lord Phoenix God!!”

Even prince and elder class people within Divine Phoenix Sect would rarely hear its voice or see its true appearance. There were even some who had never seen it in their entire lives. This was precisely the moment in which everyone all thought that their Phoenix God had passed away, when their hearts were stricken with terror. Yet when the Phoenix God suddenly appeared in the most straightforward of manner and thoroughly destroyed the “rumors”, many Phoenix elders were pleasantly surprised and moved to the point where they kneeled onto the ground, worshipping with their faces looking up at the sky.

The Divine Phoenix’s might enveloped the entire Divine Phoenix City, and from every corner of Divine Phoenix City, its enormous pair of golden eyes could be seen in the blue skies above. In an instant, all Phoenix disciples fell to their knees and looked upwards, their bodies trembling all over in excitement. A large majority of profound practitioners in Divine Phoenix City also involuntarily kneeled. Under the pressure of the Phoenix Spirit’s might, they all felt as though their blood had almost solidified.

As for Feng Hengkong, his shock was far greater. Because he was one of the few who knew that the Divine Phoenix had passed away, and had personally seen the Divine Phoenix fade away. Seeing those enormous golden pupils in the air caused him to take a long time to recover back from his shock. He simply couldn’t believe his eyes. He finally regained his senses after a long while and slowly kneeled.

“Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s Gu Cang greets Venerable Phoenix God.” Gu Cang bowed, and executed a junior’s courtesy of respect. Spiritual Master Gu Cang had long since passed the age of a thousand, but in front of the Divine Phoenix, he indeed could only be

regarded as a junior.

Ling Kun and Ji Qianrou also respectfully saluted. In front of the Divine Phoenix, forget about them, even if it were Saint Emperor, Sovereign of the Seas, Heavenly Monarch and Sword Master-level characters, they would also not dare be rash. Because in the Profound Sky Continent, the Divine Phoenix was the only one who had stepped into the legendary Divine Profound Realm; the genuine supreme highest myth-like existence.

"Impossible... this is impossible!" Ye Xinghan's eyes widened as he looked at the golden pupils in the sky with incredibility: "This Divine Phoenix... is obviously already dead!"

These golden colored eyes could be an illusion, and even the voice could be faked, but the power coming from the Divine Phoenix absolutely could not be faked. Because this aura of strength was even more terrifying than Ye Meixie, his father, the Heavenly Monarch's aura; it was the might of a god that absolutely couldn't be imitated by anyone.

The Divine Phoenix's voice came from above the blue sky. Each word all shook everyone's soul: "This god had only napped for a few years, yet someone actually dares to be this impudent to my Divine Phoenix Sect! And even dares to heavily injure my personal succeeding disciple. How audacious!"

The personal succeeding disciple mentioned by the Divine Phoenix was naturally Feng Xue'er.

The Divine Phoenix's rage pressed down from above, keeping everyone quiet out of fear. The enormous golden pupils suddenly flickered at this time as a scarlet red Phoenix Fire Ring instantly descended from the sky, encircling Ye Xinghan. The Phoenix Fire Ring immediately combusted violently, firmly locking Ye Xinghan within.

These were Phoenix flames that came from the Divine Phoenix; its

frightfulness and temperature caused those few from the Sacred Grounds to turn pale with horror. Gu Cang, Ling Kun, and Ji Qianrou all retreated at the same time, covering more than one hundred meters of distance. As for the Ye Xinghan who was surrounded by Phoenix flames, though he had not been touched, it was still as though he had fallen into a lava hell as the clothes on his body instantly ignited. Deep terror was revealed on Ye Xinghan's face. He had no doubt that once those Phoenix flames approached, he would turn into ashes in a mere breaths.

In this world, those who were brave enough to kill him were but a few... However, the Divine Phoenix was definitely one amongst them! It was someone that could even kill his father. And because of his behavior and ravings earlier, it wanting to kill him was normal.

In the face of the threat of death, Ye Xinghan finally began to fear. He pressed the ignited Phoenix flames on his body down in a fluster, and tried to exude calm: "Venerable Phoenix God, please calm your anger. This junior definitely did not have the intention to offend Venerable Phoenix God. My father, Ye Meixie had also always warned this junior to never be disrespectful to Venerable Phoenix God... This junior had only heard rumors within the wind and thought that Venerable Phoenix God had already departed this world, which was why this junior had impulsively acted unwisely. This junior wishes that Venerable Phoenix God would be merciful and spare junior this time. This junior will certainly be deeply grateful, and never do this again..."

In order to protect his life, Ye Xinghan had no choice but to say the words "Ye Meixie".

Ling Kun's complexion unceasingly fluctuated, but nevertheless still came forth and said sincerely: "Venerable Phoenix God, please calm your anger. After all, Young Hall Master Ye is still young. Even though his actions today were despicable, the young are always impulsive, and it isn't that unpardonable. Moreover, Princess Snow is still perfectly fine, so there hasn't been any grave consequences. Sun

Moon Divine Hall and Divine Phoenix Sect had always minded their own business, but if Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Hall Master were truly to be buried here, I'm afraid... I hope Venerable Phoenix God can reconsider."

Whoosh!!

Just as Ling Kun's words fell, the Phoenix flames encircling Ye Xinghan suddenly rose, pouncing onto Ye Xinghan's body. Before anyone had time to turn pale with fright, the Phoenix flames had already died out. Yet the force of impact had not weakened as it knocked Ye Xinghan flying.

Ye Xinghan rolled on the ground as he spat out four huge mouthfuls of blood. His face was as white as paper, and he laid on the floor, paralyzed for a long time. The Divine Phoenix's sharp cold voice came from overhead: "Hmph! Ye Meixie has visited this god two times within this millennium, so we can be considered to be in friendly terms. On behalf of Ye Meixie and Sun Moon Divine Hall, this god will spare your life this one time! Get out of Phoenix City immediately, and never enter ever again. If you dare to take even half a step into Phoenix City... this god will personally exterminate you!"

"Why haven't you screamed yet?!"

Every one of the Divine Phoenix's words were filled with an incredibly heavy imposingness and deterrence. Ye Xinghan crawled up with a hand covering his chest and turned around to leave in an incomparably miserable manner. He didn't even dare to reveal his resentment.

The reason why he had personally come to Divine Phoenix Empire was for Feng Xue'er. He was originally filled with complete confidence and thought that everything was within the palms of his hands, but in the end, he had actually ended worse off when trying to gain an advantage. He had not obtained Feng Xue'er. Yue Ji, Mei Ji, and his important tool Feng Feiyan had all died within the Primordial

Profound Ark. He had first been made fun of by Ji Qianrou, then struck injured by the Divine Phoenix, and he also heavily offended Gu Cang. Then, he had been transformed into an incomparably wretched state in front of the entire Divine Phoenix Sect. He had lost all his dignity... In the end, he had even found out that even the news of the Divine Phoenix being dead was also false!

As the stately Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, under the suppression of the Divine Phoenix, he left like a stray dog while carrying heavy injuries. Not one member of Divine Phoenix Sect was not overwhelmed with excitement. As for Gu Cang, Ji Qianrou, and Ling Kun, their expressions had become extremely complex... They had actually been ninety percent sure of the news that the Divine Phoenix had died, with only ten percent of doubt. It was only today however, did they find out that it was only a rumor... Or perhaps it had all along been a deliberate facade constructed by the Divine Phoenix.

At this time, all three of their bodies stiffened. It was as though a incomparably heavy mountain was suppressing them. Whether their body or aura, none could move a single step. Because the Divine Phoenix's attention had now focused on their bodies.

"Did you three Sacred Grounds also believe that this god had already died?"

Spiritual Master Gu Cang sighed, and answered in a voice that could be considered to be rather calm: "I am ashamed. My Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had indeed heard such rumors and mostly believed it. Only today did I find out that Venerable Phoenix God is well. This Gu is now greatly reassured. I believe that Lord Saint Emperor will also be greatly comforted upon hearing this news."

"This god is a divine spirit of the Phoenix and is one with the world. As long as the world has not perished, this god will never disappear! Even if this entire Profound Sky Continent is destroyed, this god still won't die! You three are guests from afar, so whether or not you wish to leave is up to you, but my Divine Phoenix Sect's dignity is not

allowed to be struck.”

“Wouldn’t dare, wouldn’t dare.” Ling Kun promptly said while bowing. The suppression he felt from the Divine Phoenix far surpassed Sword Master Xuanyuan Wentian.

“Hengkong, bring Xue’er to this god’s place.”

Once the Divine Phoenix finished speaking, those two golden eyes slowly closed before disappearing from the skies above.

“Well met, Lord Phoenix God.” Loudly chorused the many Phoenix disciples, but they still were on their knees and didn’t get up for a long time.

“Ming’er, deal with the aftermaths for me.” Feng Hengkong simply threw down a command before swiftly flying toward the Phoenix God Great Hall with the still unconscious Feng Xue’er.

Once the Divine Phoenix left, that omnipresent feeling of suppression had subsequently disappeared. Spiritual Master Gu Cang let out a small breath of relief, and said toward Feng Xiechen: “Fourteenth Prince, may I trouble you to bring this Gu to his inferior disciple?”

Spiritual Master Gu Cang actively taking the initiative to talk to him terrified Feng Xichen, and he promptly replied: “Yes, Senior Gu, please come this way.”

The appearance of the Phoenix Spirit shocked the entire Divine Phoenix City. Very quickly, this sensation quickly spread throughout the entire Divine Phoenix Empire. Within Divine Phoenix City, discussions of the appearance of the Phoenix Spirit lasted throughout the entire day. Its degree of enthusiasm had even suppressed the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament and the Primordial Profound Ark.

At present, the Four Great Sacred Grounds ought to also have received news that the Phoenix Spirit had never passed away.

At the same time in which the spirits of Divine Phoenix Nation's citizens were raised up high, a certain news had drenched every citizen of Blue Wind Nation inside Divine Phoenix City with cold water, and coldly pierced their souls.

The Yun Che who had defeated ten of Divine Phoenix Sect's prodigious disciples alone, who had acquired an unprecedented first place for Blue Wind Nation in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, was eternally dead within the Primordial Profound Ark during his rescue of Princes Snow.

When Ling Jie, who had run back from outside Phoenix City in high spirits to return to Blue Wind Nation together with Yun Che, received this news, he stood there, stupefied on the spot as though he had been struck by lightning. He stood motionless for a very long time, as if he had become a soulless statue.

Time quickly moved from early morning to afternoon. The continuously noisy Divine Phoenix City had also finally quietened down. Feng Ximing hastily rushed in the emperor's bedchambers of Divine Phoenix Empire, and impatiently asked: "Royal father, has Xue'er awakened yet? And it seems like Lord Phoenix God actually has not died yet; could it be a deliberate facade of dying made by Lord Phoenix God to see the Four Great Sacred Grounds' reactions, while also trying to tempt out those disloyal within the sect?"

"No..." Feng Hengkong's voice was incomparably calm. He turned around with an desolate face: "Lord Phoenix God had died three years ago, it was not a facade... everything today, was the facade."

"Wh... what?" Feng Ximing instantly held his breath.

"The Lord Phoenix God that appeared today was only an illusion of a god left behind by Lord Phoenix God with the last of its strength before its death. It was a precaution in case its death was revealed,

in order to prevent disaster from coming to Divine Phoenix Sect... The final force left behind by Lord Phoenix God has now completely disappeared. It telling us to Phoenix God Great Hall was to use the last of its spirit voice to tell us this." Feng Hengkong said solemnly.

Feng Ximing's expression was lifeless. Silent for a long time, it wasn't until quite a while did he finally speak while sighing: "Lord Phoenix God is farsighted and wise, to have already anticipated everything to this day... At the moment, the entire world, including the Four Great Sacred Grounds are all certain that the Divine Phoenix still exists. With Lord Phoenix God's deterrence, the Four Sacred Grounds definitely would not dare to rush at our Divine Phoenix Sect again."

"Paper would never be able to cover fire. Even though we are quite stable now, the death of the Divine Phoenix is fact. This will inevitably leak out someday." Feng Hengkong tightened his brows as his expression became more and more resolute: "Ming'er, you have also seen it today. If not for the Divine Phoenix's existence, see how the Four Sacred Grounds hold our Divine Phoenix Sect in contempt! Now that we don't have the Divine Phoenix, and since Xue'er is only sixteen... Before Xue'er fully matures, the only ones we can rely on are ourselves! We must grow stronger faster, in the shortest time possible."

"Royal father is saying..."

Feng Hengkong narrowed his eyes as he said faintly: "We have to obtain Blue Wind Nation's huge hidden Purple Crystal Mine! Spirit Earth Hall's scouted information has said that hidden within it, are a great amount of Purple Veined Divine Crystals! If that is true, then it will greatly assist our sect!"

"Starting tomorrow, ready the entire army! After three months, march into Blue Wind Nation! Within three years, be sure to capture all of Blue Wind's territories at full strength!"

=====

Chapter 472 – Change in the Sky (2)

Bringing Xia Yuanba, Gu Cang flew into the air, and turned towards Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. Their speed wasn't quick, and on the way back, the two of them were oddly silent. There was neither joy nor sadness on Xia Yuanba's face, and his body hadn't moved since the very beginning. There wasn't even the slightest of change in his expression. He simply stared frontwards the entire time, like a wooden puppet which had lost its soul.

Gu Cang constantly glanced at Xia Yuanba, and occasionally sighed in his heart. After a long while, he finally spoke out. "Yuanba, you have already done your best. The matter has passed, so you should stop being depressed and blaming yourself."

Xia Yuanba's expression was as stiff as before, and did not have any sort of reaction.

"Haah." Spiritual Master Gu Cang let out a long sigh, and said. "I know that all you desire right now is to exact revenge for Yun Che, however, you have forcefully awakened the energy source within your profound veins, causing an unbearable load on your profound veins which have yet to fully mature. For at least two years, you will be unable to use even the slightest bit of your profound energy. In this period of time, you have to cast away unnecessary thoughts, and have a calm and peaceful rest... After all, Ye Xinghan is the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall. If you wish to exact revenge, even if you throw aside the countless intricate relationships between Absolute Monarch Sanctuary and Sun Moon Divine Hall, it's still an impossible matter."

Xia Yuanba still did not react in the slightest.

Two years ago, at the Heavenly Sword Villa, when he thought that Yun Che died to save him, he broke out into a loud wail, and his mind was at the verge of collapse. However, this time, he did not shed a tear, nor did he even have an excessive reaction. To the point

where even after exactly half a day had past, he did not utter a single word. It was frightening how quiet he was.

At this moment, he finally moved. Raising his hand, he slowly pressed it against his own chest, as he let out a hoarse and quiet voice. "Master, this disciple wishes to go into closed-door training for three years."

"Closed-door training for three years?" Spiritual Master Gu Cang revealed a shocked expression. However, when he saw the position where his arm was placed on, light swirled in his eyes, and he suddenly said. "Could it be that there's some sort of change in your profound veins?"

Xia Yuanba did not reply.

Spiritual Master Gu Cang paused for a moment. However, he still nodded. "Since that is what you wish for, naturally, your teacher will not disagree to it. Let's talk about all these matters again after returning to the Sanctuary."

As Xia Yuanba had finally spoken up, Spiritual Master Gu Cang could finally put his mind at ease, and his flying speed had evidently increased. Truthfully speaking, Spiritual Master Gu Cang did not know if he should be worried or joyful. After his re-encounter with Yun Che, Xia Yuanba had demonstrated a completely different personality, becoming especially warm and energetic. This was exactly opposite to the heart a Tyrannical Emperor needed, which caused him to worry if Xia Yuanba's progress would stop, or even regress because of this.

Now, Yun Che's death in the Primordial Profound Ark had given Xia Yuanba a heavy blow, and a hatred that sunk deep into his bones. As he harbored this guilt and hatred, vengeance had become his greatest wish... Currently, from Xia Yuanba, who was no longer able to use his profound energy, Gu Cang could clearly sense that intense hatred which even he was a little frightened of. And this monstrous hatred, would ruthlessly stimulate him as he crazily chased after

enough power to exact his revenge, and it would cause him to become even silent and colder.

All these would greatly stimulate the growth of his Tyrannical Emperor's heart, and at the same time, quicken the awakening of his Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins.

However, to have a genius, whose future was limitless, fall just like this, he could not help but feel that it was a great pity.

As though he had instantly lost all of the strength in his body, Cang Wanhe slowly, and powerlessly sat down on his dragon throne with a completely pale expression.

"Has this matter... already been confirmed?" Cang Wanhe said with an aghast look.

"Yes... Till the disappearance of the Primordial Profound Ark, Prince Consort did not make his way out. After that, Divine Phoenix Sect had made a confirmation to the world that, in order to save Princess Snow, Prince Consort... had died within. Currently, all seven nations should already be aware of this matter." The eunuch beside Cang Wanhe said with a pained look. He faltered for a while, before he finally said. "Your majesty, please suppress your grief... There's another matter, this servant... this servant do not know if he should bring up."

"Speak..."

"Yes... Earlier, within an hour ago, Navy Tide, Black Fiend, Grand Asura, Sunflower Dew, and Divine Incense, these five nations had each transmitted us with messages, cancelling the visits that they had made reservations for yesterday." That eunuch glanced at Cang Wanhe's face, and once again hurriedly said. "However, your majesty, there's no need to be furious. Since Prince Consort died in order to save Princess Snow, the Divine Phoenix Empire will definitely bestow

us with deep gratitude. Probably, the Divine Phoenix Emperor himself will make a personal visit.”

Cang Wanhe let out a long sigh. Closing his eyes, he waved his hand. “You can step down for now. Let me have some peace and quiet for a moment... In regards this matter, do not let Yue’er know about it... Go step down.”

The moment Cang Wanhe’s words fell, suddenly, outside the hall, a clear sound of someone falling onto the ground resounded. Right after, the cry of a palace maid could be heard. “Ah... Princess Cang Yue! Men, hurry over! Princess Cang Yue has fainted...”

Cang Wanhe’s heart shook, as he suddenly stood up, and charged out hurriedly. “Yue’er!!”

Before this year, no one would have expected, even Yun Che himself wouldn’t have expected that a single person’s death could shake an entire country. Currently, after the spread of the news of his death in the Primordial Profound Ark, the entire Blue Wind Nation was shaken because of it.

And, it was a quake so extremely severe... which was enough to decide Blue Wind Nation’s future.

Heavenly Sword Villa.

As the curtains of the night fell, Ling Tianni floated in the sky above the Sword Management Terrace. With his head raised, he looked towards the night sky which was filled with stars. More than ten thousand flying swords were dancing in his surroundings, yet, not a single one of them could approach thirty meters from him.

With light movements, Ling Yuefeng arrived next to Ling Tianni, and greeted him respectfully. “Father.”

“Where did Jie’er go?” Ling Tianni calmly said, his voice was filled with

indescribable vicissitude and loneliness.

"Jie'er is currently in Divine Phoenix Empire, there's still a need for a few more days before his return." Ling Yuefeng said. He stared at Ling Tianni's expression, and continued. "Father, do you have some important matters to discuss?"

"Haah..." Ling Tianni let out a long sigh. "The sky under this Blue Wind Nation, is about to completely change."

Ling Yuefeng's heart skipped a beat. "What does father mean by this?"

"In these coming days, make sufficient preparations. When Jie'er returns, have Yufeng bring Yun'er and himself to reside at Mighty Heavenly Sword Region for several years. Only have them return once they have completely mastered Heaven's Might Absolute Sword. In this period of time, our Heavenly Sword Villa shall temporarily close its doors as well." Ling Tianni said with a heavy tone.

"Close our doors? Why do we have to close our doors?" Ling Yuefeng exclaimed.

"Because we are unable to prevent the heavenly change that will occur to Blue Wind Nation this time, nor should we even try to interfere. What we're able to do, is to only spare ourselves, and protect our own safety." Ling Tianni said with a sigh.

"This... What huge matter is about to happen? I plead father to express it more explicitly." Ling Yuefeng said with a shocked and doubtful expression.

"Not long later, you will understand. After closing our doors, even if a storm occurs in the outside world, ignore it. Do not meet with any outside guests either, especially the Blue Wind Imperial Family and Frozen Cloud Asgard... If they were to come to our doorsteps to plead for help, do not ever answer them. Remember this!"

Ling Yuefeng's expression revealed a deep surprise. Looking at Ling

Tianni's stern face which was filled with deep helplessness, he could only give a gentle nod. "Yes."

In another place, in another space.

Yun Che, whom everyone thought had died in the Primordial Profound Ark, did not actually die... Instead, the current him, was even more awake than any moment before.

That moment when the Primordial Profound Ark disappeared above the Divine Phoenix City's skies, the incomparably violent spatial turbulence assaulted, causing his body to instantly feel as though it was being stabbed and sliced by countless metal blades. Even he, who possessed an extremely strong willpower, roared out in pain. Space was crazily being broken, twisted, and sliced, and his body was being broken, twisted, and sliced as well. His body was instantly completely unidentifiable with his flesh and blood. The terrifying tearing force that was enveloping his entire body caused all the bones in his body to feel as though they were being wrangled.

The feeling of death approaching had never been so clear. However, due to the instincts of wanting to survive, Yun Che struggled out all of his profound energy and willpower, to release the Sealing Moon Locking Sun barrier.

Cht... Cht... Cht...

The strong barrier built by "Sealing Moon Locking Sun" allowed Yun Che to calm down. However, the barrier was still being greatly twisted and broken by the spatial turbulence, and it could completely collapse at any moment. At this moment, Jasmine's incomparably serious voice resounded next to Yun Che's ears. "You'd best listen to me well! The Primordial Profound Ark is currently in the state of a spatial transfer. It's unknown how long this state will last. Most probably, it may have to take dozens, or even hundreds of years. And during this process, the Primordial Profound Ark will be

filled with spatial turbulences at every moment. In these lasting spatial turbulences, even a high-ranked Monarch will be unable to last for a very long time, and be torn into ashes.”

“But you still have the slightest bit of hope to survive! Because you possess the Dragon God’s body. Your body, especially your bones, cannot be completely destroyed that easily. The most important factor is that you possess the Great Way of the Buddha! Although spatial turbulences are scary, the force of nature contained within the spatial turbulences is several times more than regular environments! If you wish to live, then circulate the Great Way of the Buddha with all your strength, absorb as much force of nature within the turbulence as much as you can, in order to restore your body and recover your profound energy!”

“If your restoration speed can barely match up to your rate of being damaged, or even surpasses it, you will be able to live! This is your only hope!”

Jasmine’s voice caused Yun Che, who was initially already quietly waiting for death to arrive, to instantly open his eyes widely... The things in his line of sight had already completely twisted, and in the twisted space, his own flesh and blood were floating about. His willpower which had initially sank, underwent an incomparably intense awakening due to his instinct to survive. He growled, gathered all of his concentration, and crazily circulated the Great Way of the Buddha.

A golden whirlwind appeared above Yun Che’s head. The whirlwind slowly began to turn, and then, its turning became even quicker and quicker. In the end, a small figure of a golden-colored pagoda clearly appeared. In the turbulent space, the golden-colored pagoda, however, did not have any trace of being distorted.

The golden-colored pagoda slowly spiraled above Yun Che’s head, and then, it began to absorb the surrounding force of nature at an intense speed... In the first instant, Yun Che’s eyes were instantly filled with joy, because what Jasmine had said for completely correct.

The force of nature carried within the spatial turbulence was much denser than he thought it would be. Under the absorption of the Great Way of the Buddha Art, it was similar to a flowing river being poured into his body.

In an instant, as though it had been completely ignited as well, the breath of life in Yun Che's body became an intense and boundless flame. At a speed visible to the naked eyes, the parts of his body where he had received serious injuries at, were being restored at an incredible speed. The wounds on Yun Che's body were incomparably severe, and not a single perfect spot could be found on his entire body. However, with the continuous circulation of the Great Way of the Buddha, although his body was enduring incomparably heavy pain at every second, with every second, he was recovering at extreme-speed as well... Gradually, ten breaths passed, a hundred breaths passed... an hour passed... two hours passed... six hours passed... a day passed...

Yun Che was still stained by blood on his entire body, however, ever since the start, the wounds did not continue to intensify. In regards to Yun Che, he was still clearly alive... In this Primordial Profound Ark where the force of nature was flourishing to a frightening extent, the astonishing restorative power brought by the Great Way of the Buddha had actually basically tied with the injuries created by this turbulence! This allowed him to live for exactly a day in this Primordial Profound Ark that was filled with terrifying spatial turbulences!

And the number of times his body was torn, restored, torn, and restored on this day... was so high that it could hardly be calculated. His profound energy had also been greatly consumed and greatly restored to maintain his life force in this entire process... In this cycle with terrifyingly high frequency, his body and his profound energy were being refined using an inconceivable method as well...

=====

Chapter 473 – Realm of the Sky Profound

“Hmph, still not too bad, you’re unexpectedly still alive.”

Although Jasmine’s voice was indifferent as usual, in her heart, she was extremely relieved.

Yun Che’s face was entirely smeared with blood, his expression could not even be made out. On the top of his head, a dim golden colored pagoda slowly rotated continuously, absorbing the energy of the heavens and earth without rest... and Yun Che would not allow it to rest, if not, within a few short breaths, he would be torn into pieces by the spatial turbulence.

In the recent past, there were many people who, due to various reason, were unable to leave the Primordial Profound Ark. Within them, there were Overlords, and even a Monarch. Amongst the Overlords, even if they used their full strength, they were unable to resist for more than three hundred breaths. And the Monarch could only resist for tens of days before being torn to shreds. To resist the spatial turbulence for a short amount of time was not an issue for Overlords and Monarchs, but even the strongest Overlords and Monarch would not be able resist this kind of unceasing disaster level storm forever.

However, Yun Che, whose strength was far inferior to a Overlord’s could actually forcibly survive... even though it was just surviving with incomparable pain and misery.

Yun Che had practically gnashed his teeth into pieces. It was as if he was existing in a thorny purgatory, the spatial turbulence tore and twisted at every single part of his body, if it were someone else with weaker willpower, even if he could resist to the end, he would rather die to escape such torture.

Time continued to flow in the purgatory-like spatial storm, only that Yun Che had long since been unable to feel the flow of time... Under

the violent suppression of his willpower by resisting the pain and torture, he was completely unaware that an entire month had already passed.

Within the entire month, the congealing of his consciousness, the rotation of the pagoda and the releasing of profound energy did not stop for even half a breath. If he was told that he had survived under such circumstances for an entire month and still was not dead, even he would not believe that.

In the past month, his blood had continuously splattered, then regenerated; his skin and flesh continuously disintegrated, then regenerated; his profound strength was continuously consumed and recovered... The frequency in which his body was tempered with in the past month completely surpassed the combined number of times from his two lives.

An exquisite figure dressed in red stood in front of Yun Che, for the past month, Jasmine had not returned to the Sky Poison Pearl, but instead observed every little change in Yun Che quietly. When Yun Che had survived to the tenth day, she was already sufficiently shocked, believing that he would not be able to resist any further, yet Yun Che's limits had once again exceeded her expectations. Yun Che's willpower was incomparably tenacious... to add on, he was bestowed the Dragon God's Soul!

Yun Che was not aware of his changes, but Jasmine could see it clearly. As time passed, Yun Che's resistive capabilities would gradually decrease, regardless of the rate at which protective profound energy was being released or the rate at which the pagoda revolved, they were continuously getting weaker, yet the spatial turbulence did not show any signs of weakening... However, Yun Che still maintained his state and did not die, maintaining an equilibrium of incurring damage and regenerating.

That was because his bodily strength, along with the density of his profound strength was astonishingly undergoing an explosive rise during this whole process.

"Within a month, the density of profound strength has been raised by no less than three times. The body's continual destruction and regeneration has stimulated the Dragon God's Marrow, allowing the density of blood within the Dragon God's bloodline to become more concentrated, while the Dragon God's aura from his body has become more concentrated by almost two times... this is more exaggerated than what I expected."

Jasmine looked at Yun Che and murmured to herself softly. She subsequently laughed faintly and muttered: "Looks like my choice was really not wrong."

However, even with the existence of the Dragon God's Soul, within that one month, Yun Che's limits were thoroughly pushed.

Yun Che's body started to sway violently, the rotation of the pagoda above his head was getting slower and slower. Ultimately, the golden radiance of the pagoda dimmed, as if it would disappear at any time.

Jasmine's eyebrows twitched and said with a stern voice, tone and attitude resembling that of a master: "Yun Che, listen carefully, this is a test of your willpower, if you don't want to die, then you had better give it your all and press on. If you manage to press on for one year, then there is a chance that your body will become accustomed to the spatial turbulence in this place and will not be affected anymore, at that time, your body will be as resilient as a Monarch's! Not many people in the Profound Sky Continent will be able to harm you! But if you cannot press on, then you will die!"

Jasmine's voice entered Yun Che's ears with impeccable clarity, his tottering willpower barely strengthened by a bit under the stimulation from Jasmine's voice; the pagoda above his head once again flickered weakly, emitting a golden radiance. After a short while, he said with an indistinct voice: "One... year..."

Jasmine said coldly: "To press on for one year under such circumstances, it looks like it's impossible for you. However, among the most powerful people I know, including my older brother, in

order to become powerful, they experienced torment which was a thousand times tougher and more cruel than this, so much so that you are not even able to imagine it! Yet the reason why the strong are strong, is exactly because they are able to endure what normal people aren't able to. They are able to accomplish with their willpower what normal people think is impossible!"

"If you choose not to do your utmost to endure just because of 'impossible', 'despair' or 'intolerable pain', then not only will you not be able to become a genuinely strong person, you will even die here! You won't even have a future!"

Jasmine's words struck his heart, violently stimulating Yun Che's mental state, awakening his obstinate nature and pride. With an oppressive roar, he instantly opened his eyes which were closed for an entire month forcefully, his eyes were astonishingly the color of blood.

The profound strength which was almost entirely depleted rose intensely once again. The pagoda released an intense golden radiance, extensively absorbing the energy of the heavens and earth, allowing his utterly damaged body to quickly enter a state of regeneration.

Yun Che's condition allowed the look in Jasmine's eyes to soften immediately. However, she knew that this was simply a temporary spike due to Yun Che being stimulated by her words, and would very quickly be on the verge of collapse... and in fact, it would be a more serious collapse. Based on Yun Che's own foundation and strength, to be able to endure till such a state was already an incredible miracle. To want to endure in such a manner for a year, it would be even harder than ascending the heavens... Yet, what Jasmine was waiting for, was an opportunity which ought to appear.

At this point, Yun Che suddenly felt that the profound energy that he was releasing with all his might was suddenly cut off as he totally lost control of the profound energy within his profound veins. Stirring chaotically, even the profound energy in his body was not

rushing forth, instead, it was being pulled back into his profound veins as if something was drawing it back. All the profound energy within his profound veins congealed to form a giant cyclone, rotating with incomparable violence.

Yun Che's state of mind was violently moved: This is...

Bang!

A chaotic cyclone suddenly exploded, at the same time, a star-like resplendent red-blue radiance glittered within Yun Che's profound veins. Subsequently, waves of incomparably thick profound aura roiled from deep within his profound veins, rushing rapidly to every tendon of his body like a flood. His profound veins started to rapidly stretch, his meridians started to shrink and expand from the excess profound aura, as if they were dancing in excitement.

The profound aura of the Earth Profound Realm would appear as murky white color, yet at this moment, Yun Che's was actually a field of dense, pure white! Just like a flowing white broth, its density was much stronger than the past by who knew how many times. The protective profound energy on the exterior of his body also expanded and grew stronger by several times! This allowed the damage and pressure experienced by Yun Che's body to drop steeply; the rate at which his body recovered immediately suppressed the rate at which he was getting damaged.

The red-blue radiance within his profound veins reflected onto each other, becoming even brighter. Yun Che was initially utterly exhausted, his consciousness which was on the verge of collapsing was now incomparably sober, as if he was reborned. He felt his profound veins, profound aura, body and consciousness transform as his heart brimmed with immense surprise. As he breathed out, his perception to the entire world had distinctly changed, even the surrounding spatial turbulence was not all that scary.

Breakthrough!!

A breakthrough from the Earth Profound Realm to the Sky Profound Realm! Within this nightmarish spatial disaster, under such hellishly terrifying tempering, within a short month's time, Yun Che's profound strength broke through from the Earth Profound Realm to officially enter the Sky Profound Realm!

Yun Che quickly calmed his state of mind from his ecstatic state to fully resist the spatial turbulence. He, who had broke through an entire realm had completely recovered his profound and mental energy. Being at peak condition, from being able to barely resist with the Great Way of the Buddha in the Earth Profound Realm, his current condition could be said to be effortless. The bloodstains on his body gradually decreased, slowly revealing his face and body... in the end, just as the bloodstains and scars were appearing, they quickly vanished.

Although in that entire process, Yun Che still endured what was just as good as being hacked into ten thousand pieces at every breath, which similarly required him to unceasingly give in his utmost concentration, it couldn't be compared to before.

"Not bad, it came a little earlier than I expected." Jasmine muttered. Subsequently, her lips curled into a strange smirk: "Looks like it's time to increase the difficulty a little!"

Jasmine raised her tender, white palm, grabbed at the space, a spatial tear of several meters appeared in front of Jasmine's body. After a regular spatial tear appeared, it would usually rapidly disappear, yet for this spatial tear, not to even mention disappearing, it did not even have any traces of shrinking. Jasmine's body flashed, stepping into the spatial tear, thereafter, the spatial tear suddenly vanished.

And all of this was not noticed by Yun Che who was fully concentrating on resisting against the spatial turbulence. Jasmine would also not have allowed him to notice.

In the next instant, Jasmine's figure appeared in another location, the

surroundings were sometimes a sheet of darkness and sometimes a chaotic sheet of colors. This was the crevice in the space, it could also be called... a spatial tunnel! Ordinary people would not be able to comprehend such a thing, not to even mention going there.

In front of Jasmine, was the incomparably huge Primordial Profound Ark. It was shuttling within this mysterious spatial tunnel, unclear as to where it was boring towards. Jasmine's gaze locked onto the Primordial Profound Ark, and raised her hand. Within her palm, a red glow flashed, then lightly tapped onto the profound ark.

In front of the Primordial Profound Ark, Jasmine's body was as small as a grain of sand in the deep oceans.

Yet at that exact instant when Jasmine's palm touched the Primordial Profound Ark, the entire Primordial Profound Ark was instantly enveloped by a red glow. Under an indescribably immense force, the speed at which it was shuttling through space abruptly increased... the spatial turbulence within, also instantly intensified by a large degree.

"This is more like it."

Jasmine's little hand slashed once again, and another spatial tear appeared in front of her body. Just as she wanted to enter it, a demonic voice suddenly came from all directions: "Kekekeke, a human actually dares to enter this king's territory, and it's a little doll! Keke... This king has not sampled a fresh human in several tens of thousands of years already."

Jasmine turned around slowly, her complexion still as young and delicate to the extent of excessiveness and said with completely unmatching indifference: "Universe Devouring Beast?"

The Universe Devouring Beast existed within spatial crevices, feeding on space, occasionally devouring living creatures who traveled among such spaces. It was an extremely high leveled primordial profound beast which was few in numbers.

=====

Chapter 474 – The Intensifying Rampage of the Spatial Turbulence

“To be able to survive in this place, looks like this little girl’s strength is at least at the level of a Divine Sovereign. However this is our domain, just obediently become our nourishment!!”

Another low and terrifying voice sounded out... Following that, two pairs of distorted, black eyes emerged out of the interlacing darkness and color of the realm.

Two Universe Devouring Beasts!

In the entirety of the Chaos Dimension, the number of Universe Devouring Beasts would not exceed thirty. Even if a person traveled across space millions of times, he might not encounter a Universe Devouring Beast even once. But if you met one, it would mean that you had encountered great misfortune. This was because this location was a space between dimensions, a place where it was extremely hard to release profound energy. Due to this fact, unless you were ridiculously strong, if you met a Universe Devouring Beast, your only option was to flee with all your might. However, a Universe Devouring Beast’s ability to control and interfere with spatial properties far exceeded that of other beings; it could easily cut off its targets pathways, leaving them nowhere to run. So even if the victim was not devoured by the Universe Devouring Beast, he would be engulfed and destroyed by the collapsing spatial tunnel.

And if you met two Universe Devouring Beasts at the same time, even the word “doomed” would not be adequate to describe your situation.

Facing these two feared spatial demons, Jasmine did not choose to flee. Instead her face turned cold and as she sealed up the spatial distortion, she said coldly. “Are both of you... courting death?!”

“Us... courting death? Hahahahahaha! Not once has anyone ever dared speak to this king in such a fashion... Ah I see, you are actually

a pitiful spirit with no physical body. No wonder you are able to survive for such a long time in this realm."

"Pitiful spirit". Those two words made Jasmine's starry eyes sink and immediately turn crimson. Her entire body gave off such a terrifying killing intent that even the spatial storm seemed to still for a moment. "You're... courting death!"

Jasmine extended her finger, and a ray of dazzling scarlet light shot out from her fingertip. The intensity of that light was comparable to the light of millions of gathered stars. Instantly, Jasmine's surroundings became completely silent... The entire space warped into a rapidly enlarging, all-devouring black hole.

The Universe Devouring Beasts halted their advance towards Jasmine, at the same time, gazed upon the red light which caused even space to tremble. Two pairs of savage, terrible and distorted eyes began to flinch, revealing shock and a deep terror. A trembling voice cried out, "Heaven... Heaven... Heaven Slaughter Star God!"

"Impossible... The Heaven Slaughter Star God was clearly poisoned with the Absolute God Slaying Poison which is said to cause certain death, and already fell four years ago. This isn't possible..."

"It seems like the both of you know a lot!" Jasmine's starry eyes became even colder, and the killing intent she released became so thick that it could pierce both the body and soul, "Since that is the case, then it just means that you are even more deserving of death!"

"One... Route... Heaven!!"

Her finger made a gesture in the air as her voice fell. Instantly, a scarlet line extended across the span of this bizarre realm, seeming to bisect it.

Once this scarlet line imprinted itself upon one of the Universe Devouring Beast's body, it mercilessly crossed between both its terrified eyes. In the next moment, both eyes split in two and

dissipated, as a murky black shadow completely melted into this strange dimensional crevice. This Universe Devouring Beast, which had existed for millions of years, had died without being able to utter a cry.

“Lord Star God... Mercy... Please spare me!!”

The other Universe Devouring Beast retreated in terror. Before, it still suspected that the red light was a bluff, because it knew that the one person who could use this ability had been eliminated, never to appear again. But now, after seeing its companion get obliterated within their own domain in the span of a breath, it had been scared out of its wits, and with an odd cry, fled at the greatest speeds into the deep recesses of the spatial dimension.

“Want to escape? Hmph!” Jasmine smiled in cold disdain and her fingertip once again flared with red light... But, before the scarlet light could shoot forth, her face suddenly went pale, and the gathered profound energy ray dissipated

During this short pause, the Universe Devouring Beast had already fled into the depths of the dimensional sea, disappearing without a trace.

After more than two years of dwelling within the Sky Poison Pearl and not using an ounce of profound energy, more than one-third of the Absolute God Slaying Poison within Jasmine’s body had been cleansed, and the amount of strength she could use far exceeded that of the past. However, it still had not reached the stage where she could act rashly. She immediately stopped her chase, stilled her body, quickly suppressing the poison which had almost flared up again, and once again gazed in the direction of the Primordial Profound Ark.

She forcefully pushed the Primordial Profound Ark, strengthening the spatial storm within the Ark, however she was unable to determine if Yun Che could sustain himself under the force of the spatial storm. If he could not endure it, and she was not by his side,

it would greatly increase the possibility of both their deaths.

After a short internal struggle, her worry towards Yun Che won out, and she gave up on the case, tearing open a dimensional rift which lead straight back to the interior of the Primordial Profound Ark. Before she entered the rift, a voice which could freeze one's soul spread across this peculiar realm, defying its law which negated the transmission of sound.

"If you dare to spread the news that this princess is still alive, this princess will definitely wipe out your entire Universe Devouring species!"

—————

"Ugh... ah... ahhhhh..."

After breaking through to the Sky Profound Realm, Yun Che had managed to stabilize himself within the spatial turbulence. But this respite did not last for long, as he suddenly felt the turbulence become even more wild. It was as though the light ripples on the ocean suddenly morphed into monstrous tidal waves. In the span of a few breaths, his body had once again become drenched in blood.

Yun Che once again clenched his teeth stubbornly, and grunts of extreme pain could be heard spilling out from his mouth. He circulated all the profound energy in his body, and the golden pagoda hovering over his head began to spin rapidly. The exhaustion and recovery of profound energy, along with the subsequent damaging and regeneration of his body... proceeded at a much higher pace and frequency, several times faster than what it was before. It reached a point where it was too horrible to imagine.

If Yun Che's profound energy had not undergone a massive breakthrough, he would not be able to endure for more than thirty breaths within this spatial storm, even with his Dragon God's physique and the Great Way of Buddha aiding him.

As Jasmine mutely monitored Yun Che's condition, her delicate features, as if crafted from fine jade, showed no expression. In the blink of an eye, fourteen hours had passed and Yun Che's body began to shake and twitch. The horrifying spatial turbulence had torn open his chest multiple times, almost destroying his internal organs and nearly ripping his throat apart on several occasions... Jasmine knew that Yun Che had already reached a critical point. Her eyes flashed, and a colorless light flashed forth from her hand.

Instantly, the surrounding space seemed to solidify. Following this, the spatial turbulence became noticeably gentler, and its intensity was gradually lessened to the level that it was fourteen hours ago.

As the hurricane swathing him died back down into a strong gale, Yun Che, who had always maintained a sitting posture within the spatial storm, suddenly slumped onto ground. As his body rapidly replenished his blood, he laid there taking big breaths. After a while, he reassumed his sitting posture with much difficulty. Without making a single motion, he concentrated intently and the injuries on his body began to recover.

Even though the spatial turbulence had subsided considerably, Yun Che's absorption of nature's energy had only slowed slightly. Within the gentler spatial turbulence, Yun Che used an hour to more or less recover from his wounds. And even though his profound energy was protecting him at the same time, it still recovered by half.

Yun Che opened his eyes, his gaze surveying the continuously distorting space, and he saw Jasmine looking at him expressionlessly. He took a deep breath and spoke between clenched teeth, "What... happened just now? Why did the spatial turbulence suddenly surge to such a terrifying extent?"

Jasmine blandly replied, "This Primordial Profound Ark has always been like this, for such fluctuations to occur is extremely normal. But don't rejoice yet, because another spatial turbulence of that magnitude will surely occur again... in fact it might even be more terrifying than the last. It will also last for a longer period of time.

Don't forget, the Primordial Profound Ark only appears on the Profound Sky Continent once every three hundred years, if it does not need stop to appear at other locations, so why would it need to take a full three hundred years to appear again? And while it is traveling through space in the next three hundred years, all manner of spatial turbulence could occur! Your moment of respite won't last much longer. If you don't want to die, hurry up and concentrate so you can recover your physical strength and profound energy."

During the month within the Primordial Profound Ark, every second was like hell for Yun Che. If he relaxed even a little, his body would have been torn into shreds. At this time, the state of the spatial turbulence would be tantamount to purgatory for any living being from the Profound Sky Continent. However for Yun Che, who had endured a spatial turbulence many times greater, this was like a perfect paradise. As he resisted the turbulence, he began to observe his surroundings... Even though the spatial storm was terrifying beyond compare, the walls and floor in this place did not even suffer any damage; not even the smallest of scratches could be seen. The degree of toughness of this place was, undoubtedly, extremely terrifying.

Even if Yun Che was able to withstand the spatial turbulence in this place, the walls which surrounded him, would prove to be yet another unsurpassable barrier.

Every brick and stone in this place had endured countless years of spatial storms, yet he was unable to find even the slightest of scratches.... Even if he could survive these spatial storms, how would he be able to destroy this stone door to leave this place?

That thought flashed in Yun Che's mind, but he immediately suppressed it, and fully focused his mind. He took the opportunity to recover his physical strength and profound energy while he still had the ability to resist the spatial turbulence... He would not be discouraged so easily, nor would he fall into despair. Otherwise, how could he have endured until now in this hellish place? As long as his

breath still lingered, even if he had to endure something which far exceeded the limit of ordinary humans, his will would never break.

Furthermore, now was not the time to think of a way to escape, but to put all his effort into surviving this place. Then, like Jasmine had said... bit by bit, he would adapt his body to the spatial turbulence here!

The calm of the spatial turbulence did not last long. Two hours later, it started to rage once more, and in an instant, it seemed like countless terrifying death gods were roaring towards Yun Che, using their cruel scythes to mercilessly slice apart his body. Yun Che's eyes enlarged, and with a furious roar, he released the profound energy within his profound veins to its highest degree. At the same time, the Great Way of Buddha began to revolve at the highest level as well.

He did not know when this present plight would end...

And he might even die in this place at the end of it all... However, he would never surrender his will or his body to death!

=====

Chapter 475 – The Primordial Profound Ark's Halt

This time, Yun Che endured for fourteen and a half hours.

Yun Che, who was constantly in a state of complete concentration so he could resist the spatial storm, did not notice the change in the amount of time he could hold out against it. But Jasmine had calculated it precisely; even though it was only a thirty minute increase, but it was enough to reveal that Yun Che's body and profound strength had undergone a startling number of subtle changes after he had been tempered by the last fourteen hour storm.

Once Yun Che reached critical point again, the spatial storm subsided once more.

Yun Che, who had one foot in the grave, collapsed on the floor, and began to desperately gasp for air. Then, he used forty percent of his concentration to resist the calmer spatial storm, and the other sixty to recover his profound strength and heal his wounds. Once he had recovered to a sufficient degree, the spatial turbulence started to go wild once again....

On the third try, Yun Che endured for fifteen hours!

And on the fourth, he endured close to sixteen hours....

Time, within this inescapable tiny space and a seemingly endless spatial catastrophe, slowly flowed along. In this period, Yun Che did not engage in combat with anyone, but every breath he took, was even more dangerous and life-threatening than any fight. His body had slowly become tougher and tougher each time it regenerated. He had no leisure to train his profound strength, but it experienced a startlingly explosive growth, becoming stronger and stronger as he released and recovered his profound energy at a frightening frequency.

Eight months later, Yun Che's profound strength had broken through

straight to the fifth level from the initial stage of the Sky Profound Realm... he had averaged one level every two months! This was the Sky Profound Realm we were talking about! Going from level one to level five within the Sky Profound Realm was much harder than going from the initial stage of the Elementary Stage Profound Realm to the peak of the Earth Profound Realm. This meant that the speed of his improvement in these eight months was even faster than his speed of improvement in the three and half years since he received the Evil God's Profound Veins.

This rate of improvement was enough to ceaselessly amaze and confound the greatest experts of the Sky Profound Continent.

At the same time, because Yun Che was mostly in a state where he released his profound energy at the maximum output, even though his profound energy level rose at a ferocious rate, it was especially stable and condensed. At no point of time did his profound strength experience any of the lightness or instability that normally came with a rapid increase of profound energy.

"This time, he actually endured for five days." Jasmine muttered to herself softly. Her eyes had clearly documented Yun Che's every change.

At this moment, Yun Che had once again reached to the critical point of what he could endure.

Following the substantial weakening of his profound strength and regenerative ability, Yun Che's body began to violently distort. A snapping sound was heard, and Yun Che's bones began to fracture under the might of the spatial storm, while his meridians began to rupture...

"Looks like that is about enough." Jasmine stretched out her hand, meaning to cut off a good portion of the spatial storm. At this time, Yun Che suddenly let a scream of anger; discontentment and pain ripped out from his mouth. His profound strength and spirit were supposed to be exhausted but they began to swell up fiercely as Yun

Che doggedly resisted the spatial storm's attack against his body. Jasmine's movement consequently became slower as she saw that Yun Che's body started to emit a flash of dull, profound light. She muttered to herself, saying, "Is he going to make a breakthrough again... Hm! That's not right!"

"ROOOOAR!!!!"

A low and astonishing dragon cry started to resonate from Yun Che's body, causing the space around him to tremble. As the dragon's cry resonated, the shadow of an azure dragon surfaced behind Yun Che. The dragon's shadow expanded rapidly, continuing for a full five breaths before vanishing gradually. At the same time, Jasmine could feel the presence of the Primordial Azure Dragon from Yun Che's body, albeit a presence which had seemingly entered the wilderness of death.

Crack.... Crack... Crack...

The crisp, clear sound of bones moving began to come from Yun Che's body. However this was not the sound of bones fracturing, but the sound of bones slowly regenerating. Even his flesh began to regenerate, but his spirit remained barren and weak, tottering on the brink... However, it was in this exhausted and strained spiritual state, that he tenaciously withstood the impact of the spatial storm.

"His Dragon God's bloodline has reached the concentration of one-thousandth!" Jasmine said in an astonished voice, she was far clearer than Yun Che on the significance of possessing one-thousandth of the Dragon God's bloodline. Under normal circumstances, within the body of a mortal from the lower planes, it would take many years for the tiny amount of Dragon God's marrow in Yun Che's body to just produce one drop of the Dragon God's blood. But in this Primordial Profound Ark, after having his body undergo a countless number of rebirths, while stimulating the Dragon God's marrow at the same time, with the addition of the nourishment which came from the energy of heaven and earth produced by the Great Way of Buddha, all of this combined together to increase the thickness of Yun Che's

Dragon God's blood by nearly twenty times in the span of less than a year!

The current Yun Che, even without releasing the slightest bit of profound energy, already had a physique which was strengthened to the point where his body could take an attack from a low level Throne, and basically not receive any real wounds from that strike.

"Seems like he can continue to resist for a while longer." Jasmine lowered her palm, and with eyes that rippled with red light, continued to scrutinize Yun Che, observing every single change that was happening to him.

At the beginning, she kept making plans to make Yun Che mighty, for the sole purpose of reconstituting her body. But as Yun Che's strength increased bit by bit, with a speed which far exceeded her initial calculations, a desire was unconsciously formed in her heart. The desire to see just how far this human could go before she left him... And this desire continued to grow more and more intense.

Only she herself had not noticed it yet.

Time continued to flow, and unwittingly, from the time Yun Che had entered the Primordial Profound Ark, a full eighteen months had passed.

And Yun Che had survived within the never-ceasing spatial storm for a full eighteen months.

The sounds of the spatial explosions were ear-piercingly loud, however, whether it was Yun Che or Jasmine, both had grown used to this noise. And the other thing they had grown used to was the presence of each other. The reason why Yun Che could bitterly endure all the way in this life-threatening and scary place was because he was not alone. Because while Jasmine continuously warned and scolded him... she also accompanied him and supported him. Even after meeting such disaster, there was still someone who faced it with him together, someone who time and again rescued

him from his confusion and hesitation by pointing him in the right direction.

As for Jasmine, in these past few years, only Yun Che was besides her. Even though her appearance had never changed from the time she had met Yun Che, in terms of age, she had grown from thirteen to eighteen years old. In her life, more than a quarter of her time had been spent solely with Yun Che, with even more years to come...

And because it had become habitual, and because one tended to neglect what one has become accustomed to, neither of them ever had this thought cross their mind: If one day both of them had to go their separate ways... how would that be....

"It has already been half a month." Jasmine mused as she observed Yun Che's current state, after he had achieved what could be said as yet another inexplicable breakthrough.

Yun Che had endured for a full fifteen days before his situation became precarious again. Just as Jasmine was about to obstruct the spatial storm, the entire space began to tremble fiercely, and a gigantic roar issued forth from all directions. This situation persisted for as long as ten breaths. This new permutation caused Jasmine's eyebrows to furrow, and she was about to release her aura to investigate what was happening to the Primordial Profound Ark, when all of a sudden, the spatial storm calmed down rapidly and the unceasing, fierce and wantonly destructive spatial rifts disappeared. Even the distortions in space began to shrink into small ripples before finally disappearing completely... And in the end, even the sound of the spatial explosions had completely disappeared.

Everything had become perfectly still. The spatial turbulence, in a situation where both Yun Che and Jasmine had not been prepared for, had disappeared.

And the only reason that the spatial turbulence would disappear

was that...

The Primordial Profound Ark had stopped!

"Stopped? How come it stopped?" Jasmine knit her eyebrows together, "Can it be that the Primordial Profound Ark does not only stop over in the Profound Sky Continent, but at other locations as well?"

The spatial turbulence had completely disappeared... It was not that it had subsided like before, it had completely disappeared. This change gave a jolt to Yun Che's completely fatigued spirit, but he was in a state where he was unable to speak or pay close attention to his surroundings. Instead he desperately concentrated his spirit, and started to heal his wounds using Great Way of the Buddha.

Without the presence of the spatial turbulence, the Great Way of the Buddha absorbed the energies of heaven and earth at a rate which was tens of times slower than before. Even though his recovery was much faster than a normal person, compared to the eighteen months he spent in the spatial storm, it was exceptionally slow.

Without needing to divide his attention to resist the spatial turbulence, Yun Che's heart had completely stabilized. This feeling was like he had stepped from purgatory straight into a dream-like paradise. Even though he was mentally drained, and his whole body was weak and suffering from immense pain, this relaxed feeling almost made him feel like floating. A full eighteen months... He had endured in this purgatory of eighteen months and now he finally saw the brilliant, vivid dawn!

Jasmine did not disturb him, nor did she go outside to investigate. Her body sank down, and she stood in front of Yun Che, observing his current state while simultaneously gazing at the surrounding walls which were tougher than heavenly stones. Her expressionless dewy eyes were without ripple, her thoughts a mystery.

A whole day had passed, and the atmosphere remained quiet and

still, with no sudden outbursts appearing. When it had appeared in the Profound Sky Continent, it had stopped for half a year. There was no way of telling if this stillness would last half a year as well.

There was also no way of telling where the Primordial Profound Ark had stopped at this time.

And for an entire day, Yun Che simply sat cross-legged on the floor, the wounds on his body healing up to roughly seventy percent. His breathing had become stable as well, and his spirit had recovered greatly. Therefore, now was precisely the right time to rouse Yun Che.

Jasmine, who had been napping the entire day, opened her eyes and looked over Yun Che. She prepared to wake him up when Yun Che's body began to undergo a sudden change.

The dull golden pagoda rotating slowly over Yun Che's head started to spin rapidly, and the color of the pagoda slowly became richer and richer.... From dull gold, it gradually turned into a shiny gold color! Following that, the golden light began to sink and spread across Yun Che's body. It was as if Yun Che had put on a layer of hazy golden clothes.

"Could it be..." Jasmine's starry eyes flashed with deep surprise.

=====

Chapter 476 – The Breaking of Dragon Fault

Yun Che himself, had entered an exceptionally subtle state. Suddenly, he couldn't feel pain, nor could he hear any sounds. It was as though everything in the surroundings had all disappeared in an instant... He felt as though his body was currently floating lightly and swimming freely in the boundless sky. Between heaven and earth, and within the chaotic space, it was as though his existence was the only one which remained.

Endlessly majestic and incomparably calm forces of nature poured towards him. The forces enveloped his entire body and gushed into his body, healing his injuries, restoring his profound energy, and refining his body. These forces of energy felt familiar, yet foreign to him, and they much, much purer than before... No. It should be said that though they were the same forces of energy, it was as if they were forces of energy of another stage!

His consciousness was telling him, that his Great Way of the Buddha, had once again made a breakthrough!!

And the breakthrough this time, was completely different from the few breakthroughs in the past. The first few breakthroughs, could be said to be breakthroughs of levels within the same stage. While the breakthrough this time, that bizarre sensation, was totally a breakthrough of a large realm from a stage, to a much higher stage!

Back then, when he made a breakthrough into the third level of the Great Way of the Buddha, Jasmine had once told him that there every three levels of the Great Way of the Buddha was a watershed. The first three could be considered as the entry-stage realm. After entering the fourth, it would mean stepping into the middle-stage realm... And to step into the fourth level with the body of a mortal, was even harder than ascending to the heavens itself.

Yet, currently, with the timespan of three years from his previous breakthrough, he had already successfully stepped into the fourth

level of the Great Way of the Buddha, which Jasmine had termed as a task "even harder than ascending to the heavens itself"!!

The cultivation of the Great Way of the Buddha was not reliant on battles, nor was it reliant on the existence of profound energy. Its growth, was mainly reliant on comprehension and insights. In these eighteen months, Yun Che's Great Way of the Buddha had basically been circulating at every second, and more than eighty percent of the time, it was in the circulation state at its largest degree and highest limit. The large amount of forces of heaven and earth absorbed, could hardly be calculated. Subtly, his communication with the forces of nature and his comprehension to the Great Way of the Buddha, had been constantly deepening. He had finally broken through the bottleneck of the fourth level, and stepped into another brand new realm of the Great Way of the Buddha.

His body, was also being reborn from the baptism bestowed by the Great Way of the Buddha of a higher level. And, it was a rebirth of an extreme degree.

Following after Yun Che's breakthrough of the Great Way of the Buddha, the recovery speed of his wounds instantly accelerated as well. The wounds on his body were closing at a speed viewable with the naked eyes. Through Yun Che's closing wounds, Jasmine could see that his blood... was clearly mixed with a thin gold color.

"The fourth level of the Great Way of the Buddha... The first step towards the legendary 'Body of the Saints'. He had actually used less than five years, at a speed even faster than Big Brother..."

Jasmine lightly muttered. Currently, she was actually a little out of sorts. Even with her knowledge and experience, she was still deeply astonished by Yun Che's breakthrough this time. For the first three breakthroughs, although Yun Che had always made them ahead of her predictions, they had merely startled her a little. While this time, her feelings really had to be described with the word "shock". Because the breakthrough into the fourth stage of the Great Way of the Buddha was a completely different concept from the first three...

Although his breakthrough was greatly related to the eighteen months of hell-like cultivation in the dimensional turbulence, Jasmine clearly knew that was not the entire reason. The most important reasons were, comprehensive ability, and luck — In other words, the affinity and favor the natural chaotic space had towards him. Otherwise, when swapped with a person who had the same body, same strength, but different comprehensive ability and comparatively normal luck in the same spatial turbulence, forget about eighteen months, even if he was given eighteen years, or even a hundred and eighty years, or even a thousand and eight hundred years, it would be extremely difficult for him to breakthrough into the fourth level of the Great Way of the Buddha.

The truth in front of her eyes had told Jasmine that Yun Che's comprehensive ability, and his luck... had actually far surpassed her brother's.

In four hours, Yun Che's body was completely refined. The Buddha pagoda above his head disappeared, and all the external and internal injuries on his body were completely healed as well. He opened his eyes, and during the instant his pupils glowed, a hint of golden radiance flashed past.

"Very good." Jasmine, on this extremely rare occasion, nodded with praise. "I did not expect that you would actually break through into the fourth level of the Great Way of the Buddha so quickly. You're already capable of absorbing the forces of nature of an even higher level. The refinement from the fourth level of the Great Way of the Buddha grants you an arm strength of fifty thousand kilograms. The current strength and recovery speed of your body, is not the slightest bit inferior to the bestowal of the Dragon God's bloodline either. With the integration of the Dragon God's bloodline, although you still lack a lot in terms of power, the strength of your body is not at all inferior to a half-step Monarch! Based on recovery speed, you have even surpassed an actual Monarch!"

"Currently, you should be able to wield 'Purgatory' relatively easily!

However, even though your growth is astonishing, you shouldn't rashly activate the 'Rumbling Heaven' gate."

The first level of the Great Way of the Buddha bestowed an arm strength of two thousand kilograms; the second level of the Great Way of the Buddha bestowed an arm strength of four thousand kilograms; the third level of the Great Way of the Buddha bestowed an arm strength of ten thousand kilograms, but there was a huge leap in magnitude in what the fourth level bestowed... an arm strength of fifty thousand kilograms! Although the increase in body strength could not be felt intuitively, it was naturally still to an astonishing extent that was similar to the increase in arm strength.

With his current body, recovery ability, and level of the Great Way of the Buddha, normal spatial turbulences were basically no longer able to cause him actual harm. He could live within without feeling a hint of pressure, and even if he were to sleep openly, it would be no problem at all.

Yun Che felt that his own body was incomparably light. His vision and hearing ability had become more sensitive as well. Slightly stirring his thoughts, his body began to float up... After his profound strength had broken through into the Sky Profound Realm, he finally possessed the ability to fly as well. Within the timespan of eighteen months, his profound strength had consecutively crossed eight levels... Currently, he was already at the eighth level of the Sky Profound Realm!

In a year and a half, from the peak of the Earth Profound, he crossed into the late-stage Sky Profound.

Yun Che summoned Dragon Fault, and grabbed it in his hands... As a heavy sword with a mass of ten thousand kilograms, he would still feel a great sense of heaviness even while wielding it with both hands. But currently, when grabbing it with a single hand, it felt so light, it was as though it did not exist. He had not endured this eighteen months of hell-like experience for nothing. He could clearly feel that his current strength was many times stronger than before

he entered the Primordial Profound Ark.

In a short eighteen months, with such growth, it was enough to cause anyone's expression to pale from shock. However, Yun Che was neither too shocked nor overjoyed, because only he himself, out of this entire world, knew what he had experienced in these eighteen months.

"Has the Primordial Profound Ark halted?" Yun Che looked at the surroundings, and asked Jasmine.

"It should have halted, though, I don't know what kind of place it has stopped at." Jasmine answered. "But, this isn't the problem you should be worried about right now. What you need to think about now, is how to leave this place!"

"You have two choices... If you know the Art of Formation Construction, you can try fixing the profound formation on the stone door. If you don't have this ability, then, you're only left with this one choice, and that's to forcefully break the stone door, or the walls!"

In regards to whether Yun Che knew how to construct profound formations, Jasmine naturally knew that very well. Hence, if Yun Che wanted to leave this place, the only method was to break the stone door.

However, every stone and brick in this place came from the Primordial Era; their degree of toughness could only be said to have surpassed the understanding of a normal person. Yun Che had merely experienced eighteen months of spatial turbulences, and his body was already injured countless of times. If not for the existence of the Dragon God's physique and the Great Way of the Buddha, he would have already died countless of times. While the bricks here had actually experienced for god knows how many years of spatial turbulences... However, no matter where his line of sight landed on, he couldn't find the existence of even a hint of crack or damage.

Although Yun Che's strength had greatly surged, to have him break

open a stone door that countless years of spatial turbulences could not leave a scratch on... no matter how he looked at it, it wasn't exactly realistic.

However, if he wanted to leave this place, this was his only way out. He had to try it, and perhaps, a miracle would actually appear.

Yun Che grabbed Dragon Fault, sensed the strength on his body which was formidable to the extent where it was hard for him to believe it himself, and said. "In this period of time, my strength and profound strength had greatly rose several times. I might really hold the possibility of damaging this stone door. Even if I'm only able create a small dent to it with a single try, if I were to continue endlessly, there will definitely come a day it breaks completely."

"Try it then." Jasmine said calmly, as she patiently looked at him. In regards to the degree of toughness of the stone door, naturally, she was able to understand it more than Yun Che, even Yun Che's current level of strength, was something she was more clear of than Yun Che himself.

Yun Che took a step forward and stood before the door. Breathing in lightly, he activated Burning Heart and raised Dragon Fault with both of his hands. Then, his brows knitted, profound energy gathered, and he smashed a "Falling Moon Sinking Star" over.

Clang!!!!

An incomparably ear-piercing smashing sound rang. Yun Che's ears felt as though they were pierced by metal needles. He temporarily lost his sense of hearing under the intense pain, as an incredibly large rebound that had far surpassed his expectations assaulted him. Yun Che's arms instantly numbed, and Dragon Fault flew out of his hands as well. It then smashed onto the wall with a "clang" and fell onto the ground. Yun Che was sent directly flying as well, as his back heavily smashed against the wall at the back, stunning him completely from the collision.

From this incredibly large rebound, Yun Che could make a rough estimate on how enormous his current strength had grown from before. And from a rebound like this, other than a slight and temporary mess to his brain and blood flow, he didn't receive the slightest bit of actual damage. He hurriedly stepped forward, and his eyes landed on the position the stone door was struck with Dragon Fault... And that position, was no longer as smooth as a mirror. Instead, an extremely small... white dot had appeared!!

Although this white dot was so small, it could be ignored if one did not pay attention, a white dot had indeed appeared!

As time flowed, there wasn't any trace of the white dot being restored to its former state. Joy instantly surged inside Yun Che's heart. Although it was merely an extremely small white dot, it had already clearly meant that this stone door was not impregnable, and the current him, already possessed the strength capable of damaging it, even if it was merely a small scar.

Not to mention that he didn't even use his full strength earlier!

"Oh." Jasmine's line of sight fell on that white dot as well. Other than a light response, she did not express any other emotions.

"I might really be able to slowly break open this door." Yun Che said excitedly. The spatial turbulences had stopped, his strength had risen explosively, and currently, he was able to see the hope of escaping this place; it was impossible for Yun Che to not feel excited. Reaching out his palm, Dragon Fault had already flew back into his hands. Tightly grabbing onto Dragon Fault, his eyes flashed with a radiance filled with confidence.

"Purgatory!"

A shallow profound light shone from Yun Che's body, and his aura instantly turned violent. Within his eyes, a scarlet-red, similar to the color of fresh blood, lit up. Phoenix flames surged at this moment as well, as they hurriedly enveloped the entire blade of Dragon Fault.

With the “Purgatory” state activated, although his body still felt a little heavy, compared to the feeling from before, of a mountain pressing on his body and his organs seemingly about to shatter, it was completely different. He believed that if his profound strength were to make a breakthrough into the Emperor Profound Realm, he might even be able to casually, and without pressure, continue maintaining it like “Evil Soul” and “Burning Heart”.

“This time, I’m definitely able to break open a small crack!” Yun Che confidently growled. “With every small crack, there will come a day when I will be able to smash open a huge crack large enough for me to get out!”

As his words fell, Yun Che’s aura had already expanded to the extreme. With a loud roar, Dragon Fault, which was filled with Phoenix flames, was smashed downwards with all his might...

“Destroying Sky Decimating Earth!!”

Boom!!!!!!

The space surrounding the stone door completely sank, as though the entire world had shaken for a moment. Yun Che had already done the preparation needed to endure the enormous rebound. During that one moment when Dragon Fault and the stone door collided, his hands began to numb at the same time. Suddenly, he felt that his hands had oddly lightened...

Clang...

Violent forces of energy were sent towards Yun Che, ruthlessly smashing onto him, causing him to puke out a mouthful of fresh blood. His back once again smashed heavily onto the wall behind, and the crash was much heavier than before. Dragon Fault had once again escaped his hands as well. However, this time, Dragon Fault had split into two, which flew into two different directions.

Within the distorted space, the sound of a long and painful dragon

cry stirred...

【Actually... in the original settings, Dragon Fault should have been broken by Yue Xinghan when he used the Sun Moon Calamity. But during the chapter, when Ye Xinghan forced the two of them in desperate straits, I had actually forgotten to this matter! So, it can only be broken here now...”】

Chapter 477 – Re-emergence of the Ice Flame

Bang!

Bang!

Dragon Fault broke into two pieces, landing heavily to the left and right of Yun Che, and no longer showed any signs of movement. The tip of the sword that was shaped like the head of a ferocious dragon, slowly lost its energy. Light faded completely from the dragon's eyes as it became a dull grey color.

Yun Che laid on the ground, blankly staring at the scene in front of him, and did not come back to his senses for a good while. After that, he stretched out his arm, making the gesture to summon Dragon Fault... However, Dragon Fault was destroyed, and the still immature spiritual consciousness within the sword along with it. The sword showed no response to his summons.

Yun Che stood up, picked up the two pieces of Dragon Fault wordlessly, and then slumped in a corner, mutely staring at the destroyed sword in a daze.

Four years ago, he had received Dragon Fault from the trial grounds of the Dragon God. Afterwards, it received a power up from the lingering spirit of the Azure Primordial Dragon, becoming an Emperor Profound Weapon. All this time, it had accompanied Yun Che, braved innumerable obstacles with him, and fought with with him shoulder to shoulder. Dragon Fault had become akin to another limb for Yun Che, and had also become his most reliable companion, their prestige growing with each accomplishment they achieved together.

But today, it laid broken, and at his own hands no less, snapping due to his own strength.

“Your strength is now already in a different realm as compared to what it was previously. It was, after all, only an Emperor Profound

Weapon. Your present state of strength is already more than what it could bear. This stone door has unparalleled hardness and practically reflected the full strength of your blow back, that Dragon Fault would break from that is completely reasonable.” Jasmine said in a flat voice. Once Yun Che had entered the state of Purgatory, she could basically predict this outcome.

“Ah...” Yun Che let out a long sigh. He picked up Dragon Fault with care, his hands slowly caressing the ice-cold body of the sword, and softly said, “My old friend, we have already fought together for so many years, little did I expect that you would end up being destroyed by my own hands ... Maybe it’s better this way, it was about time for you to take a rest anyways. Once I leave this place, I will think of a way to restore you.”

After he finished talking, Yun Che kept Dragon Fault, and his heart soon recovered its equilibrium. His eyes fell upon the portion of the door which Dragon Fault had smashed.

There was no longer a white dot, but rather, in its place, appeared... a small crack!!

Yun Che’s spirit was shaken, and he swiftly moved closer to the door. His eyes did not deceive him. A small crack had appeared on the flat surface of the stone door. This gap was only as wide as the fingernail of his pinky and the depth of the crack was equivalent to the thickness of one sheet of paper. However, it could at least be counted as a crack.

But this did not make Yun Che happy in the least, because this small crack had been bought at a costly price, the destruction of Dragon Fault. Without Dragon Fault and him using his bare hands, it would be impossible to recreate such a flaw.

“Please... find her...”

This caused Yun Che, who was lost in thought as he stared at the crack, to violently snap his head up and look forward.

"What happened?" Jasmine asked.

"...I heard that voice again, the same voice I heard the day we first entered the Primordial Profound Ark." Yun Che said while standing up. Once the dimensional turbulence began its assault, all of his energy was spent resisting it; he heard only the sounds of explosions and the tearing of space, and nothing else. Even if the voice tried speaking to him during that period, it would definitely have been engulfed by the sounds being made by the dimensional turbulence.

Now that the dimensional turbulence had subsided, that strange, ethereal voice, whose location could not be pinpointed, sounded once again.

"What exactly did you hear?" Jasmine asked as she furrowed her eyebrows.

Yun Che thought for a while and then said, "The voice before only came intermittently, with long pauses in between. It seemed to be asking me to find someone ... and then save him... it also mentioned the Sky Poison Pearl. The same voice that spoke to me again just now, asking 'please find him', still requested that I find someone."

"That voice mentioned the Sky Poison Pearl?" Jasmine's eyes flashed, and after she pondered awhile, continued, "Ignore the voice for now. You are currently trapped in here and can't even save yourself, much less going to save someone else. You should figure out a way to leave this place first."

Yun Che nodded his head and sat down cross-legged on the floor. After racking his brains for a long time, he retrieved the Flame Dragon Heart that he was always reluctant to consume from the Sky Poison Pearl. After using Phoenix flames to cook it, he began wolfing it down. After more than a year of not eating anything, even though his body was not very affected by it, his stomach had long ago entered a state of extreme hunger. He had never gone without food this long before, even counting both his lives.

Yun Che quickly filled his stomach and followed his meal with a huge bowl of dragon's blood. He rubbed his stomach and sighed in satisfaction, after which he asked: "Jasmine, how long have I been in here?"

"Eighteen months."

"Eighteen months... to think that so much time has passed." Yun Che's face was filled with bewilderment, and he hurriedly turned his head towards Jasmine, "If I have been in here this long, then the seal that you had placed upon yourself should already be released right?"

Jasmine eyed him coolly, and said in a cold voice, "Why? Do you want to borrow my power to leave this place?"

"If you have recovered your strength, then that would of course be the best method." Yun Che said, his face was filled with hope as he continued, "It has already been more than three years since you sealed your strength. According to what you said initially, regarding the time frame of this seal, your powers should have already recovered by now."

"If you want to rely on my strength to leave this place, you should give up on that train of thought." Jasmine turned her face away and huffily said, "When my strength has recovered, I will naturally inform you."

"So that means your strength still has not recovered yet?" Despair and disappointment flashed on Yun Che's face, but these feelings quickly subsided. He looked at Jasmine and suddenly laughed. He walked towards her and stood in front of her, and lightly hugged her as she looked on in surprise.

It was completely out of Jasmine's expectations that he would suddenly perform such an action, and she subconsciously struggled against it, but how could her "powerless" body struggle free from Yun Che's embrace? She shouted with fury and a hint of confusion, "You... What do you think you are doing?!"

"Of course I am hugging you." Yun Che said with a grin. "After I sent Xue'er away, I thought that I was definitely going to die. Who would have thought that unexpectedly I managed to survive yet again... This feeling of not losing my life, not losing hope, and of course, not losing you is really great, so I suddenly had an urge to embrace you."

"...I am your master! Did I allow you to hug me?!" Jasmine said in a furious voice as she struggled weakly.

Yun Che said innocently, " But... what's wrong with a hug? Back then, I even kissed you, and you weren't as angry with me as you are now."

The kiss he was referring to had occurred when they met the flame dragon, and Jasmine had used all her power to eliminate it, aggravating the poison in her body and nearly caused her soul to fade out of existence. In order to save her, Yun Che had fed her a large amount of his blood mouth-to-mouth...

Of course, Jasmine would definitely not forget what had happened. When Yun Che mentioned it, her body stiffened, and her shyness turned into rage. Her rage and killing intent suddenly exploded. She stopped struggling, and instead said in an extremely cold voice, "Let go!"

However, even though she spared no effort to project a frightening aura, in the end, she bore no true killing intent towards Yun Che, and even her fury arose from shame, so this didn't even arouse any feelings of deterrence within Yun Che. The corner of Yun Che's mouth moved and he uttered a dispirited "fine" softly as he relaxed his hold around Jasmine.

Jasmine retreated swiftly, stared at Yun Che with a face filled with anger, and said: "If you dare touch me without permission again, don't think I won't dare to cripple your hand once I have fully recovered!"

Yun Che pressed down on the tip of his nose and slowly nodded, "Oh... thank you for reminding me. Once you have recovered your

powers, I won't be able to hug you anymore, so... shouldn't I hug you more now while I still have the chance?"

Having said that, Yun Che narrowed his eyes and advanced towards Jasmine, assuming a posture that indicated he would hug her once again.

"You!!!" Jasmine ground her white teeth, clenched her small hands tightly, and with a cry, turned into a ray of red light which disappeared from Yun Che's eyes, immediately returning to the Sky Poison Pearl.

"You are the kind of person who always goes around tricking and bullying girls, that my big brother said was most hateful, a lecher! Now you dare to extend your devilish hands towards the body of this princess! If not... If not for... I would definitely kill you! HMPH!"

After Jasmine finished her rant, she fell silent, and no matter what Yun Che did, she simply ignored him.

Yun Che sat in front of the stone door, his eyes staring at the tiny crack. Closing his eyes, he concentrated all his energy into thinking of a way to escape. After not moving for a few hours, he suddenly opened his eyes, and they shone with a strange light.

He raised up both his arms and rested his palms on his thighs, facing them upwards. Following this, in the same moment, his right hand began to smoulder with Phoenix flames, while in his left hand there grew a small delicate 'Tree of Frozen End'.

Yun Che closed his eyes once more, his chest violently rising and falling. This was followed by slow and steady breathing. The atmosphere grew much heavier than normal. In this thick silence, the heat from the Phoenix flames and cold energy from the Tree of Frozen End started to pulse chaotically. The hot and cold energies offset each other at first, and this was also in accordance to one of the most basic natural laws of the world. But as time passed, the two conflicting energies which were supposed to offset each other began

to separate and isolate themselves.

Two hours later, the tiny space had gradually been divided into two different realms, one half was as hot as lava, the other as cold as abyssal ice.

Two realms which should offset one another, somehow managed to coexist together in a completely open space without interfering with each other in the slightest!

At this time, Yun Che finally began to move. Slowly, he began to bring his right hand, burning with Phoenix flame, and his left hand, maintaining the Frozen End energy, together. This was done in an extremely careful manner and from his expression, it seemed that every little movement Yun Che made, required him to consume a large amount of mental energy and physical strength... A foot of distance required a full thirty breaths before his left and right hands could finally touch one another.

At the moment the Phoenix flame and Frozen End touched... there was no melting of the Frozen End or the suppression of the Phoenix flame. Instead the crimson Phoenix flames and the crystal-blue Frozen End began to blend together, Frozen End being immersed in the Phoenix flames and vice-versa. After a while, both the Phoenix flames and the Frozen End energy had completely coalesced together and formed a cluster of bizarre flames which gently swayed in the air, giving off an icy blue light.

At the same time, the space which was divided into two different realms had combined together as well. Moreover, this combination did not mean that the hot and cold energies had suppressed each other. Instead it was the feeling of bone-chilling cold and bitter heat existing simultaneously, chaotically interweaving and interlacing together.

"I succeeded ..." Yun Che opened his eyes and looked at the ice flame which danced upon his palm. Initially, when he was in Frozen Cloud Asgard, his first attempt at successfully forming this heaven-defying

ice flame took him an entire two days worth of time.

However, after the explosive growth of his abilities and mental strength, coupled with his newfound enlightenment regarding the energy of heaven and earth, he only needed a short two hours to succeed on his second try!

Moreover, his power up also caused the might of the Phoenix flames and the Frozen End Divine Arts to increase dramatically. This current ice flame, compared to the one formed in Frozen Cloud Asgard, was mightier by far!

Yun Che's hands, which were controlling the ice flames, began to shake and it seemed that he might lose control of this cluster of ice flames. This kind of heaven-defying, unnatural combination, manifested as an energy which defied both the laws of nature. Even though what he produced was just a tiny cluster of flames, seventy percent of Yun Che's profound energy and fifty percent of his mental strength had been consumed.

"Be sure... to not let me down."

Yun Che muttered as his eyes flared, and he pushed his palms forward, striking the stone door with his cluster of ice flames.

alyschu note: In the Chinese language, the it/she/he pronouns all sound the same. The voice is saying her, but Yun Che thought that he had to find a "him". This is not incorrect, thanks!

=====

Chapter 478 – Empress Cang Yue

The ice flames left Yun Che's palm and latched onto the surface of the stone door. There was no roar of power, nor was there any eruption of Phoenix flames or Frozen End energy; in fact there was not even the slightest bit of sound or light that normally came with the release of power. The ice flames simply slowly extinguished themselves and disappeared, without making a single sound.

However, fist-sized depressions had appeared on the parts of the stone door where the ice flames had landed!

These depressions curved inwardly to form perfectly shaped hemispheres. The surface of these depressions were extremely smooth, comparable to a perfectly crafted mirror; it was as if this surface had been polished using the world's most exquisite craftsmanship.

After observing these depressions closely, Yun Che's face was filled with joy and surprise. Before, when he had activated Purgatory and used his strongest attack, even after breaking Dragon Fault in the process, he had only been able to cause a crack the size of his pinky nail. It had barely given him the slimmest glimmer of hope that he could one day escape from this place. However, because of the miracle caused by the ice flames, he could clearly envision the day he would walk out of this place!

"Very good!", Yun Che said excitedly as he clenched both his fists, "If this is the case, I might only need to repeat this process several hundred times until I can create a big enough gap for me to escape!"

Once again, Yun Che spread out both his eyes, ignited his Phoenix flames, and concentrated his Frozen End. But this time, before he could even begin to combine the two, his mind swam, and a deep sense of fatigue seemed to have come forth from his profound veins. The reaction of both his mind and profound strength caused him to hesitate for a moment. He released both the Phoenix flames and the

Frozen End energy and began to meditate, focusing fully on recovering both his profound energy and mental strength.

After a while, Yun Che's profound energy and mental strength had recovered to around their peak condition, and he once again began to fuse together the ice flames. This time, the fusion took slightly less time than it had before. Once again, he smashed the ice flames against the stone door in the exact same spots which he attacked before. After the ice flame had once again done its silent and deadly work, the width and the depth of those fist-sized depressions had noticeably increased, but the surface was still as smooth as a mirror, with no hint of roughness.

Yun Che's only goal right now was to escape this place where he had been trapped for the last eighteen months. So the rest of his time was spent on two activities; the first was the fusion of ice flame, the second was the recovery of his profound energy and mental strength. Every day was spent repeating this process over and over again... Unknowingly, the time he took to fuse the ice flames became faster and faster. Initially, he could only fuse it twice a day. However, this rose to thrice a day, then four times a day... After five months had passed, when Yun Che was in peak condition, he could even forcibly fuse the ice flames up to five times a day!

Compared to how it was initially, the time required to fuse the ice flames and the profound and mental energy it consumed had all been reduced by several times.

Moreover, after undergoing this process, both his profound and mental strength had been greatly tempered...

Profound Sky Continent, Blue Wind Nation.

Presently, two years had already passed since the news of Yun Che's death in the Primordial Profound Ark. While Yun Che was undergoing a life-and-death struggle in the Primordial Profound Ark,

Blue Wind Nation had long ago descended into chaos and become a land beset by war.

Blue Wind Nation's capital, Blue Wind Imperial City.

"Your Majesty, it is a disaster. New Moon City has been completely occupied and both Governor Murong and General Zhen Huai have fallen in battle. Some disciples from the New Moon Profound Palace tried to organize further resistance... But they have all been killed in battle as well... Presently, New Moon City, Bluefire Region, Solid Earth Territory... Have all been lost to us....."

The bearing of bad tidings caused the expressions of everyone present to change agitatedly. Blue Wind Palace Chief Dongfang Xiu said in a shocked voice, "How can it be this fast? Didn't New Moon City have four hundred thousand troops garrisoned there?!"

"Reporting to Palace Chief Dongfang, yesterday the Divine Phoenix Empire's siege unit was bolstered by the sudden addition of four experts from the Divine Phoenix Sect. They were reportedly all Tyrant Profound level experts... Over half of our four hundred thousand troops were killed under the might of their Phoenix flames... Half of New Moon City has also been burned into cinders!" The heavily wounded soldier shouted as he began to sob loudly.

Four Overlords...

All of those present were amongst the highest echelons of power within Blue Wind Nation, but once they heard such news, sweat broke out all over their bodies as their faces blanched and their hearts began to birth a feeling of utter despair. All of their gazes began to concentrate on Cang Yue.

Cang Yue was dressed in a set of gold clothing, wearing a purple gold crown on her head. She stood on the tower of the city gate, gazing towards the south; it seemed as if she could see the faraway flames of battle. Her expression still retained its majesty, and her beautiful eyes were filled with calm, as if the loss of New Moon City

had not affected her in the least.

She was no longer that gentle and delicate Princess Cang Yue, whose whole existence revolved around Yun Che. She was now the empress of Blue Wind Nation, held the ultimate authority within her country, and was responsible for leading her people in these dark and troubled times.

She turned around, as her Phoenix-like eyes surveyed the people around her, and spoke in a voice as calm as water, "Everyone, now that New Moon has been lost, does anyone have anything to say?"

All the officials gathered looked at each other, but no one stood forth to speak. Divine Phoenix Empire was just too strong. Compared to Blue Wind Nation, the disparity between the power of both of these nations could be said to be akin to heaven and earth. Engaging in war with the Divine Phoenix Empire could not be termed as a battle, it was instead a one-sided massacre and suppression. The Divine Phoenix Empire invasion had not even lasted for two years, yet Blue Wind Nation had lost more than half of its territories, and even more importantly, the five most important major cities had been lost as well. In fact, it was likely they would soon come knocking on the doors of the Blue Wind Imperial City itself... Without even considering the present Blue Wind Nation, even if it was a Blue Wind Nation which was stronger by ten times, it still would not be enough to withstand this assault.

In the face of absolute power, all schemes and fighting spirit were nothing but fleeting shadows.

Under this death-like oppressive silence, one person couldn't tolerate it any longer and stood up, shouting: "Royal sister! This battle is unwinnable and any further resistance, besides increasing the number of casualties, is utterly meaningless! Divine Phoenix Empire's army is already pressing upon our gates, and will reach Blue Wind Imperial City in no time at all. To surrender now and end this war is the most correct decision!"

The one who spoke was precisely Second Prince Cang Ye... No, following Cang Yue's coronation as Empress, he had already been elevated to that of Grand Prince, no longer remaining a princeling. After those words left his mouth, the faces of several of the generals present darkened with fury... However, these generals were strictly in the minority. The eyes of the large majority present flickered, because what Cang Ye had said was what was buried in the heart for the longest time; it was just that they did not dare to voice it out.

"How presumptuous of you!" Cang Yue shouted in rage, "Our nation is imperiled, New Moon City has fallen, but instead of thinking of your country and hating the Divine Phoenix Empire, you dare to say such shameful things in front of everyone! You have utterly disappointed this empress!"

Cang Ye saw the reactions of the people surrounding him, clenched his teeth, and harshly cried, "Royal Sister! In regards to the strength of Divine Phoenix Empire, and the continued existence of our Blue Wind Nation, we are all well aware of the impending outcome! All of this so-called resistance is simply meaningless! If we surrender and take the initiative to welcome the Divine Phoenix Army, the war will end immediately. Our Blue Wind Nation will be absorbed under the banner of the Divine Phoenix Empire and not only will we be allowed to live, we will even be granted significant status as nobles...."

"Silence!" Empress Cang Yue's beautiful brows arched and she yelled in fury, "Cang Ye! As a grand prince of the imperial family, how can you utter such outrageous and shameless words? Have you forgotten the atrocities Divine Phoenix Empire has inflicted on our nation? Have you forgotten how many of our citizens died to defend our country? Have you forgotten how our royal father died... In the face of this national grievance and in front of the bones of countless heroes, you dare to show such cowardly behavior and would choose to be a defeated dog..."

Cang Yue's chest violently heaved, her extreme disappointment and anger clear for all to see, "Because this was your first offence, this

empress will, for the time being, forget what you have just said. However, if you dare say anything to besmirch the dignity of our Imperial family again, this empress will definitely not spare you!"

Being fiercely reprimanded by Cang Yue in front of all the high officials caused Cang Ye's face to darken. He once more clenched his teeth and shouted in a discontented voice, "Royal Sister! I am not cowardly or afraid of death! It is for our Blue Wind Imperial Family, for the lives of all of those present, and even for our entire Blue Wind Nation that I say these things! Divine Phoenix Empire is everywhere, all the large sects have surrendered, and even Xiao Sect took the initiative to welcome them and express their loyalty... We can only continue on if we survive, and to be able to tolerate momentary shame is the hallmark of a real man... Moreover, royal sister, now that you are the empress of Blue Wind, if you take the initiative to surrender, the Divine Phoenix Empire may even let you continue on as the Blue Wind Nation's ruler. If you do not do this, there is only a dead end awaiting you. The two fates are as different as heaven and earth... Royal sister, please come to your senses!"

"Bastard!" Empress Cang Yue roared in a low voice, her majestic gaze turning cold enough to pierce bone, "Men! Drag Cang Ye out below this tower and behead him for all to see!"

Once the words had come out of Cang Yue's mouth, all the people present were thrown into a state of shock. Immediately, more than ten senior officials hurriedly stood up, but before they could utter a single word, they were cut off by Cang Yue's icy voice, "Whoever dares to plead for his sake, will be implicated as well!"

Two golden-clothed imperial guards strode forth and firmly took hold of Cang Ye, preparing to drag him out. Cang Ye had never in his wildest dreams thought that Cang Yue would actually execute him... After all, he was Cang Yue's blood brother, a prince of the Blue Wind Nation. He cried out as he struggled, "You... You dare to kill me? I am Grand Prince of Blue Wind Nation, your royal brother... All that I have said was for the sake of the survival of the royal bloodline. On what

basis do you have to kill me... If you kill me, how can you face our dead royal father?!"

"If this empress does not kill you, then I really would not be able to face our royal father, and will let down all the ancestors of our Blue Wind Imperial Family! The fact that our Blue Wind Imperial Family has birthed such a wretched and cowardly degenerate who would rather be the slave of the enemy, is our true shame... There is no need to drag him outside, behead him immediately!"

"Royal sister... You... Wait, wait, Royal sister... Ah!!"

Schunk...

As the blade of the imperial guardsman rose and fell neatly, so too did Cang Ye's head fly from his neck in front of everyone present. Blood flew everywhere as his head landed on the ground and rolled a far distance, leaving a scarlet trail of blood gurgling in its wake.

A heavy gurgling sound issued from the throats of all who were present, and those who originally stood forth to plead on behalf of Cang Ye retreated in profuse fear, both legs going soft immediately. After Cang Yue had ascended to the throne, the Blue Wind Profound Palace that was under the command of Dongfang Xiu became completely loyal to her. Controlling both the power of the Blue Wind Profound Palace and having the status of Empress was equivalent to having the greatest control over who lived or died. Even though Cang Ye was a Grand Prince, if she wanted to kill him, no one would dare to stop her or express discontent.

"Blue Wind can completely collapse, but it can never be allowed to yield and live out an ignoble existence! Blue Wind may be extinguished, this empress may die, but as long as this empress draws a single breath, I will fight Divine Phoenix Empire to the death... Now, who else among you wants to surrender?"

Empress Cang Yue's gaze swept across all who were present, her voice carrying a heavy threat and a faint killing intent. As her voice

fell, over hundred senior officials in the venue fell to their knees hurriedly, and not a single sound could be heard after. No one dared to mention the word 'surrender' anymore.

Dongfang Xiu stood at the forefront and he silently watched Empress Cang Yue, his heart letting out a long sigh. He had stayed by Cang Wanhe's side for the longest time; it could be said that he had watched Cang Yue grow up. In the palace where a silent war was constantly being waged on all sides, her heart had remained as clear as still water, a soft and tender blossom. She loathed conflict and never used her status as a princess to ride roughshod over people of lower status. She was gentle and compassionate, and forget about killing others, as she was growing up, she couldn't even bear to hurt someone.

After she and Yun Che got married, she cared even less about the affairs of the imperial family, and even forgot her status as a princess, as she committed her entire heart to Yun Che. After Yun Che left for Frozen Cloud Asgard, she spent her days gazing at the window wistfully, and did not hesitate to ask the palace maids for instruction, to learn the things a wife was supposed to know. All her thoughts were focused on becoming Yun Che's most splendid and perfect taste.

But the present Cang Yue had become a completely different person, killing decisively, towering above all others and at times even becoming cruel and merciless; cold and callous. Her previous softness and grace had completely disappeared.

Two years ago, once they received news that Yun Che had died within the Primordial Profound Ark, Cang Yue had fainted on the spot and fell deeply ill. Three months later, Divine Phoenix Empire dispatched their three million strong army to rush across their border, beginning a large-scale invasion. This threw Blue Wind into chaos as it faced a precarious situation... Another three months later, Cang Wanhe was assassinated, and even on his deathbed, he could not find someone to succeed the throne... The princes had spent

their entire lives jostling for position, scheming to win the approval of Cang Wanhe, as they all dreamed of becoming emperor. But once Divine Phoenix Empire invaded, Blue Wind's only fate was to perish. Who would be willing to be the ruler of a dead nation? All of them would rather hide away.

However at that time, Cang Yue, who was still mired in the pain of Yun Che's death, appeared at Cang Wanhe's bedside, and using her weak shoulders, willingly took on the burden of fighting against the doomed fate of her nation. In the history of the Blue Wind Imperial Family, there had never had been a female ruler before. However, when Cang Yue ascended to the throne, there was not even a single objection from the princes. Instead, they all let out a long sigh of relief.

Dongfang Xiu still remembered when Cang Wanhe grabbed Cang Yue's hand, both his eyes filling with tears, as he said every word softly, "Yue'er, it will be hard on you..." After which, his gaze froze and old tears fell as he died, filled with regret.

Yes, it was indeed hard on her. She had to simultaneously shoulder a widow's pain and the calamity of a doomed nation... If it was any other regular girl, this task would be impossible. But she was capable of doing so, and after ascending to the throne, she never shed a single tear again as her disposition underwent a huge change... Or it was more apt to say that in the face of this calamity, she had no choice but to change.

All that she had experienced and endured as Empress over the last one and a half years was even more than what Cang Wanhe had endured over his decades of rule. And her present might and disposition of a ruler was not any less than Cang Wanhe at the outset of his rule. Her every word and action was filled with imperial power.

Dongfang Xiu was not sure if he should rejoice or if his heart should grieve.

"General Feng, you will immediately lead all the cavalry under my command towards the south. At the same time, send a sound transmission to Great Desert Lord Geng Wanli and advise him to give up on the northern and the western front. Then, immediately set out towards the south... March through the day and night if you have to, but you must meet at the Ten Thousands Beast Mountain Range, which is to the north of New Moon City! After which you will conceal yourselves on both sides of the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain Range, and once the Divine Phoenix Army arrives, you will ambush them from the left and right!"

"Always bear this in mind! The deeper you journey into the Ten Thousand Beasts Mountain Range, the fiercer the profound beasts will be. Therefore, conceal yourselves on its periphery if you can and never attempt to delve deeper!"

When she mentioned the Ten Thousand Beasts Mountain Range, Cang Yue's heart began to tremble... Because it was after they had gone through that period of joy and sorrow together in the Ten Thousand Beast Mountain range all those years ago that their hearts had become one.

"This general has received your command!" An awe-inspiring general who was radiating martial power and in full armor gave a salute. After which, he raised his head to ask, "Your Majesty, if Geng Wanli travels south, he will pass by the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range. Should he once again ask Heavenly Sword Villa for help?"

Empress Cang Yue's slender eyebrows twitched, and her gaze fell in the direction of Heavenly Sword Villa. She spoke in a voice as cold as ice, "One thousand years ago, my Blue Wind ancestor and the ancestor of the Heavenly Sword Villa were sworn brothers for life, both parties mutually supported one another, with one having all political authority, while the other had all the power. They swore a blood oath with each other, that they would live and die as one, and if one party was facing imminent doom, the other would definitely pour out all his power to help... In the past, when our Blue Wind

Imperial Family was in a state of upheaval and my royal father was poisoned by scoundrels, for them to not extend any help at all was already tantamount to being unvirtuous and unjust. However, at that time, the imperial family was not truly facing destruction, so they could still be forgiven."

"But at this present time, on the occasion of our demise, two years ago, when we sought help from them a total of nine times, even to the point where we grovelled and begged, they shut themselves in their villa, ignoring us completely. Since they are empty of righteousness, why should we shame ourselves any further?"

General Feng slowly nodded his head, "I understand, I will set off immediately."

"Wait!" Empress Cang Yue turned around and said "Even though we have broken off all relations with them, we should still pay Heavenly Sword Villa a visit."

As Empress Cang Yue's voice fell, her hands unraveled a sheet of dull golden silk. She gathered profound energy in her finger and wrote the following words swiftly....

"Your faithlessness hath earned mine contempt, your disregard hath aroused mine spite, this empress shall always remember this! If the Blue Wind doth see the dawn and its gentle breeze chances upon the Heavenly Sword, there will be no reconciliation, for only hate and enmity remains, forevermore!"

Empress Cang Yue did not hide anything while she was writing, and those close to her could all that was written. After she finished writing, she folded the silk and passed it to General Feng. "Dispatch men to Heavenly Sword Villa. You do not need to see anyone, just throw this thing at the foot of the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range! No matter if Blue Wind lives or dies, what I have said today will never be taken back!"

After gazing upon the delicate characters which were saturated with

majestic power, General Feng nodded his head heavily, kept the silk sheet carefully, and quickly withdrew.

Empress Cang Yue saw him off and turned around after, gazing into the distance, her thoughts hidden from all who were present.

“...I am a daughter of Blue Wind, wife of Yun Che. Even in death, I will never defile their glorious names!”

=====

Chapter 479 – Very Close By

Primordial Profound Ark.

Yun Che sat cross-legged in front of the stone door and stared intensely at that large hole on the stone door. Through this large hole, he could already clearly see the scenery outside.

This was the result of his consecutive fusions of ice flames for half a year. After a total of more than six hundred destructive strikes from the Ice Flame, the hole on the stone door had expanded to a size even larger than an adult's head. However, after trying several times, it was still insufficient for him to leave this place... It was still lacking that small bit.

The Frozen End and Phoenix flames in Yun Che's hands once again successfully fused together. Compared to the first few attempts, the time he took to fuse them this time was very short, and even the process itself was a little casually done. In half a year, from repeating more than six hundred times without rest, when he fused ice and flames, it was no longer as difficult as before. Speaking from another perspective, his understanding towards this heaven-bending law had gradually become more thorough during this process.

"This time, it will definitely succeed!"

Yun Che muttered, as he struck the ice flame in his hand towards the side of that hole.

The destruction of the ice flame was completely soundless, and as the demonic ice-blue colored flames dissipated, it could be seen with the naked eyes that the width of the hole had stretched by a small degree. After visually measuring the current width of the hole, Yun Che took a deep breath. Just as he was about to stand, suddenly, the profound energy in his profound veins stirred for a moment.

This is... another breakthrough?!

Yun Che hurriedly stabilized his body in a sitting posture, focused his mind, and slowly guided the profound energy in his body. Every fusion of a single ice flame consumed an enormous amount of profound energy. Hence, with every successful fusion, it was a form of refinement to his profound strength to a very large degree. On the hundred fortieth fusion, his profound energy broke through into the ninth level of the Sky Profound Realm. It had only been four months since then, and his profound level was once again confronted with a breakthrough.

Just like the one before, the breakthrough this time was, a matter of course, incomparably successful. In less than eight minutes, the profound energy in his profound veins had completely calmed down, and the aura being emitted from Yun Che's body had undergone an evident change.

The profound energy of the Earth Profound Realm was like a mist, while the profound energy of the Sky Profound Realm was as dense as a white syrup. Now that he had crossed into the peak of the Sky Profound Realm, the profound energy within his profound veins were so dense, it was as though they were about to solidify. Scarlet-colored and blue-colored light intersected each other with their glows, causing the entire space of profound veins to look as though it was a dream-like world.

Yun Che opened his eyes, looked at his own pair of hands, and muttered to himself. "It seems like I'm not really far off from the Emperor Profound Realm as well... Give me another year or less, and I will definitely accomplish in becoming a Throne!"

Yun Che stood up. His eyes stared intensely at the large hole on the stone door, before he stuffed his head into it.

Just like before, his head effortlessly crossed through. However, his shoulders were still stuck at inner rim, and were unable to pass through. Yun Che stretched out his neck, straightened his body, and struggled to fold his arms. Then, leaping with his legs, he greatly exerted his strength... In an instant, with a "boink" sound, his

shoulders which had been stuck inside, instantly snapped into the hole.

Su... Success!!

Although the snap was very painful, Yun Che revealed a joyful look. He strongly moved his body, pulled along both of his arms, allowing his own upper body to move forward within the hole, little by little, to the point where he was struggling while grimacing in pain, and his face and neck had turned red. If not because there wasn't anyone in the Primordial Profound Ark, even if Yun Che had to wait for another half a month, he definitely wouldn't be willing to act like this, which would ruin his image in front of others.

I simply don't believe that I'm not able to get out...

Yun Che struggled for a good long while, before his arms had finally struggled out a half of the door. He widened his eyes, took a deep breath, and exerted his strength with all his might.

With a "swiip" sound, the clothes Yun Che was wearing were completely torn apart, while, like an unleashed cannonball, his entire body was suddenly shot out from the hole. Then, his head smashed head-on with the wall at the front not far away.

Yun Che stood up while holding onto his head. Turning his head around, he saw the stone door that was embedded with a large hole... And that stone door, was actually more than thirty meters away from his current location!

"I'm out... I'm finally out!!" Even though his head was in severe pain from the crash, Yun Che was still celebrating to himself with incomparable excitement. From back then, when he thought that he was in a situation of absolute death, to surviving in incomparably sufferable conditions, he had now just escaped from the place where he was trapped in for two whole years... It would be hard for him to not feel excited at all.

"Don't be happy too soon!" Jasmine's voice resounded coldly. "You have only left a small stone room! You're currently still in the Primordial Profound Ark... Do you know how to leave this Primordial Profound Ark!?"

Jasmine's words caused Yun Che's emotions to speedily cool down. He pondered for a moment, before replying. "No matter how big this profound ark is, it should still have edges. As long as I find the edges, and use the Ice Flame like I did to break open the stone door, little by little, I will definitely be able to get out."

"Hmph, you're really naive." Jasmine snorted coldly. "You used exactly half a year to break open a small stone door. The thickness of the walls at the corner of the Primordial Profound Ark is at least ten thousand times more than the stone door, and their tenacity far surpasses a mere absolutely ordinary stone door in the interior. What are you going to use to break them open?"

"This... I know it's not really realistic either. However, if I want to leave this place, it's not like this is the only way." Yun Che continued. "The Primordial Profound Ark will appear in the Profound Sky Continent once every three hundred years. Every time, those who enter will always be expelled by the Primordial Profound Ark's aura."

Yun Che pondered as he said with a heavy expression. "According to past records, usually, the Primordial Profound Ark will stop for half a year, then, the ark gate will open on the very last day, and everyone who have entered the profound ark will be expelled at the final moment. And counting the time the Primordial Profound Ark had suddenly halted previously, it's been about half a year since then as well. That aura might arrive any time soon. As long as I leave this fortress, and wait for the arrival of that aura, I will be able to leave."

"What you have said might indeed become reality." Jasmine lightly said. "Then, do you know what place the Primordial Profound Ark has currently stopped at? Since you know that the Primordial Profound Ark will only appear once in the Profound Sky Continent every three hundred years, then, the place it has currently stopped at, is

naturally impossible for it to be the Profound Sky Continent as well! If you leave due to the aura, then, you will be brought into some unknown place! In the Profound Sky Continent, there seems to be no records on other similar spaces where the Primordial Profound Ark has appeared in. In other words, the place where you will be brought to, is extremely possible to be completely unrelated to the Profound Sky Continent. The distance between two might be extremely far, and it might be a place where you will be unable to once again return to the Profound Sky Continent forever."

"!!" Yun Che's body suddenly stiffened.

"Very evidently, this Primordial Profound Ark does not merely stop in the Profound Sky Continent. It seems to be undergoing spatial transference abiding by a certain pattern. At every fixed period of time, it will stop at a fixed place, and stays for a fixed period of time as well, with three hundred years as a complete cycle." Jasmine slowly said. "In the boundless universe and chaotic space, there's countless galaxies, countless astral planes, and countless dimensions. The Blue Pole Star where you reside in before, is merely one of the most normal, and inconspicuous among them. The Primordial Profound Ark has undergone exactly eighteen months of spatial transference. With this amount of time, it's sufficient for it to reach a faraway place that you're unable to imagine or understand. So far away that even if you succeed in stepping into the Divine Profound Realm, and spend your entire life, it will still be impossible for you to return to the Profound Sky Continent!"

"...Could it be that I have to wait here for three hundred years, until it once again returns to Profound Sky Continent, before I choose to be expelled by the aura?" Yun Che was silent for a long while, before he said, startled. In actuality, in the recent few months, he had thought about what Jasmine had just said. However, it was hard for him to accept this reality.

If he were to leave the Primordial Profound Ark now, he would appear in another completely different world. It might be impossible

for him to return to Profound Sky Continent as well.

However, if he were to wait here for more than three hundred years...

Three hundred years. Given his Dragon God's physique, and the protection from the Great Way of the Buddha, even if he did not have profound energy, living another three hundred years wasn't a problem at all, to the point where he would not have any hint of having aged either.

However, combining his two lives together, he had only lived for less than fifty years. Just how was he supposed to face such a long span of time of three hundred years? Just what would happen to Profound Sky Continent after three hundred years? Three hundred years later, the people he were concerned about... Grandfather, little aunt, Cang Yue, Yuanba, Qinyue... Would they still be around? If they would, would they still remember him then? If they would remember, then how would he face that situation...

Jasmine sensed that Yun Che's state of mind and aura had turned become a little messy. She lightly voiced out. "Forget it, there's no need for you to be so pessimistic. Give me another few more years, when the deadly poison is completely cleansed from my body, when you have helped me accomplish all four conditions that I require, allowing my body to be reconstructed, no matter what place you're in, I will still be able to bring you straight back to Profound Sky Continent.

The four conditions Jasmine set for Yun Che were: Enter the Sovereign Profound Realm in thirty years, three Tyrant Profound Beast's profound pellets, thirty-five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals, and a Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

"These items can be gathered not just from the Profound Sky Continent. And in reality, it's seemingly impossible to find them in the Profound Sky Continent as well, especially when it comes to thirty-five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal. Hmph, even

when all of the Purple Veined Divine Crystals of the Profound Sky Continent are pooled together, it still wouldn't be enough to make up thirty-five kilograms. You can simply use the aura of this profound ark to bring you into the world it has currently stopped in. In this world, it might be easier to find the items I require."

Jasmine's words had instantly dispersed the clouds in Yun Che's heart, and his eyes once again shone. In regards to Jasmine's ability to bring him back to the Profound Sky Continent after Jasmine had remodeled her body, Yun Che did not suspect it in the slightest. Because Jasmine was initially someone who had come from a place other the Profound Sky Continent, and it wasn't just its distance being extremely far and long, even their levels were extremely far away from their own world.

"Great!" Yun Che slowly nodded, as he temporarily placed down the reluctance in his heart. "If it really only stops at every place for exactly half a year, then it should be about time! Now, I shall hurry out of the fortress, and have wait for the aura to expel me... Hopefully, it doesn't send me to a dead world."

As he said that, Yun Che no longer hesitated. His body flew, and he hurriedly looked for the staircase down. From the top of the stone stairs, he directly leapt down, and landed on that circle-shaped stone stage on the first floor of this mysterious fortress. Just as he was about to lift up his leg to fly again, a voice suddenly resounded in his ears...

"Please... find her..."

Yun Che halted his footsteps. Ever since the first day he had stepped into the Primordial Profound Ark, and after he spent half a year to break open the stone door, he had heard this voice several times. Basically, every four to six hours, it would voice out again.

However, this time, it was different from every single one before.

Back then, the voice he heard was frail and insignificant. If he did

not focus his mind, it would be a little hard to hear, as it seemed to have come from an extremely far place.

While this time, it was so close, as if it was right next to his ear!

=====

Chapter 480 – Lingering Soul

“Who are you? And where are you?”

Yun Che stopped in his tracks and began to shout in all directions. The voice that had just appeared had sounded like it was right next to his ear.

The space within the Primordial Profound Ark would only begin to vibrate violently if the Primordial Profound Ark was going to employ its energy field within the hour. Seeing that the space within the Ark was completely still, Yun Che was not in a hurry to leave. During these past six months, he had always wanted to figure out the origins of this incessant voice which only he could hear.

Just like always, it would take very long for him to receive a response once he shouted those words.

Yun Che’s gaze began to sweep across all four corners ... Just now, he could clearly hear that the voice had originated from a location very near to his own. And the true voice would weaken as the distance grew greater; spirit sound transmission functioned in the same way. He could almost confirm that the origins of the voice was no further than ten steps from where he was right now.

Yun Che slowly walked to the middle of the stage, his eyes meticulously scanning every corner of the area. At this moment, a weak red light flashed across the corner of his eyes. His gaze froze and landed at portion where the stage leaned against the end of the wall. Yun Che had observed this speck of red light from the first day he had entered the Profound Primordial Ark, and he had even found where the light came from, but at that time, he didn’t have the ability to blast the floor open. Thus, he had to shelve his curiosity and amazement regarding the red light, and even though he had a faint feeling that there was a hidden space underneath the floor, there was nothing he could do to find out at the time.

Yun Che walked over and stood at the location which he had located just now. He bent down and he observed a tiny fissure at his feet. A sliver of red light was pulsing up from the ground through that fissure, the pulses coming intermittently.

Yun Che took a deep breath, and focused profound energy within his fist, and threw a punch towards the tiles at his feet.

Bang!!

Yun Che's fist was sent flying away, but the feedback Yun Che received from the feel and the sound of that blow proved that the stone tiles were not thick... or at least it was much thinner than the stone door he had used half a year to blast open. He stopped hesitating, sat down and began to concentrate. In the left hand Frozen End energy, in the right Phoenix flames... Yun Che had been repeating the process of fusing both energies near constantly for the last half a year, so the entire process of guiding and controlling the energies came extremely naturally to him.

A short while later, Frozen End and Phoenix flames had merged in Yun Che's hands to form a blossom of gently swaying icy-blue flames. Yun Che flipped his hands over, allowing the ice flames to gently float downwards and fall on the stone tiles.

To Yun Che's surprise, the stone tiles below his feet were much thinner than expected. In fact it seemed to be have the thickness of a single sheet of paper. Once the ice flames had fallen on the tiles, the tiles vanished like swiftly melting ice. The ice flames spread and carved out a perfectly round hole that was about a foot wide before extinguishing themselves.

As he gazed into the hole created by the ice flames, Yun Che saw that there was indeed a hidden space underneath, and in the middle of this space, a red light swayed and flickered.

What was hidden beneath here?

Did this mean that voice had been transmitted from this place all along.

A foot-wide gap was just big enough for Yun Che to jump into.

Yun Che hesitated for while but decided to take the plunge after all, and he jumped straight into the gap.

The hidden space beneath the platform was not deep, Yun Che had only descended twenty feet or so before his feet touched the icy, hard surface. There were no dangerous presences that he could sense in his near vicinity, but Yun Che's nerves became pinched when he directed his gaze forward.

This area was not big, it was not even wider than thirty meters. The space was completely empty and clean, save for the middle of the area, where a ball of red light stood.

The ball was about Yun Che's height; it appeared to be uniformly round, and the red light it released would wax and wane, but the light was generally gentle and did not contain any attacking power.

This was....

Yun Che strode over to stand directly in front of the ball of light. The red light was not intense, yet it was very thick, and it prevented Yun Che was from seeing past it. But his instincts told him that there was definitely something cocooned within this red light.

What exactly was it?

The Profound Primordial Ark had existed for an extremely long time; using Jasmine's own words, it was to the extent that "it was ancient beyond your imagination". Despite having existed since ancient times, this ball of light was still able to emit this red light. This was demonstrated just how unusual it was.

Yun Che extended his arm, experimentally reaching towards the ball of light.

"Do not touch it!"

Jasmine's voice resounded in his head, and caused him to stop his action hurriedly. He retracted his hand swiftly, and his body retreated with the speed of a lightning bolt.

"Hmph, attempting to touch this thing before you have even figured out your current circumstances. Do you want to die?" Jasmine snorted coldly.

"What exactly is this ball of light?" Yun Che asked. A ball of light that had endured for countless eons; what it contained was surely a power beyond his comprehension. His attempt to touch it with his hand had indeed been risky.

"This is not some ball of light, it is an extremely strong protective barrier." Jasmine said in a heavy tone, "It may look like it has no ability to attack, but if you had dared to touch it, it would have immediately launched a counterattack... and its weakest counterattack would have been enough to kill you tens of thousands of times over."

For Jasmine to use the words 'extremely strong' as a descriptor sufficiently demonstrated how terrifying this red ball of light really was. And Jasmine's words that "its weakest counterattack would have been enough to kill you tens of thousands of times over." was definitely not overstated in the least. Yun Che's heart skipped a beat and he retreated yet another few steps.

"You... have... finally... come...."

A voice as light as smoke slowly resounded in this area. This time, it was not a spirit sound transmission, but a real voice. Moreover, it was a voice belonging to a woman. This time even Jasmine could hear this voice clearly.

The voice seemed even nearer than it was before, it was almost as if it came from directly in front of Yun Che. Yun Che turned his head

swiftly to scan all four directions, cautiously asking: "Who exactly are you?"

As Yun Che's voice fell, a dim white shadow slowly emerged from the side of the ball of red light... it was the silhouette of a woman dressed in white. Her body was small and slightly bent and half her hair was white as well. All of this indicated that this was an elder who had long ago stepped into her twilight years.

"You... you are? Yun Che said unwittingly as he startled. The silhouette of the elderly lady in front of him seemed blurry. It was blurry to the point that it seemed like a floating column of white smoke that could be blown away by a gust of wind.

From the day he had entered the Primordial Profound Ark, Jasmine had told him that the entity that had called out to him could indeed be a spirit... a spirit body which was exactly the same as Jasmine. But Jasmine's spirit body could be seen by the naked eye, and it looked no different from that of a real girl's body. And because she was connected to him, he could even touch her, and it felt no different from touching a real body. But the spirit in front of his eyes was formless and wavering, seeming like a candle in the wind.

"I am a guardian... I am guarding my little mistress..." The old lady said in a light but extremely ancient sounding voice. If she was using spirit sound transmission, it could only be used once in a long time but now that she was talking face to face, she experienced no such obstacles, "I have always been looking for you.... and I have been looking for you.... for so long ... so long...."

"You... have been looking for... me?" Yun Che asked, pointing to himself. After which, he eyed his left hand and continued, "Oh is what you were looking for... the Sky Poison Pearl?"

"Correct... I controlled this profound ark... jumping from dimension to dimension... all for the sake of finding the Sky Poison Pearl...."

"Wait a minute!" Yun Che's expression revealed utter shock, "The

profound ark you mentioned, is this huge profound ark that I am in right now? It is under your control?"

"In the beginning... it was indeed under my control... but... at that time I had also been poisoned with a devilish poison... and every breath would erode my life and very soul... In order to retain my awareness so I could continue to guard my little mistress... I gave up my body and eighty percent of my soul... what is left is only a lingering spirit... who is powerless to pilot this profound ark... but the profound ark followed the memory imprint I had left at the beginning... relentlessly travelling through a set cycle of dimensions... repeating endlessly... each cycle lasting three hundred years ... the profound ark's energy... has been continuously depleting... and now... its energy source... has just about dried up...."

"Thank the heavens for being merciful... before my lingering spirit is extinguished... and before the ark's destruction... you have finally arrived...."

Yun Che's mouth gaped open as he quickly digested this old lady's gentle yet exceedingly shocking words. This incomparably big profound ark, was actually controlled by someone., and the old lady in front of him, actually had the ability to control such an astonishing profound ark! And the reasons for the profound ark's appearance in the Profound Sky Continent and the reason for it to appear every three hundred years... was also because of this old lady!

"Her spirit is indeed on the brink of dissipation." Jasmine said in dull voice laced with pity, "It might happen at any moment... in fact, this will happen within the span of one hundred breaths! To be able to finally find the person she has been looking for just as she was about to disappear... perhaps she doesn't need to be pitied."

Within one hundred breaths? Yun Che's heart was given a jolt and as he gazed at the misty form of the old lady, he asked, "Who exactly are you? And why are you looking for the Sky Poison Pearl... What is it that you want me to do?"

The old lady could not detect any evil intent from Yun Che's person and this was what comforted her the most. She slowly said, "I am only a guardian... my little mistress.. And my race... has long been forgotten by the world... there is no need to mention them anymore... my little mistress... her body has been inflicted with a terrible devilish poison... within all the realms... only the Sky Poison Pearl can cure her... in order to stem the invasion of this devilish poison... our little mistress was sealed into the Coffin of Eternity....."

"Coffin of Eternity?"

The old lady's voice grew more and more ethereal, "Chaotic turmoil... the terrible battle of Gods and Devils... the overturning of the sky... the weeping of the Gods and the Heavens... I brought my little mistress with me into the ark to flee.... The 'Coffin of Eternity' sealed her body and soul... allowed her presence to disappear into the chaotic space... and allowed her to escape that heaven-destroying calamity... if one day the Sky Poison Pearl can cleanse the devilish poison from her body... and she can once again awaken... and my bitter life will finally come to a happy end...."

Devilish poison... devilish poison!? The words that had been repeated by the old lady caused Jasmine's breathing to go wild... because the poison she had been inflicted with was also a kind of devilish poison. And it was the deadliest of all devilish poisons — Absolute God Slaying Poison! And similarly, only the Sky Poison Pearl could fully cleanse this poison.

The old lady's voice grew dimmer and dimmer and the contents of her message began growing garbled. She didn't wish to reveal the status and origins of herself or her 'little mistress', but she involuntarily revealed fragments of the previous situation. And it was at this time that her already mist-like form began to grow even thinner.

She was a guardian, and in order to fulfill her duties, she willingly abandoned her body and eighty percent of her soul..... To continuously fulfill her duties as a lingering spirit to the point where

she dissipated. How could Yun Che not be moved? He looked at the lump of red light and said. "Your 'little mistress' is being protected by the ball of light right? The Sky Poison Pearl is indeed on my person, if it can really help to save your 'little mistress', and it will not cause any harm to me, I will do all that I can."

=====

Chapter 481 – The Girl in the Crystal Coffin

“Thank you... Your eyes are sincere and determined. I can sense a strong soul within your body, but what’s even more stronger is your unmeasurable potential... Therefore, I can finally feel assured and free myself... I will be in another world, praying, for my little mistress and you...”

“Thank you... ”

The elderly woman’s voice grew weaker and slower. When the last sounds of her voice fell, Yun Che didn’t even have time to question her, before her figure disappeared into thin air as though it was dispersed by the wind.

“The remains of her soul have also disappeared, it lasted for almost as long as I predicted. It’s a pity that she would never reincarnate nor would she go to the so-called ‘another world’.” Jasmine said plainly.

Yun Che looked at the ball of red light in front of him, and just when he was about to ask a question, the ball of light suddenly stopped flickering and completely froze in position, then suddenly pinged softly.

It was like the sound of glass shattering.

In an instant, a vertical crack appeared on the ball of light that was frozen in position. Soon after, the ball of light instantly evaporated, as though it was a soap bubble being pierced, turning into numerous red shards scattering in the air before breaking into even small pieces, and slowly disappeared in the air.

The red protective ball of light dispelled, but not all of the red light disappeared. Following the disappearance of the red protective ball of light, a crystal coffin that was emitting a weak red glow appeared in front of Yun Che.

Inside the crystal coffin laid a person... A person who was much more petite than Yun Che expected... A little girl!

The girl's body was petite and her hands laid crossed in front of her chest as she laid silently in the coffin with a tint of a serene and lonely expression. She had long hair that was naturally scattered behind her. Her hair reached all the way to her lower back and was bright red... It was not a flame like fiery-red, but instead a ruby-like sparkling red.

The girl had a face that seemed like it was carved from jade. Within its perfection, there was a immaturity that only a child would possess. On her cream colored face was a cute exquisite nose that pointed upwards and watery tender lips that were gently closed. Below her similarly red eyelashes were eyes that anyone would believe to be a pair of star-like eyes if she opened them.

She wore a bright red imperial robe, but her clothes seemed to be very thin, bringing out all the contours of her petite body. Only a pair of snow white slender arms and a pair of white and tender legs were revealed, and on her feet were a pair of crystal clear ruby princess shoes. However, the most eye catching thing was that there were ruby bangles on both her wrists and ankles. The bangles were very small and stuck tightly to her skin on her slender wrists and ankles.

...Such a cute girl...

Wait... Why is she a little girl?

"This is the one that person referred to as... 'Little Mistress'?" Yun Che stared widely. This girl looked to be younger than Jasmine, when he had originally met her and at most in her early teens. Although, she was very young, she possessed beauty that would be able to bring about calamity. Perhaps anyone that saw her would think that they had seen a sleeping doll.

"Wouldn't you be more willing to save her now... You Bigggg Perrrrveerrrrtttttttttt!" Jasmine replied half-mockingly and half-

hatefully.

"...Would she be any danger to me?" Yun Che automatically chose not to hear the last three words Jasmine said.

"Oh? A big pervert like you who specializes in cajoling woman would be afraid of a girl as young as this?"

"You also know that she could possibly be a person from the Primordial Era. What happens if she's as powerful as you?" Yun Che said as his face revealed his cautiousness. Before meeting Jasmine, Yun Che would never believe a pretty girl that looked like a doll could be linked to the word "frightening". However, having an exception such as Jasmine made Yun Che unable to not raise his cautiousness against the young girl lying in the coffin.

Jasmine remained silent for a while before replying: "This crystal coffin should be the 'Coffin of Eternity' that that person mentioned. My consciousness isn't able to enter it and her aura is completely sealed in; not one bit is leaking out. Thus, I'm unable to tell whether she would pose a threat to you or not. If you're scared, you can just ignore it."

Yun Che did not hesitate as he walked forward, then stood in front of the crystal coffin: "Since I have already promised that person, I should still fulfil my promise. Furthermore... Eh, such a cute little girl, no matter how I look at it, she doesn't seem like anyone bad... And if I save her, I would be considered her savior."

As he spoke, Yun Che placed one of his hands on top of the crystal coffin and pushed with a little strength... However, he did not expect that such a light push would cause the lid on the coffin to crash open.

Just before the fragmented soul had dispersed, it had obviously dispelled the protective ball of light and the Coffin of Eternity.

"It is indeed the aura of a devilish poison... Quickly, help her detoxify

the poison!" Jasmine's suddenly said anxiously: "Once the Coffin of Eternity has been opened, the suppressed devilish poison would already be awakened! Quick, cleanse it with the Sky Poison Pearl! Otherwise, with no means of resisting while unconscious, her life, consciousness, and soul will be consumed by the poison!"

As Jasmine spoke, a black shroud of fog that was growing thicker with frightening speed, appeared around the body of the red-haired girl.

Yun Che frowned and nodded slightly as he quickly raised his left hand, placing it on the girl's chest. A jade green glow instantly appeared and enveloped her.

Yun Che had not heard of the term "devilish poison" before, but he felt an extremely terrifying poisonous aura from the girl's body. Even with his memories from two lives, he had not experienced a poisonous aura like this before... However, it was similar to the frightening poison that was on Jasmine, except that it was not as domineering as Jasmine's.

In this world, there was no poison that the Sky Poison Pearl could not cleanse, and under the cleansing power of the Sky Poison Pearl, the devilish poison within the red-haired girl was being subdued gradually. Then, it was consumed and cleansed, resulting in the black shroud of fog being dispersed and completely disappearing very quickly.

After thirty minutes, the devilish poison on the girl was finally completely purified... The fact that it took so long for the Sky Poison Pearl to cleanse it meant that the devilish poison was extremely powerful. Judging by the strength of the devilish poison, if it had completely invaded the girl's soul, just like Jasmine's situation, it would even be considered short if it was completely cleansed in tens of days.

The Sky Poison Pearl's cleansing light had disappeared as Yun Che removed his hand to wipe the sweat on his forehead.

The girl still remained peacefully sleeping, making one to not bear to make a sound lest she woke up. Yun Che suddenly seemed to regain his senses and placed his hand onto her chest again... After a while, he removed his hand and his face was confused.

"No signs of life?" Jasmine asked.

"Not the slightest bit of life..."

"Does that mean that she's actually already dead?" Beside Yun Che, a red light shone and the silhouette of Jasmine appeared as she stared at the girl in the crystal coffin, using her sense to scan her body but unable to detect any signs of life. She then mumbled: "So it's true... Looks like you have wasted your efforts."

Yun Che felt a hidden sense of regret in his heart. He had used all his efforts to purify the devilish poison in the girl and didn't dare to allow a lapse in concentration. However, after completely cleansing the poison, he found out that as his hand was on the girl's body during purification, he didn't detect any signs of life from her. Even now that the poison was completely cleansed, there were no signs of life at all... Obviously, at some point in time within the Coffin of Eternity, she had already lost her life but her guardian did not know as she still remained, senselessly and bitterly guarding her. She was so determined that she didn't let her fragmented soul scatter in anticipation for that glimpse of hope.

Now that her desired Sky Poison Pearl had arrived, she finally dissipated peacefully, but what a pity...

It was lucky that her fragmented soul has already dissipated if not, having to see this scene, she would probably be unable to rest in peace.

Yun Che didn't give up as he used his hand to press at her neck, forehead, wrist and chest... Perhaps it was due to the fact that she was always within the Coffin of Eternity, her body temperature didn't seem cold. Her skin was soft and tender, yet smooth as jade.

However, no matter how Yun Che tried to probe, he couldn't feel any signs of life. There wasn't even the flow of blood either.

Yun Che had finally given up as he let out a sigh inwardly. He spoke while raising his head and looking at the sky: "Old senior, Junior has already fulfilled his promise and completely cleansed the devilish poison from your little mistress' body, however, things didn't go as planned... All I can do is to let her continue sleeping peacefully."

As he spoke, Yun Che pressed his hand on the cover of the Coffin of Eternity... Just as he was about to reseal the lid and not interrupt the girl's slumber, the girl's red eyelashes suddenly moved gently. Following that, her eyes that had been shut for an unimaginable amount of time gradually opened.

These were a pair of ruby-like stunning eyes. The moment her eyes opened, it was as though the dark sky had suddenly been lit up by the shine of stars. Jasmine's eyes would occasionally turn red as well... However, it was the red of bloodthirst. The red of the eyes in front of him now was like the most perfect color formed from the accumulation of the very essence of heaven and earth. It was so beautiful that it was suffocating.

Yun Che didn't move at all; he seemed frozen. His eyes still locked with the little girl's opened eyes. It seemed as though he had turned into stone... He repeatedly confirmed that there were no signs of life on her body, and even Jasmine came to the same conclusion, but she managed to open her eyes... And they were a pair of stunningly beautiful eyes.

As Yun Che looked at her with a stunned expression, her beautiful red eyes stared back at Yun Che. After some time, she finally blinked and eventually sat up within the crystal coffin. Realizing that Yun Che was still staring at her in a daze, she blinked once again. Suddenly, her eyebrows curved and a pair of thin cute crescents appeared above her eyes. Her face had a unbearably cute smile: "Hi big brother!"

"....."

After suddenly waking from a slumber that lasted who knew how long, appearing at a dark and empty space after seeing only strangers... the girl didn't seem to be nervous or scared, not even lost or puzzled. Instead, she smiled brightly and... greeted him!!

=====

Chapter 482 – Hong'er (1)

This little girl's not dead?

Yun Che was always extremely confident in his medical skills and never doubted if he could determine whether a person was alive or dead. However, this little girl in front of him obviously did not possess any signs of life, yet... she could actually wake up!

"You're... not dead?" Yun Che stared in awe at the girl and blurted, asking an exceptionally moronic question.

"Eh?" The girl blinked her eyes as it was still hazy from the long slumber and said softly: "Could it be... that I'm already dead?"

"That's not what I meant... Ugh, what's your name?" Yun Che asked. The girl's aura was extremely weak... Not different from a completely normal girl.

"Name? Ughhhh..." The girl was deep in thought for quite a while before replying with a grin: "Don't know! Does big brother know?"

In normal circumstances, when a person didn't even remember their name, their natural reaction would be to feel lost or confused, but the red haired girl smiled cheerfully instead. The smile was undoubted innocent as even with Yun Che's ability in seeing through people, he couldn't feel any acting or pretension. It was as if not remembering her own name was just a very very small unconcerning matter.

"You don't remember your name? Then... do you know where your home is? Who your parents are?" Yun Che asked very seriously.

"Wuaaahhhhhh..." The girl stretched strongly and directly shook her head: "Of course I don't know! I completely don't remember."

"Then you... do you remember your age? How old are you?"

"This..." The girl thought for a while before raising her hand to rest her face and shaking her head: "I don't know... But big brother is so annoying. I'm just a little beauty. How can you just ask a girl her age so casually."

Yun Che: "~ ! # ¥ %....."

"Looking at her, her soul had probably been affected by the devilish poison, or perhaps she has been in slumber in the Coffin of Eternity for too long, she probably lost her memories of her past." Jasmine said plainly. Just as she had finished speaking, the young girl's eyes looked towards her and started sparkling brightly like stars: "Wahhhhhhhh! Little big sis, your clothes are so pretty! It's red! Red... I love red!!!"

Although Yun Che had bought numerous clothes for Jasmine, the one she wore the most was the first one Yun Che bought for her, the Smoky Red Fairy Dress that was embedded with rubies. This mysterious girl had red hair, red eyes and even wore red clothes. Obviously, she like red just like Jasmine. Therefore, when she saw the elegant Smoky Red Fairy Dress that Jasmine was wearing, her love for it instantly overflowed... But this was not the main point! The young girl's reaction caused Jasmine's brows to twitch intensely, replying in shock: "You can see me?"

Jasmine didn't have a body, only a soul. Unless she showed her soul figure on her own, or if the opponent was sufficiently powerful, no one could see her except for Yun Che. It was obvious that Jasmine was now in a figureless state... Yet, this little girl was able to see her existence!

"Of course I can see you, my eyes aren't spoilt." Jasmine's reaction caused the girl to turn her head to one side. She found that she was in the Coffin of Eternity and softly said: "Waaah! What a beautiful crystal bed! Was this where I was sleeping in? It's so pretty... But it's so hard, it's not really comfortable. Big brother, can you carry me out? The crystal bed is so tall, if I climb out, it will affect my image as a beautiful young lady."

Beautiful... Beautiful young lady...

Image?!?!?

The corners of Yun Che's mouth and eyes twitched obviously as he lended a hand to young girl. Seeing her unsuspecting look, he seriously asked: "Little girl, are you not afraid... that I'm a bad person?"

"Bad person?" The little girl's small face looked up as she thought very deeply for a while, before uttering a sudden "aiya" and retreating her body backwards whilst her cream colored face revealed a frightened expression: "Big brother, could you be the legendary Big Baddie? Wahhhhhh... Baddie don't eat me! I'm just a small beautiful young lady, not tasty at all. Eat me when I'm grown up, okay?"

"~ ! # ¥ %... Of course I'm not a bad person!" The young girl's reaction caused even Yun Che's heart to spasm uncontrollably.

"Mn..." The young girl nodded her head strongly as her eyes flashed and she spoke pitifully: "I knew big brother couldn't be a Big Baddie. Then can big brother carry me out, pleaseee? Pleaseee?"

Yun Che stretched out both his hands, using one hand to support her slender waist and another hand to support her small butt, effortless lifting her out from the crystal coffin, placing her down outside. At that moment, Yun Che face revealed a sense of shock.

Before the girl woke up, him not detecting any signs of life from her body might have been a misjudgement.

But, when he just touched her body, he intentionally probed her body's condition... Yet he did not detect any signs of life at all! Not only were there no signs of life, there wasn't even any sign of blood flow!

What exactly was going on here?

"Wahh... so comfortable!" After leaving the crystal coffin, the girl stretched again strongly before lifting up her face and looking at Yun Che with her ruby like eyes: "Big brother, where are we gonna play? This place looks so fun."

"...Don't you want to know who I am? Or where this place is? Or why you're here?" Yun Che asked in confusion.

"This, this... Is this important?" The girl had a face of confusion before raising her small hand up and shouting excitedly: "Playing is still more important! Big brother, little big sis, quick, bring me to a fun place! I want to see the blue sky, the green grass, and all the colorful flowers!"

"..." This little girl's reaction was completely unlike a normal person's behavior, and this caused Yun Che's human brain to continuously hang. She had been in a deep slumber and lost nearly all her memories. Yet she did not seem to care for all this... not even caring about who she was! Yun Che had seen numerous innocent people in his two lives but he would never encounter a second like this!

He used a pleading expression and looked at Jasmine, but found that Jasmine was staring at the girl with a serious expression.

"Guuuuu..."

A strange sound rang from the girl and she started touching her stomach with her small hand. Her originally excited face fell: "Ummm... I'm suddenly very hungry..." As she finished she turned and stared at Yun Che: "Big brother, I'm suddenly very hungry. Do you have anything nice to eat?"

After sleeping for so many years, suddenly feeling hungry was a very normal thing. Yun Che searched the Sky Poison Pearl before removing a dried biscuit: "Here."

After having the experience of nearly dying under the Sword Management Terrace, Yun Che always kept a large amount of food

and drinks with him. The food would naturally be the easily kept dried goods. The girl took the biscuit, smelled it with her tiny nose and blinked her watery eyes before replying softly: "What a weird smell, it doesn't look nice at all... Is this really edible?"

"Of course it's edible. Even though it looks unappetising, it is actually fragrant once you bite it." Yun Che casually replied while muttering in his heart... Having something to eat when you're hungry is already very good. When I was under the Sword Management Terrace last time, I nearly died of starvation and had to risk my life by eating dragon meat and drinking dragon blood. You're much luckier than me. At least you have a big biscuit to eat!

This girl smelled this biscuit once again and after hesitating for some time, she finally opened her mouth and bit into the biscuit. It was obvious that she then took a lot of strength in order to bite off a small piece.

"So tough, my teeth nearly spoiled." The girl complained softly before carefully starting to chew. Just as she began to chew, the girl's face fell...

"Pupupu... Peipei..." The girl instantly spat out the biscuit that she had not completely chewed, and even spat out the residue in her mouth strongly. Judging from her looks, she couldn't wait to get rid of the taste of the biscuit from her mouth: "Disgusting, too disgusting... I don't want that... So bad! So bad! So bad!!!"

Logically speaking, even if one used to lead a sheltered life, after being hungry for a long time, anything that is edible would be nice. However, looking at the girl, it was as though she had been fed poison. She had an expression of grievance and her eyes turned watery, as though she was about to cry.

Yun Che helpless frowned and searched the Sky Poison Pearl again. Eventually, he found a piece of the rose cakes that Cang Yue had personally made for him... Seeing this piece of rose cake that Cang Yue had made. Yun Che became distracted for a little before he

snapped back into it and nearly withdrew the cakes. Looking at the face full of grievances the girl wore, he still placed into onto her hand: "Alright, the biscuit before might not suit your taste but this is called a rose cake. It's sweet and fragrant. You'll definitely like it."

"Sweet? Fragrant? Really? It smells slightly unpleasant." The girl took the rose cake that was as big as her palm and looked at it with suspicion. With the "lesson" she gained from the biscuit just now, even if she was very hungry she was still very careful and only took a small bite.

"Puuu... Wah! Disgusting!!!"

The girl once again spat out what was in her mouth and even the rose cake had fallen onto the floor. Yun Che hastily rushed over to pick it up. With a pained look, he started to blow the dust of the surface of the cake before keeping it again. Looking at the girl's face, she had obviously found it very disgusting. The delicious rose cake had caused the beautiful small face to turn into a face of suffering. Yun Che helplessly asked: "It can't be that... you only eat meat?"

Not eating biscuits... Probably means that she likes to eat meat.

"Meat... What's that, is it edible? Delicious?"

Yun Che removed a piece of smoked bacon from the Sky Poison Pearl and passed it to the girl: "How about you try eating this..."

The girl received the smoked bacon in anticipation and sniffed it lightly with her small nose... This time, without even biting, she threw the smoked bacon far away with a "woosh": "Wuaaaaahhhhh! So smelly! Disgustingly smelly! I don't want to eat that thing!"

"...Then... what do you want to eat?"

"I want to eat something delicious!!!"

"Something delicious... What's that?"

"Something delicious... I just want to eat something delicious!"

"....."

=====

Chapter 483 – Hong'er (2)

This little girl did not possess the vital signs of a living being, yet she was very much alive, and even though she was clearly hungry, she did not eat dried rations or meat... Yun Che was beginning to suspect that this girl was not even human.

But her appearance was exactly like that of a human, and even if she was some kind of spirit who transformed into a human, she should still eat rations or meat!

What caused Yun Che to collapse was, that even though the little girl's stomach kept rumbling heavily, she herself didn't even know what it was that she liked to eat!

Rumble...

An oppressive sound suddenly rang out, and the space began to quake slightly

"Ah? Such a strange sound... ah, the ground is shaking! Is something fun about to happen?" The unusual vibrations within this space caused the little girl to get excited. Her gaze shot around in all four directions, her scarlet eyes flashing, her excitement allowing her to temporarily forget her hunger.

"Vibrations in space... is the precursor that the Primordial Profound Ark is about to deploy its energy field! We need to leave this place immediately!" Jasmine yelled in haste.

The stirring of the space around them had aroused Yun Che's suspicions... Once the vibrations began, it would take about an hour for the Primordial Profound Ark to generate a repulsing energy field. This repulsion field was the only way for him to leave the Primordial Profound Ark!

And this occurrence could be said to be perfectly timed! If he had delayed leaving the stone room for a day, he would have been

unable to use this energy field to expel himself from the ark. The end result would have been Yun Che having to survive for another eighteen months within the spatial turbulence.

Yun Che swiftly levitated himself, turning around to rush towards the gap he had created with his ice flames. When he was about to exit, the frantic voice of the little girl echoed beneath him, "Ah! Big brother, where are you going?! Bring me with you... Bring me with you!!"

Yun Che turned his head towards the girl, and asked suspiciously, "You can't fly?"

"Fly?" The little girl scrunched up her face as she sincerely pondered the question, after understanding the meaning behind the word 'fly', she stamped her little foot and said, "I am still such a young beauty, how could I fly!"

"..." Even though this little girl's constitution and personality were extremely weird, she still seemed to be nothing more than a normal little girl. Even though she had a tsundere personality and was clingy, he definitely could not just leave her here unattended. So Yun Che had no choice but to fly down and bring her back up with him.

"Wait! Bring the Coffin of Eternity along as well! It is an extremely unusual treasure." Jasmine reminded Yun Che.

Yun Che flew down again, and deposited the Coffin of Eternity into the Sky Poison Pearl, after that he rushed out of the gap and returned to the first floor of the mysterious ancient fortress.

"Wow! What is this place? It's so big!" the little girl twisted her body while she was in Yun Che's arms, her gaze running all over the area, as if she was not worried she would drop at all.

"You have no impression of this place at all?" Yun Che asked.

"Impression? Not at all! I don't remember anything!" the little girl shouted crisply in a lovable voice. And those words "I don't

remember anything" seemed to be shouted with a peculiar... pride!

What was up with this girl's personality! Exactly what kind of parents could have raised such a child?!

Forget it!

Everything else could be addressed once he had left this place!!

Yun Che increased his speed, and flew towards in the direction of the ancient fortress gates. This ancient fortress was simply too large; even though his present speed far exceeded his previous speed, it still took him more than fifteen minutes to travel the distance from the end of the castle to its exit. There was still roughly one hour before the repulsion field would appear, so there was still more than enough time. But Yun Che still rushed forward, as he did not want to chance anything.

In a short amount of time, which was exactly fifteen minutes, Yun Che could see the castle exit... and all this while, he had to endure the excited yelling of a girl right next to his ear; he was not given a moment of respite throughout. If he did not have enough love in his heart, and this little girl did not have the potential to be a game-breaker, he might have just tossed her there and then.

Yun Che's body flickered like an arrow, shooting out of the gates of the ancient fortress and reached the world outside in no time at all.

The light had grown bright; Yun Che slowed down and was stunned by the scenery that laid ahead.

Initially, he had entered the ancient fortress from a flat and boundless wilderness.... That wilderness was purely just a wilderness. With barrenness and openness being its only special characteristics, it was unforgettable.

But right now, what appeared in front of him, was a vast swathe to yellow-green grass, and at a distance, all he could see was a sea of ancient, towering trees. The leaves, branches and trunk of these

ancient trees were largely blue and black in color, and showed no signs of vitality.

"What happened? This definitely was not the place from which I had entered the ancient fortress." Yun Che said with a shocked expression as he turned to look at the towering ancient fortress, its roof was so high it could not be seen with the naked eye.

"My guess was right." Jasmine said in an exceptionally calm voice, "Remember what I had told you at that time? That it was extremely likely that this fortress would move around... and looks it was really the case! If not, it would have long ago been discovered by those from the Profound Sky Continent."

Yun Che's heart grew even more bewildered... if that was truly the case, then how exactly did this gigantic ancient fortress move around? Did this mean that it possessed a life of its own?"

Yun Che came to realize more and more that there was nothing that was impossible in this boundless universe. Before he was sixteen, he was a mere weakling, and the world he recognized was confined within the bounds of Floating Cloud City. Nowadays, as he continued to grow in strength and reach greater and greater heights, the world that he could see had also expanded greatly... yet the feeling he got was that he had become smaller and smaller in the grand scheme of things. In this world, who knew how many more incredible things existed, things which could overturn his understanding in the blink of an eye.

Such as the little girl that was beside him right now!

"Where is this place? Is it a fun place... there is so much grass, and big trees too! But the grass in this place isn't green at all, and it looks like it is about to wither." The little girl measured her new surroundings with curiosity, filling the air with her lovable shouts as she spoke to herself.

Plop!

"Ah... Ow ow ow ow..." The little girl had slept for too long, and she was in a state of extreme hunger. Her body was already soft and weak, so after her exertions, all of a sudden she collapsed onto the ground and made no move to get up. She kept crying in pain, and two huge tears had welled up in her eyes.

Yun Che turned around helplessly, and picked her up from the ground. His emotions were an entangled mess right now... Originally, he had followed a mysterious voice, reached a mysterious place, saw a mysterious protective ball of light, and received a mysterious 'mission'... His heart had been filled with anticipation, thinking that the 'little mistress' of someone who could control such an enormous profound ark had to be some big shot who could shake the heaven and earth. And once Yun Che had saved her, maybe she would feel a deep gratitude towards him; either way, this person would still owe him a debt for saving her life. To Yun Che, this entailed an immeasurable amount of benefits... Would she give Yun Che a treasure which defied the heavens? Or use her powerful strength to help Yun Che fulfill any desire? Or maybe she could even have sent him straight back to the Profound Sky Continent!

But in the end, the person he had rescued did not have any great ability, and he did not attain any benefits, because this person was just a little girl! Not only that, but in this place, other than him, there was no other person, and this little girl did not emit a single iota of power from her body either. If he left her here, she was dead meat, and if he brought her together with him out of the Primordial Profound Ark.....

Dammit! This was simply just adding a huge burden to himself!!

If he was by himself, he could do whatever he wanted, and intently pursue anything without any distraction; he could even venture into the most dangerous places. But if he brought along this huge burden with him...

Just thinking of this made it hard for Yun Che to breathe.

And if he just dumped her somewhere... Ah, in the end, he did save her, and he couldn't bear to do something against his conscience.

The little girl turned to Yun Che with tears in eyes, but realized that Yun Che was just standing there daydreaming, and he completely missed the pitiful look in her eyes. She pouted and said in a tender voice filled with grievance, "Big brother! It really hurt when I fell, but you didn't even care about me...."

"Guuu guuu guu...."

The little girl's stomach sounded in a very timely fashion, she covered her little stomach, her expression becoming pitiful, "Wuuuu... I am very hungry, so hungry that I wanna die. Big brother, won't you please find something for me to eat?"

"You need to at least tell me what you want to eat, you know." Yun Che said with an expression filled with agony.

"Wuuuu..... I dunnooo...."

"What kind of person doesn't even know what she wants to eat?!"

"But I really don't know!!"

Yun Che almost went crazy.

"Okay, I'll go find something for you to eat." Yun Che could only say this to pacify her. After which, he strode forward and observed the surrounding area, trying to look for any unusual phenomena.

"Big brother, where are you going?" Once she saw Yun Che leave, the little girl hurriedly followed after him. After this, she shadowed his every movement. Where he went, she followed, when he stopped, she also stopped. A pair of scarlet eyes were fixed anxiously to his body, as if she was scared that he would suddenly run away.

"You can't be prepared to keep following after me like that right?" Yun Che said as he turned around, his face filled with frustration.

"Of course I am! If such a lovely and cute little beauty followed you, it should definitely make you happy, right?" The little girl used both her hands to prop up her face as she made a cute pose.

Yun Che bent at the waist, and revealed an evil and sinister expression, as he said in a low voice, "Little sister, I forgot to tell you but I am actually.... A super big pervert who specializes in tricking little girls much like yourself!"

"Oh I can testify to that." Jasmine said to his side in a neutral tone.

"Super.... big pervert? The girl bit her finger, and suspiciously blinked her eyes,"What is that? Can it be eaten?"

"...A pervert refers to a super big bad guy who specializes in tricking all kinds of beauties and eating them after!" Yun Che gnashed his teeth, and said with an evil expression, "Are you afraid?!"

"Well..." The girl cluelessly blinked her eyes and said. "Even though I don't really understand, it sounds really awesome. Anyways, I don't care about this, go find me some food to eat already!"

"~ ! # ¥ %....."

Yun Che's entire being was filled with a deep sense of powerlessness. He had a premonition that unless he mercilessly dumped this little girl somewhere and let her fend for herself, he would never be rid of this huge burden.

The vibrations in the space were slowly getting more and more violent. Yun Che walked to the front of an ancient tree, and looked out into the distance. All he saw was wilderness; even after he strained his eyes, the result was still the same. He would not be able to make it to the end with the time he had remaining. He sat on the ground, thinking about the situation with the little girl as he waited for the repulsion field to come.

"I am finally going leave this place..." Thinking back on the two years he had spent in the Primordial Profound Ark, Yun Che sighed deeply

in his heart. The difficulties he had endured in the past two years was beyond the imagination of normal people. At the same time, his cultivation had received an immeasurably large boost. But even though his improvement was tremendous, he still could not find a way back.

"That lingering spirit said that she controlled the profound ark to visit various places in search of the Sky Poison Pearl. Then, every time the profound ark stopped, it should have been in a place with as many living creatures as the Profound Sky Continent, and it would not be a barren world... At least, I hope it's not." Yun Che was unable to foresee what kind of world he would be brought to, and he could only console himself for the time being. But whatever world he landed in, what would decide his fate and level would always be strength.

Once he thought of that, he retrieved both the broken pieces of Dragon Fault and laid it by his side. The destruction of Dragon Fault was an extremely huge loss and regret to him. Without Dragon Fault, his battle strength would inevitably fall significantly. Once he reached the new world, he had absolutely no confidence that he could find a weapon to replace Dragon Fault in a short period of time. Looking at the completely lifeless and fractured Dragon Fault, he mumbled to himself, "Once I reach the new world, the first thing I must do is find some way to repair you...."

"Sniff... sniff... sniff!"

From Yun Che's side, there suddenly came the heavy sound of sniffing. The originally hungry and despondent little girl stood up with a whoosh, and was sniffing the air with her little nose as if her life depended on it, "It smells so good... smells so good! I can smell something nice to eat? Where is it, where is it, where is it..."

As the girl sniffed the air, the saliva from her mouth overflowed. She sucked it back in heavily, but as soon as she did so, her saliva continued to drip to the floor and she could not stop it. The little girl searched for quite a while, but once her eyes landed on the

fractured Dragon Fault, they emitted an extremely bright light.

"Something delicious... something delicious!!"

The little girl screeched with joy and practically bulldozed her way forward, grabbing Dragon Fault. Her extremely bizarre actions caused Yun Che's face to twitch exaggeratedly, as he said in a powerless voice, "Stop messing around, it's really very heavy... My... my god!"

After the little girl grabbed Dragon Fault, she immediately stood up and carried Dragon Fault in her arms...

Carried it in her arms!!

Even though Dragon Fault was broken and had lost all its energy and presence, its heavy weight had not changed! Each piece weighed at least ten thousand kilograms! But this girl who would feel tired from walking and even collapse from time to time, she could actually effortlessly pick up a piece of Dragon Fault. And looking at her right now, she did not even break a sweat.

Drip, drip...

Saliva uncontrollably poured from her mouth, causing the body of the sword to become drenched in a blink of an eye. The girl sucked in her saliva, and with eyes flashing with excitement, opened her mouth and bit down on the blade of Dragon Fault.

Crunch!

The place where the girl had bitten down on was a missing a large piece. The little girl drummed her cheeks, making loud chewing sounds, as if she was chewing sweets, and with a gulp, she swallowed what she was chewing.

Yun Che looked at the missing portion of Dragon Fault which was outlined by teeth marks and his eyes widened. His entire body becoming a statue, his mouth gaping so widely that one could shove

a full-grown yak into it.

=====

Chapter 484 – Hong'er (3)

Earlier, Jasmine had said that the boundless universe comprised of countless planets, and countless astral planes which were levels above that of planets. The Blue Polar Star was nothing more than one of the countless extremely normal planets. Even if it was suddenly destroyed, in this boundless universe, it was nothing but the disappearance of something similar to a tiny speck of dust, and it could not bring forth even the smallest wave. The Blue Polar Star was comprised of ninety-seven percent water, and three percent land. The domain of the Profound Sky Continent, which in the knowledge of the Profound Sky residents was especially huge, merely took up a hundredth of the Blue Polar Star's surface. In the boundless universe, it could not even be considered as a speck of dust.

In such a huge world, there would always be a possibility for an outrageously strange living being to exist.

It might even be possible for a living being which could eat anything to exist!

This little red-haired girl in front of him for example, did not eat wheaten food, and did not eat meat products... Instead, she was actually eating... Dragon Fault!!

And in regards to this point, by gritting his teeth, he seemed to be barely able to come to terms with this. But... Dragon Fault! Before it was broken, it was an Emperor Sword! And it was even an Emperor Profound heavy sword! It had grown while Yun Che fought and kill all this while. It had savored upon countless amount of fresh blood, had destroyed numerous boulders, had leveled a mountain, and furthermore, had even shattered countless of armor and weapons. Even if it had currently lost its spiritual consciousness and powerful aura, its degree of tenacity definitely would not drop that much. Even if it was Yun Che whose strength had explosively increased, unless he were to make use of the ice flames, it would be hard to use

his own strength to destroy it.

In regards to using his teeth to bite it apart... Even if he were to use all his might, he shouldn't even think about leaving a single scar.

However, this little twerp who looked as though did not possess any aura, and even felt that a biscuit was hard to bite on, had actually bit a large chunk of Dragon Fault with a single mouthful. And then, after chewing two to three times, she swallowed it down... swallowed... swallowed it down...

"Delicious... So delicious!!"

The starving little girl had finally managed to eat a delicacy. Her cheeks flushed from happiness, and even her pair of eyes were emitting out ripples of crimson red glow. She impatiently took another bite, and with a "kabank" sound, an even larger chunk of Dragon Fault's blade was bit off by her. And then, chewing another two to three times, she swallowed it down. Then, she directly carried Dragon Fault next to her mouth, opened her mouth wide, and bit it. Like eating corn, she bit it in a horizontal manner, and in a blink of an eye, the part where the blade was, was bit with numerous holes.

Only at this moment did Yun Che finally regained his senses from a stoned state. Letting out a strange noise, he pounced over, and snatched the broken Dragon Fault back from the little girl who was still vigorously biting on it. Seeing the once mighty and peerless sword blade being bitten into a jagged state, not being to find even a single untouched spot from top to bottom, and was even completely stained with shiny saliva, Yun Che's heart had almost cried out blood.

"Ah!! That's my food... Return it to me!!" After her food was coldly snatched away by Yun Che, the little girl who was happily eating earlier, instantly became anxious, as she leapt and jump about, trying to snatch the broken sword from Yun Che's hands. Frustrated, Yun Che widened his eyes, and loudly shouted. "Who gave you the permission to eat it!? This is Dragon Fault... Dragon Fault! It's not

food!"

"But it's clearly yummy food... Hurry and return it to me! Return it to me!" The little girl jumped as tried to grab it, and a long strand of saliva was still hanging down by the corner of her lips. However, her body was after all, too small; no matter how she jumped, it wasn't sufficient for her to reach Yun Che's shoulder-height. And at this moment, she suddenly recalled that there was another piece of delicacy on the ground. She closed her mouth, instantly gave up on the piece in Yun Che's hands, turned around, and sprinted towards the other broken sword piece. And at this moment, Yun Che immediately reacted at the same time as well. His heart trembled, as he charged over with blinding speed.

However, even with his speed, he was still a step slower than the little girl. The little girl had already hugged onto the upper broken blade of Dragon Fault, still effortlessly, and then... began to run away!

Still thinking of running?!

Yun Che's eyes revealed a fierce light... Although Dragon Fault had been broken, it was still possible to be restored. However, with its lower half already bitten with full of holes, even if it was restored, how would there even be a hint of domineering aura from holding onto a Dragon Fault filled with bite marks!? No matter what, he could not allow her to bite on the upper half of the sword blade as well!

Furious, Yun Che instantly used his maximum speed. However, even with his maximum speed, he realized that he could never approach her... The little girl wildly sprinted, her crimson red hair swept up a long red blur behind her. Her speed was simply quick to the extreme. And, in her embrace, she was still hugging onto Dragon Fault which was more than five thousand kilograms in mass!

What... What kind of situation was this!?

Yun Che first stared with widened eyes, right after, he turned

completely exasperated, and immediately activated "Purgatory". His speed immediately rose explosively, and caught up to the little girl in an instant. The moment the little girl turned her head, and saw that Yun Che's hand was just about to grab onto her hair, she instantly cried out. "Aaaaaah! You can't steal my delicious food! You can't!!"

As she cried out, the little girl's speed instantly rose all of a sudden as well. Her entire figure, as though she had turned into a stream of red light, became further and further away from Yun Che's line of sight... She had shockingly thrown off Yun Che, whose speed had already been raised to the absolute limit, far away.

Yun Che was completely dumbfounded.

Not only was the little girl unbelievably fast, as she wildly sprinted, she was even directly putting Dragon Fault next to her lips, and with incomparably shocking speed, started chewing it. When Yun Che heard the clanking sounds, he raised his head, and realized that in a blink of an eye, close to half of the broken Dragon Fault in her hands had already disappeared.

At that moment, Yun Che's eyeballs were close to falling out. And, the remaining half of the broken sword did not escape the fate of being eaten either. As he simply heard the "crunch crunch crunch" sounds, another small part of it had once again entered the little girl's mouth. That chewing speed of hers, could not even be compared by her sprinting speed either. Following after, the "crunch crunch crunch" munching sounds came again, and even the remaining hilt of Dragon Fault, was cleanly eaten by her...

After finishing with the Dragon Fault, the little girl finally stopped running, and instantly stopped. She turned around, raised her chest up high, and as she chewed in an intoxicated manner, she unclearly said. "Wu... I finished eating it. It's so delicious... There's no use even if you chase after me again, okay..."

Yun Che stopped flusteredly as well, and his eyes stared straight at that little girl who carried a pure, satisfied expression... That gaze of

his, was as though he was looking at a little monster! Oh, that's not right. It's a huge monster!

That strength which could casually carry Dragon Fault which weighed five thousand kilograms, and that speed which he could not catch up no matter what he did... The key point was that teeth that could eat Dragon Fault as though it was candy... This seemingly tender and frail little girl who did not have any presence of life, nor any energy aura... Just what kind of monster was she?

And forget about the weight of the half piece of Dragon Fault, just by its size, it was seemingly comparable to this little girl's height. However, after she ate the entire thing, her stomach actually did not look bloated in the slightest... Just where did it go?!

However, to the current Yun Che, the anger in his heart had slightly suppressed his astonishment. The upper half of Dragon was completely eaten by the little girl, while the lower half was bitten full of holes as well. There was definitely no possibility of Dragon Fault being restored any longer. However, the culprit for this entire mess was, after all, merely a little girl of tender age. The naive and spirited look in her eyes were impossible for anyone to not love them, and Yun Che was completely unable to harm her in the slightest, instead, he could only roar out loudly. "Y-Y-Y-You... You little... You little brat! Didn't I say that you're not allowed to eat it!! It's not food, it's my sword, Dragon Fault! It's something very important to me! How can you eat it!?"

"But, it's a really yummy food." With Yun Che's loud roar, and his completely reddened face, he seemed to be really angry. The little girl's snow-white sneck slightly shrank, as she weakly said. "Wu... big brother, can you not scold me? It's just a really tasty sword. At the very most, I can give you one back."

"What tasty sword!? That's Dragon Fault!" Yun Che roared out in grief. "It's not just a mere sword, it's a companion and friend which had accompanied for many years! It's the most important thing by my side! There's only one in the entire world! When you ate it, it's gone

forever, so how are you going to give it back to me!?"

The more he thought about it now, the more he felt that being a busybody and saving this little brat was the worst decision he had ever made in his entire life. In just the short span of time after he saved her, he could forget about receiving something in return, and he could forget about how troublesome this matter was as well... but she actually... ate his Dragon Fault!!

The little girl's neck once again shrank back, however, her little face revealed an unsatisfied expression. With her nose raised, she said. "What I will give you in return is more incredible than the one I ate earlier! Hmph!"

After saying that, a crimson red light suddenly radiated from her body. Within the light, she slowly floated up in the air, and her entire figure was completely enveloped by red light... Following after, the red light exploded apart in the sky, and then, completely dispersed.

Yun Che's pair of eyes, was once again largely widened... The number of times he was shocked on this day, was most probably more than the number of times added up in several years.

Following after the dispersal of the red light, the little girl's figure had completely disappeared. Floating in the sky, what appeared in Yun Che's eyes, was shockingly... a crimson red odd-shaped gigantic sword!!

The entire sword was completely crimson red in color. The blade was filled with rows of messy deep-red inscriptions, and an extremely light layer of obscure red glow was enveloping it as well. The length of the blade was more than nine feet, which was larger than Dragon Fault by thirty percent. And with this length, it had even surpassed an absolutely large number of spear-related weapons! The sword of the hilt was straight and bulky, and above the hilt, the base of the blade was shockingly more than two feet in width. Moving up the blade, the width of the blade irregularly shrank, and at the end of the blade, it had already shrank into an incomparably sharp tip,

radiating with a cold, crimson red light!

It was larger than both the Overlord's Colossal Sword and Dragon Fault, however, different from the heavy and thick blade tip of the Overlord's Colossal Sword and Dragon Fault, it was actually incomparably sharp, enough to produce a piercing strike with immense penetrative power. However, putting aside its outer appearance, this sword actually completely lacked an imposing atmosphere... It was lifeless without a single hint of aura emitting from it, as though it was crafted from nothing more than the most normal profound metal.

Yun Che's eyes widened, completely dumbfounded... What he was shocked about was naturally not because of the sword itself, rather, it was because this sword, was transformed by that little girl right in front of his eyes!!

The gigantic crimson red sword swirled around in the air, and then, with the sword tip pointing downwards, it descended under Yun Che's stunned gaze. With a light sound, the blade tip deeply stabbed into the ground at the bottom, which was extremely hard itself. And even though the part where the blade tip was had stabbed into the ground, the straightened gigantic crimson red sword was still much taller than Yun Che. The top of Yun Che's head was only comparable to the bottom of the sword hilt.

Following after its descent, Yun Che realized that at the bottom of the gigantic crimson red sword's hilt, at the center of the widest part of the sword, a marble of about seventeen to eighteen centimeters in diameter was embedded in it... Within the marble, astonishingly, he saw the little girl who had disappeared!

The height of her body had already turned into about seventeen centimeters tall, and although she had turned especially pocket-sized, her clothes, the color of her hair, her face, and even her eyes could still be seen clearly. She, who was within the marble, placed her hands on both sides of her waist, and laughed out loud triumphantly. "Hehehehe! I succeeded! I succeeded! As expected, I'm

really amazing! Big brother, did you see it? Isn't it much better than that... uhh... farmer faulty thing!"

"It's Dragon Fault!" Yun Che's voice slightly trembled.

=====

Chapter 485 – Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword

Possessing frightening strength, with speed that Yun Che was not able to catch up to, and eating up Dragon Fault, the little girl now revealed to him her fourth ability...

She could actually turn into a sword!!

Furthermore, it was a sword that was bigger than the Overlord's Colossal Sword and Dragon Fault! And such a huge sword could only be called a heavy sword.

After turning into sword, she could still make a miniature version of herself appear within it.

Yun Che was currently feeling faint and even wondered whether he was dreaming. Although there were many mysteries in the boundless universe, this was still too outrageous!

Yun Che stared at the scarlet greatsword, beside him, rang the sounds of the girl's satisfied flaunting. In his shock, he couldn't even tell what the girl was shouting about. He looked from up to down, from left to right, unable to describe how he felt. With his experiences from two lifetimes and the calmness he got after being baptized by the spatial storm, he was still unable to comprehend this creepy matter that was in accordance to the laws of life and the world.

When he looked carefully again, he suddenly saw that on the two sides of the core pearl, each side was imprinted with a word... The two words were both deep red and completely the same as the patterns that were imprinted on the blade. If one did not look carefully, they would very easily miss it.

The two words were, on the left "Devil" and on the right "Slayer".

"Slayer Devil... No, it should be Devil Slayer?" Yun Che muttered.

"What? Devil Slayer?!?"

Yun Che's muttering caused a huge reaction from the pondering Jasmine as she instantly came beside Yun Che and asked: "Where did you see those two words?"

Yun Che pointed towards the left and right of the core pearl. Jasmine's gaze swept passed the words "Devil Slayer", as deep shock appeared on her face.

"You know this sword?" Yun Che asked immediately.

Jasmine didn't answer him but instead still stared at the deep scarlet greatsword, as though she was trying very hard to try to remember something. After sometime, she finally said softly: "Could it be..."

Halfway through speaking, Jasmine suddenly looked up and said: "Go look at the other side of the sword, see if it's the words 'Devil Slayer' as well!"

Yun Che nodded and swiftly turned the sword to the other side. At the same position, he found another two similarly colored words... However the two words were not "Devil" and "Slayer".

The left side was "Heaven" and the Right was "Smiting".

"Smiting Heaven?" Yun Che muttered and frowned: "No, from the position of the words, it should be... 'Heaven Smiting!'"

Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer?

"Heaven Smiting? How could it be those two words?" Seeing the words "Heaven Smiting", Jasmine's expression changed drastically as shock and confusion appeared together on her face: "Could I be wrong... No! This feeling, it obviously is..."

"Jasmine, what exactly did you figure out? Do you know this sword's... or this little girl's origins?" Yun Che ask in confusion.

"I'm not sure." Jasmine slowly shook her head: "My previous guess was too whimsical and the words 'Heaven Smiting' threw my guess off by nearly ninety percent. You don't have to ask anymore. What I'm guessing, even if I explained to you, would only serve to confuse you and not clarify matters! However, I do understand why there aren't any signs of life on her."

"Why?"

"Because it's highly likely she's not human! Nor is she any ordinary living being!" Jasmine slowly explained: "She's probably a 'celestial spirit' that exceeds any living being!"

"Celestial Spirit?" This was the first time Yun Che had heard of this concept.

"The strength of a living being needs to be built upon cultivation, but for a celestial spirit, they possess exceptional powers of heaven and earth at birth. However, the existence of 'celestial spirits' had already been extinct since the Ancient Era, and should not exist within this era. I have only heard of them from my brother. However, this girl is from the Ancient Era and has many peculiarities. Even with my understanding, I cannot explain them. Therefore, she's likely a being that isn't from a normal clan of the Ancient Era, and her characteristics are similar to the 'celestial spirits' that my brother described. Therefore, I think there is at least a fifty percent chance she come from a celestial spirit clan from the Ancient Era!"

Jasmine word's were very calm but Yun Che could still hear the hesitation in her voice. Because even if it was Jasmine, she had never interacted with a celestial spirit before and what she said were all merely speculation. And with Jasmine's profound realm and knowledge, if she was stunned by the girl's peculiarities... any guess, no matter how ridiculous would not be too overly exaggerated.

"Go and try the sword." Jasmine said suddenly.

The scarlet greatsword did not possess any aura, nor was it

imposing. Even though it was massive, it didn't possess any overbearing aura that a heavy sword should have. Yun Che placed on of his hand on the sword's hilt and casually grabbed it.

The scarlet greatsword did not move one bit.

Although it was a casual grab, with Yun Che's arm strength, he at least possessed a few thousand kilograms of strength, yet he was unable to move this unimposing greatsword at all.

Yun Che was stunned as his face revealed great shock. After he recovered from the shock, he stood up properly, placed both his hands on the sword hilt and activated the "Purgatory" gate. All his profound strength and arm strength gathered to both his arms.

"Haah!!"

Yun Che howled as his arms began to rise. Under his full strength, the scarlet greatsword was lifted off the ground as he swung the sword to create a slash, leaving behind a scarlet trajectory. Holding onto the scarlet greatsword in midair, his muscles tightened and his veins bulged. He felt that he was not holding onto a sword, but a mountain!

The weight he felt in his arms was at least ten times that of Dragon Fault!!

It was at least a hundred thousand kilograms!!

If it were not for the fourth stage of the Great Way of the Buddha granting him fifty thousand kilograms of arm strength, and using his own strength and profound strength, he probably would not be able to lift this sword at all.

The brat was only twenty to thirty kilograms and he could lift her with half a finger... How could she turn into a sword that was this heavy?!

Although this scarlet greatsword was bigger than Dragon Fault, it

was at most bigger by thirty percent, yet it was at least ten times heavier! The concentration of its strength should be frightening, but why was it not imposing at all!

The weight on both his arms reminded him of the first time he wielded the Overlord's Colossal Sword. He gritted his teeth and concentrated his strength on his arms, then began to swing the scarlet greatsword around. The moment he started swinging, the aura became imposing, as though it was a raging ocean's waves banging heavily onto shore. The burst of the sword was as deafening as a thunder strike... One could only imagine the destructive power of being hit by the sword.

"Wah, wah, wah... So fun! Fun, fun... Wuahhhh, why do I feel dizzy..."

The immense weight did not cause Yun Che to retreat, but instead made him even more excited. Even the increasingly intense vibrations were thrown to the back of his mind. Only when the excited sound of the little girl rang did his motion stop, reminding him that this sword... was transformed from the little girl!

"Quick, drop your blood onto the sword... A drop is sufficient!" Jasmine's voice suddenly sounded and it was using the soul transmission that no one else could hear.

Although he did not know why Jasmine's shout sounded serious, Yun Che did not ask too much and immediately condensed a drop of blood from the tip of his finger, dropping it onto the scarlet greatsword.

The moment the drop of blood touched the scarlet greatsword, Jasmine, who was behind Yun Che immediately stacked her hands together and displayed a weird hand seal. In the palm of her hand, a deep blood-like red glow flashed.

At the same instant, the blood that was dripping down the sword stopped, entered the core of the sword, and completely disappeared.

Jasmine's actions completely avoided Yun Che's vision and spiritual sense causing him to not detect anything... he only felt a weird energy fluctuation for an instant.

"Ehh? Why do I feel so weird."

The girl sounded slightly confused. The scarlet greatsword on Yun Che's hand flashed with a red light and disappeared. The red haired red clothed young girl reappeared and when she landed, she did not immediately acknowledge Yun Che. Instead, she held her face and bit her finger unintentionally seemingly thinking very hard about something.

The scarlet greatsword disappeared, but the heavy feeling still lingered on his arm. His heart was unable to calm down from his excitement... Although wielding this scarlet greatsword was still slightly straining for him, when he was able to fully wield it, with this sword in hand, his explosive power would be far beyond that of Dragon Fault!

If this was only a heavy sword, Yun Che would do whatever it took to get it. But this sword... was actually not a sword!

"Little girl, you're really... very strong!" Yun Che changed from his angry and wild expression to a more gentle one and said. He suddenly felt that it was important for him to build a good relationship with the girl.

The girl looked up at him with a muddled expression before tilting her head: "Why do I feel weird? Why, eh..."

"Where do you feel weird?" Yun Che asked.

"I don't know, I just feel weird." She looked at Yun Che and said with a serious expression: "Ugh, I seem to like you more! Being liked by a super beauty like me, do you feel happy?"

"...Little girl," Yun Che touched his face, speaking in a more serious tone than her: "In my previous life, I already knew my charms. From

the innocent little lolis to the invincible old virgins, liking me is a very very normal thing. Therefore, you don't have think that it's weird at all"

"Little loli? Old virgin... What are those?" The girl seemed confused before she suddenly shook her head: "Ahhh! I forbid you from calling me little girl. It's not nice sounding at all!"

"What should I call you then?"

"Call... Call... Call me little beauty!"

"...You really don't remember your name?"

"Of course not, I already said I don't!"

"Then... How about I give you a name?"

"Name me?" The girl's eyes sparkled as she grew excited: "Okay, okay! But it must be a nice and cute name that I like!"

Yun Che looked at the girl's red clothes, red hair , red eyes... even her favourite color was red. He thought for a while and said: "Then, I'll call you Hong'er."

"Hong'er... Hong'er... Hong'er... Hong'er..." The girl repeated the name several times. Her eyes sparkled even more as she replied in high spirits: "Then, call me Hong'er next time... Hehe! I have a name! Hong'er Hong'er... Next time don't call me little girl, or little brat, not even little beauty. You can only call me Hong'er!"

Seeing how unusually excited she became, it was obvious to see that she was very satisfied with the name.

=====

Chapter 486 – Contracted Profound Seal

In regards to the name Hong'er, it was simple and rolled off the tongue, not to mention that it really suited this little brat. Seeing her satisfied look, Yun Che naturally felt very satisfied in his heart as well.

Just a moment ago, he was still regretting that he saved this abandoned child who ate his Dragon Fault, but now, after he had witnessed that scarlet greatsword and had seen her current expression, he seemingly had the urge to drool. However, wielding a dead sword was easy, but, wielding a sword that was "alive" like this one... To be more precise, this was a living person. It was basically a completely different concept!

Just as he was beginning to think of how he was going to have this little brat listen to him obediently, with a heavy tone, Jasmine suddenly said. "Hurry and plant a subjugation profound imprint on her... The same subjugation profound imprint used to form a subjugation contract with a profound beast!"

"Mn?" Yun Che blanked. "What do you mean?"

"It's very simple. You only have to plant a Seal of Contract on her body, similar to forming a contract with a profound beast, and you will be able to form a master-slave contract with her... With you as the master!" Jasmine lightly said.

"This..." Yun Che was surprised in his heart. "But that's a method to subdue profound beasts. She's human, not a profound beast, so how could a contract be formed this way!?"

"Hmph, she's not a mere 'human'!" Jasmine coldly said. "If you were to directly cast a Seal of Contract, even if she doesn't resist, it would still be completely effective. But, just now, the blood you sprinkled on the sword has already been imprinted within her soul! Now, if you were to set the Contracted Profound Seal, the Contracted Profound Seal

will quickly merge with the blood that you have left in her soul, and it will be imprinted within her soul forever! Unless you remove it on your own accord, she will never be able to escape from this contract!”

“...” Hearing Jasmine’s words, Yun Che’s mind was in a complete mess. How could the blood which he had sprinkled onto the scarlet greatsword according to Jasmine’s instructions, be imprinted onto Hong’er’s soul? And it could even correspondingly merge with the Contracted Profound Seal? The Contracted Profound Seal which was used to form a contract with profound beasts... could be effective on humans as well?

What’s up with all that?!

“Do it according to my instructions this instant.” Jasmine did not have the slightest intention of joking around. “Currently, she has lost all of her memories, so the concept of a Contracted Profound Seal is completely foreign to her. When she woke up, the first person she saw was you as well, so in her subconsciousness, she’s extremely close to you, and is completely defenseless against you. Hence, as long as you provide a little guidance, she shouldn’t resist you. This is a heavenly opportunity that’s hard to come by even in a million years! If her memories were to suddenly return, and you wish to form a master-slave contract with her then, that will be a completely impossible matter!”

Yun Che finally understood Jasmine’s words. His heart was greatly stirred, but, he still hesitantly said. “This... isn’t really a good idea, right? Right now, she doesn’t have her memories. If I were to take this opportunity, and it really succeeds, it seemed to be a little too unfair to her.”

“Hmph, isn’t tricking girls the thing you do the most!? But now, you’re actually beginning to act like a gentleman?” Jasmine said with a cold smile.

These few words which Jasmine casually mentioned, had completely

shattered the morals which had finally managed to sprout in Yun Che. Jasmine would often say several shocking things that overturned his understanding and knowledge, however, she had never lied to him either. If Hong'er could really be subjugated just like a contracted beast like she had said...

Mn, Hong'er wasn't the key point. The key point was that she could change into that sword!!

"Hmm? What's wrong with you? Why did you suddenly stop talking?" Hong'er tip-toed, raised her little white, tender hands, and shook them in front of his eyes.

Yun Che regained his senses at that moment. Bending down, he said with a smile. "Hong'er, let's discuss something, alright?"

"Discuss... something?" Hong'er tilted her head.

"Just now, you ate my Dragon Fault, and then, you said that you will pay me back, right?" Yun Che still carried that smile on his face.

Hong'er nodded. However, looking at her expression, she had evidently raised her guard.

Since Hong'er nodded, she had made it easier for him to say the following words. Yun Che then slowly continued. "Dragon Fault is my weapon. Since Dragon Fault has been eaten by you, I no longer have any weapons that I can use. Since you said that you will pay me back, then in the future, when I need to use a weapon, you have to transform into that sword earlier, is this agreeable? Hong'er is a beautiful young lady, and a beautiful young lady must keep her words!"

Hong'er blinked, and pondered very deeply for a moment. Then... she actually nodded.

It's... that easy?

She's actually so obedient?

Hong'er agreed to it too simply, which caused Yun Che to instead feel a little speechless. At this moment, Hong'er said out very loudly. "Although just now, it was really fun in that form, I don't want to just listen to your words for nothing... Unless, you promise me three conditions!"

Conditions?!

This little brat who looked absolutely naive and completely schemeless... actually wanted to talk conditions with him?

"What conditions?" This time, it was Yun Che who raised his guard.

"They're really simple!" Hong'er raised her little face, and stretched out a white, tender finger. "One, you must play with me often, you can't ignore me. Two, you must find me various tasty food everyday, you're not allowed to make me hungry, nor are you allowed to be petty. Three, you can't throw me aside and run away like what happened earlier, nor are you allowed to scold me!"

"..." Yun Che was instantly speechless. These three conditions were clear, straight to the point and easily understood... Everything in regards to food and fun were all covered! This little brat totally wasn't as dense and stupid as she looked!

"Al... right!" Yun Che acted as though he was hesitant for a moment, before he nodded in agreement.

"Eh? Really... You really agree to everything, and will keep to your promises?" Seeing Yun Che nodding, Hong'er's eyes sparkled. Her tender lips opened, and instantly shouted out in excitement.

"Of course, I keep to my promises. But you must be obedient as well. When I want you to turn into a sword, you definitely mustn't not listen to me!" Yun Che said very sternly.

"Yay!" Hong'er happily cheered and then nodded like a little chick pecking for rice. "Mn, mn, mn, mn! As long as I get to play and eat many tasty food, then I will definitely be the most obedient... Wu,

umm, umm..." Hong'er placed her pair of hands on her cheeks, and her eyes flashed with sparkles. "Right now, I'm hungry again. That thing called farmer faulty earlier, there still seems to be half of it. Can I eat it now?"

"It's Dragon Fault!"

Yun Che took out the lower half of Dragon Fault, and his heart still ached from looking at the bite marks on it... Thinking back, Dragon Fault was unimaginably imposing in his own hands. They, one person and one sword, obtained the top position in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, exterminated Fen Moli, Fen Yijue, shook Frozen Cloud Asgard, destroyed the entire Burning Heaven Clan, defeated Ling Tianni, and furthermore, in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, they swept across a crowd of mighty foes, shaking the entire world... They were basically beyond awe-inspiring.

He could put aside the fact that it had broken, but it had actually turned into this little brat's food!!

Old friend, it has been hard on you. In any case, your other half has already entered her stomach, just take it as though I'm sending you into her stomach in order to reunite you... Yun Che groaned in his heart. He did not give to her immediately. Instead, he hid it behind his back, and said. "I can give you the other half now, but you have to fulfill a small promise for me as well."

Seeing the other half of Dragon Fault and smelling its aura, Hong'er's saliva instantly flowed down. As she forcefully gulped her saliva, she anxiously said. "What is it, what is it!?"

"Close your eyes, and in the next twenty seconds, no matter what I do to you, you're not allowed to resist! Simple, right?" Yun Che bent his waist, revealed a smiling face, and said with incomparable gentleness.

"Twenty seconds, and I'm not allowed to resist? Ehhh!?" Hong'er's tender and small body shrank back, and her little hands grabbed

onto the corner of her skirt as she gave a vigilant look. "Could it be... you're trying to molest me? No, no, no! I'm a little beautiful lady with the purest body, I don't want to be molested at all."

Molest... This brat actually knows about molestation!!

"Who said I wanted to molest you!?" Sweat constantly dripped down from Yun Che's forehead. "I simply want to touch the center of your forehead with my hand... and that's it!"

"Ah?" Hong'er looked doubtful, as she stretched her hand and touched the center of her forehead. "Why do you want to touch this spot?"

"Because... I love touching that spot of other people the most, especially when it belongs to a cute, beautiful little lady!" Yun Che said with great difficulty.

"Is that so..." Hong'er pondered for a moment. Being touched at the center of the forehead, and then being able to eat the delicious Dragon Fault right after; no matter how she thought about it, it was a really great deal. "Okay... But, after touching it, you have to let me eat farmer faulty. You definitely mustn't go back on your words."

It's Dragon Fault! Yun Che roared out in his heart... Since Hong'er had agreed to it, then it was much easier to handle. He nodded, and slowly said. "Alright... First, close your eyes... That's right, you're not allowed to open them. A moment later, no matter what happens, you're not allowed to resist. Don't worry, other than the center of your forehead, I will not touch anywhere else, nor will I molest you!"

Hong'er stood in front of Yun Che, and closed her eyes according to his instructions. It was unknown if it was because she was too naive, or she did not have any defense against Yun Che in her subconsciousness, but not only did she not feel disturbed, she instead carried curiosity and expectation on her face. Yun Che took a small breath, condensed a pearl of blood at the tip of his finger, and then, gently tapped on the center of Hong'er's forehead. In an

instant, a small-scaled Contracted Profound Seal appeared at the center of her forehead.

The entire process, was completely the same as forming a contract with a completely subjugated profound beast.

Did it really succeed? Although he had always trusted Jasmine the most, he still carried a deep doubt in his subconsciousness... After all, this was simply a little too outrageous.

With the appearance of the Contracted Profound Seal, as long as Hong'er carried the slightest of will to resist it, the Contracted Profound Seal would be instantly expelled by her... Even if this Contracted Profound Seal was really effective against human lives, then, as long as one person sensed that the other party had cast such a Contracted Profound Seal on him, he would definitely expel it with incomparable force. Because no one would be willing to become dependent on others like a profound beast.

However, this conclusion did not happen on Hong'er. After the Profound Contracted Seal that came from Yun Che rotated three times at the center of Hong'er's forehead, carrying his drop of blood, it entered the center of Hong'er's forehead with incomparable success, until it completely disappeared.

In that short moment, a form of spiritual connection with Hong'er had also appeared with incomparable clarity within his soul.

This form of spiritual connection... seemed to be the same as the spiritual connection he had with the Snow Phoenix in the past...

It succeeded?!

It actually succeeded for real!

The back of Yun Che's left hand flashed with a red light as an inch long red profound imprint slowly appeared. And the shape of this profound mark, was clearly a miniature-size of that scarlet greatsword!

After this profound imprint appeared, it once again slowly dimmed, and disappeared without a trace.

alyschu: Hong'er = 红儿, 红 = Red. 儿 = an endearment.

=====

Chapter 487 – Leaving the Primordial Profound Ark

“Eh?” Hong’er felt the abnormality and opened her eyes, which widened in confusion, “It seems like something weird is happening!”

Yun Che looked at Hong’er, and focused his spirit, testing out the command to withdraw. Suddenly the sword-shaped profound seal on the back of his hand flashed. Hong’er let out a cry, and her entire person morphed into a red beam of light which flew into the profound seal.

Yun Che raised his arm and looked at the sword-shaped profound seal on the back of his hand and stood there, dazed. It... actually... really... worked!!

“Hong’er!”

He shouted in a low voice. Suddenly, the profound seal flashed once more, and the beam of red light was released and transformed back into Hong’er’s body. Her mouth gaped open, and she tried to strongly blink her eyes as she was obviously still in a muddled state.

“Become a sword!”

As his will was transmitted, Hong’er’s body flared up with light once more, and her small and delicate body morphed into a huge scarlet heavy sword. Yun Che extended his palm and he reached out with his mind once more, causing the scarlet greatsword to autonomously fly into his grasp. He used both hands to grasp the scarlet greatsword, and he could feel a shocking heaviness. His heart echoed the words he had just chanted to himself. It... actually... really... worked!!

But this time, the scarlet greatsword in his hand suddenly started to struggle against his grip, and as the sword swung itself, it forcefully escaped from his grasp. The red light flashed once again and the sword once more turned back into the little girl, Hong’er.

Yun Che stood in amazement... what had happened? She could struggle herself free? You mean she wasn't like a normal contracted profound beast, that was completely under the owner's control? She could rebel?

Once Hong'er materialized, she began to examine her own body in a rushed and haphazard manner. Once she discovered that there were no abnormalities, she crooked her head and said with uncertainty, "It's so strange, it seems like my body isn't listening to me... Big brother, did you do anything to me?"

As Yun Che was about to explain the situation to her, she instead twinkled her eyes in joy and said with a laugh, "But it's really really fun! Big brother, won't you please play with me again!"

Without waiting for Yun Che's reply, she followed up with a self-serving demand, "Hey! No, no, this isn't right! Delicious food... there is still delicious food! Hurry and give farmer faulty to me to eat! You already promised me! You can't go back on your word!"

Being able to plant a contracted profound seal on her, and being able to withdraw her into the seal, summon her, then make her transform into a sword... if this had happened to a normal person, it would be enough to scare said person out of his wits! But Hong'er only experienced a short daze, and even said that it was 'fun'. Not only that, she promptly threw these experiences to the back of her mind... what exactly were her nerves made of?

Yun Che took out Dragon Fault and said with a strange expression on his face, "You can take it to eat."

"Wah, wah!" Hong'er received Dragon Fault and began dancing excitedly. She had eaten the other half of Dragon Fault while being chased around by Yun Che, so she had to swallow it whole. But this time, she could eat with no pressure at all. Naturally her eating speed slowed by a lot. Her small and delicate soft pink lips and delicate and pearly-white teeth easily gobbled up Dragon Fault, which was more resilient than profound iron. This picture caused

Yun Che's spirit to receive an unimaginable impact.

Rumble...

The tremors in space began to strengthen and a tiny dimensional tear had already begun to form in the air... The Primordial Profound Ark's repulsion field had arrived.

"Hurry and keep her in the profound seal! Because of her unique physique, she might not be affected by the Primordial Profound Ark's repulsion field!" Jasmine said hurriedly.

Yun Che furrowed his brows, and quickly sent a mental order for Hong'er to return to the profound seal... Hong'er, who had been happily eating, let out a dissatisfied cry. Then, she, along with the other half of Dragon Fault, morphed into the red light and returned to the profound seal.

At practically the same time, a strong and irresistible force carried Yun Che up, and threw him into the dimensional vortex which had appeared out of nowhere.

After suffering a full eighteen months within the spatial turbulence, a mere dimensional vortex was not even worth mentioning to Yun Che. He closed his eyes and let himself be moved by the dimensional vortex with a heart full of apprehensiveness...

What kind of world would he be brought to exactly...

Profound Sky Continent, Blue Wind Nation.

The Divine Phoenix Empire had launched a massive invasion without warning, setting all four corners of the Blue Wind Nation ablaze with war. New Moon City was the central region's hub. Once news of its occupation had spread, the citizens of Blue Wind Nation descended into a greater state of panic.

Navy Tide, Sunflower Dew, Divine Incense, Grand Asura and Black Fiend coalition of five nations kept receiving request after request for help from Blue Wind Nation. However, they all kept silent. It was unknown whether they had forgotten the simple concept of “if the lips are gone, the teeth will be cold” and the six nations interdependence on one another, or if they were simply too scared of any possible reprisal from the Divine Phoenix Empire. And ninety percent of the large profound sects within Blue Wind Nation had chosen to defect... because any resistance would only end in their total destruction. Even though surrendering was shameful, they could at least preserve the foundations that had been laid for hundreds of years. Those sects which rose up in resistance or joined the army were actually those smaller and weaker ones; the sects without any famous background or influence.

The strongest sect, the only one which the Divine Phoenix empire would fear, Heavenly Sword Villa, had instead chosen to seal their doors and lock themselves in when Blue Wind Nation was in such a predicament.

This war had brutally exposed the naked selfishness of humanity.

Facing the overwhelming strong Divine Phoenix Empire without any assistance from outside or from the profound world, there was no possibility that Blue Wind Nation could muster any form of resistance. Under the command of Blue Wind Empress, who withstood the Divine Phoenix Empire without backing down or compromising, Blue Wind Nation had managed to endure thus far. This was already a deeply astonishing miracle to all seven nations. Even though every single Blue Wind citizen could smell the dying embers of their nation, Empress Cang Yue had become the brightest moon in their dark sky, and she had earned their boundless respect. Even though she might soon become the ruler of a conquered nation, she would forever have a place in the annals of the Profound Sky Continent.

At the western frontier of Blue Wind Nation, a location already

engulfed in the flames of war, a young man with shoulder-length hair dressed in pitch-black clothes came striding through the flames.

His steps were ponderous, his gait stiff and heavy, the expression on his face incomparably cold and hard. This coldness was especially prominent in his eyes, it was as sharp and cold as a cold blade of the nine hells. If anyone glanced at his eyes, chills would be sent down their spine... and if anyone peered into his eyes, they would discover that his pupils stirred with an aberrant black light.

This was a place that had been baptized by the fires of battle, it was a desolate plain, and even the odd building that was still standing was completely ruined. There were a few travelers, all of whom bore a face etched with despair and hopelessness. War should not harm the common people, but Divine Phoenix Empire had attacked with an unbecoming haste and their great army swept through the land, completely disregarding the safety of these helpless civilians.

The black-clothed youth's every movement was possessed of an unparalleled uniformity. And his entire journey thus far had, astonishingly, been traveled in a completely straight line. When people saw him, they would unconsciously shrink away from him and maintain the furthest distance possible.

After walking for a long while, he finally chance on an inn which was still in reasonable condition. His steps slowly came to a halt and he entered the inn.

There was already famine everywhere, with refugees being forced to leave. Thus, there was no more customers for the inn to receive and the inn was not going to be able to operate for much longer. The innkeeper sat listlessly at the shop counter, his sighs unceasing. But all of a sudden, his body felt an intense cold which came out of nowhere and his heart suddenly tightened up. He raised his head and saw the black-clothed youth who had entered the inn.

Someone who opened an inn would naturally be worldly and knowledgeable. The unprecedented fear invoked by the black-

clothed youth immediately informed the innkeeper that this young man was definitely one terrifying character. He hurriedly strode out from behind his counter and took the initiative to welcome the young man. He said in the calmest voice possible, "Will this young master be staying here?"

"Where is Yun Che!?" The black-clothed youth did not look at him directly and spat out words which were as cold and still as stagnant water.

"Yun... Yun Che?" The innkeeper said in a careful voice, trying to keep his fear in check, "Which Yun Che?"

"Of course it is the Yun Che that destroyed the Burning Heaven Clan!" The black-clothed youth said in a voice that suddenly became even colder.

"Ah? Well..." The innkeeper looked at him with shock and suspicion, but hurriedly lowered his head and replied, "I do not understand this esteemed customer's question, Prince Consort Yun Che... isn't he already dead?"

The name Yun Che was naturally known to all within the Blue Wind Nation. Two years ago, the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament had caused his name to send shockwaves throughout the Profound Sky Seven Nations. But swiftly following this illustrious news was the information that he had been buried within the Primordial Profound Ark.

"What... did you say?!"

The innkeeper's words caused the unstimulating young man to explode like a sudden peal of thunder. He grabbed the collar of the innkeeper with one hand, and easily lifted up the innkeeper's body, which weighed over two hundred kilograms. His dark eyes let out a fiendish light as he shouted, "You said he is dead? You said Yun Che is dead?!"

The innkeeper felt as if he had been dropped into ice, and he nearly pissed his pants in fright right there, "Esteemed... esteemed customer, please do not be angry. Prince Consort Yun has indeed died, he had already died two years ago... this matter, the entire continent knows of it... Esteemed customer, please spare my life... please spare my life...."

The black-clothed youth hands shook, and his face distorted in an incomparably terrifying way. He spoke in a hoarse voice, "Dead... how can he possibly be dead! Tell me!! How did he die... How did he die?!"

"He... He... He died in the Divine Phoenix Empire... Seven... Seven Nation Ranking Tournament... Primo... Primordial Profound Ark... I... I heard that it was to save the Divine Phoenix Empire's Princess Snow... he was buried in the Primordial Profound Ark..."

The innkeeper had been badly startled, his whole body convulsed and his speech became incoherent.

"Ahhhhhhh!!!!!" The black-clothed youth let out a furious yell, then sent the innkeeper flying with a wave of his arm. The innkeeper's body flew through the wall, and there was no sign of movement after that. It was unknown if he was dead or alive.

"Dead... Dead... Dead... Dead... He is actually dead... Ha... Haha... Hahahahaha... Dead!!" The black-clothed youth entire body spasmed as he kept repeating those words to himself. His entire demeanor was in disarray and he started to howl with laughter. After the laughter, his expression transformed into one filled with pain... it was as if he had suddenly turned insane.

"Why... Why is he actually dead?!" The black-clothed youth raised his head, and howled in agony, "After three years of rending flesh and tearing the soul, and enduring countless hellish purgatories, I had finally awaited for this day to arrive... but why is he dead... Dead... Who will I take revenge on then? Ah!!!!!"

The black-clothed youth let out a huge roar and, all of a sudden, a

column of pitch-black smoke rose from his body. Within the smoke, the wooden table near his feet soundlessly rotted away. The white bowl on the table turned pitch-black, and afterwards dissolved into a black powder which was carried away by the wind.

After his roar had subsided and he regained his sense, one name appeared within his mind.

Floating Cloud City!!

"Floating Cloud City..." The black clothed youth muttered in a low and deep voice, "Yun Che... You exterminated my entire clan... This grudge will last for an eternity! Since... I can't kill you anymore... then I will simply slaughter all the people in your clan."

The black-clothed youth started flying as he broke through the roof of the inn, shooting out like a black arrow in the direction of the east... Making his way directly to Floating Cloud City.

=====

Chapter 488 – Lucky Person?

"Where is this?" Hong'er nibbled the food in her hand while curiously assessing the surroundings of the world, which was a vast expanse of white.

"This is the world of the Sky Poison Pearl." Jasmine appeared in front of her, looking indifferently at Hong'er who just appeared in that world.

"Sky Poison Pearl?" Hong'er took another big bite off Dragon Fault, and said indistinctly while chewing: "Sky Poison Pearl? What a weird name, why would I appear here?"

"That's because the Sky Poison Pearl and the Profound Seal Space are both worlds which exist within his body, when your Profound Seal Space was created, both of them were merged into one." Jasmine explained unenthusiastically.

"Oh... even though I don't understand at all, it seems very amazing!" Hong'er's opened her mouth wide and put the last piece of Dragon Fault into her mouth, then swallowed it completely... like she had just swallowed a soft, delicious piece of bread: "Mmm ahh! I'm done! So full!"

A peculiar red glow shined in Hong'er's scarlet eyes, who had finished eating Dragon Fault, yet it quickly vanished. She sized up Jasmine, then said while giggling: "That's right, little big sis, what's your name?"

"Jasmine."

"Jas... mine... I've got it! Little big sister, you have to play with me frequently from now on, I really like to play!" Hong'er yelled adorably, being familiar on her own accord at Jasmine, who emanated an indifferent aura from her entire being. She stretched lazily, her eyelids suddenly drooping: "I suddenly feel so tired after eating... I really want to take a nap."

Hong'er lightly rubbed her eyes, then yawned: "Ahh, mmm... I'm really really tired, little big sis, I'll go take a nap first, good night."

With that, Hong'er directly curled into a ball like a cat on the ground, closed her eyes, and in the next moment, she fell asleep with shocking speed.

Jasmine's line of sight never left Hong'er for a moment. After she fell soundly asleep, her eyes flashed and she said coldly: "Come out!"

The moment her voice landed, a strand of colorless radiance rose from Hong'er's body; it then slowly revealed a misty silhouette.

And this silhouette was actually the remnant spirit which had encountered in the Primordial Profound Ark that already dissipated!

Only that this remnant spirit was evidently more frail than the one that Yun Che had initially seen, it was inconsistent to the point that it could completely vanish at any point, she said with an ancient and heavy voice: "Who exactly are you, how could you actually know the Star God Imperial Family's 'Soul Star Relegation'!"

"You actually know about 'Soul Star Relegation'." Jasmine squinted.

"...So that really was 'Soul Star Relegation'!" Jasmine's words were a confirmation. The remnant spirit was evidently shaken: "You are from the Star God Imperial Family... No! The twelve Star Gods have already been destroyed, you are someone who has inherited the strength of one of the Star Gods!?"

"That's right." Jasmine acknowledged without trying to hide anything at all: "Is it not better to relieve yourself earlier? Why did you still leave a remnant spirit on her body?"

"Without seeing my little mistress get rescued and recover, how could I leave peacefully... I did not expect that when little mistress got healed from the devilish poison and awoke, she would be put under the 'Soul Star Relegation', and be attached to an ordinary person!" The remnant spirit's voice was filled with deep indigence:

"Who would have expected that you would be such despicable and malicious people!"

"So, would you rather that she continue sleeping in the Coffin of Eternity, to forever be fast asleep and be a living dead?" Jasmine laughed coldly: "In the entire world, only the Sky Poison Pearl can save her, and you have just witnessed it. The Sky Poison Pearl has already merged into his body; in the entire world, he is the only one who can save your little mistress! Your little mistress is able to see daylight again, yet you cannot even accept such a small price, how laughable!"

The remnant spirit remained silent for a long time, as if it had trouble retorting.

"I am, after all, not a real ancient Star God, and am unable to employ the complete 'Soul Star Relegation'. On top of that, I am unable to casually use my full power. The power of the 'Soul Star Relegation' is much less than it is supposed to be, if your little mistress had resisted a little, it would not have succeeded. Yet you have witnessed that she subconsciously had not even the least bit of vigilance or resistance towards him, and accepted such an outcome on her own accord, and was not forced into it!"

"Little mistress has totally lost her memories, her soul is completely blank and is not vigilant against anyone, and thus got taken advantage of by you. If not, how could she be plotted against! Little mistress is the miracle and hope left behind after my sect's destruction, yet now she is attached to a mere human... Even though my soul has been scattered, I have let down my king..." the remnant spirit said indignantly.

"A mere human?" Jasmine laughed coldly: "Though I cannot confirm exactly which Primordial Clan you are from, however... do you really think that your little mistress being attached to him, is a loss?! In my view, this is clearly the biggest favor that the Heavens have done for your little mistress and your clan."

"Ridiculous!" The remnant spirit twisted with rage: "How honourable is the little mistress' status? She currently has yet to grow up, but she has unlimited potential. When she has completely matured, she would be able to surpass my king and conquer the whole world! A mere human is limited to just the Divine Profound Realm. Compared to my little mistress, he is a petty and lowly individual!"

Facing the more and more agitated remnant spirit, Jasmine, however, maintained a calm expression, and asked calmly: "A mere human? Since you know about the 'Soul Star Relegation', then you should also know, even for the true Star God back then, the 'Soul Star Relegation' could only be used once, yet I used this once in a lifetime ability of the 'Soul Star Relegation' on him. If he is just a 'mere human' as you said, would he have the qualifications to make me unhesitantly employ a skill which can only be used once?!"

Remnant spirit: "..."

"A few years ago, I had also thought that he was just an ordinary human... No, at that time, he could not even be counted as ordinary, at that time, his profound veins were crippled; even among the humans, he was just a piece of trash. At that time when I complied to him, it was just simply because I wanted to make use of the Sky Poison Pearl on his body to remove the devilish poison from my body."

"However, I quickly found out that I had completely misjudged this person."

"Since you are from a Primordial Clan, you are aware of the Realm of Gods. After the death of the gods, there has continuously been humans ascending into the Realm of Gods, frantically searching for bloodlines, strengths and legacies left behind by the deceased gods. After countless years, countless astral planes were set up in the Realm of Gods, causing the domain of the gods to become a domain to obtain godly bloodlines and legacies. The Realm of Gods is incomparably huge; up until today, there are still countless of people searching for legacies left behind by the ancient True Gods."

Jasmine shifted her gaze and said: "I've said all these just to tell you that, the current Realm of Gods has been searched by people for several thousand years, tens of thousands of years, tens of tens of thousands of years, and even several hundreds of tens of thousands of years, yet no new True God's bloodline nor legacy has been found. More than ninety-nine percent of them only possess a single type of godly strength, and they are legacies from astral planes. In the entire Realm of Gods, the number of godly strengths is at most only three. This is because new True God legacies are getting harder to find. In addition... the strength of gods are proud, with even a single godly power in the body, the entry of another would easily face rejection. For three godly powers to coexist in the current Realm of Gods, is already enough to shock the entire world, they are the peak of existence!"

"But, do you know how many types he has on his body?!"

"The Evil God's Indestructible Blood; the Rage God's Divine Art; the Heavenly Wolf's Divine Art; the Phoenix's Divine Blood, Divine Soul and Divine Art; the Primordial Azure Dragon's Dragon Blood, Dragon Soul and Dragon Marrow... Five types of godly strengths, coexisting in a single body! You are currently existing in a space inside his body. If you concentrate your soul and feel, you will be able to feel the existence of the five godly strengths coexisting."

Jasmine said heavily: "With such numerous legacies left behind by True Gods in the Realm of Gods, countless people have searched bitterly for hundreds of thousands of years for new godly powers, yet he, an ordinary person, moreover, in the most lowest level world, obtained an entire five godly strengths... and in just a span of three years!"

"..." The remnant soul was severely moved.

Jasmine continued: "Of these five types of godly powers, three originated from me, but I am unable to wield them. Back then, I exhausted time and effort to seize the Evil God's Indestructible Blood, and even thus got struck by devilish poison, almost getting

destroyed. Yet I found out in the end that once the Evil God's Indestructible Blood melded with the body, the profound veins would be reconstructed, causing one to lose their original power. And back then, his profound veins were coincidentally crippled. For me to completely recover, he had to have sufficient strength, thus, the Evil God's Indestructible Blood which I used half of my life to exchange for was eventually given to him, giving him the one and only Evil God's Profound Veins in the whole world!"

"My elder brother once got extremely lucky and found the divine arts left behind by the Primordial Rage God, however he had not cultivated to great completion before his body and soul started to fall apart. My power and the Rage God's repel each other so I am unable to cultivate. However, to not let the power which my elder brother bitterly searched for to disappear, I imprinted the Rage God's Divine Arts into my soul... Once, because his silhouette looked like my brother's, I impulsively taught him the Rage God's Divine Arts, but I didn't expect that he would actually comprehend it in such a short time. After that, he repeatedly broke through with shocking speed."

"My elder brother bore the strength of Star God Sirius, and by coincidence, he obtained the Sirius' Divine Arts, which specialized in heavy swords. While watching older brother practice, I subconsciously memorized a small portion of it, but I couldn't cultivate it. However... His weapon was coincidentally a heavy sword. I accorded the basics of Sirius' Divine Arts to him, and he used not more than three months to master it."

"In regards to the Phoenix and Dragon God, he found them himself, and subsequently obtained their highest approval. Five types of divine bloodlines and strengths coexist within his body, never once experiencing the least bit of rejection! I have been attached to his life for many years, yet have not been able to find out the reason," Jasmine moved her gaze to the remnant spirit who was evidently in shock: "Apart from this, not only has the Sky Poison Pearl which you have been bitterly searching for countless of years is with him, it has

completely merged with his body. I can even tell you that apart from the Sky Poison Pearl, he has on himself another Heavenly Profound Treasure! Do you now still believe that he is just a 'mere human'?"

The remnant spirit stayed silent for a very, very long time, then slowly said: "Heavenly... luck?"

"That's right, he seems to have an extremely strong luck. Even back then when he was crippled, it was also due to luck. If not, I would never have granted him the Evil God's Indestructible Blood." Jasmine said unenthusiastically: "Also, his perception and rate of growth are astonishing. If his luck continues to persist, then, his future achievements are immeasurable. Your little mistress, as she follows him, will also be affected by his luck! Who knows, she might even have a future far better than what you hoped for."

The remnant spirit said unhurriedly: "Such a thing like luck is simply an illusory existence; everyone will have periods of good luck, and eventually meet times of bad luck. With his current state, you can comment about his luck, however, what I have seen is something else... In the two years on the profound ark, I have been monitoring him, eighteen months of spatial turbulence; that is bad luck which a normal person would not face in a hundred years. Yet he faced it, and if he was not able to take it on, he would have undoubtedly died. All of the so-called good luck, is summed to nothing. What I am willing to believe, is that whatever he possesses today, is because he is willing to do his utmost, and has enough willpower. Luck, possibly exists, or it could be a made up name... who can even quantify luck? Who can quantify the heavenly laws?"

Jasmine: "..."

"Sigh." The remnant spirit sighed: "Forget it, the Soul Star Relegation has been done, things have reached such a state and cannot be changed. I, too, have no power to change anything. Me calling him a 'mere human', is merely just out of a moment of anger. I have been monitoring him for two years; compared to this so-called 'luck', his willpower is even stronger, greatly shocking me. Little mistress has

already awoken; even though she was attached, she did not reject it or feel sad, and even likes him, smiling and laughing like back then. I can see that he will not bully or humiliate little mistress... perhaps there is nothing for me to worry or be angry about."

=====

Chapter 489 – Unknown World

"Before you leave, can you tell me the name of your race?" Jasmine said as she looked straight at the spirit. But in her heart, she could more or less guess what the answer would be.

The remnant spirit kept silent for a while, and then faintly sighed, "Well, I guess there is no harm in telling you. Perhaps you have heard of the name, or perhaps it has long been forgotten. The race I belong to is called the "Sword Spirit God Clan."

"Ah so it was really the case!" Jasmine said as her eyebrows quivered.

"But, the little mistress, she is not one of us." The spirit continued.

"Oh?" Jasmine's eyes flashed in shock, "If she is not a member of the Sword Spirit Clan, then why do you address her as 'little mistress'? And she can obviously transform into a sword! In the records, the ancient race which could transform into swords was only the 'Sword Spirit God Clan'."

"Back then, this was a secret within my Sword Spirit God Clan, and only four people in the entire clan, including myself, knew of this secret. All the other clansmen thought that she was the daughter of our king. But the truth is, the little mistress was someone our king picked up by accident and he let it be known that she was his daughter. As to why my king did the things he did, or where my little mistress came from, all of this knowledge was lost once my king died. However, while the little mistress' ability to transform into a sword is the same as our clan, the sword she transforms into is entirely different. Because when my clansmen become swords, they have always been light and agile blades, but when my little mistress transforms into a sword, she becomes a heavy sword that is exceedingly difficult to control."

"My king had never told anybody the origins of our little mistress, but

he had always doted and cared for her in an extravagant manner. In those days, both my king and my little mistress had been struck by the devilish poison, and my king would rather die so we could use the Coffin of Eternity to protect our little mistress. My king definitely had his reasons for placing such great importance on her. And all these years that I have been bitterly guarding my little mistress and searching for the Sky Poison Pearl... have finally borne fruit. Whatever fates lie in store for my little mistress, I no longer have the ability to see it through or protect her from. So please, no matter what happens, please treat her kindly."

"Besides the Sword Spirit God Clan, what other race could transform into swords..." Jasmine mused to herself silently

"Our Sword Spirit Clan are of the Celestial Spirit race. Once we are born, we innately possess the energy of heaven and earth. Of course, we still have to cultivate and the stronger our profound power, the stronger the sword we transform into becomes. But the little mistress does not need to cultivate; instead she consumes swords as food. Everytime she eats a sword, she will absorb a portion of its sword strength and sword spirit, and her strength will increase by a bit. The stronger the sword she consumes, the more she will grow. In those years, my king sought the most famous swords under heaven to be food for our little mistress and this resulted in immense growth for her. But after she was struck by the devilish poison, all of her sword strength was consumed to depletion. If you want to cultivate her strength, find all kinds of strong swords for her; the stronger the sword, the more my mistress would desire to eat it."

"...There was actually a person who could rely on eating swords to strengthen herself!" Jasmine looked deeply at Hong'er. She rummaged through her memory banks, but she could not recall coming across such a record or rumor.

"I have already answered your question, Now, can you answer mine. Which Star God do you derive your strength from?" The lingering spirit asked Jasmine.

"Heaven Slaughter Star God!" Jasmine said expressionlessly.

"Among the twelve Star Gods, the Heavenly Chief has the disposition of a king, the Heavenly Wolf is the strongest, and the Heavenly Slaughter is the evildest, feared by all. You have inherited her power, but your mindset does not seem to have been influenced much. That is good." The spirit said slowly.

"What?" Jasmine laughed coldly, "Hmph, don't assume things. Even though I have only inherited the Heaven Slaughter Star God's power for less than ten years, the amount of people I have killed in that time span is more than one hundred times the number of people you have killed in your entire life!"

"The amount of people you have killed has nothing to with the evil in your heart." The spirit faintly said, "You have a spirit body, I am also a spirit, whether you are good or evil, I naturally have my way to judge... But I have one more question. You seem to place great importance on this human, to the point where you would not hesitate to use the ability 'Soul Star Relegation' which you can only use once in your lifetime. So why did you not help him leave the Primordial Profound Ark after he had been trapped? And the eighteen months he spent braving the spatial turbulence, existing at the border of life and death, suffering an agony that surpasses that of the agony of one hundred generations combined; why did you seem to turn a deaf ear to it?"

"Looks like you aren't that clever after all." The corner of Jasmine's mouth curved slightly, and she gave a cold laugh, "In the two years from when I first met him, I had used my powers to save him from certain death countless of times. At that time, the devilish poison in my body was incomparably intense, and the power I could use was much weaker than what I can use now, and whenever I used that power, I would have difficulty suppressing the resurgence of the devilish poison afterwards."

"I did not want him to rely on my power, and neither did he. But as long as my existence and power remained, this reliance would never

fade, even if he tried to reject it. When he faced a bleak situation, his subconscious would forever have the concept that 'as long as Jasmine is here, I can never die', and this would lead him to never being able to exhaust his determination in those dire situations. So, three years ago, I faked the sealing of my powers, and caused him to be unable to rely on my strength. Like when we were in the Primordial Profound Ark, he would have relied on my power to aid him in killing Ye Xinghan who was chasing him... When the spatial turbulence came, he would have relied on my power to leave the Primordial Profound Ark, and when it started its attack, he would have first thought of using my power to resist it... Even if he had wanted to use his own strength, he would not have used all his strength and willpower to endure, and go through the countless exceeding of his own limits that had happened in this period."

"In the years that I had persisted in maintaining the perception that my strength was sealed, his growth became exceedingly fast in the period where he could not rely on my power. And he used his own strength and willpower to brave countless hopeless situations, and all this time, I have not raised a single finger to assist him. To the contrary, I even specially increased the intensity of the spatial turbulence within the Primordial Profound Ark. And the final result, had far exceeded my wildest expectations. Half of the devilish poison in my body has been purged in these years, and the remaining half has already been stabilized and is under control."

Jasmine had said this very evenly, but if Yun Che had heard it, he would have been struck dumb.

In the years where Jasmine faked the sealing of her powers, Yun Che's growth had far outstripped his previous growth. And it was precisely because he could not rely on Jasmine subconsciously, that he could decide to fight to death when he was buried beneath the Sword Management Terrace, why he could continuously evolve as he faced first the Burning Heaven Clan, then the Divine Phoenix Empire, and why he could keep on making breakthroughs time and again even though he kept facing life-and-death situations in the

Primordial Profound Ark.

Without the slightest exaggeration, if Jasmine had not 'sealed her powers', Yun Che would never be able to climb to such great heights. As Jasmine had said, as long as her power existed, that reliance would never fade. What existed in one's subconscious could not be overcome through sheer willpower.

"I hoped that he could become stronger at a much faster rate, because it is only if he is sufficiently strong that I can have a chance of attaining a new body. And I can only be his guide as he walks the path of the strong, because he needs to walk every step of that road by himself! Any obstacles he faces along that road, he needs to shatter by himself; any cliffs he faces needs to be crossed using his own strength as well. If not, he will never become truly strong." Jasmine closed her eyes and said those words slowly. Even though her appearance was that of a thirteen year old girl, her words and demeanor was that of a wise master.

"However, if he had encountered an inescapable dead end, at the moment right before his death, I would have naturally intervened." Jasmine said casually in an even voice.

"Ah so it's like this." The remnant spirit lightly nodded her head, her ethereal voice carrying both trepidation and admiration, "With you as a guide, his future will definitely not be a common one. With the little mistress in your care, I am much more relieved..."

"Even though she is not of our race, but she has indeed received all the remaining hopes and wonders of our clan and my king. I do not dare ask for much, but I can only hope that you will always treat her kindly. Or, if she does not mature, this lowly position would allow her to live every day free of worry or care, and that could also said to be a happy ending for one such as her... Even though that would differ from my expectations greatly, you are, after all, the ones who saved my little mistress, and I am merely a lingering spirit, unable to make you do anything. This profound ark... can be my compensation towards you... Only that it is a pity... that its power has just been

completely depleted...”

The spirit’s voice and silhouette slowly vanished from the Sky Poison Pearl, never to appear again.

Yun Che, who had been floating in the midst of the dimensional vortex for a good long while, finally saw an exit. Following a flash of white light, he felt himself being fiercely thrown out of the dimensional vortex... What he did not expect was that the exit of the dimensional vortex would be so near to the ground, before he had any time to react, he had already hit the ground violently.

With a muffled thud, half of Yun Che’s body sank into the soft dirt.

Yun Che did a quick flip and bounced off the ground while spitting out the mud in his mouth. As he brushed off the dirt from his hair and his body, he carefully surveyed his surroundings. After confirming that there were no observers in the vicinity, he finally let down his guard, but his face had a greenish cast to it... He was the overlord of Blue Wind, The Royal Prince Consort, a person who had rocked the entire Profound Sky Continent. However, he had arrived in this new world face first in the dirt...

What kind of misfortune was this!

Yun Che calmed down and began observing his surroundings once more. This place was half-grasslands and half-jungle, with weeds running wild and short trees growing in a thicket. As Yun Che surveyed the scenery, he could not feel the presence of, or see any trace of any living beings nearby. The climate was warm and comfortable and the smell of the air was almost identical to that of the Profound Sky Continent.

“Jasmine, the elemental laws in this place do not seem to differ at all from the Profound Sky Continent.” Yun Che said in a cautious voice.

Jasmine’s reply came extremely quickly, “Unless we have landed on a

different plane, the elemental laws are basically always the same. This place is definitely not the Profound Sky Continent, but it is definitely a plane close to the Profound Sky Continent. Slowly explore this place by yourself. However, what you need to do now is not to think of a method to return to the Profound Sky Continent, and instead stabilize your footing in this world to continue to grow quickly. If you want to return to the Profound Sky Continent, the only method is to become sufficiently strong!"

Yun Che did not ask any further. Instead, he concentrated on surveying his surroundings as he made his way forward with caution. He did not know what kind of world he had landed in, or what kind of living creatures existed here... And if there were even any humans among these living creatures...

After he had walked a few kilometers, Yun Che suddenly felt the presence of living creatures. His brows twitched and his steps slowed. As he neared the presences he felt, he soundlessly parted a cluster of high grass.

His gaze shot across the grass. In the middle of a small, dark swamp, he spied two mottled pythons that were two meters long and about as thick as the mouth of a bowl.

But these were not ordinary pythons because they were releasing the aura of the Earth Profound Realm from their bodies. The two mottled pythons were floating in the swamp and staring at each other intently as a feeling of deep enmity spread through the rotting air.

Two Earth Profound beasts naturally would not arouse too much interest in Yun Che, but just as he was about to leave, suddenly... He heard both of the Earth-realm mottled pythons conversing... and they were even talking in the speech of humans!

"What ya staring at!"

"Staring at ya bein' a fool!"

"Why dont'cha try doin' it again!"

"Yeah I'm gonna do it again, what's it to ya?!"

After this, both mottled pythons started fighting...

Yun Che just stood there staring... profound beasts which had reached a high level of cultivation would have a sufficiently high intelligence and could mimic human language. But they would have to be at least at later stages of the Sky Profound Realm, and they had to be long-lived and high-class profound beasts. The Snow Phoenix that Yun Che used to own was a Sky Profound beast, but it did not have the ability to speak human words.

However these two pythons which were only at the initial stage of the Earth Profound Realm could actually speak, and they even spoke with such fluency! If Yun Che had not witnessed it himself, and only heard the sounds of their voices, he would have thought it was two humans who had spoken.

=====

Chapter 490 – Demons!

The two mottled pythons fought for a long while, and flipped the originally not-so-big swamp into a complete mess. After they tired from their fighting, they mutually parted, separately leaving toward the meadows on different sides of the swamp. Then, with a flash, the two pythons actually transformed into two speckled attired... young men!!

Yun Che was stunned yet again... it was already abnormal for two Earth Profound pythons to be able to talk... but they actually could transform into humans!!

Of the two young men, one had a pointy mouth and monkeylike cheeks, the other had a big face and a round waist. No matter if it was their body or facial features, they were all genuinely human! One of them hooted: "Lil' bastard, if ya got guts, don't leave! This daddy'll go get people!"

The other showed no weakness as he retorted: "Yer the bastard, yer entire family are all bastards! Ya think only ya 'an call for people? Let's see who 'an call for 'ore!"

The two fought with fierce words, then the two mottled pythons scuttled away, one to the left and the other to the right. Soon enough, they disappeared from Yun Che's line of sight.

"This little brother, two men fighting each other isn't really interesting to watch, you know!"

Just as Yun Che was stunned by those two pythons, a velvety voice suddenly came from behind him; and it was even a teasing woman's voice. Yun Che quickly turned around... There was only a not-so lush, but especially vast floral meadow; at a glance, it seemed boundless, and there was not a short tree in sight within more than three hundred meters... With such a wide open field of view, he still couldn't see half of anyone's shadow.

Under his bewilderment, not even ten steps in front of him, an especially gorgeous blooming crabapple tree suddenly emitted a hazy red radiance. Within the light, the crabapple tree quickly transformed into a rose-red attired beautiful woman who wore crabapple blossoms in her hair. She charmingly stood there in front of him with her rose-red lips curled into a smile as her narrow phoenix eyes touchingly twinkled with charm.

Yun Che's mouth gaped open... and only after a full three breaths did he manage to close it with difficulty. His brain had already begun to go haywire, two pythons had a quarrel in human speech and could transform into humans. Then, even a crabapple tree... had become human as well!!

What kind of weird world was this?!

The crabapple woman totally would never think that Yun Che's somewhat dull expression was one of amazement, but she felt that the young man's stupid expression was cute. She pursed her lips into a smile and gracefully walked toward Yun Che. As she continued to smile while looking at him, her eyes had become even more attractive: "Little brother, this one didn't suddenly call out to scare you, it's just that little brother looks so charming, and this one fell for you at first sight... Little brother, how about you stay here... and play with me for a while?"

The crabapple woman's voice was soft and velvety. As she spoke, she stroked her shoulder and slowly caressed down her collarbone, directly down to her nearly exposed erect chest. Her long, delicate fingers just happened to lay between the grooves of snow... her voice and posture were attractive to the extreme.

"Gulp"... Yun Che fiercely gulped down a mouthful of saliva, but it was definitely not because he had been caught in this crabapple woman's enticement. Let's not mention Xia Qingyue or Feng Xue'er, any one of Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies would effortlessly outshine this crabapple woman.. Yun Che, who had never lacked beautiful women in his life, would never all of a sudden fall into a panic due to

this woman's bewitchment. What he was shocked about, was that this charming woman... was actually a crabapple tree... transformed!

"This one's the leader of all ten thousand flowers within fifty kilometers, you know." The crabapple woman said prettily: "Little brother, you won't be able to find someone even prettier than me within fifty kilometers. This one has been here for many years, and this is the first time I've taken the initiative to talk with a man. Who told little brother to be so likeable, hm?"

As she spoke, the crabapple woman did something that Yun Che totally did not expect... With an enchanting smile, she reached out to the rose-red robe covering her chest and slowly pulled downwards. Immediately afterwards, two round, incomparably snow white, and ample breasts bounced out, quivering within Yun Che's line of sight... The crabapple woman didn't feel ashamed at all; instead, her soul-sucking charming eyes stared unblinkingly at Yun Che.

This world's people and the way they did things thoroughly toppled Yun Che's three views in life. If this was the Profound Sky Continent, if such a good-looking woman were to take the initiative to seduce him, he might have readily taken the bait and played for a while... it wasn't as if he was going to come out with a disadvantage. But in this completely "abnormal" unknown world... He only wanted some peace and quiet to think!

"Um... I still have things to do. I'll play next time, next time..." Yun Che waved as he retreated. After he finished speaking, he turned around and ran quite a distance away, leaving the crabapple woman alone there with a face full of hidden bitterness.

"Hehehe..." The giggling of women came from the large expanse of flowers that the crabapple woman had come from.

"Yoh~ The first time that Crabapple Sis took action, she'd actually failed!" A dandelion that looked bigger than normal gently swayed as it laughed in glee.

"That human is so strange, he'd actually run away. Crabapple Sis' charm is obviously really great."

"Crabapple Sis, are you sure that's really a human? Not only was it the first time you took action, you even tried really hard to seduce him."

"Yeah." The crabapple woman was full of regrets: "That little brother's aura should be that of a pure human being. If I can find a pure human, the children that I reproduce would be able to go to a much bigger world, not like us, unable to leave this area for life. It's a pity that pure humans are becoming lesser and lesser, I can't believe that the one we had finally managed to find had escaped... Was I too anxious? Or... Am I not pretty enough?"

The crabapple woman touched her own face before muttering: "Looks like I need to drink more beauty nourishing morning dew from now onwards."

In an instant, Yun Che covered several kilometers before he recomposed himself a little... Wait! Why am I running away?!!

"What a rare sight, a woman took the initiative to strip in front of you but the super pervert in you actually did not release your perverted nature, and instead escaped hastily?" Jasmine said in a weird tone. Ever since he forcefully hugged Jasmine once within the Primordial Profound Ark, her frequency of using "Super Pervert" increased tremendously. Yun Che would basically hear it several times each day.

Not long after... He had actually gotten used to it!

"The problem is... Don't you think this is all too creepy? That woman is actually transformed from a crabapple!" Yun Che stared widely and said.

Jasmine however replied in a scornful manner: "From your reaction... Have you never seen a demon before?"

"Demon? Heard of it, but I've never seen it... Wait!" Yun Che brows moved: "You mean that the woman that the crabapple turned into is actually a demon?"

According to the fragmented legends, this world actually had many many races... Other than humans, there were beasts, other races that forcefully separated themselves from the beasts such as the sea race, the demons, the spirits, elves, and from ancient folklore, devils, gods, etc. The races that once existed or still exist far exceed this amount. Some of them were already exterminated since ancient times before being forgotten as time passed. Others, hid away at some unknown location, living on independently...

In the Profound Sky Continent and Azure Cloud Continent, humans and beasts were in the majority, and item spirits and sword spirits could barely be considered low class spirits. Other races such as demons and elves were commonly talked about, yet rarely appeared... at least, Yun Che had not seen it in the two previous continents he was in. The reason why demons and elves were mentioned in Profound Sky Continent was not because of the continent itself, but because of the secretive and remote Illusory Demon Realm that had several scores to settle with the Profound Sky Continent! From the bits and pieces of rumors, not only did elves and demons exist within Illusory Demon Realm, they were the majority of the population there.

"Of course it's a demon!" If Yun Che could see Jasmine's face now, he would be able to see her expression of contempt for a country bumpkin who had not seen the world: "The two snakes that you saw and that woman are all demons. Just now around you, there were also several demons that were not in their human form looking at you. You should have detected that as well."

"...What are the unique features of these demons? Their ability... to turn into humans?" Yun Che asked.

"Even though it sounds simple and straightforward, what you said is basically correct! Demons are classified as Demonic Beasts and

Demonic Spirits. The two snakes you saw previously were demonic beasts. The origins of Demonic Beasts are beasts and they can transform into humans. Their intelligence are equal if not surpasses that of most human beings. These are the differences between demonic beasts and normal beasts! The woman just now was a demonic spirit. Flowers and plants, trees and wood, the boundless spirits and animals that exist in this world gain spiritual insight upon a lucky opportunity which then allow them to become demons, and such demonic powers could be passed on through inheritance. A normal beast that wants to become a demonic beast requires a long time in cultivation and a lucky opportunity. Thereafter, their descendants would be born with complete demonic powers. Therefore, after countless years of reproduction and an inheritance that would not be lost; within the chaotic dimensions, demons became a massive race that was no smaller than the human race! In these many worlds, there isn't much of a different between demons and humans... Your biological parents are from the Illusory Demon Realm so you might even be of demonic lineage! As for whether you're from demonic spirits or demonic beasts, you can only verify that after you find your birth parents."

Yun Che gradually understood. Then, thinking of his previous reaction, he was a little depressed.

"This means that this is a world of demons?" Yun Che asked in a soft voice.

"Don't waste your time here." Jasmine said: "You did not come here for a holiday! There are no dangers or high leveled spirits within the area, hence, not suitable for you to stay here... Eh?"

"What happened?"

"Towards the north!" Jasmine replied: "Three hundred fifty kilometers away, there seems to be a concentration of a high grade aura there! The level of that aura... hmph, it would not pale in comparison to those so-called Sacred Grounds in the Profound Sky Continent."

“Would not pale in comparison to the Sacred Grounds?” Yun Che’s mind shook. In the Profound Sky Continent, the Four Great Sacred Grounds were called Sacred Grounds because they were they represented the pinnacle that existed in the whole continent! Jasmine had so casually found an aura that did not pale in comparison to the Four Great Sacred Grounds... Which meant that the levels of the people here would not be beneath the Profound Sky Continent!

=====

Chapter 491 – Miniature Profound Ark

Yun Che went towards the north, sprinting to the position that Jasmine had mentioned. On the way, he passed by many small towns, and naturally met many humans and demons, which made him even more certain that this was indeed a world where humans and demons co-existed.

After meeting more demons, Yun Che quickly learned how to tell whether one was a human or demon from their aura. Although the number of demons present was not less than humans, what Yun Che saw were mainly human forms. After all, in the boundless universe, the human figure was the most perfect form. The pure humans and demons in human figures all interacted normally, at least from what Yun Che saw; there was not one bit of division and furthermore, many of the married couples he saw were human-demon pairs.

“As expected, in the boundless universe, nothing is inconceivable. Perhaps it wouldn’t be wrong to say that within each world, there are unique and different existences. Everything about this world would undoubtedly shock anyone from the Profound Sky Continent; and the reverse must be true as well. In the Profound Sky Continent, where demons are extremely rare existences that are ostracized by normal humans, would that be abnormal to the people here?”

Yun Che, who was tired from flying, sat on an ancient tree and sighed.

“The complexity of the boundless universe is not something you are able to comprehend. No matter if it is the Profound Sky Continent or this world, they are but a small grain of sand within the boundless universe, unable to represent anything.” Jasmine coldly said. Then, she suddenly changed her tone and continued: “You’d better come into the Sky Poison Pearl for a while.”

“Eh?” Yun Che was stunned. Then, he closed his eyes and sent his consciousness into the Sky Poison pearl.

Once inside, he heard the “munch munch” sound of eating.

Jasmine hovered in midair with both arms folded in front of her chest. She was expressionless as she looked forward, and in front of her... Yun Che was shocked to find Hong'er.

“Hong'er?” Yun Che stared widely: “What is she doing here?!”

“Sky Poison Pearl and the Profound Seal Space all exist within your body, and are therefore connected. There's nothing weird about that.” Jasmine calmly stated.

“But, before, when the Snow Phoenix was still here, it wasn't able to enter this place! Furthermore, the internal space of the Sky Poison Pearl is very special; even if its space is within my body, it wouldn't merge with other spaces.”

“Who knows.” Jasmine pursed her lips, her face seemed to express that she couldn't be bothered to explain.

“Furthermore, the space within the Sky Poison Pearl obviously cannot store humans or any living beings, how can she...” Yun Che seemed very confused.

“Because she's not a living being. I already explained that she's very likely the already extinct ‘Celestial Spirit’, or, you could think that... she's just a sword!” Jasmine coldly said.

“Sword?”

“Yes! She's just a sword! You only need to think about it this way and everything will make sense. Besides, the truth is... basically like that.” Jasmine's gaze slightly flickered as she continued playfully: “Instead of worrying about all this now... Do you not notice what she's eating?”

Hong'er sat on the ground in a very ungraceful manner. Her cheeks puffed greatly as her mouth chewed in a hardworking manner, producing clear biting noises which sounded like she was eating jelly beans. After she finished eating, she quickly popped another piece

into her mouth... Yun Che could clearly see that the item she was eating was giving off a deep purple glow.

The purple glow caused Yun Che to be so shocked he nearly knelt down.

Pur... Purple Veined Heaven Crystal!

"Hong'er... Stop! You can't eat that!" Yun Che howled loudly as he pounced towards her. Seeing his actions, Hong'er screamed and immediately ran, causing Yun Che to grab nothing. Before Yun Che could catch up to her, Hong'er had already repeatedly chewed the item in her mouth, producing several crunching sounds. With a "gulp", she swallowed whatever was in her mouth. She then spread her hands open and giggled: "I finished eating!"

Yun Che: " ! # ¥ %....."

Yun Che's hands trembled as he bellowed in rage: "Hong'er! Do you know what you just ate?!"

"Nope, but it was very delicious." Hong'er licked her lips happily: "Master, do you have more? I still want more!"

"Of course not!!!" Yun Che's heart tightened: "That's a Purple Veined Heaven Crystal; it's a priceless treasure. In my whole life I've only obtained two pieces in total, how can there be more... Eh, Master?"

"That's right!" Hong'er tilted her head and replied happily: "Little big sis Jasmine said that Master is younger than me, so I can't call you big brother and should call you Master. And if I call you Master, I will get many many delicious food every day! Aiya... I've already called you Master so many times. What is Master going to give me to eat?"

Yun Che brows trembled agitatedly... This was definitely not an act, since what Hong'er ate was undoubtedly the actual Purple Veined Heaven Crystal. One piece came from Xiao Sect's Branch Sect and the other came from Xia Qingyue. As what he had said before, with his level, he merely obtained two pieces and could never bear to use

them...

However, it was actually eaten by Hong'er... eaten!

And she even found it delicious!

Not even considering the price of a Purple Veined Heaven Crystal, they were rare energy crystals that only paled in comparison to Purple Veined Divine Crystals. It was extremely tough, and with his current cultivation level, he wouldn't be able to damage it at all even if he used his full strength. At the same time, Purple Veined Heaven Crystals possess very dense natural energies. Cultivating using its energy would allow a person to move five hundred kilometers in a day; using it to maintain one's life force and vitality would allow one to stay alive for a long period of time, and allow one's body to be rebuilt. If used luxuriously, it could activate profound auras. A small piece of Purple Veined Heaven Crystal would be able to power up a several hundred ton profound ark for several thousand kilometers of flight! No one would ever imagine what the effects of eating a Heaven Crystal that possessed such dense energy would be... Because no one would actually consume this heavenly treasure.

Not only did Hong'er eat it, she actually chewed it!

Her teeth felt that an ordinary biscuit was tough... but could bite into Dragon Fault and Purple Veined Heaven Crystal as though they were tofu!

"The title Master is so much more harmonious, isn't it?" Jasmine said with her eyes half closed: "Anyways, the Purple Veined Heaven Crystals are not the only things she had eaten. She has already consumed all your Yellow Profound Crystals, Cyan Profound Crystals, Purple Profound Crystals, Yellow Profound Jade, Cyan Profound Jade, Purple Profound Jade, and the Purple Crystal Jade Marrows you bought in Divine Phoenix Empire."

"Hehehe..." Hong'er's little face looked up and laughed, beside her lips were two sparkling little canines. It was uncertain whether she

was laughing embarrassingly or proudly.

Yun Che was now feeling very unwell. After a quick count of what he had left, he realized that other than the lowest grade impure profound stones, profound crystals and profound jade... All his energy crystals, and even the precious Purple Crystal Jade Marrow were all eaten; not one bit was left behind.

All the various energy crystals he amassed all these years that he couldn't bear to use were obviously kept in the safest place on earth; even safer than a massive portable space he could open... yet, everything was swept in one night. Yun Che scratched his scalp, covering his face, and asked with tearless grief: "Jasmine, why did you not stop her?"

"I'm your master, not your servant." Jasmine replied in disdain.

Yun Che: "..."

Jasmine's tone changed as she continued: "Don't worry, Hong'er won't eat your things for free. Her entire being is now contracted to you. She is both your person and your sword. Even though what she eats is special, it will bring your great benefits."

"Bring me great benefits?"

"Can't you feel a little of Dragon Fault's aura from her body?" Jasmine asked.

"Dragon Fault's aura?" Yun Che stared at Hong'er, concentrated his senses, and was instantly shocked... Even though it was very slight, her original body that didn't have any aura was now giving off Dragon Fault's aura! If it was simply just Dragon Fault's aura, he would be able to think that it was from her having not completely "digested" it. However, this was the aura from when Dragon Fault had not been broken yet, and still possessed low grade spiritual intelligence. He asked in shock: "How can this be?"

"Very simple. After she ate Dragon Fault, its powers were digested

and absorbed by her body, becoming her strength. Not only does she possess the slight aura of Dragon Fault, the sword that she turned into has become bigger and more powerful!" Jasmine turned and looked at Yun Che, who was in shock: "Which means to say, every time she eats a sword, her own strength will increase accordingly, and the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword that she transforms into becomes stronger as well! She is not only Hong'er, but your sword as well! If you want your sword to become stronger, you need to find various strong swords for her... And it would be best if they were all heavy swords! To Hong'er, swords are the best food, and at the same time, she would also become a massive aid for you!"

"!!" Yun Che was indeed secretly amazed. When Hong'er ate Dragon Fault, he had already found it unbelievable. But now, he found out that she was able to absorb the strength of the sword she eats, then make herself... and the sword she transforms into, grow stronger!!

There was actually such a bizarre existence in this world!

After his shock, he was suddenly thrown into elation... The Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword was already powerful by itself; at least ten times stronger than Dragon Fault! If it could grow using such methods... Then to him, it would be the ultimate assistance! Its power would not be lower than those legendary Heavenly Profound Treasures!

"It will work as long as I find various swords to feed her?" Yun Che looked at Hong'er. His anger from her eating the Purple Veined Heaven Crystals and Purple Crystal Jade Marrows dissipated immediately, as his eyes glittered.

"That doesn't seem to work." Jasmine pointed at the area on the left: "Because towards swords that are below the Sky Profound Realm, she has no interest in them at all."

Looking at where Jasmine pointed, Yun Che saw his other swords that were in the Sky Poison Pearl: The Overlord's Colossal Sword, Tiger Soul Sword... and the few hundred other swords that he

obtained from the Xiao Sect Branch Sect's treasury. Seeing Hong'er's greedy attitude, she could give up her morals just so she could eat... yet the swords laid there untouched.

This meant that Hong'er did not eat just any sword. The swords she would be willing to eat had to be at least Sky Profound... Or even Emperor Profound!

Sky Profound Swords were limited, as for Emperor Profound Swords... within the entire Profound Sky Continent, how few were they? In regards artifacts above the Emperor Profound... Yun Che had only seen Ye Xinghan's Sun Moon Calamity. As for swords above Emperor Profound, he had never seen them before.

Where exactly could he find weapons for her that were above the Sky Profound Realm?!

"Alright, I understand." Yun Che nodded. Even though a Sky Profound Weapon was extremely difficult to find, if it could help Hong'er strengthen after eating, it was undoubtedly good news. But then, he became a little low-spirited, and said: "She's now my person and my sword, but why... does she not listen to me at all? Not only is she able to escape from the contracted space by herself, she can come out by herself as well... The worst part is that she can ignore my control."

When he was chasing Hong'er previously, she ran extremely quickly... Even though both were similarly restricted by contract, the Snow Phoenix could not disobey any of his orders he issued.

"Oh?" Yun Che's words caused Jasmine to reveal a face of shock for an instant. Then, she coldly replied in annoyance: "She's not a profound beast, moreover, she's a celestial spirit at a much higher level than you. It would be weird if you could completely control her. Even though she looks innocent, she is much smarter than you think. As long as you treat her nicely, not only will she listen to you, even if you cancel the contract next time to let her leave, she wouldn't want to leave you."

"Oh..." Yun Che could only nod and sigh in his heart. Treat her nicely? Wouldn't that mean I have to please her? Damn! Am I the master, or is she the master?!

"Then, the crystals she eats, will they increase her strength as well?" Yun Che asked.

"No." Jasmine shook her head decisively, then said to Hong'er: "Hong'er, show your master the profound ark."

"Profound ark?" Hong'er blinked with her misty red eyes, before her eyes sparkled: "Oh, that thing!"

As she spoke, she stretched out her little hand and a red glow flashed past. Instantly, a palm-sized, dark red miniature profound ark sat in the palm of her hand.

=====

Chapter 492 – Seeing Injustice, Being a Busybody

"This is?" The small, dark red ark in Hong'er's hand gave Yun Che a strangely familiar feeling.

"I don't know either, I just suddenly have it! Master, do you want to play with it?" Hong'er offered the tiny profound ark to Yun Che. The words 'master' came out exceptionally smooth. Yun Che had no idea how Jasmine had managed to educate Hong'er in this manner.

"You can't recognize it? This is the Primordial Profound Ark that you were trapped in for two years!" Jasmine said.

"What?" Yun Che's brows furrowed together, "But...."

"On the very day we entered the Primordial Profound Ark, I told you that the interior of the Ark had formed its own world, and that this internal world was much bigger than the ark's outer appearance. However the reality of the situation was much more exaggerated than I had originally determined. This profound ark's interior does indeed have an internal world, but it can also change size at will! And no matter how the exterior changes, the interior world is not affected in the least." Jasmine stared at the profound ark in Hong'er's hand with a serious expression. "There was a rumor circulating about in the Profound Sky Continent concerning the Primordial Profound Ark; every time the Divine Phoenix Empire discovered the Profound Primordial Ark, it was followed by the signal of the appearance of an extremely high class treasure. And this treasure is not within the profound ark, but should actually be the Primordial Profound Ark itself! The Primordial Profound Ark itself is a rare and unparalleled dimensional treasure! Things with its own internal worlds, I have seen many of those, but an item which can have such a huge internal world while being able to shrink down to such an extent, even I have never seen such a thing.... This is indeed worthy to be called a primordial artifact! And only a True God with the strongest ability to control dimensional power would be able to create such a profound ark!

"You mean... this thing? It's really that Primordial Profound Ark? But didn't it disappear?" Yun Che asked in disbelief. That Primordial Profound Ark, with an interior so vast that the Profound Sky Continent spent countless years exploring, but could not finish doing so, was actually the little ark in Hong'er's hand? Even though it was Jasmine who had personally said it, he still had difficulty accepting this fact. And when he had escaped the Primordial Profound Ark, he personally witnessed it disappear into thin air.

"After you have taken a hold of it yourself, you will naturally find out." Jasmine said these mysterious words.

Yun Che complied with Jasmine's words and took the little ark from Hong'er's hands. The moment his fingers touched the little ark, a ball of weak white light suddenly flashed forth.... Yun Che's movements froze in place, and pieces of soul fragments entered his heart, suddenly filling his head with some strange memories, while establishing some form of spiritual link with the tiny profound ark.

Observing Yun Che's situation, Jasmine said in a timely manner, "Do you remember the lingering spirit at the time we discovered Hong'er? She didn't completely disappear at that time; she imparted the last vestiges of her spirit to Hong'er. It was only once you left the Profound Primordial Ark, that she truly disappeared. And this Primordial Profound Ark was left to you, consider it your repayment for rescuing Hong'er. She handed over the primary control over the profound ark to Hong'er, while the secondary controls were passed to you.... Those were the soul fragments that you received just now. However, following the dissipation of the spirit, this profound ark has completely exhausted its energy. Not only is it unable to move, it is also unable to support its internal world, and it has been sealed completely."

"The kind of energy it requires to move... Is the same as that of a normal profound ark..." Yun Che muttered in a low voice. The soul fragments had established a clean spiritual link between him and the Primordial Profound Ark, and accompanying this link, came

memories which clearly instructed him on the Primordial Profound Ark's power source and some basic controls. It did not, however, tell him anything about the origin of the ark.

Its power source was basically the same as a normal profound ark, and it could fly in the air just like a normal profound ark. At the same time, it also possessed the ability to traverse dimensions, which normal profound arks definitely could not do.

And if one wanted to use its ability to transverse dimensions, the amount of energy required would be incomparably large! Even if you gathered up all the energy crystals within the Profound Sky Continent, it would only be enough to power it for several jumps.

The primary control of this profound ark laid in Hong'er's hands. At the same time, it had established an extremely strange connection with her... because the method to power up the ark... was actually by feeding Hong'er!!

Yun Che did not even know how to describe Hong'er's existence, which was bizarre to the point of being heaven breaking!

The interior of the profound ark was boundless, but once he held it in his hand, he could not feel any heaviness whatsoever. Yun Che gripped the profound ark tightly and said in a low voice, "This means that if I can give it enough energy to move, I can use it to traverse the dimensions, and return to the Profound Sky Continent!"

"Hmph, you are too naive." Jasmine said, bluntly pouring cold water over his idea, "Let's not even mention the obscene amount of energy required to traverse dimensions, even if you could use that ability.... Do you know where the Profound Sky Continent is located? Do you know how far it is from this world?"

Yun Che: "..."

"Even though you have obtained this Primordial Profound Ark, at the moment, it is not something you can take into consideration. First,

you must understand the world that you have landed in right now.”

“Right!” Yun Che crisply nodded his head. This was his second day in this world and he had been slowly understanding the living creatures that made up this world on his journey, but he had yet to inquire about where he was in this world, or even what this world was called in the first place... After all, if he asked this question, there would be the risk that people would suspect he was not right in the head.

Yun Che’s consciousness left the Sky Poison Pearl. He soared into the sky and continued towards the west.

Yun Che was about four hundred kilometers away from Jasmine’s indicated target location. Yun Che’s speed was not fast at all. In a day, he could roughly travel one hundred to one hundred and fifty kilometers. And every time he reached a town, he would stop there for half a day, then would quietly observe the communication of the people around him to glean more information about this world. He could distinctly feel that as he ventured westward, the people, demons, and beasts he met grew stronger and stronger in profound strength. On the third day, in a relatively small town, he merely walked down a street that was not longer than one and a half kilometers, and he had already felt the presence of twenty or more Thrones in the vicinity.

On the afternoon of the third day, he finally reached the area that Jasmine had indicated.

Yun Che flew more than three hundred meters into the air, and faced the west. He saw an exceptionally large grey-white city. This city was still at least fifty kilometers away, but it was huge to the point that he could not see the other side of the city. The whole city was covered in a stagnant grey-white color, and even the sky above the city seemed to have an additional mantle of gloominess.

“What a big city.... It’s at least three times bigger than Divine Phoenix City.” Yun Che said.

"The demonic energy is exceptionally thick." Jasmine said in a low voice, "From its scale and the power levels present, this city should be the center of this entire world. The population seems roughly half human and half demon. Your real trials in this world, should begin from this city.... Hmph, you better be careful. Do not die too quickly!"

Yun Che slowed down his speed as he drew nearer to the grey-white city. At this time, the sounds of a fiercely violent fight emerged from the area to the front of Yun Che, and as he grew nearer to that spot, bursts of profound energy storms flew from a very far distance to heavily impact his surroundings.

Yun Che's brows jumped violently... amongst the people who were fighting in front of him, every single one of them emitted an exceedingly strong aura. In terms of profound strength and levels, they were far above him.

"Two half a step into the Tyrant Profound Realm, three others at the first level of the Tyrant Profound Realm!" Jasmine said dully.

Yun Che halted his movements and hesitated for a moment. But he chose to continue flying forward and he quickly reached the scene of the battle.

He had arrived at a forest which was not too thickly enshrouded. In the aftermath of the fierce battle, several hundred meters of the area had already been leveled into a flat surface. Not even a blade of grass could be seen, much less trees. In the center of the area, three people were clothed in black and they wore pitch-black hoods. They were wrapped up in cloth from head to toe, only showing their hands and eyes. And the three people were surrounding a couple; the couple looked extremely young, approximately twenty years of age. The couple stood back to back; the man had a physique that was similar to Yun Che, his face was uncommonly handsome and elegant. He was dressed in all white, holding a longsword completely stained in blood, with a trickle of blood leaking from the corner of his mouth. Even though his wounds were not light, his eyes emitted a ferocious and unyielding light.

The girl was dressed in a light green, tight-fitting bodysuit. Her face was delicate and pretty while also having an heroic aura which would not lose to men. But what surprised Yun Che was that there were two especially long pointed ears on the side of her head, and on her back, stretched a pair of semi-transparent, butterfly-shaped, diaphanous wings; they were very beautiful. Her weapon was also very special, it was actually an oddly-shaped emerald bow broader than her entire body. On the strings of her tautly-drawn bow were three streaks profound energy sword rays.... But the power of the profound energy rays seemed to have grown weak.

"Ah, the elven race actually exists on this world?" Jasmine said in surprise. Because on their way here, they had seen many different humans and demons, but they had yet to come across fairies.

"Elf? That girl is one of those legendary fae?" Yun Che's gaze fell on the girl. He had heard many legends of the elven race, but this was the first time he had seen real life elf.

"The special features of the elven race are immediately obvious; you do not need probe their aura, you can tell it with a glance. Elves may be far outnumbered by humankind, but their average potential far outstrips that of humanity. Not only do they find it easier to absorb elemental profound energy, but they are natural born marksmen! A bow is the weapon most suited to them."

"Who... are you people!" The young man shouted as he gnashed his teeth.

"You despicable, shady villains! I have already sent a sound transmission to Big Brother, he will arrive very soon... And at that time, you will all die a dog's death!" The elf girl furiously shouted.

The couple was very young, but they were already half-step Overlords, and it was hard to find equals at their age. But the three people surrounding them were genuine Overlords! Even though half-step Overlords were only just half a tier lower than true Overlords, the difference in strength was like heaven and earth. A

practitioner at the first level of the Tyrant Profound Realm could easily beat both of them. Even if they combined forces, he could even beat three of such opponents.

When they heard the elf girl mention the two words 'Big Brother', the pupils of the three men in black contracted slightly. They were obviously extremely afraid of this 'Big Brother'. But immediately after, the leader of the black-clad trio laughed sinisterly, "Ah but it's too bad, that even if he arrives, he will not be able to see you alive one last time. However... young man, you can relax, we only want this girl's life, we won't kill you. At most, we will let you suffer a bit. Do thank us, your lords, for sparing your life, hahahaha!"

"If you want to kill my seventh siser... You'll need to step over my dead corpse first!" The young man did not display the slightest joy and instead, roared harshly. But just as those words fell, he spat out a huge amount of blood. Under the combined attacks of three Overlords, he had long ago sustained serious internal injuries.

At this time, Yun Che had been sensed by their spiritual perception. As they suddenly noticed someone drawing near, the faces of the trio in black went cold, while the young man and the elf girl were overjoyed... However, once they had perceived that the person who was approaching was only in the Sky Profound Realm, the black-clothed men laughed in disdain, and completely let down their guards. The couple's newly arisen hope was also swiftly and brutally snuffed out.

Yun Che descended until he flew just above their heads. The three men in black paid him no attention at all. As Overlords, why would they even bother to consider a lowly Sky Profound Realm practitioner? Yun Che looked down mutely as he swiftly flew past without stopping. At this moment Jasmine said, "Aren't you going to meddle in their affairs?"

"Forget it." Yun Che shook his head, "The two people who have been surrounded are around my age, but they are already half-step Overlords; they cannot be of ordinary birth. And the forces that

oppose them has the ability to dispatch three Overlords to deal with them; that kind of power is not to be trifled with. I have just reached this place, and I haven't even figured out the most basic situation yet. It would be better if I do not meddle."

The young couple was surrounded by three Overlords and were heavily injured; they had reached an absolute, inescapable dead end. The leader of the black-clad trio gave a cold laugh as he stretched out his hand, all five fingers making a grabbing motion towards the elf girl. "Heh.... Die!"

"I... will definitely not let you harm my seventh sister!" The young man's face turned scarlet, his arms swelling with all the power he could muster within himself. He let out a terrible shout, and he stood in front of the elf girl, both arms reaching out towards the black-clothed man.

"Stop overestimating yourself." The black-clothed man coldly laughed, and it was at this moment that the young man's body suddenly turned, as he used his back to receive the black-clothed man's attack. The arms which were supposed to receive the attack had instead, fallen heavily on the elf girl's body.

At this moment, all those who were present were taken by complete surprise; even the Yun Che who had flown away was distracted. Under the strike of this unexpected blow, the elf girl's body flew extremely far away, escaping the encirclement of the black-clad trio.

"Seventh sister, hurry up and run!!!"

As he used all his remaining energy to yell those words, his back had already receive the black-clothed man's attack. His entire body flew out, and a bloody hole the size of a fist appeared on his back.

"This young punk... is looking for death!" The black-clothed man hastily withdrew his attack, but the remaining energy was already enough to take this young man's life. Their mission was to kill the elf girl; if they accidentally killed the boy as well, the 'result' would be

greatly lessened.

"Damn it! Do you think this is enough to save her life? Such foolish naivete!"

The other two black-clothed men flew out at the same time, bearing down on the elf girl who had flown more than thirty meters away like a pair of great birds. But they did not even need to give chase, as the elf girl came running back. She had thrown away her weapon as she looked at the young man who had fallen on the ground covered in blood. Her eyes filled with tears, and she said in heart-breaking voice, "Brother Yun... Brother Yun! I won't run away... if you have to die... then we can die together!"

"Seventh sister..." The boy lying on the ground had difficulty raising his head as he uttered those words in a weak voice.

Yun Che's body froze and like a bolt of lightning, he rushed all the way back...

Dammit... This kind of scene is something I can't tolerate seeing!

And moreover, that kid is also named Yun, we might've even been relatives many eons ago. I'm going to save him!

=====

Chapter 493 – So it turns out that I’m already this powerful!

Yun Che suddenly moved back, straight into the air above the five. He pushed out both his hands, and three ‘Phoenix Breaks’ flew towards the black-clad trio!

“This young punk is looking for death!”

When Yun Che had passed by before, they paid him absolutely no mind. For an Overlord to squash a Sky Profound was as simple as squashing an ant. They did not expect that the Sky Profound punk would actually come back and extend his hands towards them.

A look of extreme disdain flitted across the eyes of the black-clad trio, and they turned a blind eye to the three blasts of flame, not even making a single movement to block.... The fire of a practitioner at the Sky Profound Realm could not even harm a single hair on their heads. But all of a sudden, the scarlet flame which was tens of meters away was bearing down on their bodies, its speed far surpassing their expectations. As the flames neared, they could feel a horrifying heat, as well as an extremely dangerous aura that caused their hearts to suddenly tighten.

The black-clad trio stopped their attack on the elf girl as they turned around with the swiftest of speeds, extending their hands to receive the onrushing flames. But once their palms came into contact with the flames, their bodies shuddered, as their internal organs were thrown into disarray. They could not afford to remain shocked, they thrust their hands outwards, and used all their strength to resist the blow... Three explosions resounded in the air, and the flames flew apart. But at the same time, the black-clad trio had been forced to retreat many steps, as their arms were numb and their bodies shivered. The weakest of the trio had both his palms charred black.

“Who are you!” The black-clothed man said harshly. Even though he sounded harsh, his eyes were filled with a deep fear, and what he shouted merely sounded fierce. He could only feel the aura of the

Sky Profound Realm from Yun Che's body, but his burnt hands and the numbness in his arms were not a lie... Moreover, this person had fired an attack at three of them at the same time!

Yun Che stepped through the air as he leisurely walked over, looking down on his audience. He coldly laughed, "Three stately Overlords would actually band together to bully two juniors, and they would even hide their appearances while doing so. Surely, you have brought honor to your ancestors!"

"Friend... please you must leave!" The young man who laid on the ground, with his aura being exceptionally weak, raised his head and used his loudest voice to yell, "Thank you for extending your hand towards us in help... but this matter does not concern you... please, you must leave now!"

Even though he saw the three columns of flames, the ones who endured the fire was the black-clad trio; he was naturally unaware of the embarrassment the three men had suffered under those three columns of flames. In his eyes, a single Sky Profound Realm had offended three Overlords; that was no different from courting death. He and the elf girl were destined for death today, and there was no need to implicate an innocent.

Yun Che gave him a single look, but did not respond. This person, who was also named Yun, obviously had an extremely good personality. Even though he was on the brink of death, he was still thinking about others. This had at least made it worthwhile for him to be a busybody and save them.

"Hey, punk, I would advise you to stick your nose out of this. Meddlesome people often have short lives!" The black-clothed man on the left said in a deep voice.

"Hmph, young people are often hot-blooded and impetuous, and like to meddle where they don't belong, that is understandable. But there are many affairs in this world that you do not have the capability to meddle in!" The black-clothed man in the middle said

with the same deep and low voice... Their voices all sounded hoarse, and it was obvious they were using faking a voice so as to not allow people to recognize their original voice, "If you leave now, we will treat what had just happened as nothing, and maybe we can even be friends. However, if you do not appreciate... Hmph, if you spoil our plans one more time, then you can't blame us for the consequences!"

Once the black-clothed man had said his piece, the young man lying on the ground became dumbstruck. Because even though the man sounded harsh, they were three Overlords against a mere Sky Profound who had impeded their actions, yet here they were, trying to use words to intimidate the other party, rather than just exterminating him outright. And even though their voices were harsh, the words used were not fierce in the least. Even the phrase 'if you do not appreciate our kindness' was not fully voiced out. It was as if... they actually feared this young man.

The black-clad trio were genuine Overlords. To be able to reach this level, you could not be a fool. Even though the aura Yun Che exuded was that of a Sky Profound practitioner, the previous fire attack had filled their hearts with shock. And despite them announcing their status as Overlords, he still dared to attack them... it was simply too unusual!

"Heh, but it's too bad that I'm feeling good today. So in regards to this affair, I am definitely going to be a meddler!" Yun Che crossed his arms over his chest as he let out a short bark of laughter, "But I have always been a compassionate and kind man. Regarding the act of killing, I have always been unwilling, so... Either the three of you leave now, or I will send you down to meet the king of hell!"

Yun Che's words were arrogant to the extreme... Since he had already made his move and decided to save these two, he was fated to offend these three men and the hidden power behind them. Since this was unchangeable, he might as well be as offend them even more.

The gazes of the three men in black sank, and the one in the middle

strode forward, speaking in an overcast voice, "Looks like even though we show you respect, you still act so brazenly. Even though we tried to let you off the hook, you deliberately want to court death! If that's the case, then this daddy will kill you as well!!"

As his voice fell, the black-clothed man rushed into the sky. At the same time, a pitch-black iron spear eight feet long appeared in his hands... This spear was only an Earth Profound Weapon. As an Overlord, his personal weapon naturally would not be a mere Earth Profound Weapon. It was obvious that the black-clothed man did not want to reveal any trace of his identity... including weapons!

That the black-clothed man would immediately use his weapon, showed the fear he had towards Yun Che. His black spear thrust forward, and with a low shout, it was accompanied by a violent blast of energy which swept towards Yun Che's neck.

"Watch out!" The young man lying in a pool of his own blood saw the black-clothed man make his move, and he yelled out in shock.

Facing the black-clothed man's attack, Yun Che face revealed a weird expression... It seemed to be an expression of surprise or confusion, as he steadily stretched out his hands, and tried to grab the body of the spear which was streaking towards him.

"Courting death!!"

The black-clothed man saw that Yun Che was not trying to dodge, and did not summon a weapon; it was not even in the correct posture to block the blow. Instead, he was trying to use his bare hands to receive his weapon. And Yun Che's movements seemed exceptionally lackadaisical. He laughed coldly in his heart, and the profound energy within his arm surged once more, as if he couldn't wait to destroy this arrogant youth in a single strike.

In the next instant... Yun Che's extended palm caught the spear with unerring accuracy. Suddenly, the incomparably fierce profound energy wave seemed to meet a boundless mountain wall, and

immediately disappeared into nothingness; all that was left was a weak ripple of energy that ruffled Yun Che's hair. Without waiting for the black-clothed man to show an expression of surprise, Yun Che's palm lightly flipped, and with a light delicate touch, he stole the spear from the man. Once again, his palm flipped, and with a swing of his arm, the spear fiercely thrust towards the waist of the black-clothed man.

Bang!!!

A distorted spatial ripple distinctly appeared on the path the spear traveled. In an instant, the spear had snapped; one half remained in Yun Che's hands, the other half shot out like a black meteor, and no one knew how far it flew. At the same time, the other thing that was fractured was... the black-clothed man's body! The instant the black spear landed on his body, his body had literally been snapped in half, breaking into two pieces, with both pieces flying and landing in two different locations.

Thump...

When the two parts of the black-clothed man's body fell, two fountains of fresh blood spouted out from the parts which had been severed. The eyes of the black-clothed man was still wide, and his expression was filled with endless horror, shock and disbelief. His death glare was still affixed to Yun Che, his mouth spitting out a 'You' in a voice that was hoarse with shock. After that, he stopped moving. Even if he was an Overlord, if his body had been snapped in half, there was no way he could survive.

Yun Che extending his hand, his defensive strength, his stealing of the spear and his counter attack... All of this happened in an instant akin to the flash of a spark. The people below saw the black-clothed man sweep his spear towards Yun Che, and before anyone could react, they saw the man's body snap in half midair.

The four below were all stunned into lifelessness, and no one breathed. All four people could not believe what had just transpired

before their very eyes... It was just an instant, an instant! The black-clothed man died an ignominious death at the hands of this young man! He used the spear that he had instantly snatched from the opponent — that Earth Profound spear, to snap an Overlord's body in half!

That was a genuine Overlord! A peerless strong being whose body was one hundred times tougher than stone!

Yun Che, who was still in the air, looked at the splintered spear in his hand, and he himself was rendered dumbfounded.

After enduring the spatial turbulence within the Primordial Profound Ark for two whole years, going through a tempering that was fiercer than any purgatory, his body and his profound energy all received an explosive boost. He was convinced that his current strength far exceeded the strength he had before he entered the Primordial Profound Ark, but he did not actually know how strong he had actually grown... Because in the last two years, only Jasmine had been by his side, and he had not crossed hands with anyone, so he could not ascertain the level of his current strength.

But just now, when he faced three Overlords, he did not feel any pressure at all. That already surprised him greatly. Facing the attack of an Overlord, his expression was relaxed, but in reality his heart was filled with caution... After all, before he had entered the Primordial Profound Ark, an Overlord was an unconquerable existence for him. So when he delivered his counter attack with the spear, he had used ninety percent of his power.

Not to mention, he had not opened any of the Evil God's gates.

He naturally did not even think that the counter attack he delivered without even entering the state of Burning Heart could actually snap the body of an Overlord in half.

Even though it was only a level one Overlord... It was still a genuine Tyrant Profound individual!

"So my strength has actually grown by this much." Yun Che mused in shock as he stared at his arm.

"Hmph, what did you think?" Jasmine said disdainfully, "You thickened your Dragon God's bloodline by tens of times and you reached the fourth stage of the Great Way of the Buddha, do you think all of this is for fun? If you had opened Purgatory's gate, your strength would have risen by ten times, and your last attack would not have left a single bone on that person's body intact!"

Yun Che, "..."

So it turns out that I'm already this powerful! Damn... I thought that the lack of pressure I felt from them was a misconception on my part!

Yun Che threw away the broken spear in his hand. After which his body blurred and suddenly he had landed on the ground. He looked at the two black-clothed men who had been frightened out of their wits, smiled, and said, "How about the both of you? How do you want to leave?"

"You... You... You..." The man on the left retreated several steps, both legs trembling, and when he spoke, his teeth chattered violently, making it hard for him to even complete his sentence.

"Let's go!" The man on the right pulled him along, and using the greatest speed, madly fleeing away from the scene. They passed by the splintered body and one of the black-clothed men stopped to swiftly pick it up... After seeing Yun Che not having any intention to stop them from fleeing, he plucked up his courage and scooted over to pick up the other part of the body. After doing so, he fled away from Yun Che as though he had gone mad.

"Not going to silence them?" Jasmine asked coldly.

"If I silence them, then where are my enemies going to come from? If I don't have strong enough enemies, how can this be considered a

real trial?" Yun Che asked matter-of-factly.

"Hmph! This is totally in line with your death-seeking personality."
Jasmine laughed coldly, but she did not attempt to restrain him in the slightest.

=====

Chapter 494 – Yun Xiao

The young man and the elf girl had initially completely given up, resigning themselves to death, but they never expected that a savior would suddenly descend from heavens. In the blink of an eye, among the three black-clothed men, two ran away and one died. The young man stared at Yun Che for a while and he nearly forgot about his injuries in his shock. Only when Yun Che neared did he start struggling to stand. Within his pained voice was deep gratitude: "Thank... Thank you senior... for saving us..."

"I thank senior for saving us." The elf girl followed up with his gratitude and replied thankfully.

Eh? Senior?

The edge of Yun Che's mouth moved, not explaining anything. He moved forward and slowly supported the young man, replying: "Don't talk for now, calm down, and stabilize your injuries... I'll help you."

Yun Che placed his hand above the injury on the young man's back, gradually transferring profound energy over... His profound energy possessed the attributes of the Dragon God and the Phoenix God, along with highly concentrated pure natural energy. Using it to treat injuries would immensely improve the rate of recovery.

The young man did not argue as he stopped speaking and closed his eyes. Just as he intended to start utilizing the remaining profound energy within him, he suddenly felt a warm and majestic... no, it was more accurately a nearly boundless form of profound energy that entered into his body from his back. The strength of the profound energy was obviously only of the Sky Profound Realm, yet it was unbelievably dense. He had also only slowly climbed his way from the Sky Profound Realm. If it was said that his profound energy when he was in the Sky Profound Realm was like smoke, then the current profound energy entering his body was like lava! It was even more intense and concentrated than his, even though he was half-step

into the Tyrant Profound.

How could this be the profound energy from the Sky Profound Realm... No! It must be a senior whose profound realm is too high. With my cultivation, I'm unable to detect it at all, thought the young man.

As Yun Che started to transfer his profound energy, the young man's expression moved again. It was not only because he felt the density of his profound energy, rather, he felt that it actually contained a mysterious power that caused all the veins in his body to bulge up; even the damaged veins were quickly recovering their vitality. His most severe external injury was on his back, and his internal injuries were not light. However, following the flow of the profound energy, he could clearly feel that both his external and internal injuries were recovering at an unbelievably quick rate.

He was fairly certain that even if the oldest great elder in his family used all his abilities, he would not be able to let him recover this quickly! This essentially transcended all common sense; this speed of recovery was unheard of.

This senior is no doubt an extremely frightening expert... which caused the young man to be even more certain of his guess, causing him to admire Yun Che even more. He gave up on trying to utilize his own profound energy and began to concentrate on absorbing and utilizing the profound energy that was entering his body. With the presence of this boundless form of profound energy, even if he utilized all the remaining profound energy within him, it would not even compare.

When he tried to further feel the profound energy, he discovered that its profound laws were very mysterious... more accurately, weird. His half-step Overlord self, who had cultivated profound energy for nearly twenty years wasn't able to comprehend it, and he felt inexplicably surprised.

"Let me help too."

Even though the elf girl was injured as well, her injuries were relatively light compared to the young man. She felt relieved for the man as she withdrew her weapon back into her spatial ring, placing both her hands on the man's chest. Her palm let out a jade green glow... Instantly, Yun Che felt an energy that was like cooling water surge into the man's body, and when Yun Che came in contact with this energy, even he felt a sense of rejuvenation

"The elven race's profound energy possess innate natural energy. Not only is it beneficial for self-recovery, when treating others, it is far superior than any human's. Solely because of this, the elven race is well liked by other races. Furthermore, because of the nature energy, the males of the elven race are handsome while the females are beautiful. Considering their unique talent, most races desire to find a partner from the elven race." Jasmine casually commented as she glanced at the young man, then coldly continued: "This brat is a pure human, yet is favored by this elf girl. His luck's not that bad."

Under the cooperation of Yun Che and the elf girl, the young man's severe injuries were stabilized quickly. When Yun Che removed his palm, the young man's back looked worrisome, but was actually already fine. The bleeding has already stopped as well, and he would be able to recover within half a month just relying on his own profound energy.

The young man stood up with the aid of the elf girl and bowed respectfully to Yun Che: "Not only did senior save me and Seventh Sister, you personally helped treat my injuries. Junior will definitely keep such a great kindness in mind... I hope, I hope senior can tell me his name."

"You called me... senior?" Yun Che grinned, and asked: "Do I look very old?"

"This..." The young man was embarrassed by what Yun Che had said, and did not know how to answer him for a while. The elf girl eyed him from top to bottom before serious speaking: "You're so strong, so you must be a great senior who reverted to a younger age!"

"I'm only twenty-two this year." Yun Che laughed, directly announcing his age: "Are you sure you want to call me senior?"

"Ahh? Twent... Twenty-two?" The two of them looked at Yun Che and cried out in shock at the same time. Yun Che had casually instantly killed a level one Overlord, his frightening strength causing them to guess that he was definitely an elderly expert who had trained for a long time. Furthermore, at the Tyrant Profound Realm, even a two-hundred-year-old could look like a twenty-year-old. For a twenty-odd-year-old to instantly kill an Overlord was not a realistic idea. Even within the whole continent, there were not more than five who were able to do that, and each of them were renowned in the world. Yun Che, however, was a fresh face that they had never seen before, and they would never have expected that he was only twenty-two.

The young man's face looked awkward as he embarrassingly replied: "This, this... Benefactor is so strong that we thought you were an expert who purposely kept himself young." As he spoke, his eyes brightened, continuing: "Benefactor is so young, yet so strong, you must be famous. Can I know... your name?"

"Yun Che." Yun Che replied without hesitation. In a foreign world, his name would be unknown, and there was no need to hide it.

"Yun... Che?" The two of them uttered the name at the same time as their eyes looked lost... A mere twenty-two-year-old that was able to instantly kill an Overlord would by right be famous within the entire continent. However, this was the first time they heard his name. The young man quickly replied: "Oh, benefactor's surname is also Yun, what a coincidence."

"Oh, that means your surname is Yun as well?" Hearing the elf girl call the man previously, Yun Che had already known that his surname was Yun as he replied with a smile: "Just call me Yun Che. The word benefactor is too awkward. Right, how do I address you two?"

The young man hastily replied: "Alright, then I'll call you Big Brother

Yun from now on! My surname is Yun and my name is..."

Just as he was about to say his name, the elf girl beside him tugged at him: "Brother Yun..."

The young man shook his head, and replied seriously: "Seventh Sister, he is our benefactor. If it wasn't for him, we would already have died here. It's just a name, why do we have to hide it from our benefactor... My name is Yun Xiao, twenty-one years and ten months old, younger than Big Brother Yun by a few months. This is... Seventh Sister, who is two years younger than me."

"Big Brother Yun can just call me Seventh Sister." The elf girl nodded gently, her demeanor appearing a little awkward: "My name is a... a mouthful, I'm afraid Big Brother Yun would laugh and won't say it... Please just call me Seventh Sister."

"Mn." Yun Che nodded. He was only casually asking for their names. However, this Yun Xiao's name and age caused him to be somewhat surprised... Even though he said that he was twenty-two, his actual age was probably twenty one and ten months as well, exactly the same as him. Furthermore, his name was "Yun Xiao" — Yun was his surname now and Xiao was his surname from when he was sixteen. This was quite a peculiar coincidence.

After Yun Xiao announced his name, Yun Che's reaction was unusually calm, causing the two to feel shock. The elf girl could not hold back and asked: "Big Brother Yun, could it be... that you've never heard the name 'Yun Xiao' before?"

"Oh?" Yun Che glanced again at Yun Xiao, whose expression was a bit unusual, and instantly understood. He calmly replied: "Is Brother Yun's name renowned in this area? It must be, so young and already a half-step Overlord. You must be a world-shaking genius whom even the heavens are jealous of."

"No, no, with Big Brother Yun here, I don't dare." Yun Xiao waved it off. If it was someone else praising him like that, he would definitely

accept it. But comparing to someone who far exceeded him and was similar to him in age, he really could not accept those compliments. He scratched his head and replied: "I do have a slight reputation in Demon Imperial City... Oh, that's right, Big Brother Yun is not someone from Demon Imperial City?"

Demon Imperial City? Could it be that greyish white city?

Yun Che shook his head: "I come for a faraway place and it's my first time coming to Demon Imperial City."

"So that's it." Both of them instantly understood, but the elf girl was still confused: "Could Big Brother Yun be from the southern borders? Other than Demon Imperial City, only the southern borders could produce someone as strong as Big Brother Yun... No, if the southern borders produced someone as strong as Big Brother Yun, Brother Yun and I would have already known..."

The elf girl considered carefully. It was obvious that she was unable to let it go that he was someone who had an unfamiliar appearance and name, yet had strength to instantly kill an Overlord at the age of twenty-two. Yun Che laughed and replied: "I come from a place far further than what you imagine and I've never come here before. I've come this time only for training and you guys not knowing my name is normal."

"Yun Che nodded towards them and continued: "You two are still injured. The ones trying to assassinate you might come back. You should leave soon."

As he finished speaking, Yun Che began rising as he prepared to leave.

"Big Brother Yun, wait!" Yun Xiao hurriedly moved forward and hastily replied: "Big Brother Yun, that direction... are you going to Demon Imperial City?"

"That's right." Yun Che nodded. Being named "Imperial" must mean

that it was the capital city of the continent, which meant that the grey-white city giving off a very strong aura must be it.

"This little brother and Seventh Sister are citizens of Demon Imperial City; if this is Big Brother Yun's first time, you probably do not have a place to stay. How about coming to my Yun house to stay for a while? I can explain to you the current situation of the city, and when I recover, I can bring you around Demon Imperial City. I wonder if... that is fine with Big Brother Yun?"

Yun Xiao's voice and eyes were exceptionally sincere, and he was even afraid that Yun Che was not "fine with it". Yun Che's body stopped in midair as he nodded slightly, smiling: "That's fine, then I'll be under Brother Yun's care."

Yun Che knew nothing about the Demon Imperial City in front of him, nor did he know anything about this entire continent. Having someone to guide him was undoubtedly the greatly beneficial.

Seeing Yun Che's consent, Yun Xiao was all smiles: "No, no, compared to Big Brother Yun saving our lives, this is nothing at all."

"My elf clan will also welcome Big Brother Yun as a guest at anytime. My clan will definitely repay Big Brother Yun for saving Brother Yun and me." The elf girl said sincerely.

Suddenly, Jasmine's grim voice rang in Yun Che's head: "An expert is coming here... He's in the eighth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm! If it's an enemy... You better prepare to run!"

Yun Che frowned as the profound energy within his body surged. However, Jasmine voice suddenly sounded again: "Looks like there's no need to run, it's an elf!"

=====

Chapter 495 – Number One Under Heaven

Just as Jasmine finished speaking, a fierce gust swept over from the north, and Yun Che only felt a green figure flash past. A huge man's figure appeared into his vision from out of nowhere.

The man was dressed in green and was extraordinarily handsome. His eyes were masculine, his ears thirty percent larger than the elf girl, and he gave off an overbearing aura. Even his pair of transparent wings vibrated intensely with profound strength. Upon seeing the elf girl, he descended in a flash and landed beside her: "Old seven, you're injured?"

"Big brother, you're finally here!" Once she saw the tall man appear, the elf girl was finally relieved: "My injuries aren't serious, but Brother Yun suffered serious injuries..."

"Hmph!" Seeing that his sister was alright, the muscular man let out a sigh of relief. Then he grunted coldly, turned around, and glared coldly at Yun Xiao, anger rising within him: "Yun brat! I knew it must be you! Luckily old seven is alright this time, otherwise... I will personally cripple you!"

"I..." Yun Xiao opened his mouth, but did not rebut. Instead, he looked down in shame.

"Big brother! Don't talk to him like that!" The elf girl frantically grabbed his hand: "It's not Brother Yun's fault, and... and he was only so severely injured in order to save me. It's enough that you don't thank Brother Yun, but you're actually acting so fierce toward him."

"Thank? Hmph!" The muscular man looked down: "Wasn't it him who asked you out this time?"

"I... No, it wasn't. It was me who secretly asked Brother Yun out. If you want to blame someone, then blame me." The elf girl answered as she puffed her cheeks. It was obvious she was not good at lying and her wavering eyes and pique attitude had already betrayed her.

"It's not seventh sister's fault, it's all my fault." Yun Xiao's head hung downwards with a face of guilt and unease.

"Since you know it's your fault, you better stay further away from old seven from now on!" The muscular man said coldly said: "If there's a next time, I will personally cripple your hands and legs! I do what I say! Old seven is not someone you are worthy of... Hmph! Who knows which bastard child you are. Do you really think you're the Young Master of the Yun family?!"

"Big brother!" The muscular man's words caused the elf girl's face to change drastically as she looked worryingly at Yun Xiao, and said angrily: "How can you say such words to Brother Yun... If you continue, I'll ignore you from now on!"

"Old seven, I... forget it, hmph!" The muscular man was spurred by anger, and now felt he was a little overboard as well. He turned around and stopped talking.

Yun Xiao's face blackened as he bit his lips. Then, he smiled bleakly, shook his head, and said: "Seventh sister, don't blame big brother, what he said is true... but," Yun Xiao looked up and said with resolve: "But no matter what, even if you cripple my legs, I will never give up on seventh sister! It is undoubtedly my fault that seventh sister was nearly assassinated this time. I will definitely train hard, and next time, I won't allow anyone to bully seventh sister anymore. Then, you and uncle will be at ease when you pass seventh sister on to me."

"Brother Yun..." The elf girl looked on tenderly as her eyes filled with tears.

The muscular man looked over with disdain, but when he saw the elf girl, he quickly changed to a caring and serious look: "About the matters concerning you two, we will discuss them back in the city... Old seven, what happened here? You sound transmitted over that you were attacked by three Overlords? Where are they now?"

The elf girl turned and looked at Yun Che: "Me and Brother Yun

nearly died in their hands. It was this Big Brother Yun who saved us. If not for Big Brother Yun, if you came now, you would probably only see our corpses. You should thank him.”

“You?” The muscular man turned and looked at Yun Che with suspicion. He saw Yun Che when he arrived, but chose to ignore him as he was only in the Sky Profound Realm and was a stranger.

Yun Che smiled slightly: “I am Yun Che.”

The elf girl continued: “Big Brother Yun and Brother Yun are the same age, but he’s amazing. He killed a black-clothed man in one move, scaring the two others away... He really only used one move! The three black-clothed men were all Overlords. Me and Brother Yun cooperated but couldn’t even defeat one.”

The muscular man’s eyes swept across Yun Che and he gradually frowned. From what he sensed, Yun Che’s profound strength was only at the tenth level of the Sky Profound Realm... At this level, he could only be considered a weakling within Demon Imperial City. How could he kill Overlords... and furthermore, defeat them instantly!

Under his forceful gaze, he realized that Yun Che, who was in front of him, was unperturbed and completely unaffected by the pressure of his aura. He was slightly shocked in his heart. Then, he stepped forward without uttering a single word, and pushed out a palm at Yun Che.

The casual palm caused a huge and dangerous looking spiral to appear in the space between him and Yun Che. Following which, the huge spiral suddenly dispersed into ninety-nine separate small spatial whirlpools, then converged again, and smashed towards Yun Che.

Wind attribute profound energy?

This was a blow from a high level Overlord, perhaps the most

frightening attack Yun Che had ever received since birth. However, he did not panic, nor did he retreat or even move. He stretched his hand out and a ball of Phoenix flames burned in his hand, going head-on against the savage, oncoming profound energy cyclone.

Boom!!

The savage wind profound energy and the fire profound energy collided against each other without any trickery. Even though it was only a simple test between the two, space was still violently torn apart in that instant; the savage storm tore apart the flames, and the torn apart flames burned the savage storm. The surrounding ten of meters of air were violently disrupted by the collision of wind and fire.

Yun Che collided against the muscular man in the midst of the collision between the storm and the flames and was forced back by three steps. They looked at each other, their gaze now completely different from before, as their hearts echoed the same words:

So strong!

Yun Che possessed strong arm strength gifted by the Dragon God's bloodline and natural strength. Hence, when they collided, he should've had the advantage. Despite that, he did not gain an advantage from that straightforward exchange... This was also not knowing how much strength his opponent had used.

The muscular man's shock was even greater than Yun Che's. Because the Yun Che in front of him was obviously only in the Sky Profound Realm, and from what he had heard from old seven, he was probably only in his early twenties... What exactly was this person's background? Why had he never seen him before?

"Big Brother, what are you doing!" The elf girl chided: "Big Brother Yun is our benefactor. Not only did you not thank him, you attacked him! You've gone too far."

"Hahahaha!" The muscular man laughed, cupped his fists at Yun Che and said sincerely: "Brother, please do not misunderstand. Even though I am a member of the elven race, I love battles. When I see a strong opponent, I cannot help myself. I am Number One Under Heaven, I thank Brother Yun for saving old seven's life. Your kindness, my clan will definitely repay you."

"..." Yun Che opened his mouth, but did not speak. He had seen arrogant people before, but he had never seen someone so arrogant that he proclaimed himself to be the number one under heaven! Even though he was strong, he couldn't be the number one under heaven, right? Even if you are the number one under heaven... Would you die if you were a little more humble?!

Seeing Yun Che's expression, the muscular man knew what he was thinking and laughed bitterly: "Brother Yun, do not misunderstand, I'm not such a conceited and arrogant person but my surname is Under Heaven and my name is Number One. My father named me this way and I too am helpless."

Surname Under Heaven... Name Number One...

How great is he at naming?!

Even though Yun Che tried his best to control himself, his brows still twitched intensely twice as he eyed the elf girl. He said with a nod: "So that's why. Then, your sister's name is..."

"Oh, my sister is the seventh child in the family, so she's named Number Seven Under Heaven..."

"Don't say it!! Ugh..." The elf girl tried to stop her brother but it was already too late. She could only hold her face in embarrassment: "It's all dad's fault, giving me such a stupid name... Just call me seventh sister! Seventh sister!"

"..." Yun Che used an immense amount of determination to stop himself from laughing out loud. It was no wonder seventh sister

refused to mention her name just now. The eldest was Number One Under Heaven and the seventh eldest was Number Seven Under Heaven... One could guess with their toes what the second eldest to the sixth eldest were respectively called: Number Two Under Heaven, Number Three Under Heaven... Number Six Under Heaven...

Who knows whether there were any Number Eight Under Heaven, Number Nine Under Heaven...

That also meant that the titles of the top few people in this world belonged to their family!

"Brother Yun looks very foreign, could this be your first time coming here?" When Number One Under Heaven said his name, Yun Che's reaction caused him to believe that Yun Che was definitely not from Demon Imperial City. Furthermore, at his age, having such a profound strength level was frightening. If he belonged to Demon Imperial City or its surrounding places, he would not be so unfamiliar.

"That's right." Yun Che nodded: "In my entire life, I've never actually entered Demon Imperial City before."

"No wonder." The Number One Under Heaven nodded before honestly continuing: "Old seven is my Under Heaven family's most important treasure. Since you've saved her life, you are a great benefactor of my Under Heaven Clan. If you don't mind, how about coming to our Under Heaven Clan to stay for a while? I also happen to have some free time now and can bring Brother Yun around the city."

Yun Xiao and Number Seven Under Heaven revealed faces of shock... They knew fully well of Number One Under Heaven's status and position, and since he was young, he had never took the initiative to get to know someone... However, as they thought of Yun Che's age and abilities, they could understand why. With such skills at his age, even within the entire Demon Imperial City, he could be considered an elite. Even though the Under Heaven Clan's power within the

Demon Imperial City was considered massive, making such a friend would only bring benefits.

Yun Che smiled and replied: "I appreciate Brother Under Heaven's intentions, but Brother Yun Xiao and I have the same surname. It must be fate, so I've already agreed to go to the Yun family for a while. However, when I'm more familiar with Demon Imperial City and know where Brother Under Heaven lives, I will definitely go pay a visit."

Number One Under Heaven glanced at Yun Xiao, before gradually nodding: "Since that's the case, I shall not ask anymore. That Yun brat knows where my Under Heaven family lives. If you encounter any problems that are difficult to handle, you can come find me at any time. Although my Under Heaven family is not huge, within Demon Imperial City, and perhaps even the entire Illusory Demon Realm, we still have some reputation."

Yun Che raised his hand: "Since that's the case, I shall thank Brother Under..."

Yun Che words were suddenly cut off as he stared forwards, stunned for a moment...

Illusory... Demon... Realm...

Illusory Demon Realm?!

alyschu: Like 'er (儿), old (老) is sometimes used as an endearment as well.

=====

Chapter 496 – Illusory Demon Realm

Illusory Demon Realm... Illusory Demon Realm...

Yun Che's mind burst into disorder... It had already been three days since he arrived at this world, and in this time, he didn't intentionally ask around for the name of this world. After all, this was a completely unfamiliar strange world, and the name of this world was basically unimportant to him. Furthermore, asking other people for the name of this world held the risk of him being seen as a crazy idiot.

The name of this world, was unexpectedly Illusory Demon Realm!

Impossible! It definitely couldn't be the Illusory Demon Realm he knew of; it must only be a lucky coincidence the names were the same! The Primordial Profound Ark had gone through eighteen months of space travel... it was space travel, not simple flight! And even if it was the most basic of flight, in an entire span of eighteen months, it was enough for Yun Che to travel across who knows how many continents with his speed. So, with eighteen months of space travel, who knew which corner of the boundless universe he would arrive at... the distance across the Profound Sky Continent, must be an incomparably frightening astronomical distance!

And the Illusory Demon Realm he knew of, was actually on the same star as the Profound Sky Continent and Azure Cloud Continent.

Eighteen months of shuttling through space, how could he still be on Blue Pole Star!

Furthermore, enmity between the Illusory Demon Realm and Profound Sky Continent had always existed. The people from the Illusory Demon Realm even had some means to reach Profound Sky Continent, and perhaps people from Profound Sky Continent had also once entered the Illusory Demon Realm; between the two, some news must be known about each side... If the Primordial Profound

Ark also appeared in the Illusory Demon Realm every three hundred years, over the millenniums, and possibly even tens of millenniums of history, it was extremely likely that the Profound Sky Continent knew something. However, when he was at the Divine Phoenix Sect, he hadn't heard the least bit of news regarding this.

That's not right... it must only be a coincidence!

Yun Che thought long and hard about this, but at the same time, other than the name... the Illusory Demon Realm was a world where man and demon coexisted, and this place was the same. The ruler of the Illusory Demon Realm was known as the Demon Emperor, and the main city in front of him, was known as the Demon Imperial City...

Is it truly a coincidence... or is it... or is it...

"Brother Yun, are you alright?" Seeing Yun Che's sudden daze and rapidly fluctuating expression, Number One Under Heaven questioned.

Yun Che slowly raised his head, his expression appearing imposing and misty: "Brother Under Heaven, Yun Xiao, Seventh Sister, have you all... heard of a place known as... Profound Sky Continent?"

Having said the three words "Profound Sky Continent", a slight trill appeared in Yun Che's voice. This was because that place which he had left for two years was land that was truly a part of him, and contained many people he cared for with all his heart. If this place was truly the Illusory Demon Realm he knew about, returning to Profound Sky Continent wouldn't be that unattainable.

And he clearly noticed, when he brought up the words "Profound Sky Continent", the expressions on Number One Under Heaven and the others were not of confusion, but of... a slight change!

"Not only have I heard of it, it is as clear as lightning penetrating one's ear." Number One Under Heaven replied without hesitation:

"Brother Yun possesses such strength at such a young age, it looks like you truly submerged yourself in cultivation, and paid very little attention to happenings in the outside world. A hundred years ago, the name Profound Sky Continent was indeed very strange in my Illusory Demon Realm, and only a select few knew of it. However, in these hundred years, in the entire Illusory Demon Realm, there are few people that do not know of the name Profound Sky Continent. This is because our Illusory Demon Realm's Demon Emperor and Little Demon Emperor died under the hands of those contemptible vile people from Profound Sky Continent in these last hundred years! Even Lord Demon King..." Number One Under Heaven's gaze swept Yun Xiao intentionally: "Has landed in the hands of those contemptible Profound Sky villains, and it is unclear whether he is alive or dead! The name Profound Sky Continent... to our Twelve Guardian Families, not only have we heard of it, it is a name we must engrave into our hearts until death!"

"Um... Brother Yun says he is from a remote place, and it looks like it is your first time traveling to obtain experience. It's understandable that you don't know about this." Yun Xiao hurriedly explained to Yun Che.

Yun Che stood blankly there, and didn't speak for a long time.

Profound Sky Continent... Demon Emperor... Little Demon Emperor... Demon King... a hundred years ago... resentment... Twelve Guardian Families...

The name "Illusory Demon Realm" could be a coincidence, but all this... could they all be coincidences too?!

Yet how could they all be coincidences!

The world he currently resided in, this continent known as the "Illusory Demon Realm"... was actually the Illusory Demon Realm he knew of! The world located on the same star as Profound Sky Continent, which possessed tremendous hate and intersection!

"Jasmine, what's going on?" Yun Che shook his head, then asked Jasmine: "The Primordial Profound Ark traveled for such a long time, how could it have stopped at the Illusory Demon Realm, which is located in the same world as Profound Sky Continent? Profound Sky Continent has also never had any information about the Primordial Profound Ark appearing in the Illusory Demon Realm."

"How would I know." Jasmine replied lightly, but in her heart, she felt some unease... Two years ago, in order to intensify the spacial storm and allow Yun Che to go through more difficult experiences, she had forcefully pushed the speed in which the Primordial Profound Ark traveled, which certainly affected the trajectory of its travel to some extent... Only, even she completely didn't think that her own interference actually caused the Primordial Profound Ark, in its eighteen months of travel, to return to the Blue Pole Star once again, and stop above the Illusory Demon Realm!

This was also the only explanation.

However, she was naturally incapable of informing Yun Che about this reason.

At this time, Yun Che suddenly turned his head, and stared fixedly at Yun Xiao... Twelve Guardian Families... Yun family's... Young Master... a bastard child that had been picked up... and the name "Yun Xiao"... One after another, words that he had only heard casually and hadn't paid the least bit of attention to began to weave incomparably violently within his mind, forming a possibility he was unable to be calm about... Under the piercing gaze of his eyes, Yun Xiao suddenly felt his entire body shudder. He forcefully gulped a mouthful of saliva, and said with some apprehension: "Brother... Yun, why are you looking at me like this... Uhh..."

Yun Che took a step forward, grabbed Yun Xiao's shoulder, and asked with an incomparably imposing tone: "Yun Xiao, tell me, your family... is it the Yun family from the Twelve Guardian Families!"

"Ah..." Yun Che's sudden violent reaction caused Yun Xiao to be

bewildered for a moment. He used a pleading gaze to look at Number One Under Heaven, and said very cautiously: "Brother Yun, could it be... could it be your family or school has some grudge with the Yun family? Y-y-you... please calm down for a moment; no matter what misunderstanding there is, it can be resolved..."

Yun Che's abnormal reaction also caused Number One Under Heaven and Number Seven Under Heaven to reveal gazes of astonishment, but the life experiences of Number One Under Heaven far surpassed that of Yun Xiao. Although Yun Che's mood seemed a bit unusual, he didn't actually display any hostility when facing Yun Xiao. After a short pause, he said: "I guess I'll respond for this brat. He is indeed someone from the Yun family of the Twelve Guardian Families; moreover, he is the family head's sole son. Only... hmph, they have long been unworthy of the name Twelve Guardian Families. After the unknown living state of the Demon King a hundred years ago, the Yun family has been filled with turmoil and unrest for a long while. Twenty five years ago, Patriarch Yun charged into the Profound Sky Continent; although he made it back alive three years later, both him and his wife sustained extremely heavy injuries, becoming nearly handicapped, and also lost the most important treasure of the Demon Royal Families! This caused the entire Yun family to bear great sin."

"In these short hundred years, the core characters in the Yun family have fallen in succession. In addition to the family's internal unrest, the Yun family's strength has plummeted. The Yun family was indeed the head of the Twelve Guardian Families once, but as of now, the Yun family's strength is without a doubt in its last moments! It has even gradually lost the qualifications to stand shoulder-to-shoulder with the other eleven Guardian Families, and with the addition of the crime of losing countless valuable treasures... Perhaps in a few years, the Twelve Guardian Families will become the Eleven Guardian Families."

Number One Under Heaven glanced at Yun Xiao indifferently for a moment. With the current situation this son of the Yun family was in,

every word he spoke didn't save him the least bit of face, and also portrayed the Yun family's current steep decline. Furthermore, what he said really wasn't a secret between the Twelve Families; basically everyone in the Illusory Demon Realm knew of this, so he said all of this without much apprehension.

Yun Xiao bit his lips. His face revealed slight unwillingness, yet didn't say anything.

Yun Che's chest heaved violently for a moment, because Number One Under Heaven's words provided even more evidence that this Illusory Demon Realm was the one that he knew of. The current patriarch of Yun family... crippled twenty-two years ago... This time period made it unable for him to think of another explanation... the word "crippled" further caused his heart to twitch for a moment.

"What is the name of the current Yun family's Patriarch?" Yun Che maintained his calm with great effort: "Is he your father? Your father, and mother, what are their names? Are they... Yun Qinghong... and Mu Yurou?!"

Yun Xiao opened his eyes wide, and nodded somewhat callously: "They... are indeed my parents... Could it be that my parents have had some interaction with your sect?"

"..." Yun Che's expression froze. Then, his two hands grasping Yun Xiao's shoulder slowly loosened. He stood there, unable to speak for a long time.

"...Your father is named Yun Qinghong. Even though I am already a few hundred years old, I only have one son which is your father. His talents are not too bad, and he had awakened the same cyan profound handle I have. Your mother is named Mu Yurou and is also from a Guardian Family of the Demon Emperor, and is the daughter of Mu Family's Patriarch. The Twelve Guardian Families exist to protect the Demon Emperor and there are no estrangements between them. The relationship between our Yun Family and Mu Family have always been the best, and your father and mother were

childhood friends who grew up together. A hundred years ago, when I left the Illusory Demon Realm alone, they had just gotten married..."

Yun Canghai's words sounded within his mind, each word striking like the evening drum and the morning bell.

At that time, each time Grandfather Yun Canghai spoke about the Yun family, his face would fill with pride, speaking the words "head of the Twelve Guardian Families" loftily. Yet, from the information he had just heard from Number One Under Heaven, the Yun family had actually been on rapid decline over these hundred years... Yun Canghai had been locked up for a hundred years, and was completely unaware the position of the Yun family had dropped a thousand miles in one fall; if he had known of this, he would definitely be turning in his grave right now...

Yun Qinghong... That the name of his biological father his Grandfather had mentioned!

Mu Yurou... That was his biological mother's name.

And the Yun Xiao in front of him... he... could it be... he was...

Jasmine: "..."

Number One Under Heaven furrowed his brow: "Could it be you've really had some interaction with the Yun family before?"

After a long period of silence, Yun Che regained his calm. He nodded slowly, and smiled lightly: "Of course I don't. Only, as my surname is also Yun, I have always possessed a deep reverence towards Demon King Yun Canghai from back then, and the current head of the Yun family, Yun Qinghong. So, because I suddenly discovered Yun Xiao was actually the son of the head of Yun family's Patriarch, I was a little stirred up; you all have seen me embarrass myself."

"Ah? So... so it's like this?" Yun Xiao's expression relaxed. He patted his chest, and let out a long breath of air: "You scared me to death; I really believed my savior had some trouble with my family, heheh..."

Sure enough, I was overthinking. That's true too, my parents are such gentle people, how could they have any animosity with others."

"So that's how it is." Number One Under Heaven naturally wasn't as innocent as Yun Xiao. He felt that Yun Che was speaking with tongue in cheek, yet didn't question or pursue the matter; he only nodded slowly.

"If that's the case, then you two really must have been brought together by destiny!" Number Seven Under Heaven clearly became a lot happier: "Brother Yun can bring Big Brother Yun to meet uncle; Not only is Big Brother Yun powerful, he also saved Brother Yun, and also has the surname Yun. Uncle Yun will definitely be very grateful and fond of Big Brother Yun. Hehe..."

Number Seven Under Heaven laughed happily. Even the Twelve Guardian Families didn't have many that received the approval of her Big Brother Number One Under Heaven. If Yun Xiao could become good friends with this kind of person, she was certainly extremely willing to see it happen.

=====

Chapter 497 – Greatest Ambition Under Heaven

“Right, right, right!” Yun Xiao hurriedly followed suit and nodded: “My father is a very gentle person; he will definitely be fond of Brother Yun.”

Yun Che glanced at Yun Xiao deeply, sighing to himself in his heart... No matter how much the Yun Family declined, it was still part of the Twelve Guardian Families, and possessed the highest level of family strength in the Illusory Demon Realm; Yun Xiao was the Yun Family Head’s only son, and his status was nothing less than respectable. However, Yun Xiao didn’t possess the least bit of arrogance or willfulness, and when he was doing something or speaking, he was especially gentle and humble, perhaps even cautious and forbearing... As for Number One Under Heaven’s all kinds of savage words, he didn’t flare up or rebut in any way since the very start.

In regards to Yun Che agreeing to visiting his house, he showed not only cordiality, but happiness as well... This told Yun Che that this Yun Xiao, who had a highly respectable status, an extremely good temperament and cultivation, seemed to not have many friends.

It seemed like a completely isolated feeling.

“I also really want to meet the Senior Yun I have revered for a long time. Since this is so, we should travel to Demon Imperial City. This is my first time visiting Demon Imperial City, moreover, I might stay for a relatively long time, so I’ll have to trouble everyone to take care of me.” Yun Che said as he nodded.

“Haha, don’t be polite, you saved my little sister’s life. Our elven race always repays favors; if you need us for anything, just speak up about it. I, Number One Under Heaven, will definitely not wrinkle my brow at all.” Number One Under Heaven said candidly. After speaking, he probed Number Seven Under Heaven’s wounds once again: “Old Seven, can you fly back by yourself? You’re wounded, so you must not push yourself.”

"I've said before, I only suffered a few light injuries. Flying a few dozen rounds isn't a problem," Number Seven Under Heaven looked at Yun Xiao with concern, and supported his arm: "Brother Yun's wounds are actually heavy."

"Hmph! This brat invited trouble upon himself, serves him right if he dies! He's lucky he didn't implicate you, otherwise I would strike him to death with one palm!" Number One Under Heaven glared at Yun Xiao for a moment as he spoke with a seemingly dour mood; it wasn't because his anger hadn't disappeared, but because it had gathered over time. In regards to Number Seven Under Heaven and Yun Xiao's matter, there was nearly no one that didn't disapprove.

Number Seven Under Heaven's willowy brow straightened, but just as she was about to flip out on Number One Under Heaven, she was held back by Yun Xiao. Yun Xiao was long accustomed to Number One Under Heaven's mockery and ridicule. He shook his head at Number Seven Under Heaven, and said: "Seventh Sis, don't be angry at your brother. This time, it was indeed my fault; if I hadn't secretly asked you out, today's affair wouldn't have happened. If we hadn't run into Brother Yun, I simply cannot bear to think of the consequences... Just let Big Brother scold me, this way, my heart will feel a little better."

Number Seven Under Heaven looked at him painfully, then turned around and glared at Number One Under Heaven fiercely for a moment. Afterwards, she didn't look at him anymore, and held Yun Xiao's hand: "Hmph, ignore him. Brother Yun, let's go."

"You're not allowed to carry him, let him fly by himself!" Number One Under Heaven smiled coldly, and said ruthlessly.

"Big Brother, you're being too excessive!" Number Seven Under Heaven's eyes burned with rage: "Brother Yun suffered such serious injuries in order to protect me; his injuries just stabilized, and activating his profound energy recklessly is very dangerous. How can you be this excessive!"

"Hmph! Even he admitted that it was his own fault." Number One Under Heaven looked away: "He suffered a few light injuries, and he needs the support of a woman? What kind of man is that! If he's a man, even if he can't fly, he should crawl if he had to!"

"Allow me." Seeing that the situation had become tense, Yun Che couldn't stay silent. He walked up to support Yun Xiao, and said: "Brother Under Heaven, Yun Xiao has indeed suffered heavy injuries, and isn't fit to activate his profound energy recklessly. If he walked back, it would be a waste of time; since I want to follow him to pay my respects to Senior Yun, I'll just bring him along as well."

Facing Yun Che, Number One Under Heaven naturally didn't have anything to say, and nodded: "I naturally have no objections to Brother Yun's words...Old Seven, let's go."

The four people soared high into the air. With their strength, they would be able to traverse the three hundred meter distance very quickly. Seeing the rapidly nearing Demon Imperial City in his line of sight, Yun Che's heart began to throb unceasingly... He had arrived in this world without any preparation, and also met these people without any preparation... Before this time, the Primordial Profound Ark's travel was undoubtedly a great calamity, and it was a miracle that he had survived. But now, he wasn't sure whether he was supposed to rejoice.

Because if the Primordial Profound Ark disaster hadn't occurred, he wasn't sure in what year or what month he would have been able to arrive at this place.

Demon Imperial City grew closer and closer. When they were still several meters away from the city gates, three people flew over from in front of them with speed as quick as lightning. Seeing people approach from the front, Number One Under Heaven and Number Seven Under Heaven stopped, and Number Seven Under Heaven called out happily: "Third Brother! Sixth Brother! And... ah? Dad!"

The three people that were approaching also stopped. They were

three male elves; the stature and age of the two elves on the side were similar to that of Number One Under Heaven, and although their profound energy auras weren't as great as Number One Under Heaven's, they were still astonishingly rich. What caused Yun Che to stare fixedly was the elf in the middle... He looked as if he was thirty years old, but an unfathomable precipitate of age condensed between his brow. Furthermore, the aura on his body was as vast as the universe, causing Yun Che to be unable to probe it in any way. He was even unable to make sense of its very limits, and even the existence of a profound energy aura was barely discernible.

Yun Che had only felt this kind of feeling from Gu Cang's body before.

But at that time, his profound strength was only at the Earth Profound Realm, and his current state was completely incomparable to that of the past... which also signified that the strength of the middle-aged elf in front of him far surpassed that of Gu Cang!!

Gu Cang was a genuine Monarch powerhouse, the highest level existence in Profound Sky Continent. And this person in front of him, was undoubtedly the peak of the peak... a genuine absolute peak existence that could disdain anything!

"It's unexpected to have actually met a Monarch so quickly." The sound of Jasmine muttering came from within Yun Che's mind.

The three people saw that Number Seven Under Heaven was safe and sound, and the grim expressions on their faces relaxed. The elf on the right said: "Old Seven, you're alright. I, your Third Brother, was so scared my heart almost stopped."

"Of course I'm alright. Big Brother already came, why did you guys... Dad, why did you personally come?" Number Seven Under Heaven glanced at Yun Xiao stealthily, and her heart filled with unease.

Yun Xiao faced forward and anxiously said: "Junior Yun Xiao pays respect to Uncle Under Heaven."

"Hmph!" Facing Yun Xiao's junior etiquette greeting, the elven male only snorted indifferently, then didn't pay him another glance. He directly walked in front of Number Seven Under Heaven, and quickly inspected her aura and injuries, then finally relaxed: "I heard from your Big Brother that you encountered a secret attack from three Overlords, how could I sit still? Dad only has one daughter, if you really met some kind of unexpected accident..."

Having spoken to this point, his anger suddenly rose to the air, and he turned around abruptly to look at Yun Xiao. How could the pressure from an angry Monarch be insignificant; it caused the originally heavily-injured Yun Xiao's face to pale. If Yun Che hadn't swiftly used his profound energy to stabilize his injuries, he would've spat out a mouthful of blood on the spot: "You little bastard from Yun Family! If something really bad really happened to our Seventh Treasure this time, I, Greatest Ambition Under Heaven, would tear down your Yun family no matter what!!"

"Uncle Under Heaven, I..." Yun Xiao timidly opened his mouth.

"Shut up!" Greatest Ambition Under Heaven reprimanded him with glaring eyes: "I don't want to hear even half a word from you anymore. If it wasn't for the Demon King and your father's face, I would've definitely crippled you today! Get out of my sight right now; if you try to get near my daughter in the future, I'll snap your legs in two!"

"..." Yun Che's ears buzzed from Greatest Ambition Under Heaven's booming voice. Previously, he had thought Number One Under Heaven's attitude towards Yun Xiao was too vile, but after seeing Greatest Ambition Under Heaven's attitude... he began to feel Number One Under Heaven was simply too kind and gentle!

"Dad!" Number Seven Under Heaven hurriedly stood in front of Greatest Ambition Under Heaven: "Why are you so mean to Brother Yun, this issue didn't even involve him. It was I who wanted to leave. Furthermore, those three black-clothed men only wanted to kill me; they didn't plan on attacking Brother Yun at all. If Brother Yun didn't

stake his life to protect me, I... I wouldn't have been able to see Dad ever again."

"Hmph! You don't have to speak for him." Greatest Ambition Under Heaven waved his hand: "Your Sixth Brother already confessed. He personally heard that it was this bastard who sent you the sound transmission, inviting you to meet two hundred meters outside of the city... this is truly preposterous!!"

"Ah..." Number Seven was at a loss for words. After, she looked at the young elven male to the left... which was her Sixth Brother. Number Six Under Heaven turned his head, and his face was filled with an innocent expression.

"In short, this doesn't have to do with Brother Yun!" Number Seven Under Heaven said annoyedly.

"You also shut up!" Greatest Ambition Under Heaven bellowed. He had six sons, yet only had one daughter. Because he usually treasured her dearly, he was never willing to scold her, so him yelling this time scared all four brothers and sister present... Evidently, Greatest Ambition Under Heaven was truly angry. After all, this was a major event that had almost cost Number Seven Under Heaven her life; how could he remain undisturbed. He looked straight at Yun Xiao, who was already too afraid to speak, and said with a grim voice: "I'll say it one more time. Get the fuck out of my sight! Tomorrow, I'll go find Yun Qinghong. His son almost caused my daughter to lose her life, I want to see what kind of explanation he'll give me!"

"Dad..." Number Seven Under Heaven tugged Greatest Ambition Under Heaven's hand tightly, extremely fearful that he would attack Yun Xiao. Facing the furious Greatest Ambition Under Heaven, she was also at her wit's end.

"Cough, cough..." At this time, Yun Che, an outsider from head to tail, actually walked beside Yun Xiao, and said: "Senior Under Heaven, you're very protective of your daughter, and is angry because of that;

this is only natural, and completely understandable. Only... would Senior Under Heaven please calm down for a moment, and hear out a few of this Junior's words?"

Greatest Ambition Under Heaven cast a sidelong glance at him, and said lightly: "And who are you?"

Number One Under Heaven said: "Father, this is Brother Yun Che. He comes from the Southern Border, and this is his first time journeying for experience. The one who saved Old Seven wasn't this son, but him. If it weren't for him, I'm afraid Old Seven really would've..."

"Oh?" Once Number One Under Heaven said this, the gazes of Greatest Ambition Under Heaven, Number Three Under Heaven, and Number Six Under Heaven held towards Yun Che naturally became entirely different, yet his profound energy aura actually caused the three to wrinkle their brows simultaneously. Number One Under Heaven knew what they were thinking, and said in a very low voice: "Father, Old Three, Old Six, you mustn't underestimate him. His aptitude is frighteningly good; although his profound strength is only at the Sky Profound Realm, he can destroy a level one Overlord in one strike! I also probed his strength previously... his strength can compare to a level four Overlord! It may even be higher."

"What?!" Number One Under Heaven's words caused Monarch-realm Greatest Ambition Under Heaven to reveal an expression of alarm on his face. Peak of the Sky Profound, can beat a mid-stage Overlord?

If Number One Under Heaven hadn't personally said this, with Greatest Ambition Under Heaven's extensive knowledge, he definitely wouldn't have believed it.

"It turns out Brother Yun saved little sis, we were truly lacking in manners. This one is Number Three Under Heaven, and I thank Brother Yun for your life-saving favor." Number Three Under Heaven said while cupping his fist towards Yun Che.

"This one is Number Six Under Heaven. You saved little sister's life,

which is equal to saving my life; this great favor must be repaid." Number Six Under Heaven also said gratefully.

Greatest Ambition Under Heaven's complexion eased up. He nodded at Yun Che, and said with praise: "It turns out you were the one that saved my daughter's life. My elven race always repays favors, let alone this great favor. If you want to say something, do speak. If you have any request, do not hesitate to bring it up as well."

"I don't dare make any requests; Junior only has a few humble opinions." Yun Che gave a slight smile, then said slowly: "Before this junior saved Yun Xiao and Seventh Sister, I heard the three black-clothed men personally yell that they only wanted Seventh Sister's life, and wouldn't kill Yun Xiao. Moreover, when one of the black-clothed men attacked Yun Xiao, he promptly restrained his strength, as if he was afraid of injuring him... Perhaps Senior and Under Heaven Brothers could come up with a reason?"

"Right, they really did say that." Number Seven Under Heaven immediately nodded and said: "From the very beginning, they only wanted my life, and let Brother Yun leave immediately... But Brother Yun didn't go, and even protected me with his life. They were afraid of mistakenly killing Brother Yun, so their hands and legs were tied when they were fighting me."

The four people all furrowed their brows. Number Three Under Heaven said in a low voice: "Could it be, those three black-clothed men were Yun family's people... That's not right! They shouldn't have a reason to do such a thing."

"Of course this couldn't have been the Yun family." Yun Che said unhurriedly: "Although this is junior's first time adventuring and is extremely unfamiliar about the Twelve Guardian Families, if I didn't guess incorrectly, your elven race and the Yun family shouldn't have a hostile relationship, right? Perhaps you're even somewhat friendly with each other?"

"This is indeed true." Number One Under Heaven nodded: "My

father owes a great favor to Senior Demon King Yun Canghai, so my clan and the Yun family has always been friendly. A hundred years ago, when the Demon King's life or death was unclear, Yun family went into disorder; our relationship with the Yun family has cooled off year after year, but we've never been enemies before."

"Then," Yun Che's expression became more cautious: "If this time, Seventh Sister truly suffered an evil scheme and Yun Xiao was safe and sound, how would your relationship with the Yun family change?"

Yun Che's statement was like a sudden burst of thunder sounding beside everyone's ears, causing them to sink into thought for a moment, and everyone's expressions changed completely.

Yun Che nodded, and continued speaking: "That's right! If Seventh Sister and Yun Xiao both suffered the evil scheme, then, you all and the Yun family would unite against a common enemy, and search for the murderers together. However, if only Seventh Sister suffered the evil scheme and Yun Xiao was unharmed, in addition to the fact that Yun Xiao had invited Seventh Sister, then, before searching for the murderers, with the extent that Senior Under Heaven and the Under Heaven brothers love Seventh Sister, you all would definitely thoroughly take your anger out on the Yun family. Perhaps this would even create great enmity, which would lead to conflict, and conflict would only allow the enmity to spread. In the end, your two families might even end up in a feud that wouldn't end until everyone dies!"

"If the goal of those three black-clothed men was only to take Seventh Sister's life, then not only would letting Yun Xiao keep his life not bring any good, it might actually allow him to discover tiny hints of evidence, which could expose their identities later. However, they would rather risk their identities being discovered to only kill Seventh Sister, and leave Yun Xiao... their true purpose, goes without saying!"

Yun Che's gaze swept all of them for a moment: "Seventh Sister is

safe and sound, yet Senior Under Heaven is already this angry. If something really happened, one can imagine what would happen. If Senior Under Heaven's anger still doesn't disappear, and personally visits Yun family tomorrow to find Senior Yun, once your feelings intensify, wouldn't that be precisely falling into the trap of the traitors behind the scenes?"

"Of course, this is only junior's humble opinion and conjecture; I believe Senior Under Heaven should have insights as well."

Greatest Ambition Under Heaven naturally wasn't an idiot. His previous anger had peaked, and he hadn't taken too much into consideration. Yun Che's words were like a bucket of cold water, allowing him to become more clear-headed. His expression sank, and he nodded slowly: "What you said is correct."

=====

Chapter 498 – Demon Imperial City

"But the danger my daughter encountered today, when you get down to the root of things, it is all because of this punk!" Greatest Ambition Under Heaven might have restrained his anger, but his tone was still harsh, "If anything had really happened to my daughter, even if I knew it was intentionally instigated by others, I would still cause a great commotion over at Yun Clan! It's a good thing that nothing happened to my daughter, so I can still overlook this matter and not find trouble with Yun Qinghong, but... Yun brat, I won't take back what I said to you before; you're not allowed to meet my daughter anymore. If you do, I will personally break your legs! Now get out of here!"

"Dad!" Number Seven Under Heaven became irritated: "You also know me and Brother Yun were plotted against, why are you still scolding him! That's too excessive! If you keep on acting like this, then I'll really be angry."

"I'm going overboard? My Seventh Treasure, even if I disregard today's events, you are still a princess of our elf clan. There are so many young and handsome heroes in Demon Imperial City, and they are all for your choosing, so why do you still insist on liking this..." Greatest Ambition Under Heaven pointed at Yun Xiao, but he paused for a moment. He did not voice out the remaining unkind words, but he slashed his hand instead, "In the past, I could allow you to be wilful, but now that this incident has happened, I will definitely not allow you and him to meet anymore! Yun brat, you better give up all hope! You are not worthy of my daughter."

Number One Under Heaven, Number Three Under Heaven, and Number Six Under Heaven also bore deeply approving expressions on their faces as they heard their father's words.

"Dad!!!" Number Seven Under Heaven shoved Greatest Ambition Under Heaven. After which she retreated a step, and said with a face red with anger, "I'll say this one more time, in my lifetime I will only

ever like Brother Yun. Besides Brother Yun, I won't marry anyone else... Moreover, this is my personal affair, I don't need the rest of you to butt in!"

"Seventh sister..." Yun Xiao looked at her and sighed out those words lightly. Both his hands were wound into tight fists, and his face was steadily becoming pale.

Greatest Ambition Under Heaven still refused to back down, "My Seventh Treasure, normally whenever you are in want, I will do my best to satisfy your heart's desire. But I definitely will not relent in this case. Because, not only does this concern your personal feelings, it also concerns your future and your advancement... And to a certain extent, it also concerns our entire Under Heaven Clan's reputation and future!" Greatest Ambition Under Heaven heavily sighed as he said this, and he adopted a gentler posture, "My Seventh Treasure, you know how much I give into you, can't you just give in to me this once?"

Number Seven Under Heaven bit her lips, and she looked at Yun Xiao, who also looked back at her, both of them looking at each other with gazes filled with tenderness... The distance between them was only the space of a few steps, yet at the same time, it seemed akin to the distance of an unsurpassable chasm. After a long while, this stubborn elf girl slowly and resolutely shook her head, "Dad, Big Brother, Third Brother, Sixth Brother, I know, I know that all of you look down on Brother Yun, and that all of you have always despised him... because of his background! But, can Brother Yun be blamed for his background? Background and status, are those things truly so important?"

"I like Brother Yun, and this has absolutely nothing to do with his background. In my eyes, he is more than tens of thousands times better than those conceited and arrogant scions of the other families. All of you should know that because of the current set of circumstances, where we do not know whether the Demon King is dead or alive, where Yun family's Patriarch has been crippled while

also losing the Demon Emperor's Seal and the Demon Emperor's Treasure, not only has their reputation greatly declined, they are also seen as great criminals. Because of this, the amount of resources given to them every year has been lessened by several times and they are not even allowed to enter the "Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley", a place which is regarded as the best place to train and have fortunate encounters. And their family has become rent by internal disorder, which has resulted in Yun family's strength falling far from where it was one hundred years ago... But in this kind of environment, with the scarcest of resources, Brother Yun already a half-step Overlord today! Not losing to the direct scion's of the other families by much. This barely passable grade that you have given him as the 'heir of a family', do you know how hard he had to work to achieve it?!"

"The amount of resources Brother Yun had to work with all these years, was not even a tenth of what other heirs to the rest of the families received, and it was even less than what the other disciples within his own family received! But Brother Yun has never complained. Instead, he put in ten times the effort that others did. Other disciples in the Yun Clan have profound handles, but not Brother Yun... And he once again he exerted several times the effort to bridge this gap... Having pitifully few resources and not even having the bloodline or talent of the Yun family, yet Brother Yun is right now, half a step into the Tyrant Profound Realm when he is not even twenty-two yet. He will soon break into the realm of Overlords... If he could have the same kind of resources, I believe his achievements today would be no less than that of Sixth Brother!"

Number Six Under Heaven "..."

"Moreover Brother Yun has a soft heart and he is ever so gentle, to the point where, even though he is the Young Master of the Yun family, he has never leaned on his position and become arrogant, and he has never bullied others as well. Instead, when he sees injustice, he will take the initiative to lend a helping hand... I know, all of his good points are not even worth a single glance to any of

you, but there is this one point... when I had met danger, Brother Yun willingly used his own life to protect mine. All of Brother Yun's wounds were suffered in the course of protecting me. He could have escaped completely unscathed, but he would rather give his life in order to create an opportunity for me to escape... But despite all of this, he was still scolded and belittled by the rest of you!" Number Seven Under Heaven's chest fiercely rose and fell, "Dad, all of these young and handsome heroes that you just mentioned, could a single one of them have done the same thing? For a girl to meet such a man in her lifetime, and to have this feeling of love be mutual, is the most fortunate thing in one's life. Could you bear to destroy the greatest happiness I will ever receive during my entire lifetime?!"

Facing Greatest Ambition Under Heaven's resoluteness, Number Seven Under Heaven could not control herself anymore as she shouted out all the words trapped in her heart without any reservation. But these heartfelt words did not move Greatest Ambition Under Heaven at all. He eyed Yun Xiao dully, and gently shook his head, "My Seventh Treasure, what you have said, I definitely understand. Your father was also young once, and I understand what you are thinking, it is only that... You are still the sole princess of our Under Heaven Clan, and you possess innate qualifications that others can never cultivate, and it is because of that, that some things can never be fully under your control. Please, just come back with me first."

"I'm not going back!" Number Seven Under Heaven retreated several steps, "If you will never let me meet with Brother Yun again, I would rather never go back home."

"You..." Greatest Ambition Under Heaven struggled to keep his temper under control as it flared explosively once more.

"Cough... About that, Seventh Sister, would you be willing to listen to a few of my words?" Yun Che hurriedly interjected before Greatest Ambition Under Heaven flew off the handle. He pulled Number Seven Under Heaven over and said in a small voice, "Seventh Sister,

return with your father first and stop quarreling with him over this. As for Yun Xiao, I will return with him to Yun family, and I will not leave his side until all his wounds recover, so you do not need to worry."

"But..." Number Seven Under Heaven looked at Yun Xiao, then said in an indignant and angry tone, "The things they said about Brother Yun, and even barring me from seeing him ever again, I..."

"But what will your quarreling do in regards to that?" Yun Che shook his head, "You have just met intense danger, and your father and brothers are still full of anger and resentment towards Yun Xiao. Moreover, I can also see that they are truly deeply concerned for you. For you to quarrel so fiercely with them over Yun Xiao, to the point where you are even threatening that you won't return home... This has undoubtedly caused them even more anger and grief, and at the same time, it will increase their distaste and dislike for Yun Xiao. It will purely have the reverse effect, and it will only cause the relationship between you and Yun Xiao to become even more uncertain."

"Ah?" Number Seven Under Heaven received a shock, "Then, then what should I do now?"

"Go back with them first, wait for this affair to blow over and take things slowly. Even though your father has decreed that you are not to meet again, both of you live in the Demon Imperial City, and both of you are alive and kicking. If you really want to meet, can they really stop you? Quarreling with your father is completely useless, you should instead approach this using gentle persuasion, or perhaps act more coquettishly. Use various means and ways to demonstrate to him just how good Yun Xiao is to you... Once time has passed, he might even unwittingly approve."

Number Seven Under Heaven's eyes lit up slowly, after that she vigorously nodded her head, "Mn, Big Brother Yun, I'll listen to you. Brother Yun... Please recuperate properly, I will definitely bring my father around."

"Seventh Sister..."

"Yun Xiao, let's get going."

Yun Che said his farewells to Greatest Ambition Under Heaven and his family. Without stopping, he picked up Yun Xiao and flew back towards the Demon Imperial City.

"Number Three, bring Seventh Treasure back first. She suffered some internal injuries and it would be best to let her rest and recover for a few days."

After Number Three Under Heaven left with Number Seven Under Heaven, Greatest Ambition Under Heaven's face gradually grew serious, "Number One, those three black-clothed men, were you able to find out anything about their identities?"

Number One Under Heaven shook his head, "By the time I had went, one of them had died while the other two had fled. I did not even catch a glimpse of their shadows."

"If one died, then where is his corpse?" Greatest Ambition Under Heaven asked.

"His corpse was taken by the other two men when they fled. And Yun Che, who had repelled them, did not make a move to stop them. Perhaps he could not even be bothered to make a move."

Greatest Ambition Under Heaven gave a deep sigh, and said slowly, "Number One, go and give that location a thorough look, try and find any trace of evidence they have left behind. Also, even if the corpse was taken away, as long as someone died, there has to be blood present. Go and bring some blood samples back, I might have a way to investigate... Hmph! I really want to know who has such great nerve, that they would dare try to assassinate a member of our Under Heaven Clan!"

"Understood!" Number One Under Heaven nodded his head. He flew out swiftly, but suddenly stopped and turned to Number Six Under

Heaven, and said, "Old Six, after you go back, the first thing I want you to do is to conduct a thorough check on the background of Yun Che, the more detailed the better. This person's origins are definitely not ordinary! And remember, he is not an enemy, so when you perform your check, do not agitate him."

"I got it." Number Six Under Heaven nodded his head.

Yun Che carried Yun Xiao as they flew towards the Demon Imperial City at a steady clip. Both of them looked at the ever-nearing city gates, their hearts filled with exceptionally complicated thoughts.

"Brother Yun, are you really only twenty-two years old?" Yun Xiao asked hurriedly as he looked at him.

"I never lie." Yun Che replied, "Why do you ask?"

Yun Xiao took a breath and said in voice filled with admiration, "We are both twenty-two, but you are so mighty, and even your words are able to grasp the main point in no time at all; it fills people with an involuntary belief... If only I could be like you, then Seventh Sister's father and older brothers wouldn't hate me so much..."

Yun Che shook his head, "I am not as sharp as you make me out to be. But the ones who were ambushed were the both of you, the ones who were interfered with was also the both of you. I am purely an outsider, so I can always keep my cool... The one in the situation is blind, while the onlookers can see things clearly, it should mean something like that."

"Haha!" Yun Xiao laughed, "Brother Yun is not only great in many areas, but you are also modest; it makes it hard for one to not admire you... However, I find it strange, I have always on guard towards others, but for some odd reason, when I look at Brother Yun. I feel an unfathomable familiarity with you... and what I am saying is from my heart! Hehe, perhaps it is because Brother Yun's charisma is

just too intense.”

Yun Che looked at him and laughed lightly. He said with sincerity, “Actually... I feel the same.”

“Ah?” Yun Xiao was stunned, then said blankly: “Then can we... be considered good friends now?”

“We should be... as long as you don’t mind.”

“I won’t mind, I definitely won’t mind at all!” Yun Xiao waved his hands hurriedly: “Brother Yun is such a great person; if it is someone who should mind, it is you who should mind being friends with me, not the other way around.”

As the two people spoke, they had already entered the space above Demon Imperial City.

“My clan is situated in the east of the city.” Yun Xiao pointed towards the east, “The place where the purple energy is rising to the heavens. It was said that one hundred years ago, the purple energy of the Yun family covered half of Demon Imperial City’s sky, but now... sigh.”

=====

Chapter 499 – Yun Family's Circumstances

Yun Che lifted his head. Somewhere in the north-eastern part of the city, there was indeed a purple radiance rushing into the skies. Only that this purple radiance was a little weak; if one did not pay attention to it, one would simply not notice it.

"What is that purple radiance?" Yun Che asked.

Yun Xiao's expression darkened slightly, and said: "That is the radiance of our Yun family's ancestral monument. Our Yun family cultivates lightning attribute profound arts, the profound energy appears as a purple color when released; the stronger the profound strength, the deeper the purple. Also... Brother Yun, have you heard of the profound handle?"

Yun Che nodded: "Yes, is it the bloodline skill that solely belongs to the Yun family?"

"Mn." While speaking about the profound handle, sadness evidently flashed across Yun Xiao's face. He continued: "The limit of the profound handle, just happens to be purple colored, and because of that, purple has always been the most sacred of color to the Yun family. In the Yun family, all disciples will release their maximum profound strengths towards the ancestral monument on their birthday, thereby maintaining the eternal purple radiance being released by the ancestral monument. According to father, hundred of years ago, during Yun family's flourishing period, the radiance of the ancestral monument would shine upon half of the skies of the Demon Imperial City, yet now... it's just like what you are seeing, weak to the extent that it is hard to even detect. Accordingly, the weakness of the purple radiance of the ancestral monument directly reflects the great fall in the Yun family's combined strength..."

"The Demon King being dead or alive would affect the Yun family to such a large degree?" Yun Che said in astonishment.

"If it is simply whether my grandfather is alive or not, it would definitely not be the case. This matter implicates many other issues..." Yun Xiao's expression dimmed.

Yun Che became silent for some time, slowed down his flight and said: "Yun Xiao, could you describe to me in detail the reason behind the Yun family's decline? I am after all, a Yun, and am very curious... Of course, if it is not convenient, then it's alright."

"Yun Xiao shook his head: "This is not an issue of convenience, because in the Illusory Demon Realm, it is not a secret at all. You can easily inquire about it. If Brother Yun wants to know about it, I have no reason to conceal the truth."

Yun Xiao raised his head slightly, his expression revealing his sadness: "Hundred of years ago, the Yun family was indeed prominent for a time. Due to the ability to employ profound handles, the position of being head of the Twelve Guardian Families was never threatened. It could be said that in the entire Illusory Demon Realm, apart from the Illusory Demon Royal Family... which is the Demon Emperor's Clan that the Twelve Guardian Families protects, the Yun family was the strongest. The Yun family was loyal and devoted to the Demon Royal Family, the Illusory Demon Royal Family had always relied heavily on the Yun family, even the Illusory Demon Royal Family's most precious treasure — the Mirror of Samsara, was handed over to the Yun family to guard... In grandfather's generation, the relationship between grandfather and the Lord Demon Emperor was not only that of a ruler and subject; they were raised together, experienced much together, and were the closest of friends. They were, without exaggeration, friends who would die for each other. We are people of the Yun family, however, grandfather was named the bestowed the title 'Demon King' by the Demon Emperor. It was evident that the hidden meaning behind was the ability to sit on the same level as the Demon Emperor; it was the greatest honor of our Yun family, a distinction which the other eleven Guardian Families could not even begin to admire."

"However, about two hundred years ago, a force from another continent appeared. They were from a place called the Profound Sky Continent, they used some sort of method to build a transportation formation which could shuttle between millions of kilometers over the sea, and reached the Illusory Demon Realm. Their arrival was not simply to visit; it was to invade us, they also somehow knew that our Illusory Demon Realm's Illusory Demon Royal Family possessed a Heavenly Profound Treasure which had an ability that opposed the heavens, thus, wanting to steal it, all of them were incredibly strong, and every time they came, they would bring extremely strong escaping devices while invading the Demon Imperial City, leaving us with no other options. Within a hundred years, they had invaded more than twenty times. A hundred years ago, the Lord Demon Emperor could no longer take it; after another invasion he personally pursued them to the area where they employed their escaping formation. He rashly rushed into one of the escaping formations which they could not disengage in time, following the other party into the Profound Sky Continent. Not long after, news of the death of Lord Demon Emperor arrived... there was no news after that."

Yun Che: "..."

"Every one of these invaders were dreadfully strong. Even though Lord Demon Emperor was really strong, in the opponent's territory, there was only the possibility of death; even the Demon Emperor's Clan accepted the matter. However, my grandfather still could not believe that the Demon Emperor had died. Afterwards, grandfather used Yun family's secret device to forcibly slice a spatial passage to the Profound Sky Continent. Then, ignoring all advice, he brought the family's ten strongest Grand Elders, and headed towards the Profound Sky Continent to search for the Demon Emperor."

"The ten strongest Grand Elders?" Yun Che was slightly shocked.

"Mm." Yun Xiao nodded: "Along with grandfather, they were the Yun family's eleven strongest seniors at that time. However after that, none of them returned. Until a few months ago, news came from the

Profound Sky Continent, saying that grandfather had been captured alive and imprisoned. The captors wanted our Yun family to exchange the Demon Emperor's Treasure which the Yun family has been guarding for generations to exchange for grandfather's life. Only, the majority believed that grandfather had already died, that those from the Profound Sky Continent saying that grandfather was captured was simply to trick the Yun family into taking the bait."

Yun Che: "..."

"The Yun family had lost its eleven strongest core experts, dropping from the top of the Twelve Guardian Families to being the weakest. The most critical part was that when grandfather headed for the Profound Sky Continent, he had brought along the Illusory Demon Royal Family's Demon Emperor Seal. To the Illusory Demon Royal Family, the Demon Emperor's Seal was even more important than the Mirror of Samsara; it concerned the Demon Emperor's succession ceremony. After that, they all said that not only did grandfather rashly give his own life away, he had also caused Illusory Demon Royal Family's most important item to be lost... and this ultimate crime, couldn't help but be the burden of the entire Yun family. The Yun family was punished; not only were the resources they received every year decreased by five-fold, they also could not enter 'Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley' within a hundred years."

"The cutting down of resources, and even not being able to enter the area of optimum cultivation and vast fortunes would not affect the older generation much, however, the effect on the younger generation was incomparably huge. This also caused the strength of Yun family's newer generation of disciples to lose out greatly to the other guardian families; even the strength of the profound handle could not make up for the loss."

"Not long after the incident concerning the Demon Emperor and grandfather, the Illusory Demon Royal Family had no choice but to appoint a new Demon Emperor. Thus, Lord Demon Emperor's only son succeeded the throne... However, due to the Demon Emperor's

Seal being missing, the succession ceremony could not proceed. Thus, there was no 'Golden Crow Divine Imprint', thereby making him unable to truly become the real Demon Emperor, only being able to be called the 'Little Demon Emperor'... On the second day after succeeding the throne, the Little Demon Emperor married the Little Demon Empress. However, nobody had thought that on the night of the marriage, the Little Demon Emperor did not return to the bridal chamber... He had instead left a note, saying that since his father was still unavenged, he was not fit to complete the marriage, and even said that if he did not return within three years, the Little Demon Empress was to be the Illusory Demon Emperor... However, not even ten days after, news came from the Profound Sky Continent that the Little Demon Emperor had died."

Yun Che: "..."

Within the Profound Sky Continent, the Four Sacred Grounds were incomparably divine existences. It was rumored that they guarded the entire Profound Sky Continent, isolating dangers which came from other continents, especially against the "covetous" and "ambitious" Illusory Demon Realm. In the rumors from the Profound Sky Continent, the Illusory Demon Realm was dreadful and ferocious, always wanting to conquer the Profound Sky Continent... the people of the Illusory Demon Realm were all labelled as evil "demons".

Yet whatever Yun Che was hearing, actually completely contradicted the rumors within the Profound Sky Continent.

The evil one was not the Illusory Demon Realm which was constantly being framed, but the Sacred Grounds who were treated as holy guardians...

"After that?" Yun Che asked disappointedly.

Yun Xiao continued: "After that, the Little Demon Empress succeeded the throne, becoming the new Illusory Demon Emperor. Thereafter... our Yun family experienced another tremendous blow, because of news that from the Profound Sky Continent saying that my

grandfather was not yet dead, but was imprisoned. Twenty five years ago, father could not take it anymore and activated the secret device again with mother. They quietly headed towards the Profound Sky Continent to search for grandfather, at that time, I was not born yet... Three years later, my parents finally came back. Although they were alive, they were severely injured, and due to them fleeing for a long period of time, they did not have the luxury of tending to their wounds, causing the profound veins in their entire bodies to deteriorate; their profound strengths were basically crippled. As for me, I was unfortunately conceived in the Profound Sky Continent, dragging down my parents as they were attempting to flee... Then, they safely brought me back to the Illusory Demon Realm."

Speaking till there, Yun Xiao dipped his head, not allowing Yun Che to see the expression in his eyes. Then, he lowered his voice and continued: "The number of strong practitioners in the Yun family was originally zilch; after mother's and father's bodies were crippled, it was another huge blow to the Yun family's potential. And the most severe issue was, when mother and father were heading towards the Profound Sky Continent, they had brought along the Illusory Demon Royal Family's guarded treasure — the Mirror of Samsara. Although they had returned to the Illusory Demon Realm... they had lost the Mirror of Samsara. The Yun family which had committed the crime of losing the Demon Emperor's Seal had yet again committed another grave crime, and from that, we suffered an even more severe punishment; the resources received every year lessened again, and we could never enter the 'Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley' ever again. The Illusory Demon Royal Clan was in such a huge rage that they even wanted to kick our Yun family out of the Twelve Guardian Families."

"Since it is such an important object, before they headed to the Profound Sky Continent, they would have been aware of the dangers ahead. Why did they bring it with them?" Yun Che asked in puzzlement. This too, was what he had always been baffled over.

Yun Xiao became taciturn, hesitating for quite some time before

saying in a soft voice: "Mother had once secretly told me that it was actually the Little Demon Empress' idea."

"The Little Demon Empress' idea?"

"Mm. The item known as the Mirror of Samsara had been passed on within the Illusory Demon Royal Clan for many years. Even though it is called a heaven-defying treasure, none of the Demon Emperors had ever found any uses, and no one ever knew what uses it had. Back then, the Little Demon Empress told father, if such a useless treasure could be exchanged for the Demon King's life, it would be extremely beneficial for the Illusory Demon Realm... After father returned, unable to bring grandfather back, on top of losing the Mirror of Samsara, he did not mention that bringing along the Mirror of Samsara was the Little Demon Empress' idea, and shouldered all the blame... it was because after the Little Demon Empress succeeded the throne, many naysayers existed within the Illusory Demon Royal Clan. Father did not want the Little Demon Empress to experience an even greater amount of stress. After that, Yun family's potential dropped by another ten thousand feet, my father's reputation was even... even..."

Yun Xiao heaved a long sigh. As he thought about his father, his heart ached.

Yun Che slowly digested Yun Xiao's words. Some of what he had mentioned, matched what Yun Che had heard from Yun Canghai. This proved that Yun Xiao was recounting the details seriously, and was not lying. The two of them were silent for some time, until Yun Che suddenly said in a soft voice: "Yun Xiao, your father is currently still the head of the Yun family, his profound strength has been crippled, and he has even shouldered all of the crimes, yet your family hasn't forced him to give up the seat?"

"...It's because of my maternal grandfather." Yun Xiao said absently: "Grandfather is the head of the Mu family. I still have an uncle, who is the Mu family's Young Master; they have prestigious statuses in the Demon Imperial City. No matter if it's grandfather or uncle, the

both of them treat mother especially well. Grandfather supporting father is one of the reasons. With the fact that our Yun family's potential and statuses have been decreasing, if we still wish to remain part of the Twelve Guardian families, we cannot lose Mu family's support... Only, although father still holds the position of the family head, the number of people who listen to him has been decreasing. Sometimes, father's authority doesn't seem to be higher than a slightly high-ranking elder; the Grand Elders have never accepted father... The only reason they would allow father to remain as the family head is only because of Mu family's might, and the fact that they do not want to lose their support."

=====

Chapter 500 – Golden Crow's Legacy

Yun Che became silent. Even though he had recovered from the repeated shocks, his heart still could not calm down. He originally treated this place as a completely foreign world; after becoming strong here, finding a way to return to Profound Sky Continent would be his only goal. But now, all of his plans had been turned upside down.

This was not just a distant and foreign world, it was a world he had many connections to.

"Yun Che, ask this person what kind of place this 'Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley' is." Jasmine suddenly spoke in a serious tone. "Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley" was a place that Number One Under Heaven and Yun Xiao had respectively mentioned before, and said that it was the best place for training and fortunate encounters. However, the Yun family was no longer allowed to enter it.

"...Are you suspecting that this 'Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley' is related to the Primordial Divine Beast, the 'Golden Crow'?" Yun Che asked.

"I don't think this is just a simple coincidence between the names." Jasmine said coolly: "If this was any bit related to the actual 'Golden Crow', it would be interesting."

Yun Che remained silent for a while before asking: "Yun Xiao, what kind of place is the 'Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley' you mentioned before? One of the reasons the strength of the Yun family is rapidly declining must be because you're unable to enter the Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley, right...? Is it really that amazing?"

"Ugh... You don't even know about the Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley?" Yun Xiao looked at him with a shocked expression.

"This is the first time I've come here and my master has never told

me anything about the Illusory Demon Realm before. Thus, this is the first time I have ever heard the name Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley.”

Yun Che was not lying, but given what he told Yun Xiao, he would not naturally think that Yun Che was from another world. He nodded, and whispered: “It’s no wonder Brother Yun is so strong. Looks like you aren’t the slightest bit distracted when you cultivate... Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley is a place I’m very familiar with, even though I’ve never entered there before. I grew up listening to its name because it is the origin of the ancestors of the Illusory Demon Royal Family.”

“Origin?” Yun Che was stunned.

“Yup.” Yun Xiao nodded: “Brother Yun, have you ever heard of the Primordial Divine Beast, the ‘Golden Crow?’”

“Yes. The Vermillion Bird, the Phoenix, and the Golden Crow are the three supreme fire attribute beasts of the Primordial Era.” Yun Che nodded. Within him, flowed the blood of the Phoenix.

“The reason the place is called the Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley is because the Golden Crow Divine Beast’s legacy lies within.”

“Oh?” Yun Che suddenly tilted his head. Within his head, also rang Jasmine’s voice: “So that really is the case! But that’s weird, Blue Pole Star is but a lowly planet, why would there be so many legacies of divine powers... Phoenix, Dragon God, Golden Crow and even the Evil God’s divine strength seeds exist in this world... Could something special have happened here during the Primordial Era?”

“This is... very weird?”

“It’s not just weird, it’s extremely abnormal.” Jasmine said: “Nine-thousand nine-hundred and ninety-nine out of ten thousand divine power legacies exist in the Realm of the Gods. Within the billions of planets in the boundless universe, it would be difficult to find a

divine legacy existing in one of the billion planets. Even within the higher astral planes, not one legacy exists within the billions of planes. However, on this lowly Blue Pole Star, there are already four of them. Oh, and we still need to include Xia Yuanba, who mysteriously possesses the War God's Divine Veins! The Yun family's Profound Handle might also be a mysterious ancient divine power... If this matter were to spread, even the Realm of the Gods would be shocked!"

Yun Che: "..."

Yun Xiao continued: "The Illusory Demon Royal Family's ancestor was only a Neon Sparrow Demon turned human back then. However, it accidentally inherited the legacy of the Golden Crow within Lightning Flame Valley and received the Golden Crow's bloodline and Golden Crow's flame attribute, becoming unbeatable within Illusory Demon Realm. After that, all the clans decided that he would become the emperor. Henceforth, the first Demon Emperor of the Illusory Demon Realm was chosen. Then, the clans that continued to prosper became the current Illusory Demon Royal Family, claimed that they were the descendants of the Golden Crow and received the blessings of the Golden Crow Divine Beast. Thus, Lightning Flame Valley was renamed Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley, becoming Illusory Demon Realm's first divine ground."

"The elemental aura around Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley is dense and its surroundings contain the strength of powerful flames and thunderclouds,, which led to the constant growth of strong fire spirits, lightning spirits, and other fire and lightning type demons. Similarly, certain rare materials and treasures are also easily found within that place. Therefore, not only is entering the Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley a good experience, one can easily encounter something fortunate. Nearly everyone who entered Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley reaped massive rewards, and some were even able to shoot through the heavens."

"Those who are allowed to enter Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley

are the Illusory Demon Royal Family and the Twelve Guardian Families. They can enter once every five years. However, after what happened a hundred years ago... Our Yun family wasn't allowed to enter anymore. After the younger generation of the other Twelve Guardian Family entered Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley, many of their strength grew, but as for our Yun family, we could only stare in envy..."

Yun Xiao gradually sighed with a face of disappointment. At his age, and even being the Yun family's young master, he still never managed to enter Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley even once... He did not even have the chance to catch a glimpse of that place.

"I see." Yun Che nodded: "Which means that the Illusory Demon Royal Family all possess the bloodline of the Golden Crow and its flames. No wonder they are the respected the royal family."

"That's... Not right." Yun Xiao however shockingly denied it: "Although the members Illusory Demon Royal Family possess the bloodline of the Golden Crow, it is passed down through inheritance and the bloodline is already thin. The flames that they ignite, although several times stronger than ordinary profound flames, it cannot be considered as the Golden Crow's strength... The last person who wielded the actual power of the Golden Crow was the deceased Demon Emperor."

"Why is that? Isn't the bloodline of the Golden Crow an inheritance?" Yun Che asked in shock.

"Because, only after being accepted and gifted by the Soul of the Golden Crow, can one receive the flame profound art 'Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World'. Otherwise, one can only rely on the Golden Crow bloodline to ignite profound flames that contain the Golden Crow's characteristics. Among the Illusory Demon Royal Family, other than the Demon Emperor, everyone else cultivate other forms of fire profound arts."

"Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World... Does that mean the

Flame Profound Skills of the Golden Crow cannot be taught to others?" Yun Che frowned... The name "Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World" was something he had heard before. A few years back, Jasmine had mentioned to him before: That the 《Vermillion Bird's Consoling Spirit Song》, 《World Ode of the Phoenix》 and the 《Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World》 were the three great "World Scorching Heavenly Books" that once shook the boundless universe.

"That's right! The Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World is something that can only be obtained from the Golden Crow's soul. The Golden Crow's soul is located in the depths of the Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley, a place called the Golden Crow's Holy Land. It can only be entered once every thousand years. And the only key to enter it... Is the 'Demon Emperor's Seal' that has been lost in the Profound Sky Continent along with my grandfather."

Yun Che: "..."

Yun Xiao helplessly continued: "The Golden Crow's Holy Land can only be entered once every thousand years, which is why the Demon Emperor also succeeds once every thousand years. A hundred years ago, Lord Demon Emperor died under the hands of villains. When the Little Demon Emperor was about to inherit the position and use the Demon Emperor's Seal to enter the Golden Crow's Holy Land to receive the powerful Golden Crow bloodline and the Golden Crow Record of the Burning World, the Demon Emperor's Seal was lost. He was then never able to enter the Golden Crow's Holy Land and properly become the Demon Emperor... At that time, the Little Demon Emperor could only helplessly inherit the throne. Due to not obtaining the legacy of the Golden Crow, he could only be called the 'Little Demon Emperor', and not the actual Demon Emperor title. The Little Demon Empress is the same as well. Sigh, if we are unable to recover the Demon Emperor's Seal, the Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World might vanish from this world altogether."

"No wonder the Yun Family bore such tremendous blame after the

loss of the Demon Emperor's Seal." Yun Che slowly said.

"Grandfather obviously did not lose it on purpose." Yun Xiao gritted his teeth lightly: "Father said that Grandfather and the Demon Emperor were like brothers. At that time, he did not see the corpse of the Demon Emperor, so he would not believe the Demon Emperor was dead. The Demon Emperor's Seal was personally given by the Demon Emperor to be safekept. Unless the Demon Emperor was really dead, the Demon Emperor's Seal was not to be given to anyone else, even if it were the Demon Emperor's child... That was why, he always kept it with him and never handed it to anyone else. Even when he went to the Profound Sky Continent to look for the Demon Emperor, he did not allow the Demon Emperor's Seal to leave him... This was how Grandfather showed his loyalty. He obviously did not want to lose it more than anyone else. However, the members of the Illusory Demon Royal Family..."

Yun Xiao revealed a face of anger and did not continue.

"Do you want to look for a chance to visit the Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley?" Jasmine said in an interested manner: "Since you have 'that thing' with you."

"The flames of the Golden Crow and the flames of the Phoenix, which one is the stronger one?" Yun Che thought for a while and asked.

"Among the Three Supreme Fire Attribute Beasts, the Vermillion Bird is the strongest, followed by the Phoenix, with the Golden Crow being the last. However, if speaking purely in terms of the flame strength, the strongest is actually the Golden Crow!" Jasmine replied plainly.

"...Then why is the Golden Crow ranked the last?"

"Because this is not a ranking based on strength. The flames of the Vermillion Bird contain divine attributes. During the Primordial Era, it was the flame most feared by the Devil Race that lived along the God Race. In fact, the flame used to be called the 'Flame of Salvation'; The flames of the Phoenix possessed benevolent attributes; not only can

it destroy, it can also purify. It used to be called the 'Flame of the World Ode', which was also why you had to pass the third trial of the heart when you were undergoing the Phoenix Trials."

"And the flames of the Golden Crow, are purely the flames of utmost destruction! The Golden Crow is also called the 'Sun Bird', and legends say that it is an extreme divine being birthed from the sun's core. Its flames are as scorching and as violent the sun, and had no other use except for destruction. It is said that there is nothing that the Golden Crow's hottest fire cannot burn within the boundless universe. The ranking of the Three Supreme Fire Attribute Beasts that I mentioned earlier is just the ranking of their recognition amongst the hearts of the masses. Even though the Golden Crow is not an evil beast, its emotions are just as violent as its flames, and naturally could not compare to the 'Salvation' and the 'World Ode' of the Vermillion Bird and the Phoenix. However, given the Golden Crow's personality, it would definitely not recognize this ranking."

"So you want me to try to obtain the Golden Crow's legacy?" Yun Che asked after some thought.

"Golden Crow's legacy? Heh..." Jasmine laughed plainly: "You're thinking too much. If you did not possess the bloodline of the Phoenix, there might be some chance of that. However, since you possess the flames of the Phoenix, you would not be able to obtain the flames of the Golden Crow. I want you to go there just to check if the legacy of the Golden Crow truly exists!"

"Why?" Yun Che was slightly stunned.

"Hmph, is it really that hard to understand? The Three Supreme Fire Attribute Beasts are all unhappy with each other, and all think that the flames they possess are the strongest flames in the world. If one person possesses the bloodline of one of the three, the other two would never allow their own bloodline and strength to co-exist! Especially the Golden Crow! Its personality is extremely irritable and unyielding. Wanting to make it give its legacy to someone who possesses the Phoenix bloodline... is definitely an impossible task."

=====

Against the Gods (逆天邪神)

Vol. 5: Primordial Profound Ark

Ni Tian Xie Shen (逆天邪神) – Against the Gods
a Chinese web novel by Mars Gravity (火星引力)

Genre Tags: fantasy, different world, level up, refreshing

Translator Tags: mature, harem

Translated by AlysChu&Co

ATG Team: alyschu, OverTheRainbow, Scrya, SummerRain, Dnton, crushanapple

E-Book Maker: AsiaNovel.com

Download the next book in the series for free:

<http://www.asianovel.com/series/against-the-god/?id=ebook&v=5>

Official Description: Wielding the sky poison pearl, receiving the blood of an evil god, cultivating the strength to oppose heaven, a lord overlooking the world!

Synopsis by alyschu:

A boy is being chased by various people because he alone holds some kind of treasure. He jumps off a cliff to not let any of them have it and wakes up in the body of a boy with the same name in another world. Fortunately, he has kept the treasure he ran off with.

Title Explanation:

Alyschu note: When I first started translating, I had two English titles in mind: Against the Gods and Opposition of the Evil God. Around

chapter 3-5, I decided on the title Against the Gods because it sounded cooler. Should be **Against the Heavens** or **Opposition of the Evil God** or **Heaven Defying Evil God** but since we've almost hit half of a hundred, I'm just going to keep ATG as the title. This is what I get for randomly interpreting translating as I read, meh. My only excuse is that sometimes the heavens and gods are used interchangeably.

Also, the term 逆天 used in the title is a gaming term that essentially means "overpowered".

[START](#)

Disclaimer

There is no guarantee that the translation is 100% correct.

=====

AsiaNovel.com wishes to emphasize that this translation is for review purposes only. We do not claim this intellectual property or any rights whatsoever.

=====

Under no circumstances would you be allowed to take this work for commercial activities or for personal gain. AsiaNovel.com does not and will not condone any activities of such, including but not limited to rent, sell, print, auction.